GRAMMAR

start up

İÇİNDEKİLER

1 PRONOUNS

İngilizcedeki Cümle Yapısı

A. SUBJECT PRONOUNS
(Özne Zamirleri) 17
- I, you, he, she, it, we, you, they

B. OBJECT PRONOUNS
(Nesne Zamirleri) 19
- me, you, him, her, it, us, you, them
- Verb + Object Pronoun
- Preposition + Object Pronoun

C. POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES
(İyelik Sıfatları) 21
- my, your, his, her, its, our, your, their

D. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS
(İyelik Zamirleri) 24
- mine, yours, his, hers, its, ours, yours, theirs
- Double Possessive

E. REFLEXIVE PRONOUNS
(Dönüşlü Zamirler) 28
- myself, yourself, himself, herself, itself, ourselves, yourselves, themselves
- By + Reflexive Pronoun
- by myself, by himself,
- on my own, on his own

F. INDEFINITE PRONOUNS
(Belgisiz Zamirler) 34
- somebody, everybody, nobody, anybody
- someone, everyone, no one, anyone
- something, everything, nothing, anything
- somewhere, everywhere, nowhere, anywhere

G. RECIPROCAL PRONOUNS
(İşteş Zamirler) 40
- each other, one another

H. IMPERSONAL PRONOUN - ONE 41
- one, ones, the one, the ones

I. DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES & DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS
(İşaret Sıfatları & İşaret Zamirleri) 44
- this, that, these, those, that of, those of

J. FORMS OF OTHER 47
- other, the other
- others, the others
- another
- one after the other / one after another
- every other

REVISION 52
PRONOUN TEST 1 55
PRONOUN TEST 2 57

2 TENSES

SIMPLE TENSES 60

A. THE SIMPLE PRESENT TENSE 60
- I / you / we / they go,
  he / she / it goes
- » Adverbs of Frequency
- always, seldom, rarely ...

B. THE PRESENT CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE 66
- I am walking,
  he / she / it is walking,
  we / you / they are walking
- » Non-progressive / Progressive Verbs
- sound, smell, taste ...

C. THE SIMPLE PAST TENSE 74
- I / you / he / she / it / we / they drank
- » It's time ...
  It's about time ...
  It's high time ...

D. THE PAST CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE 81
- I / he / she / it was sleeping,
  we / you / they were sleeping
- » when / while

E. THE SIMPLE FUTURE TENSE 87

1. **BE GOING TO** 87
- I am going to study,
  he / she / it is going to study,
  we / you / they are going to study
- » Future in the Past
- was, were going to

2. **WILL (SHALL)** 89
- I / you / he / she / it / we / they will learn
  I, we shall
- » Future in the Past
- would

F. THE FUTURE CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE 93
- I / you / he / she / it / we / they will be watching

PERFECT TENSES 98

G. THE PRESENT PERFECT TENSE 98
- I / you / we / they have worked,
  he / she / it has worked
- » up to now, up until now, until now, by now, up to present, so far, lately, recently, in recent years, ever since, since, since then, for, ever, never
- » been to, gone to, been in
- » just, already, yet
- » since / for
  since, ever since, since then
- » simple past & present perfect
- » superlatives + present perfect

H. THE PRESENT PERFECT CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE 107
- I / you / we / they have been cleaning,
  he / she / it has been cleaning
- » how much, how many, how long

I. THE PAST PERFECT TENSE 112
- I / you / he / she / it / we / they had gone
- » after, before, when, by the time
- » superlatives + past perfect

J. THE PAST PERFECT CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE 116
- I / you / he / she / it / we / they had been waiting
- » how much, how many, how long, by the time, by + time

K. THE FUTURE PERFECT TENSE 120
- I / you / he / she / it / we / they will have visited
- » after, before
- » by the time, by + time

L. THE FUTURE PERFECT CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE 124

- I / you / he / she / it / we / they will have been searching

» by the time, by + time

TIME CLAUSES
(Zaman Uyumu ve Zaman Bağlaçları) 128

» when, while, until, once, (the) last time
» after, as, till, whenever, (the) next time
» before, just as, as long as, every time, (ever) since, as soon as, by the time, so long as, (the) first time
» Present, bağlaç + present
Bağlaç + present, present
» Future, bağlaç + present
Bağlaç + present, future
» Past, bağlaç + past
Bağlaç + past, past

REVISION 132
TENSES TEST 1 137
TENSES TEST 2 139

3 MODALS

Modal'ların Kullanımı 142

A. USED TO & WOULD 143

B. BE USED TO & GET USED TO 145

- Be Accustomed to
- Grow Used to
- Become Used to
- Would
- Would you mind + V_{ing} ...?
- Do you mind + V_{ing} ...?
- Would you mind if I / he / she, etc.+ past ...?
- Do you mind if I / he / she, etc. + present ...?

C. CAN & BE ABLE TO 150

- Could
- Was / were able to
- Manage to

D. MUST & CAN'T 152

- must be + V_{ing}
- can't be + V_{ing}
- must have + V_3
- can't have + V_3
- must have been + V_{ing}
- can't have been + V_{ing}
- mustn't have + V_3

E. MUST & HAVE TO & HAVE GOT TO 156

- doesn't have to
- don't have to
- had to

F. NEED & NEEDN'T 158

- don't / doesn't need to
- needn't have + V_3
- didn't need to
- need + V_{ing}

G. MAY & MIGHT & COULD 161

- may / might / could + be V_{ing}
- may / might have + V_3
- could have + V_3

H. WOULD RATHER & WOULD SOONER & WOULD PREFER 165

- would rather + V_1
- would sooner + V_1
- would prefer + to + V_1
- would rather + somebody + simple past / past perfect tense
- would sooner + somebody + simple past / past perfect tense
- would rather do something than do something else
- would prefer to do something rather than do something else
- would rather be doing
- would rather / would sooner have + V_3
- would prefer to have + V_3

I. SHOULD & OUGHT TO & HAD BETTER 168

- should, ought to, had better + be V_{ing}
- should / ought to / had better have + V_3
- shouldn't / ought not to / had better not have + V_3

J. BE TO & BE SUPPOSED TO 172

- be supposed to + V_1
- be to + V_1
- was / were supposed to + V_1
- was / were supposed to have + V_3

K. DARE TO & DAREN'T 173

L. ÖNERİ VE TEKLİFTE KULLANILAN BAZI YAPILAR 174

- Shall we + V_1
- Let's (not) + V_1
- How about + V_{ing}
- What about + V_{ing}
- Why don't you / we + V_1
- Would you like + to + V_1

REVISION 174
MODALS TEST 1 178
MODALS TEST 2 180

4 PASSIVE & CAUSATIVE

A. PASSIVE 184

- Forming Passive (Edilgen Yapıların Oluşturulması)
- Hangi Durumlarda 'Passive' Yapı Kullanırız?
- Bir Cümle Nasıl 'Passive' Yapılır?
- Edilgen cümlelerde kullanılabilen / kullanılamayan fiiller

İNGİLİZCE 'TENSE'LERİN 'PASSIVE' YAPILIŞI 188

- The Simple Present Tense
- The Present Continuous Tense
- The Simple Past Tense
- The Past Continuous Tense
- The Simple Future Tense (Be Going to)
- The Simple Future Tense (Will)
- Future in the Past
- The Future Continuous Tense
- The Present Perfect Tense
- The Past Perfect Tense
- The Future Perfect Tense
- Simple Modals
- Perfect Modals
- 'Get' ile Kurulan Edilgen Yapılar
- 'By' Edatının Kullanımı
- 'By' & 'With'
- Stative Passive (Durum Bildiren Edilgen Yapı)
- Verbs with Two Objects (Çift Nesneli Fiiller)
- Gerund ve Infinitive Yapılarının Edilgen Kullanımı
- Infinitive (to V_1)
- Hearsay Reporting (Dolaylı Bildirim)

- It + Passive reporting verb + (that) + Clause
- Subject + Passive reporting verb + to infinitive

- Present verb - Present reference
- Past verb - Past reference
- Past verb - Past Perfect reference
- Continuous Infinitive Forms
- Present Continuous Infinitive (to be V_{ing})
- Perfect Continuous Infinitive (to have been V_{ing})
- Passive Infinitive Forms
- Present Passive Infinitive (to be V_3)
- Perfect Passive Infinitive (to have been V_3)

B. CAUSATIVE 214

- Have + Object + Past Participle
  Get + Object + Past Participle
- Have + Person + Base Form of Verb (= Have somebody do something)
- Get + Person + To Infinitive (= Get somebody to do something)
- Have + Somebody / Something = Get Somebody / Something Doing
- Make + Person + Base Form of Verb (= Make somebody do something)
- Be Made to Do
- Let + Person + Base Form of Verb (= Let Somebody Do)
- Get / Have Somebody Done

REVISION 219
PASSIVE & CAUSATIVE TEST 1 223
PASSIVE & CAUSATIVE TEST 2 225

5 CONJUNCTIONS

- **Bağlaçların Gruplandırılmış Listeleri** 228
- **BAĞLAÇLARIN KULLANIM ŞEKİLLERİ** 232

A. EXPRESSING REASON AND RESULT
(Neden ve Sonuç Belirtme) 233

1. Because
2. As
3. Since
4. Inasmuch as (= Insofar as)
5. Seeing (that) (= Seeing as)
6. For
7. Now (that)
8. In that
9. Because of
10. Due to
11. Owing to
12. On account of
13. Thanks to
14. On the grounds (of / that)
15. As a result (of)
16. So
17. Therefore
18. Consequently
19. That's why
20. Hence
21. Thus
22. As a consequence (of)
23. For this reason
24. Accordingly
25. Thereby
26. In view (of / that)
27. So / Such ... (that ...)

B. EXPRESSING CONDITION
(Koşul belirtme) 246

28. If
29. Only if (= Only when)
30. Providing (that) = Provided (that)
31. On condition that
32. As long as (= So long as)

33. Unless
34. In the event of / that

C. EXPRESSING UNEXPECTED RESULTS AND CONTRASTING STATEMENTS
(Beklenmeyen Sonuçlar ve Çelişen İfadeleri Belirtme) 249

35. Although
36. Though
37. Even though
38. Much as
39. Even if
40. While
41. Whereas
42. When
43. Despite
44. In spite of
45. But
46. Yet
47. However
48. Nevertheless (= Nonetheless)
49. Still
50. Even so
51. (On the one hand) … On the other hand
52. Adjective + as / Adjective + though
53. On the contrary
54. In contrast
55. Notwithstanding
56. Contrary to
57. As opposed to
58. For all

D. EXPRESSING PARALLEL AND CORRESPONDING STATEMENTS
(Aynı Doğrultuda Olan ve Birbirine Uygun Düşen İfadeleri Belirtme) 259

59. Moreover
60. Besides
61. Furthermore
62. In addition
63. In addition to
64. Also
65. As well as
66. Indeed

E. EXPRESSING PURPOSE
(Amaç Belirtme) 262

67. In order to (= to)
68. So as to (= to)
69. So that
70. In order that
71. Lest

F. PAIRED CONJUNCTIONS
(İkili Bağlaçlar) 265

72. Neither … nor …
73. Either … or …
74. Not only … but also …
75. Both … and …
76. Whether … or …
77. No sooner … than …
78. Hardly … when …
Scarcely … when …
Barely … when …

G. GIVING EXAMPLES AND CLARIFYING
(Örnek Verme ve Açıklama) 269

79. For Instance / For example
80. In other words
81. That is to say
82. That is

H. OTHER EXPRESSIONS
(Diğer İfadeler) 270

83. As for
84. As to
85. As regards
86. As of (= As from)
87. As if (= As though)
88. In case
89. In case of
90. Otherwise
91. Or (else)
92. But for
93. Except for
94. For fear of / that
95. Like
96. Unlike
97. Meanwhile (= In the meantime)
98. Regardless of

99. Apart from (Aside from)
100. Likewise (= Similarly)
101. Such as
102. Rather than
103. Nor
104. On the whole (= Generally)
105. In fact (= As a matter of fact)
106. In particular (= Especially)
107. After all
108. Instead (of)
109. To sum up, to summarise, in conclusion, briefly, in short
110. Supposing (= Assuming that)
111. With a view to
With the aim of

REVISION 281
CONJUNCTIONS TEST 1 285
CONJUNCTIONS TEST 2 287

6 ADJECTIVE (Relative) CLAUSES

A. RELATIVE PRONOUNS 292

- Who
- Which
- Whom
- Whose
- Where
- When
- Why (for which)
- Preposition + Relative Pronoun
- Whose = of which
- Tüm Cümleyi Niteleyen 'Which' Yapısının Kullanımı

- Using Quantifiers With Relative Pronouns (Sıfat Cümleciği Zamirlerinin Miktar Belirleyicilerle Kullanımı)

B. DEFINING & NON-DEFINING ADJECTIVE CLAUSES 300

C. REDUCTION OF ADJECTIVE CLAUSES (Sıfat Cümleciklerinin Kısaltılması) 302

- Reduction of the Verb (be)
- Reduction of the Active Sentences (V_{ing})
- Reduction of Perfect Tenses (Having V_3)
- Reduction of Superlatives and Ordinal Numbers (to V_1)

REVISION 306
ADJECTIVE CLAUSES TEST 1 310
ADJECTIVE CLAUSES TEST 2 312

7 GERUND & INFINITIVE & PARTICIPLE

A. GERUNDS 317

- Bir Cümlenin Öznesi Olarak Kullanılan Gerund'lar
- Bir Edatın (Preposition) Nesnesi Olarak Kullanılan Gerund'lar
  - Noun + Preposition + Gerund
  - Adjective + Preposition + Gerund
  - Verb + Preposition + Gerund
  - Verb + Object + Preposition + Gerund
- Gerund'ların Niteleyici Sözcüklerle ve Zamirlerle Kullanımı
- Gerund'ların 'to' ile Kullanımı
  - Look forward to
  - Prefer something to doing something
  - Be accustomed to
  - Be opposed to
  - Be used to
  - Be addicted to
    etc.
- Gerund'ların Belirli Yapılardan Sonra Kullanımı
  - a waste of money / energy + V_{ing}
  - busy + V_{ing} something
  - catch / find somebody + V_{ing} something
    etc.
- Passive Gerunds (being V_3)
- Perfect Gerunds (having V_3)
- Perfect Passive Gerunds (having been V_3)
- Verbs Followed by Gerunds

B. INFINITIVES...327

- Bir Cümlenin Öznesi Olarak Kullanılan 'To Infinitive'
- Bir Cümlenin Nesnesi Olarak Kullanılan 'To Infinitive'
- Sıfatlardan Sonra Kullanılan 'To Infinitive'
- Söz Öbeklerinden Sonra Kullanılan 'To Infinitive'
- İsimlerden Sonra Kullanılan 'To Infinitive'
- 'Too' ve 'Enough' ile Kullanılan 'To Infinitive'
  - too
  - enough
- Amaç Belirten 'To Infinitive'
- Soru Kelimelerinden Sonra Kullanılan 'To Infinitive'
- 'Relative Clause' Kısaltmasında Kullanılan 'To Infinitive'
  - Continuous 'To Infinitive' (to be + V_{ing})
  - Passive 'To Infinitive' (to be + V_3)
  - Perfect 'To Infinitive' (to have + V_3)
  - Perfect Continuous 'To Infinitive' (to have been+ V_{ing})
  - Perfect Passive 'To Infinitive' (to have been + V_3)
- Forms of Bare Infinitive
  - Simple Bare Infinitive: V_1
  - Continuous Bare Infinitive: be V_{ing}
  - Perfect Bare Infinitive: have V_3
  - Perfect Continuous Bare Infinitive: have been V_{ing}
  - Passive Bare Infinitive: be V_3
  - Perfect Passive Bare Infinitive: have been V_3
- Verbs Followed by to infinitive
  - Verb + Object + to infinitive
- Passive Forms of the Verbs with Objects
- Verbs Followed by an Infinitive or Gerund with Little or No Change in Meaning
  - bother, begin, can't bear, etc.
- Verbs Followed by an Infinitive or Gerund with a Change in Meaning
  - forget, go on, mean, propose, regret, etc.

- The use of Verbs 'need, require' and 'want' with gerund or infinitive
- Verbs of Perception
  - catch, feel, find, etc.
- The use of 'make, let' and 'help' with infinitives
  - make somebody do something
  - be made to do something
  - let somebody do something
  - help somebody (to) do something
- Infinitives with Causatives
  - have somebody do something
  - get somebody to do something
  - get / have something done
  - have something done

REVISION 345

C. PARTICIPLES 347

- Present participle (V_{ing}) (knowing, walking, etc.)
- Past participle (V_3) (supported, seen, etc.)
- Perfect participle (having + V_3) (having seen, having finished, etc.)
- PerfPct passive participle (having been + V_3) (having been told, having been seen, etc.)
- Perfect continuous participle (having been+ V_{ing}) (having been telling, having been listening, etc.)
- Farklı özne ile başlayan participle cümlecikleri
- Participle yapılarının özet tablosu

REVISION 356

GERUND & INFINITIVE & PARTICIPLE TEST 1..............................358

GERUND & INFINITIVE & PARTICIPLE TEST 2..............................360

8 NOUN CLAUSES

A. TYPES OF NOUNS CLAUSES (İsim Cümleciği Türleri) 364

- Soru Kelimeleri ile Oluşturulan İsim Cümlecikleri
- -ever Words
- 'Whether / If' ile Oluşturulan İsim Cümlecikleri
- 'That' ile Oluşturulan İsim Cümlecikleri

B. HOW TO USE 'THAT' CLAUSE WITH VERBS, ADJECTIVES AND NOUNS ('That Clause'un Fiiller, Sıfatlar ve İsimler ile Kullanımı)...............373

- That / The fact that

C. SUBJUNCTIVE 'Should' in 'That Clauses' ('That' ile Kurulan İsim Cümleciklerinde 'Should' Kullanımı)........384

D. REPORTED SPEECH (Dolaylı Anlatım) 387

- Tense Changes
- Modal Changes
- Pronoun Changes
- Place and Time Changes
- Reporting Statements
- Reporting Questions
- Reporting Commands

REVISION 392

NOUN CLAUSES TEST 1 396

NOUN CLAUSES TEST 2.......................398

9 IF & WISH CLAUSES

A. IF CLAUSES 402

- Zero Conditional
- First Conditional
- Second Conditional
- Third Conditional
- Mixed Conditional
  - If + Type 3 + Type 2
  - If + Type 2 + Type 3
- If it wasn't / weren't for …
  If it hadn't been for …
  But for …
- Inverted Conditional Sentences
  - Type 1
  - Type 2 / Mixed Type 2 + 3
  - Type 3 / Mixed Type 3 + 2
- Implied Conditional Sentences
- Other Conditional Structures
  - As / so long as
  - As if
  - As though
  - Even if
  - If not
  - If so
  - Imagine (that)
  - In case
  - In case of + noun
  - In the event of + noun
  - In the event that
  - On condition (that)
  - Only if
  - Otherwise
  - Provided / Providing (that)
  - Suppose / supposing (that)
  - Unless
  - What if …?

B. WISH CLAUSES 421

- Wish
- If only

REVISION 424
IF & WISH CLAUSES TEST 1 428
IF & WISH CLAUSES TEST 2 430

10 ADJECTIVES & ADVERBS

A. ADJECTIVES
(Sıfatlar) 434

- Participle Adjectives
  (Fiillerin Sıfatlaşmış Halleri)
- Compound Adjectives
  (Bileşik Sıfatlar)

B. ADVERBS
(Zarflar) 438

C. COMPARATIVE AND SUPERLATIVE FORMS OF ADJECTIVES / ADVERBS
(Karşılaştırma ve Üstünlük Bildiren Sıfatlar) 443

- The + Comparative …,
  the + comparative …

D. OTHER COMPARATIVE STRUCTURES
(Diğer Karşılaştırma Yapıları) 447

- as (adjective / adverb) … as
- so (adjective / adverb) … as
- such ((a / an) noun) … as
- as many / much / little (noun) … as
- too
- enough

REVISION 451
ADJECTIVES & ADVERBS TEST 1 454
ADJECTIVES & ADVERBS TEST 2 456

11 DETERMINERS

A. ARTICLES 460

- Indefinite Articles 'A / AN'
- Definite Article 'THE'
- 'A', 'AN' ya da 'THE' Kullanılmayan Yerler

B. QUANTIFIERS 466

- Some
- Any
- Many
- Much
- A lot of / lots of
- Plenty of
- A few
- A little
- Several
- A number of
- All
- Whole
- No
- None
- Each
- Every
- Either
- Neither
- Both
- A good / great deal of
- Most

- Miktar Belirten Kelimelerin 'of' ve Fiillerle Kullanımı
- Kendisinden sonra 'of + tekil isim + tekil fiil' alan yapılar
- Kendisinden sonra 'of + çoğul isim + tekil fiil' alan yapılar
- Kendisinden sonra 'of + çoğul isim + çoğul fiil' alan yapılar
- Kendisinden sonra 'of + çoğul isim + tekil / çoğul fiil' alan yapılar
- Kendisinden sonra 'of + sayılamayan isim + tekil fiil' alan yapılar

REVISION 486

DETERMINERS TEST 1 488

DETERMINERS TEST 2 490

12 PREPOSITIONS

- Edatlar ve Anlamları 494

A. PREPOSITIONS OF TIME (Zaman Bildiren Edatlar) 497

- In
- On
- At
- For
- Since
- From … to / till / until
- During
- Toward(s)
- After
- Before
- Throughout
- Until / Till
- By
- Between … and …
- Within

B. PREPOSITIONS OF PLACE AND MOVEMENT (Yer ve Hareket Bildiren Edatlar) 501

- In
- On
- At
- To
- From
- Into
- Out of
- (A)round
- Beyond
- By
- Past
- Through
- Across
- Along
- Among(st)
- Between
- Up
- Down
- Above
- Over
- Below

- Under / Underneath
- Beneath
- Against
- Opposite
- In front of
- Behind
- Beside
- Next to
- Near
- Nearby
- Inside
- Outside
- Onto
- Away from
- With
- Without
- Off
- Upon

C. PREPOSITIONAL PHRASES
(Edat Öbekleri) 512

- Noun + preposition
- Preposition + noun
- Adjective + preposition
- Verb + preposition

D. BAZI YAPILARLA EDATLARIN FARKLI KULLANIMLARI 518

REVISION 522
PREPOSITIONS TEST 1 524
PREPOSITIONS TEST 2 526

13 NOUNS & EXTRA SUBJECTS

A. SAYILABİLEN İSİMLER
(Countable Nouns) 530

- Tekil İsimler (Singular Nouns)
- Çoğul İsimler (Plural Nouns)
- Cins İsimler (Common Nouns)
- Özel İsimler (Proper Nouns)
- Soyut İsimler (Abstract Nouns)
- Topluluk İsimleri (Collective Nouns)

B. SAYILAMAYAN İSİMLER
(Uncountable Nouns) 534

C. HEM SAYILABİLEN HEM SAYILAMAYAN İSİMLER 535

D. POSSESSIVE NOUNS
(İyelik Belirten İsimler) 537

E. INVERTED SENTENCES
(Devrik Cümleler) 540

- Hardly …
- In no way …
- Little …
- Never …
- No sooner … than …
- Nowhere …
- On no account …
- Only later …
- Only then …
- Rarely …
- Scarcely … when …
- Seldom …
- … nor …
- … as …
- So … that …
- Such … that …

F. QUESTION TAGS
(Soru Eklentileri) 542

G. AGREEMENT / DISAGREEMENT
(Anlaşma / Uyuşmazlık) 546

H. EMPHATIC STRUCTURES
(Vurgulu Yapılar) 547

REVISION 547
NOUNS & EXTRA SUBJECTS TEST 1 ... 549
NOUNS & EXTRA SUBJECTS TEST 2 ... 551

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS 554

ANSWER KEY 563

PRONOUNS

1 PRONOUNS

İngilizcedeki Cümle Yapısı:

Subject	Verb	Object	Place	Time
(Özne)	(Fiil)	(Nesne)	(Yer)	(Zaman)
Jane	played	**tennis**	in the garden	yesterday.

'Jane' cümle içinde özne konumundadır ve 'tennis' de nesne konumundadır. Her ikisi de isimdir. **Zamirler ismin yerini tutan kelimelerdir**. Bu durumda hem özne hem de nesne bir zamirle yer değiştirebilir. 'Jane' özne olduğundan 'subject pronoun' ile; 'tennis' ise nesne olduğundan 'object pronoun' ile yer değiştirecektir. Aşağıdaki tabloda zamirler kullanım yerlerine göre verilmiştir.

Subject Pronouns	Object Pronouns	Possessive Adjectives	Possessive Pronouns	Reflexive Pronouns
I	me	my	mine	myself
you	you	your	yours	yourself
he	him	his	his	himself
she	her	her	hers	herself
it	it	its	its	itself
we	us	our	ours	ourselves
you	you	your	yours	yourselves
they	them	their	theirs	themselves

Aşağıdaki cümle için tablodan kullanım yerlerine uygun zamir seçildiğinde cümle şu şekilde değiştirilebilir:

- Jane played tennis in the garden yesterday.
  She played **it** in the garden yesterday.

Aşağıdaki benzer örnekleri inceleyiniz:

- My dog ran after the cats on the street today.
  It ran after **them** on the street today.
- Nicole and I have been good friends since high school.
  We have been good friends since high school.
- Nayman and Leo acted on the film together but only Leo became a celebrity.
  They acted on **it** together but only **he** became a celebrity.

A SUBJECT PRONOUNS (Özne Zamirleri)

1 Cümlede özne konumunda olan isimlerin yerini tutarlar. Bu zamirlerin kullanımına aşağıdaki örnekler verilebilir.

I	Cümleyi kuran kişinin isminin yerini tutar.
He	John, Mr Snow, policeman, husband, boy, uncle, actor, the King, etc.
She	Julia, Miss / Mrs Snow, policewoman, wife, girl, aunt, actress, the Queen, etc.
It	Dog, house, flower, city, Italy, Manchester, building, concept, idea , etc.
We	You and I, my family and I, Mary and I
You	Cümlede hitap edilen kişi veya kişilerin isminin yerini tutar.
They	John and Julia, houses, my parents, diseases, policemen, children, geese, etc. iki kişi

- Cold blooded animals have to sit in the sun in order to get the warmth **they** need.
  (they - Cold blooded animals)
- Steven woke up too early, so **he** went back to sleep.
  (he - Steven)
- Albert Einstein was only in his twenties when **he** came up with his famous theory.
  (he - Albert Einstein)
- It is important that the boss of a small company should know all his employees, so **he** can talk to them about their work.
  (he - the boss of a small company)
- Many fires broke out in the city after **it** was shaken by the earthquake.
  (it - the city)
- When Susan found out that she had been accepted into Harvard, **she** threw a big party.
  (she - Susan)
- Simon thought that **he** would be the only American in the language class.
  (he - Simon)
- Florida suffered from many floods and power cuts after **it** was hit by the hurricane.
  (it - Florida)

2 Ülke, bayrak, gemi ve araba gibi nesneler koruyucu özelliklerinden dolayı 'it' yerine 'she' zamiriyle birlikte de kullanılabilir.

- When they finished building the boat, they launched **her** into the water by the docks.
- According to legend, Rome got **her** start with the two brothers: Romulus and Remus.
- During World War Two, Britain suffered great damage when **her** cities were bombed.
- New Zealand doesn't have much history, but **she** is beautiful and green.
- The nation sent **her** great armies over the border and towards the enemy.
- The famous ship, Titanic, was sunk when **she** hit an iceberg.
- My car sometimes has trouble getting started but **she** always makes it in the end.
- Sarah owned a beautiful sports car. **She** could take 200 kilometres per hour.

3 ‘It’ zamiri özne olarak pek çok şeyin yerine kullanılabilir. Neyin yerini tuttuğunu cümlenin geri kalan kısmından ya da içeriğinden anlarız.

- I had no idea what was inside the box. When I opened **it**, I found that **it** was empty. *(Bir ismin yerine)*
- I wish I hadn’t answered the phone because **it** was my boss who was calling. *(Görülemeyen ya da bilinmeyen kişi)*
- **It** is supposed to snow tomorrow, so we will probably have to stay at home. *(Hava durumu)*
- Sometimes a cat wanders into our backyard and sometimes **it** comes into the house. *(Hayvan isimlerinin yerine)*
- **It** is getting late, so I should probably pack up and try to finish my project tomorrow. *(Zaman)*
- Every year Michelle’s birthday party gets bigger. This year **it** should be really fun! *(Cümlede nesnenin yerine)*
- **It** was never a problem **when we came into work late**, but the new boss doesn’t like it. *(Bir isim cümleciğinin yerine)*
- **It** was my friend, Tim, who got me into skiing and snowboarding. *(Vurgulu anlatım-cleft sentence)*
- **It**’s almost a two-day walk from the mountains back to the little village. *(Mesafe)*

4 Bir hayvanın cinsiyetini biliyorsak ya da bir taşıta cinsiyet yüklediysek, zamir olarak ‘it’ yerine ‘he’ veya ‘she’ kullanabiliriz.

- Kitty, our cat, is a member of our family and **she** is always so curious.
- Roger is a good dog. **He** is my best friend.
- My truck is the fastest one in the market. **She** always gets me wherever I want in time.

5 Yeni doğmuş bebeklerin cinsiyetini bilmiyorsak ‘it’ kullanılabilir.

- **Susan** : Sandra has had a baby.
  Damien : Oh, really? Is **it** a boy or a girl?
- Somebody left a baby in the garden of the mosque. **It** is crying. I think **it** is hungry.

6 ‘They’ ve ‘you’ zamirleri genelleme yapmak için kullanılabilir.

- **You** should always be respectful to elderly people.
- **You** should always try and do your best in high school so that **you** can get into a good university.
- If you don’t like your job, **you** can always look for a new one.
- **You** are the only one to blame if **you** end up getting fat.
- **They** say that if **you** want to succeed in life, **you** need to work hard.
- **They** say that in order to start a new business, **you** should do something differently from everyone else.
- ‘Bad news flies fast.’, **they** say.

7 ‘We’ öznesi ‘hepimiz’ anlamında genelleme yaparken kullanılır. ‘They’ ve ‘you’ zamirleriyle yapılan genellemeden farklı olarak bu kullanımda konuşmacı gruba kendisini de dahil etmektedir.

- As responsible citizens, **we** should vote in the elections.
- What **we** must do as human beings is to protect the environment and leave a better world to the next generations.

8 ‘I’ ile başka bir özne kullanılıyorsa, ‘I’ ikinci sırada kullanılır.

- **Ashton and I** both liked the meal we had at the restaurant last night.
- **Jeremiah, Tony and I** are in the same school. We study together after school.

B OBJECT PRONOUNS (Nesne Zamirleri)

1 Cümlede nesne konumunda olan isimlerin yerine kullanılırlar. Bu zamirler, genellikle fiillerden ve edatlardan (prepositions) sonra kullanılır.

I	me
He	him
She	her
It	it
We	us
You	you
They	them

2 **Verb + Object Pronoun**

- I gave Deborah a map to help **her** find the hotel that I had recommended.
  (her = Deborah)
- My friend asked me about the exam and I was able to give **him** some advice since I had taken **it** last year.
  (him = my friend) (it = the exam)
- Some people came to my door asking for some money for charity, so I gave **them** five dollars.
  (them = some people)
- There is a new student at our school and today the principal put **her** into our class.
  (her = the new student)
- Some animals can grow whiskers which help **them** to move around in the world.
  (them = some animals)
- When we are stressed out, our friends can help **us** and make **us** feel better.
  (us = we)
- The boss wants **us** all to finish working on our project before the end of the week.
  (us = we, the employees)

3 Preposition + Object Pronoun

Edatlar, kendi başlarına anlam taşımayan; ancak kendileriyle birlikte kullanılan kelimelerle anlam kazanan sözcüklerdir. (about, for, with, by, under, over, beneath, behind, than, like, as, etc.) Miktar belirten kelimelerden sonra kullanılan 'of' edatı da bu kurala dahildir. (some of ..., many of ..., etc.) Edatlardan sonra genellikle ismin yerini tutan bir nesne zamiri gelir.

- There is a very fat child in the elementary school and unfortunately the other children often pick on **him**.
  (him = the fat child)
- Of all the people who apply to jobs in our company, only a few of **them** get hired.
- There were just two of **us** waiting outside for the government office to open.
- Rachel asked Mike if he would share his pizza but he wanted to eat all of **it** himself.
- There were four of **us** in the group, but only two of **us** actually did any work on the assignment.
- When the employees weren't allowed to use the cafeteria anymore, many of **them** went to the boss to complain.
- When the food delivery came to the door, my brother and I argued about which one of **us** would have to go and get it.
- When the fire alarm goes off in the apartment, all of **you** who live there have to go outside.
- I don't know who in my house keeps leaving the fridge open, but it must be at least one of **us**.

Sample Questions 1

1. I haven't got enough money on ----.
A) me
B) I

- *Cümlede sorulan zamir edattan sonra geldiği için nesne zamiri olması gerekir. Bu yüzden cevap A'dır.*

2. Mandy is a hardworking student. ---- has promised her parents to pass the exam.
A) Her
B) She

- *Sorulan zamir fiilin önündedir. Fiillerden önce özne zamiri kullanılır. Bu yüzden doğru cevap B'dir.*

3. Even though the replacement parts for newer model cars are comparatively inexpensive, the amount charged for the labour to install ---- is high.
A) it
B) they
C) their
D) them
E) its

- *Cümlede sorulan zamir fiilden sonra geldiği için nesne zamiri olması gerekir. Bu yüzden cevap D'dir.*

4. We complained to ---- about the bad service.
A) them
B) they

5. My father helped ---- to pack although he didn't want ---- to leave.
A) I / I
B) us / we
C) me / me
D) my / I
E) I / my

6. Everybody wanted Jackie to join ----, so they called ---- many times before leaving for the picnic.
A) me / her
B) us / them
C) them / himself
D) them / her
E) her / them

7. She hasn't seen the papers which were sent to ---- from the university, so she still thinks they are not going to invite ---- to the conference.
A) her / her
B) her / she
C) her / him
D) I / her
E) her / she

8. My mother bought ---- a new car and I don't know how to thank ----. I am so happy.
A) me / she
B) I / her
C) my / him
D) its / me
E) me / her

1 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with subject pronouns or object pronouns.

1. My mother bought a lot of groceries from the supermarket, so I had to go out to the car and help ____________________ to carry them into the house.
2. I am extra tired this morning because I spent five minutes looking for my keys before realizing I already had ____________________ in my pocket.
3. If ____________________ want to find a cheap flight for your holiday, then you should book it at least a few months before you go.
4. I didn't tell my family that I was coming home for the holidays, so ____________________ were all surprised when I showed up at the house.
5. James wasn't doing very well in his chemistry class, so he was grateful when the teacher asked ____________________ if he needed extra help.
6. The history of the United States is not very long compared to many countries as ____________________ is a relatively new country.
7. When ____________________ won the award for the most creative art work, Lindsay decided that she wanted to be an artist.
8. Jamie didn't like the birthday present that his grandparents had given him, so he got rid of ____________________.
9. Sally wanted to buy another pair of shoes like the ones she already had but she couldn't remember where she had bought ____________________.
10. My friend, John, always struggles at school, so I often have to help ____________________ to study for tests and exams.

C POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES (İyelik Sıfatları)

1 İyelik sıfatları tek başına kullanılamaz. Çünkü bütün sıfatlar gibi bir ismi tanımlamaları gerekir. Bu yüzden bir ismin önünde kullanılırlar. Anlamları gereği ismin önüne geldiklerinde sahiplik belirtirler.

I	my
He	his
She	her
It	its
We	our
You	your
They	their

2 **Possessive adjective + noun:** my car, your thoughts, their name, its tail, etc.

- The police used **their** loudspeakers to tell everyone in the crowd that if they didn't go home, they would be arrested.
  (their - the police's)
- Sometimes when you have stocks in a company and that company starts to do badly, **your** best option is to sell **your** stocks.
  (your - people's)
- Travelling around the world and learning the customs of other cultures can help us to improve **our** understanding of other people.
  (our - people's)
- Wendy looked everywhere for **her** bicycle but she couldn't remember where she had left it and couldn't find it.
  (her - Wendy's)
- When a computer was first designed to be used by normal people at home, most people didn't understand **its** purpose.
  (its - the computer's)
- We all have to find **our** own way in life and figure out what we want to do and what will make us happy.
  (our - people's)
- Richard ran down the street as fast as **his** legs could carry him but it wasn't enough and he missed the bus.
  (his - Richard's)
- The students in the class started to become louder and louder until **their** teacher finally had to shout at them to be quiet.
  (their - the students')
- Rachel decided that it would be too much trouble to take **her** dog on holiday with her, so she left it at her mother's house.
  (her - Rachel's)

3 'Possessive -'s' yapısı aitlik belirtmek için kullanılır. Bu yüzden 'possessive adjective'ler ile aynı anlama gelmektedir. Sadece insanlar için kullanılır. Nesneler ve hayvanlar için 'of' kullanılır.

- **The reputation of their name** is at stake, so they must do something now.
- **Sarah's baby** is just ten months old, yet she has to go back to work.
- **One of my friends' dog** bit me and I had to get two shots to make sure I wouldn't get rabies.
- **Hazel and Matt's car** is broken, so I will have to take them to the airport.
- **The mane of a lion** indicates that it is a male.
- When **Paul's mother** found out that he had failed his math test, she made him stay in his room all weekend and study.

Sample Questions

2

1. **There was a time when city residents didn't have to worry about locking ---- doors.**

A) his
B) her
C) them
D) their
E) us

- *Yukarıdaki örnekte 'locking ---- doors' öbeğine baktığımızda, boşluğun bir fiilden sonra ve bir isimden önce geldiğini görmekteyiz. Fiili görüp boşluğa sadece 'object pronoun' geleceğini düşünmek yanlıştır. Bu şekilde düşünmeyip boşluktan sonrasına da bakmamız gerekir. Boşluktan sonra isim varsa, oraya 'possessive adjective' gelir. 'Residents' çoğul olduğu için doğru cevap D seçeneğidir.*

2. **In the latter part of ---- life, Einstein spent most of ---- time working for peace.**

A) his / his
B) him / himself
C) his / him
D) himself / his
E) him / him

- *Her iki boşluktan sonra da isim gelmektedir. Doğal olarak boşluğa gelecek yapının ismi tanımlıyor olması gerekmektedir. Bahsedilen şahıs Einstein olduğundan, 'onun' anlamına gelen 'his' her iki boşluk için de doğru cevaptır.*

4 ‘Possessive adjective’ler ile ‘a, an, the, these’ gibi niteleyiciler kullanılmaz.

- I have ~~a my desk~~ at work and it is separated from everyone's, so I can work alone. ↳ *(my desk)*
- We have decided to open ~~the our restaurant~~ because we are very experienced and ~~an our boss~~ is not paying us enough. ↳ *(our restaurant)* ↳ *(our boss)*

5 Vurguyu artırmak için, ‘possessive adjective’ler ile isim arasına ‘own’ yapısı getiririz. ‘Own’ yapısı ‘of’ ile de kullanılır.

‘Possessive adjective’lerden sonra ‘own’ getirildiğinde var olan sahiplik anlamını pekiştirmiş oluruz.

- **possessive adjective + own + noun:** his own room, her own house, our own shop, etc.

- **A few of my own friends** betrayed me. You can imagine my disappointment.
- **Some of their own products' sales** are only done on the Internet. Even they buy them online.
- **Many of my own designs** will be shown on this exhibit, so please come.

D POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS (İyelik Zamirleri)

1 ‘Possessive adjective’ler sıfat oldukları için bir ismi nitelemek amacıyla kesinlikle bir isimden önce kullanılırlar. ‘Possessive pronoun’lar ise zamir olduklarından zaten hem ismin hem de ‘possessive adjective’in yerini tutarlar. Doğal olarak arkalarından bir isim gelmez.

Her ikisinin yerine de kullanıldıklarından dolayı sahiplik belirtirler ve bir şeyin kime, neye ait olduğunu belirtirler.

My	mine
His	his
Her	hers
Its	its*
Our	ours
Your	yours
Their	theirs

2 **Possessive adjective + noun = possessive pronoun**

my car = **mine**
your pen = **yours**
their house = **theirs**

⚠ ***Not*** ** ‘Possessive Pronouns’ olarak ‘its’ genelde kullanılmaz. Daha çok ‘own’ ile birlikte kullanılır.*

- *I love this book. It has a great style of **its own**.*

⚠ ***Not*** *Kullanıma dikkat ediniz!*
***its**: onun,*
***it’s**: it is / it has*

- This week some new people who seem quite nice moved into the big old house that is next to **mine**.
  (mine - my house)
- My country has many economic problems and nobody really likes our present situation. **Yours** seems to be a lot better.
  (yours - your present situation)
- Debbie’s bike had a flat tire and she was in a hurry to get to work, so she asked Jeanne if she could borrow **hers**.
  (hers - Jeanne’s bike)
- The other company has released a new product which is cheap, but **ours** has higher quality.
  (ours - our product)

- Jimmie didn't have enough sauce for his pasta, so he asked his roommate if he could use some of **his** and replace it later.
  (his - his roommate's sauce)
- **Mine** is a very noisy and crowded city which can be fun, but I think I would rather live in the countryside.
  (Mine - my city)
- We thought that we had done a really good job on our project but when we saw the other team, we realized that **theirs** was much better.
  (theirs - the other team's project)
- My job is a really good one because I am paid well and have many holidays. **Yours** doesn't seem to be as good.
  (Yours - your job)

3 'Possessive pronoun'lar bir cümlenin öznesi olarak kullanılabilirler. Yani 'Subject + Verb + Object' dizilimini düşündüğümüzde, 'Possessive pronoun'lardan sonra fiil gelebilir. 'Possessive pronoun'un yerine kullanıldığı isim tekil ise 'tekil fiil', çoğul ise 'çoğul fiil' kullanılır.

- Her eyes are beautiful but **mine** are better than hers.
- They have received my package but **theirs** hasn't reached me yet.
- Amanda rejected my offer saying **hers** was more appropriate.

4 'Possessive pronoun'lar 'preposition'lardan sonra da kullanılabilirler.

- If you don't know how to do your homework, you can look at **mine**.
- Sheila couldn't fit into her dress, so she put on **mine** to see if it fits.
- I am responsible for my actions and you are responsible for **yours**.

5 **Double Possessive:** a ... (kişi / nesne) ... of ... (possessive pronoun)... .
Belirli bir kelime sırası gerektiren 'double possessive' yapısında, 'possessive pronoun' veya iyelik bildiren '-'s' eki almış bir isim kullanılır.

- **a friend of mine** = one of my friends
  (bir arkadaşım, arkadaşlarımdan biri)
- **a customer of ours** = one of our customers
  (bir müşterimiz, müşterilerimizden biri)
- **a student of theirs** = one of their students
  (onların öğrencilerinden biri)
  - Bu yapı iyelik bildiren '-'s' ile de kullanılabilir.
    - **a patient of Jane's** = one of Jane's patients
      (Jane'in bir hastası)

- **A pet of my parents'** has run off and we cannot find it anywhere.
- **A neighbour of Karen's** told me about the Brungsteen family and their disabled child.
- **A customer of Ferdinand's** visits the bank more often than needed and I think she is in love with him.
- **A friend of ours** is coming to see us at the weekend.
- **A co-worker of Taylor's** asked me out on a date after he met me at Taylor's party.
  - Bu yapı sadece kişilerden değil, nesnelerden bahsederken de kullanılabilir.
    - The painting on the wall is **a picture of my father's**.
      (Duvardaki tablo babamın resimlerinden biridir.)
      - *Bu cümlede resmin sahibi belirtilmektedir. Resim babama aittir.*
    - The painting on the wall is **a picture of my father**.
      (Duvardaki tablo babamın bir resmidir.)
      - *Bu cümlede resimdeki kişi belirtilmektedir. Resimde babam vardır.*

Sample Questions

3

1. The Greek philosopher, Theophrashus, followed the steps of Plato and Aristotle; indeed, he was a student of ----.

A) they
B) their
C) themselves
D) them
E) theirs

- *Cümledeki 'a student of ----' öbeği 'double possessive' yapısıdır. Bu yüzden boşlukta 'possessive pronoun' kullanmamız gerekir. Dolayısıyla doğru cevap E'dir.*

2. A client of ---- that develops medical devices from concept to productions is looking to add a mechanical engineer to ---- staff.

A) my / my
B) ours / his
C) yours / hers
D) hers / ours
E) hers / theirs

- *Cümledeki 'a client of ----' öbeği 'double possessive' yapısıdır. Bu yüzden birinci boşluğa 'possessive pronoun' getirmemiz gerekir. İkinci boşluktan sonra isim var ve ismi tanımlamak için önüne 'possessive adjective' gelir. Dolayısıyla doğru cevap B'dir.*

3. Everybody has a story to tell and I'd like to share ----.

A) my
B) its
C) itself
D) me
E) mine

4. Every nation can criticize their election system as the French criticize ----.

A) mine
B) herself
C) theirs
D) its
E) them

5. The seven wonders of the ancient world all had ---- unique beauty and *the Temple of Artemis* had its own, for sure.

A) their
B) itself
C) herself
D) his
E) it

6. Adele asked her mother for ---- car but she said she needed it and that she should get ---- repaired.

A) his / her own
B) hers / herself
C) our / his
D) its / she
E) her / hers

2 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with possessive adjectives or possessive pronouns.

1. Building model planes is a hobby of ____________________ that I started doing when I was just a little child.
2. If you think that ____________________ job is just too stressful, it may be a good idea for you to start looking for a new one.
3. When his plane crashed in the middle of nowhere, Tommy knew that ____________________ best chance of being found was to build a big fire.
4. The restaurant had only been open for a few weeks but ____________________ tables were already fully booked each night.
5. I hope that our presentation goes much better than ____________________, since only one group can receive top grades.
6. When Brittany's mother fell and broke ____________________ hip, Brittany decided that it was time to move her into a retirement home.
7. My favourite hobbies are playing video games and also drawing pictures. What are ____________________?
8. My friends and I sat at ____________________ favourite table in the park, playing cards, talking, joking and eating sandwiches.
9. When my sister Sandra's house burned down in a fire, I told her she could stay at ____________________ until she found somewhere new to live.
10. David had been so busy at work that he had almost forgotten that ____________________ birthday was coming up in just a few days.

3 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with possessive adjectives or possessive pronouns.

1. Their office is located on the east side of the city. ____________________ can be found on the opposite side in the western part.
2. When Judy's phone died at the end of the night, she asked Simon if she could borrow ____________________ to make a quick phone call.
3. The clothes store advertised ____________________ special weekend deal on several billboards around town as well as on the radio.
4. Ben's Rolex watch, which ____________________ father had given him, was the most valuable thing that he owned.
5. Ashley drove a small, cheap car which she had never worried about. Her husband, however, made sure that ____________________ was expensive.
6. Sheila and her husband, Dustin, each had ____________________ offices in the same building, though they worked for different companies.
7. Every weekend, Kirsten would take ____________________ bike out of the shed and go riding on the bike trails by the sea.
8. ____________________ family don't see each other much during the year, but we always meet for a big party around Christmas.
9. When ____________________ country fell into a civil war, the Murphy family decided that it was the right time to move somewhere else.
10. I noticed that Tom forgot to bring a computer today, so I told him he could borrow ____________________ since I didn't need to use it anyway.

4

EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with object pronouns, possessive adjectives or possessive pronouns.

1. Yesterday my daughter introduced me to a new friend of ____________________ that she met at school.
2. If you let ____________________ borrow your computer today, I will let you borrow ____________________ whenever you need it.
3. Last weekend John let us go and stay in ____________________ holiday house by the beach.
4. The doctor gave me a new type of medicine for my headaches but he told me not to take ____________________ too often.
5. Usually when we all clean the house, at least one of ____________________ will be lazy and not do a good job.
6. The famous singer told his fans on Twitter that he would be releasing ____________________ new album in two days.
7. Sometimes my wife's car doesn't start in the mornings, so she takes ____________________ and I take the train to work.
8. 'Show ____________________ what cards you are holding and I will show you ____________________,' said the player.
9. Although ____________________ art really isn't very good, we still like to hang it on the walls in our house.
10. A friend of ____________________ started a new job today and I hope it goes really well for her.

E REFLEXIVE PRONOUNS (Dönüşlü Zamirler)

I	myself	*kendim*
You	yourself	*kendin*
He	himself	*kendisi*
She	herself	*kendisi*
It	itself	*kendisi*
We	ourselves	*kendimiz*
You	yourselves	*kendiniz*
They	themselves	*kendileri*

1 Dönüşlü zamirler (reflexive pronouns), eylemi yapanın da eylemden etkilenenin de aynı kişi veya nesne olduğu durumlarda kullanılır.

- Janice decided that over the weekend she would take a really good look at **herself** and her life and decide what changes she should make.
- The last two times my co-workers tried to plan a surprise party, they messed it up, so this time I will plan it **myself**.
- Sometimes, if you have a personal problem in your life, it is best to deal with it **yourself** rather than involving others.
- I thought Jason was doing his assignment as part of a group but it looks like he is doing it **himself**.
- Some people are good at helping others and giving good advice but are unable to help **themselves**.
- When we arrived at the breakfast buffet, the waiter informed us that we could help **ourselves** to any of the food on the tables.
- When climbing tall mountains, it is often not just the difficulty of the climbing **itself**, but the low oxygen levels that make it so tiring.
- Jessica decided that she would just do the entire project **herself** rather than relying on her group members who seemed a bit useless.
- Some animals are brightly coloured to let other animals know they are poisonous, which is a kind of protection for **themselves**.
- Our boss told us that a team of engineers as good as **ourselves** were going to join us on the next project.

2 Bir özneyi veya nesneyi vurgulamak için dönüşlü zamiri özneden veya nesneden hemen sonra kullanabiliriz.

- We decided that it would be better if the group members **themselves** asked the teacher for an extension.
- I **myself** thought that it would be a good idea, so I was shocked when the plan failed totally.
- It was the general **himself** who fought at the front line with the soldiers and helped them push into the enemy city.
- David decided he would simply focus on the work **itself** and ignore all the gossip and drama from his co-workers.
- Even though she told us that she is scared of heights, Sandra **herself** has volunteered to be the first one to jump off the bridge into the river.
- Humans **themselves** are in fact animals, despite many people viewing them as being separate from nature.
- I decided to speak to the boss **himself** about giving us all an extra day off after the weekend.
- A good archer will focus only on the target **itself** and not on the bow he is holding or his own body.

3 **By myself (= on my own):** Bu yapı öznenin bir işi kendi başına, kimsenin yardımı olmadan yaptığını anlatmak için kullanılır. (by yourself = on your own, by himself = on his own, etc.)

- Elaine saw a young girl sitting **by herself** at the bus stop and crying, so she went to see if the girl was alright.
  (by herself - alone)
- Stephanie decided that she would rather do the work **by herself** than have to deal with another bad group.
  (by herself - on her own)
- Howard swam **by himself** in the river. It was his favourite place to swim as nobody else was around.
  (by himself - alone)
- Ever since his parents died, the boy has felt that he is totally **by himself** in the world.
  (by himself - alone)
- At first Hamish thought that he would need help putting together the furniture, but he soon found that he could do it **by himself**.
  (by himself - on his own)
- Lindsay stayed at the office all night so that she could finish the report **by herself** and impress her boss.
  (by herself - on her own)
- Jane watched the birds in the sky and noticed that one of them had flown away from the group and was heading in the opposite direction **by itself**.
  (by itself - alone)
- As Leroy continued to watch, all the rest of the birds flew over the hill and the other single bird was left **by itself** in the sky.
  (by itself - alone)

4 Bazı fiiller kendilerinden sonra sıklıkla dönüşlü zamir alır. Bu fiiller şunlardır:

amuse enjoy kill blame help prepare cut
hurt satisfy dedicate introduce teach busy dry

- She hurt **herself** while she was playing tennis with her father the other day.
- Let me introduce **myself** and tell you a little about who I am.
- Enjoy **yourself** and make yourself at home.

5 Bazı fiiller dönüşlü zamirlerle kullanıldığında anlamı değişebilir.

- Do you want to **help yourself** to another drink? *(help yourself: buyurmak, almak)*
- I wish the children would **behave themselves**. *(behave themselves: uslu durmak)*

6 İnsanların kendisi için ve kendilerine yaptığı bilinen bazı eylemlerden sonra (wash, dress, shave, etc.) dönüşlü zamir kullanılmaz fakat 'dry' ve 'enjoy'dan sonra kullanılır.

- He always **shaves** ~~himself~~ in cold water.
- She got out of the pool and **dried herself**. (✓)
- I **enjoyed myself** a lot while I was on holiday. (✓)

⚠ *Not* *Kişinin özel bir durumu varsa yukarıdaki maddede bahsedilen fiiller dönüşlü zamirlerle de kullanılabilir.*

- *He **dressed himself** despite his injuries. (✓)*
- *Your child is old enough to **wash himself**. (✓)*

7 Dönüşlü zamirler edatlardan sonra kullanılabilir, fakat yer belirten edatlar (prepositions of place) ve 'ile' anlamındaki 'with' edatından sonra dönüşlü zamir kullanılmaz. Bunun yerine nesne zamiri kullanılır.

- He was feeling very sorry for **himself**. *(✓ - yer belirtmiyor)*
- I didn't have my phone on **me** / ~~**myself**~~, so I had to ask a stranger if I could use theirs. *('Myself' yerine 'me' kullanmamız gerekir, çünkü 'on' yer belirtiyor.)*
- She dropped the pen behind **her** / ~~**herself**~~ as she walked.
- He threw the ball far in front of **him** / ~~**himself**~~.

⚠ *Not* *Özneyi vurgulayan dönüşlü zamirler her zaman özneyi takip etmek zorunda değildir.*

- *I think you should talk to the teacher **yourself**. (bizzat sen, kendin)*
- *Mel needs to learn how to do her homework **herself**. I can't be there to help her all the time.*

⚠ *Not* *'On one's own' ve 'of one's own' yapıları birbirleriyle karıştırılmamalıdır. 'On my own' yapısı **'kendi başıma'** anlamına gelirken, 'of my own' yapısı **'kendime ait'** demektir.*

- *She lives **on her own**. (= by herself - kendi başına)*
- *She had never had a room **of her own** before she herself rented a small house near her school. (= that belongs to her - kendisine ait)*

Not *Aynı cümlenin nesnesi, dönüşlü zamir ya da nesne zamiri olduğunda anlam değiştirmektedir.*

- *I thought the classroom was empty but when I went in, I saw Claire whispering to **herself**.*
  (Sınıfın boş olduğunu düşünüyordum, fakat içeri girdiğimde Claire'in kendi kendine konuştuğunu gördüm.)
  ***herself:** Claire'in kendisi*
- *I thought the classroom was empty but when I went in, I found Claire and Jane, and Claire was whispering to **her**.*
  (Sınıfın boş olduğunu düşünüyordum, fakat içeri girdiğimde Claire ve Jane'i gördüm ve Claire ona fısıldıyordu.)
  ***her:** Jane*
- *The children were playing in the garden. They had some toys. They were touching **them**. The children then were touching **themselves**, thus spreading the viruses.*

Sample Questions

4

1. **Generally speaking, during most conversations, people like to talk more about ----.**

A) him
B) his
C) by themselves
D) they
E) themselves

2. **We need to be well-prepared to defend ---- against public health hazards.**

A) mine
B) ourselves
C) our
D) themselves
E) myself

3. **It's amazing that my sister learnt to drive ---- in just one day.**

A) on her own
B) her own
C) oneself
D) hers
E) of her own

4. **For the time being, I'm sharing the computer at home with my elder brother but I wish I had a computer ----.**

A) each other
B) itself
C) by itself
D) by myself
E) of my own

5. **Tracy Chapman, a great singer, learnt how to play the guitar ----. She then found out about her amazing voice and singing skills.**

A) of her own
B) by herself
C) hers
D) oneself
E) her own

6. **Within the indigenous people of the forest, you must hunt ---- or in groups of two if you are willing to share the meat afterwards.**

A) by myself
B) each other
C) with your own
D) yourselves
E) on your own

5 **EXERCISE:**

Fill in the blanks with a suitable reflexive pronoun or by + reflexive pronoun.

1. If you want to be successful in life, it is important that you learn how to do things ____________________.
2. The boss complained about all the employees and how lazy they were, but he ____________________ didn't come to work at least once a week.
3. Theo liked to tell people that he had built his house all ____________________, but the truth was he had hired some people to help him.
4. The teacher told the students that for this assignment, there would be no groups and they would have to work ____________________.
5. A bridge usually needs to be checked and maintained often because if it is left ____________________, it may become weak and collapse.
6. Sarah had always thought of ____________________ as a hardworking, intelligent person, so she was not worried about going to university.
7. The young boy walked through the park ____________________, looking for his mother whom he had lost.
8. When I don't understand a foreign word, I always try to work out the meaning ____________________ before asking someone else.
9. The nanny was fired after it was discovered that she had left the children ____________________ for several hours.
10. Sometimes Elaine talked to ____________________ while she worked at her desk, or when she was walking alone.

6 **EXERCISE:**

Fill in the blanks with a suitable reflexive pronoun or by + reflexive pronoun.

1. The idea of starting a business ____________________ may sound like a great idea, but in reality it is very hard to do successfully.
2. The Miller family tried to rebuild their burnt shed ____________________, but they soon realised they needed professionals to do it.
3. The tourists were given an hour at lunchtime to eat and enjoy ____________________ before they had to be back on the bus.
4. It is hard work for many people to lose weight. I ____________________ like to eat candy bars and chips, and don't like exercise very much.
5. Henry didn't like to leave his dog ____________________ when he went away for the weekend, so he usually left it at a pet hotel.
6. Benjamin knew many people who loved to travel. He ____________________ preferred to stay at home in his own town.
7. You can learn a new language ____________________ with the right tools, lots of hard work, and practice.
8. Richard liked to walk down by the lake early on Sunday mornings when nobody else was around and he could have it all to ____________________.
9. Mary decided that she would call the company ____________________ instead of waiting for a co-worker to do it.
10. My older brothers always help me out when I need money even if they ____________________ are having money problems.

F INDEFINITE PRONOUNS (Belgisiz Zamirler)

-one	-body	-thing	-where
someone (Birisi)	somebody (Birisi)	something (Bir şey)	somewhere (Bir yer)
anyone (Hiç kimse; herhangi biri)	anybody (Hiç kimse; herhangi biri)	anything (Hiçbir şey; herhangi bir şey)	anywhere (Hiçbir yer; herhangi bir yer)
no one (Hiç kimse)	nobody (Hiç kimse)	nothing (Hiçbir şey)	nowhere (Hiçbir yer)
everyone (Herkes)	everybody (Herkes)	everything (Her şey)	everywhere (Her yer)

1

Some: (+) Olumlu cümlelerde kullanılır.
(?) İstek, rica veya teklif belirten soru cümlelerinde kullanılır.

No: (+) Sadece olumlu cümlelerde kullanılır. Olumsuz anlama gelir.

Any: (+) Olumlu cümlelerde 'herhangi' anlamında,
(-) / (?) Olumsuz cümleler ve soru cümlelerinde 'hiç' anlamında kullanılır.

⚠ **Not** *'Every' bütün cümle yapılarıyla kullanılır. Olumsuz cümlelerde anlama dikkat edilmelidir. Olumlu cümlelerin zıttı değildir.*

- I don't like **everything** about Joseph. I only like certain things.
- **Everybody** wanted to speak but only James was given the chance.
- He travelled **everywhere** in the world.
- They wanted to eat **everything**, so they thought the food wasn't enough.

2

Sonu 'body' ve 'one' ile bitenler insanlar için, 'thing' ile bitenler nesneler için, 'where' ile bitenler ise yer belirtmek için kullanılır.

- It seemed that Anita could see people laughing and having a good time **everywhere** she looked.
- King Midas was a character from Greek mythology who turned **everything** that he touched into gold.
- Jane saw blue cars like her own **everywhere** she looked in the parking lot.
- Jason always tried his best but it seemed that **everything** he did always went wrong one way or another.
- Sometimes it seems that **everyone** in my apartment likes to make as much noise as they can when I'm trying to get to sleep.
- When Jenny missed a week of school, she thought that **everybody** would be talking about it but they weren't.

3 Bir belgisiz zamir özne olarak kullanıldığında ardından her zaman tekil bir fiil gelir. (is, has, was, goes, makes, flies)

- There **is somebody** in my class who always **wants** to tell the teacher some useless story and interrupt the lesson.
- '**Anyone** who **is** flying on first class can board the plane now,' said the woman.
- It looks like **someone has** forgotten to lock the front door of the house again.
- **Nowhere** in this city **is** there a park that is not full of people.
- **Everyone is** waiting outside of the doors for the professor to come and start the class.
- It seems that **somebody has** asked the bus driver to stop to be able to use the bathroom.

4 Belgisiz zamirleri kullandıktan sonra, bu zamirleri kastederek yerlerine kullanacağımız zamirler genellikle çoğul olur. (they, their, them, theirs) Fakat bazen 'he' ve türevleri de kullanılabilir. (he, his, him)

- **Everybody** was too scared of the teacher to ask what would happen to **him** if **he** didn't hand in **his** homework.
  Everybody was too scared of the teacher to ask what would happen to **them** if **they** didn't hand in **their** homework.
- **Everybody** has to make **their** own choice about what **they** want to study at university.
- **Nobody** had bothered to ask where the tour guide was taking **him** / **them**.
- **Everybody** who believes in karma thinks that if **they** are good then the universe will reward **them**.
- **Nobody** should have to die alone in hospital without anyone coming to visit **him** / **them**.
- **Nobody** wants to go out tomorrow because **they** all have a lot of work to do.

5 Bir önceki kural, sonu 'thing' ve 'where' ile biten zamirler için geçerli değildir. Bu zamirlerle 'it' kullanılır. Bu kural 'Question Tags' yapısı için önemlidir.

- **Everything** went wrong, didn't it?
- **Something** is burning in the kitchen. Put it out.
- **Something** hit my car as I was driving but I have no idea what it was.
- There is **something** in my eye. Could you take it out, please?

6 Kişiler için kullanılan belgisiz zamirlere aitlik anlamı katmak için ''s' eklenir; yer ve nesne belirtenlerle ise 'the … of …' yapısı kullanılır.

- We were staying in **somebody's** house during our holiday.
- We don't want to waste **anybody's** time, so we'll cut it short.
- The clerk at the desk reported that **someone's** identity card had been stolen.
- The real value of **something** lies in the hardships you bear while trying to get it.
- The map of **somewhere** shows where it is in the world.

7 'Some' ile başlayan belgisiz zamirlerin kullanım yerleri aşağıdaki gibidir:

a **Olumlu cümlelerde kullanılır.**

- **Somebody** once told me that the point of life is to find out the meaning of life for you.
- I know that I left my keys **somewhere** around the house but I just can't find them.
- When James saw his friend collapse onto the floor, he knew that he should do **something**.
- Sam hoped that **someone** would come and explain to him what he was supposed to be doing at his new job.

b **Teklif, rica ve öneri belirten soru cümlelerinde kullanılır.**

- You look thirsty. Would you like to drink **something** cold?
- We are starving, so could you give us **something** to eat?
- Shall we go **somewhere** quiet to talk about this matter?

8 'Any' ile başlayan belgisiz zamirlerin kullanım yerleri aşağıdaki gibidir:

a **'Herhangi' anlamında olumlu cümlelerde ve soru cümlelerinde kullanılır.**

- Is there **anything** I can do to help you, madam? *(Size yardım etmek için yapabileceğim herhangi bir şey var mı hanımefendi?)*
- Thomas decided that he didn't care where he went on vacation as long as it was **anywhere** away from his city.
- David asked all his friends if they knew **anybody** who could help him get tickets to the concert.
- A remote control always seems to be in the last place **anyone** would think to look.
- Our teacher told us that if we didn't come to class, he wouldn't do **anything** to help us with our assignments.
- Rob told his wife that he was happy eating **anywhere** that she wanted to go.
- **Anybody** can learn to cook if they start with the basics.
- Some people will happily chat with **anyone** they meet on the street.

b **'Hiç' anlamında olumsuz cümlelerde ve soru cümlelerinde kullanılır.**

- Has **anyone** seen you on your way home? *(Eve giderken seni hiç kimse gördü mü?)*
- When I was a young child, I thought that there wasn't **anyone** I could trust.

Not *'Any' ile başlayan zamirler olumsuz cümlelerde özne olarak kullanılamaz. Onun yerine 'no' ile başlayan zamirler kullanılır.*

- *~~Anything~~ can't be done to get over the problem.*

  Bu cümle ile verilmek istenen anlam şu şekilde belirtilebilir:
- ***Nothing** can be done to get over the problem.*

⚠ Not *'Any' ile başlayan cümleler olumlu cümlelerde kullanıldıklarında olumsuzluk belirtmez; 'herhangi biri, herhangi bir yer' ve 'herhangi bir şey' anlamına gelir.*

- *I told my kids that we could go **anywhere** they wanted for vacation, so now we are going to Disneyland.*
- *I don't know if there is **anything** more relaxing in the world than sleeping on a Saturday morning.*

9 **'No' ile başlayan belgisiz zamirler:**

Kendi içlerinde olumsuz anlam barındırdıkları için sadece olumlu düz cümlelerde kullanılırlar, çünkü İngilizcede bir cümlede iki olumsuz yapı bulunamaz. 'No' ile başlayan bu zamirler cümleyi olumsuz yapar.

- **Nobody** ~~wasn't~~ paying any attention to what Louis was doing, so he decided to sneak out of work twenty minutes early. (X)
  Nobody was paying any attention to what Louis was doing, so he decided to sneak out of work twenty minutes early. (✓)
- **Nobody** in Harold's life ~~wasn't~~ as important to him as were his father and mother. (X)
  Nobody in Harold's life was as important to him as were his father and mother. (✓)

⚠ Not *'No' ile başlayan bir yapıyı ya da olumsuz anlam taşıyan herhangi bir yapıyı 'any' ile oluşturulan belgisiz zamirler takip eder.*

- *As I moved here two days ago, I barely know **anyone** in town.*
- *It seems that nobody knows **anything** about the robbery.*
- *He must have entered the house without **anybody** seeing him.*
- *She slammed the door and left home without saying **anything**.*

10 Belgisiz zamirlerden sonra 'else' kelimesini daha önce söylediğimiz kişi veya nesnelere ekleme yapmak amacıyla kullanabiliriz. 'Else' cümleye 'başka' anlamı katmaktadır.

- It seemed that **nobody else** wanted any more food, so Monica ate the rest.
  (başka hiç kimse...)
- We are sick of our gardener doing a bad job in the garden, so we have started to look for **someone else** to replace him. *(... başka biri ...)*
- There is **nowhere else** in the world that is as high above sea level as the top of Mount Everest.
- If you want to invest in the stock market, it is a good idea to ignore what **everyone else** is doing and do your own research.
- Jonathan always preferred to let **someone else** take charge during group projects.
- Michelle made sure that **nobody else** could see her behind the bushes before she changed into her swimwear.
- After Bill cleaned up his room, he asked his mother if there was **anything else** he should do.
- I didn't think that movie was very good but **everybody else** seemed to have enjoyed it.

11 Belgisiz zamirleri niteleyen sıfatlar bu zamirlerden sonra kullanılır. Aslında burada sıfat cümleciği kısaltması (reduction) vardır.

- Lea said that we should go **somewhere quiet** so that we can talk about it without anyone hearing us.
  (= somewhere ~~that is~~ quiet)
- Billy liked talking about trains to **anyone interested**, which was usually no one.
  (= anyone ~~who is~~ interested)
- I'm trying to find **somewhere cheap** to stay when I go on my vacation to Thailand.
  (= somewhere ~~that is~~ cheap)
- I couldn't see **anywhere nice** to stop and have lunch, so I just drove through the town without stopping.
  (= anywhere ~~that was~~ nice)
- I would like to find **something pretty** to buy for my wife for her birthday, maybe a necklace.
  (= something ~~that is~~ pretty)
- Timothy said **something rude** under his breath, but luckily, his boss didn't hear it.
  (= something ~~that was~~ rude)
- **Someone tall and overweight** stood in front of James at the concert, so he could hardly see what was going on.
  (= someone ~~who was~~ tall and overweight)
- I looked around on the website to see if there would be **anything fun** to do at the hotel we were going to stay in.
  (= anything ~~that was~~ fun)

Sample Questions

5

1. **I went to the Bakers' house but there was ---- to help me.**
A) nobody B) nothing

2. **The fridge is empty. We need to buy ---- for dinner.**
A) someone B) something

3. **I don't want to talk to Loreen. I barely have ---- to say to her.**
A) nothing B) anything

4. **Mike is a huge fan of Jennifer Lawrence. He knows ---- about her.**
A) everything B) nothing

5. **I want to travel ----, see the whole world and meet new people.**
A) somewhere B) everywhere

6. **---- in the entire world can make me as happy as my children. They are the light of my life.**
A) Someone B) Nobody

7. **Luke never speaks his mind even when ---- pushes him to his limits. He is the definition of 'shy'.**
A) someone B) anyone

8. **I lost my keys last night but they can be ---- I was yesterday, so I will wait for someone to find them and bring them to me.**
A) nowhere B) anywhere

7

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with indefinite pronouns.

1. Like most young children, Jimmy was afraid of dark caves. He felt that there must be ____________________ bad inside.
2. I don't think that making videos of your cat playing all day is ____________________ special, most children can do that.
3. ____________________ volunteered when the teacher asked for the answer to a hard question on the whiteboard.
4. The house was messy after the dinner party. I am sure ____________________ will have to put things back in order.
5. I can tell he was unprepared because he didn't have ____________________ to say during the job interview with my boss.
6. I am sure there's ____________________ at home because I rang the bell and they didn't come and open the door.
7. ____________________ once told me that it is difficult to drive in the rain because of the slippery conditions.
8. One of the most important pieces of advice that my parents gave me was that ____________________ is impossible with hard work.
9. It is my belief that ____________________ is possible with lots of hard work and dedication.
10. One key aspect of really successful people is their ability to see ____________________ that others cannot see.

8

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with indefinite pronouns.

1. It is always important to hire ____________________ professional, so you can guarantee that they are going to do the job properly.
2. Charles Dickens is my favourite author of all times. I have already read ____________________ that he wrote.
3. I was so embarrassed when I arrived at the picnic because I forgot to bring ____________________ to share with the others.
4. When I heard the noise, I opened the window but there was ____________________ out there. It must have been a cat.
5. After coming back home from my long journey, I can truthfully say, there's ____________________ like home.
6. It is always difficult for anyone, especially for children, to move to a new place where they don't know ____________________.
7. After getting my dream job in the city, I didn't feel like going ____________________ in the world.
8. When people are depressed, they feel that they do not have ____________________ to talk to or listen to their problems.
9. The city centre was full during the parade. There were people ____________________ you looked.
10. The lesson was very easy in my opinion. I believe ____________________ could have passed it.

G RECIPROCAL PRONOUNS (İşteş Zamirler)

each other
one another
} 'Birbirlerini', 'birbirlerine' anlamına gelir. Eylemlerden her iki özne de etkilenir.

1 Bu zamirleri kullanabilmek için özne mutlaka çoğul olmalıdır ve iki öznenin de aynı eylemi yapıyor olması gerekir.

- Janice and Michael seem to like **each other** / **one another**. (= Janice seems to like Michael and Michael seems to like Janice.)
- Ricky and Troy seem to enjoy working with **each other** as they always sit together in class.
- The students relied on **one another** to tell them what the homework was when they missed class.
- Eugene and Carlos worked in office and they helped **each other** when the workload was heavy.
- My uncles and aunts always blame **one another** for not looking after my grandparents properly.
- Tom and his sister, Leila, had never liked **each other** very much.
- The doctors and the nurses worked as a team to help **one another** during the surgery.
- The two dogs raced around the field, chasing **each other** and playing.

⚠ **Not** *Aslında 'each other' iki, 'one another' üç veya daha fazla kişi için kullanılıyor olsa da kişi sayısı gözetmeksizin birbirlerinin yerine de kullanılabilirler. Fakat ikisi arasında ayrım yapmamız istenirse bu kuralı göz önünde bulundurmak gerekir.*

2 İyelik belirtmek için işteş zamirlerin sonuna '-'s' yapısı getirilebilir. Bu durumda tıpkı 'possessive adjective'lerde olduğu gibi kendilerinden sonra isim gelmesi gerekir.

- Marilyn and Whitney used to look after **each other's** children.
- Daisy and I often stay in **one another's** house.

H IMPERSONAL PRONOUN - ONE

TEKİL	ÇOĞUL
(the) one	**(the) ones**
(the) one’s	**(the) ones’**

1 Cümledeki bir ismi gereksiz tekrar etmekten kaçınmak için kullanılır. Önceden belirtilmiş olan bir ismin yerini tutar.

- ‘Do you see **the big green one** among the three paintings on the wall? That’s my painting,’ said Joel proudly to his parents.
- I have always wanted to get a motorbike of my own but I can’t afford **one**.
- **Billy** : What restaurant do you want to go to tonight?
  Sandra : **The one** that is right next to our house.
- **Jo** : What kind of T-shirts did you buy?
  Sam : I got **the ones** that have funny pictures of monkeys on them.
- **Shop Assistant** : **Which ones** would you like, sir?
  Customer : The **red ones**, please.
- Mandy told me that her apartment is **the one** on the top floor of the building.

Not *Belli bir şeyden bahsederken ‘one’, ‘the’ ile kullanılır. Yukarıdaki ilk örnekte üç tablo içinde yeşil olandan bahsettiği için ‘the green one’ denilmektedir. İkinci örnekte ise belirli bir motosikletten bahsedilmemiş ve bu yüzden ‘the’ kullanılmamıştır.*

2 ‘One’ zamiri kullanılırken ‘-‘s’ ve ‘ ’ ’ iyelik belirtmek için kullanılabilir. Tıpkı isimlerde olduğu gibi kesme işareti ‘-s’ harfinden önce geliyorsa tekil, ‘-s’ harfinden sonra geliyorsa çoğul olur. (‘student’s’ -öğrencinin- / ‘students’’ -öğrencilerin)

3 ‘One’ genelleme yapmak amacıyla da kullanılabilir. Bu şekilde Türkçeye ‘kişi’ ya da ‘insan’ anlamında çevrilebilir.

- **One** has to be at least 18 years old to get a driving licence.
- The number of calories **one** should consume per day ranges from 1800 to 3000.
- **One** never knows what to say under pressure.

4 'One' zamirini kastederek cümlede daha sonra kullanacağımız zamirler yine 'one' olabilir ya da bunun yerine 'he' kullanılabilir. (one, one's, oneself / he, him, his, himself)

- **One** should always lock **his or her** house up carefully when going away on vacation.
- **One** should always think carefully before **he or she** asks for a promotion or a raise.
- **One** must learn about other people's cultures before **he or she** travels to a different country.
- **One** always tries to visit **one's** parents at the weekend and make sure that they are alright.
- **One** should always make sure **his or her** car is running smoothly without problems for safety.
- **One** must protect **oneself** / **himself** in dangerous situations.
- What do you think is the easiest way to teach **oneself** a new language?
- **One** must push **oneself** to diet and exercise in order to stay in good shape.

5 'One' zamirinin çoğulu olan 'ones' genellikle insan isimlerinin yerine kullanılmaz fakat genel olarak bir insan grubundan bahsederken kullanılabilir.

- Older students seem to study harder than the younger **ones**.
- People with any allergies seem to be more sensitive towards antibiotics than **the ones** with no allergic reactions to anything.

Not *Sayılamayan isimlerin yerine 'one' ve türevlerini kullanamayız. Bunun yerine daha çok miktar belirten kelimeler (quantifiers) tercih edilir.*

- *If you need more paper, I can bring you* ***some****.*
- *Linda needs to work overtime tonight and I cannot eat this food without her, so I should take her* ***some****.*

6 Üstteki not bölümünden de anlaşılacağı gibi miktar belirten kelimeler (quantifiers) ismin yerini tutabilir; diğer bir deyişle zamir olarak kullanılabilir.

- My friend asked me if she could borrow a pencil, but unfortunately I had **none**.
  (none - no pencils)
- I thought all the students in our class would come on the trip but **only a few** did.
  (only a few - only a few students)
- Out of all the people who had come out of the building when the fire alarm went off, only **two** had thought to bring flashlights.
  (two - only two people from the building)
- When the police told the people in the crowd to go home, **some** left but others stayed.
  (some - some people in the crowd)

- I lay on my back and watched the birds flying in the sky. **Most of them** were flying east.
  (Most - most of the birds in the sky)
- There were at least twenty different dishes on the table from all over the world. **Two of them** were Chinese.
  (two - two of the dishes)
- When the bull ran towards the people, they **all** jumped into the water to escape.
  (all - all the people)
- Once I had a collection of many different cars but now only **some** are left.
  (some - some of the cars)

Sample Questions

6

1. True stories are a lot better than ---- that are made up.

A) the one B) one
C) the ones D) one's
E) ones'

2. The best passwords are ---- that are hardest to guess.

A) the one B) ones
C) one D) the one's
E) the ones

3. Positive thoughts help you move towards your goals while negative ---- move you further away from ----.

A) the one / it B) ones / them
C) the ones / they D) one / they
E) one / it

4. I have made up my mind about what to do for next year. I believe the idea I have chosen is the best ---- for me.

A) ones B) the one
C) one D) it
E) the ones

5. When the alarm rang, all the residents of the apartment gathered in the park nearby and ---- of them were in their pyjamas. It was two in the morning.

A) most B) none
C) little D) ones
E) every

6. Kevin tried really hard to finish his work before leaving but he was able to finish ----; he will do the rest of it tomorrow.

A) ones B) most
C) some of D) the first two
E) none of

Uyarı *'One' zamirinden önce bir sıfat gelmişse, bu sıfat ve zamir olan 'one'ın arasında asla 'the' bulunmaz. '~~Cheap the ones~~' şeklinde bir kullanım olmaz.*

I DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES & DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS
(İşaret Sıfatları & İşaret Zamirleri)

1 'This, that, these' ve 'those' sözcükleri sıfat veya zamir olarak kullanılabilirler.

TEKİL	ÇOĞUL
this	**these**
that	**those**

2 Bu sıfat / zamirlerden 'this' ve 'these' yakındaki, 'that' ve 'those' ise uzaktaki şeyleri anlatmak için kullanılır.
Sıfat olarak kullanıldıklarında 'this' ve 'that' tekil isimleri, 'these' ve 'those' çoğul isimleri tanımlar.
Zamir olarak kullanıldıklarında da 'this / that' tekil isim veya nesnelerin yerine; 'these / those' çoğul isim veya nesnelerin yerine kullanılır.

- **this + tekil isim → this** book
- **that + tekil isim → that** book
- **these + çoğul isim → these** books
- **those + çoğul isim → those** books

SIFAT	ZAMİR
This pen is blue.	**This** is my pen.
These methods are new.	**These** are new methods.
That bike is my father's.	**That** is my father's bike.
Those cars are expensive.	**Those** are expensive cars.

- The boss said that he wanted us to make a second one like **this presentation** / **this** to be prepared for our other project.
- I told my friend that I already had a lot of **those air miles** / **those,** so he didn't need to give me any.
- **These days** it is dangerous to travel to some parts of Syria because of the ongoing civil war.
- '**That** last pay rise which you gave me wasn't very high,' I complained to my boss.
- **This** is the second type of soup I have tried at this restaurant and I definitely prefer it.

3 'That' birisinin daha önce yapmış ya da söylemiş olduğu bir şeyden bahsederken kullanılır.

- **Jen** : Shall we go to the cinema?
  Sophia : Yes, **that** is a good idea.
- **Duncan** : I have got a new job.
  Lara : **That** is great.
- **Dave** : I'm very tired.
  Angela : Why is **that**?

4 'This' ve 'these' genellikle şimdiki veya gelecek zaman, 'that' ve 'those' ise geçmiş zaman ifadelerinde kullanılır.

- You can't make a fool out of me **this time**. *(bu sefer)*
- Children are suffering from vitamin D deficiency **these days**. (*bu günlerde)*
- The battle having taken place **that day** was extremely fierce. *(o gün)*
- In **those years**, the schools weren't under the control of the government. *(o yıllarda)*

5 Sayılamayan isimlerle birlikte sadece 'this' ve 'that' kullanılır.

- **This** luggage is really heavy; I can't carry it.
- **Ashley** : I've heard that the minister is on vacation for a month.
  Sam : No, **that** information is false.
- **Tom** : We have very little jam left.
  Jane : Oh, no. **That** is not enough for breakfast.

6 'Those' kelimesi genelleme yaparken 'insanlar' ve 'kişiler' anlamında kullanılabilir. Bu şekilde 'those'dan sonra relative clause (sıfat cümleciği - 'that / who' ya da bunların kısaltılmış hali -reduction-) gelebilir.

- In my opinion, **those** who have a sibling are really lucky.
- **Those** who can speak a language well can learn another easily.
- The nurse came out into the waiting room and said that **those** of us who wanted to see the doctor had to fill out a form first.
- '**Those of you** who have a complaint to make, please fill out the blue form,' said the man.
- The people living on this side of the city tend to be poorer than **those** living on the other side.
- People who live in the countryside seem to live much slower paced lives than **those** in the city.
- The students in my classroom seem to be much quieter than **those** in yours.

7 **That of / those of:** Bu yapılar her zamir gibi cümlede önceden kullanılmış bir ismi tekrar etmemek için kullanılır ve o ismin yerini tutarlar. İçinde bulundukları cümle de genellikle 'the … of …' (isim tamlaması) ile başlar ve cümlede bir karşılaştırma yapısı bulunur. 'That of' tekil, 'those of' çoğul isimlerden önce kullanılır. Bu anlamıyla sadece 'that of' ve 'those of' yapıları kullanılır. 'This of' ya da 'these of' şeklinde bir kullanım yoktur.

- The mass of the Earth is much greater than **that of the Moon**.
  (Ay'ın kütlesinden / Ay'ınkinden)
- The Pacific Ocean almost double the volume of water than **that of the Atlantic Ocean**.
- This restaurant has many more customers than **that of the one across the street**.
- The nutritional benefits of a salad is usually much higher than **those of a burger**.
- The salary of a teacher is higher than **that of a bus driver**.

8 'This', 'that', 'these' ve 'those' sıfat olarak kullanıldıklarında 'one' zamirinden önce kullanılabilirler.

- Which skirt is yours? **This one** or **that one**?
  (= This skirt or that skirt?)
- Which cookies do you want? **These ones** or **those ones**?
  (= These cookies or those cookies?)
- I don't want a chocolate bar. I want the biscuit over there. **That one** with the yellow package.
- I have lived in three different cities in my life and **this one** is definitely the most exciting.

9

EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with that, those, this, these, that of or those of.

1. The students in our grade seem to be much more mature than ____________________ the grade below us.
2. Sometimes I miss ____________________ days when I was young and would spend my free time climbing trees and playing in the garden.
3. I think ____________________ is the cheapest restaurant around here, so it's usually where I come for lunch.
4. We walked up to look at the strange statue ____________________ was sitting in the middle of the field.
5. ____________________ beach seems really nice; the one we went to yesterday wasn't very clean.
6. When I was ten years old, I lived in China, and before ____________________ I lived in Japan.
7. British people usually have lighter skin than ____________________ Spanish people.
8. My brother asked me to help him get out of trouble but he punched his teacher and I have no idea what I can do about ____________________.
9. The women pointed to a collection of plates and said 'I would like to buy ____________________.'
10. ____________________ who like to travel a lot often know how to get the best deals for plane tickets.

J FORMS OF OTHER

1 ‘Other’ ve türevleri hem sıfat hem de zamir olarak kullanılabilir.

	SIFAT	ZAMİR	
tekil - genel	another book (is)	another (is)	‘Others’ ve ‘the others’ çoğul ismin yerini tutarlar.
çoğul - genel	other books (are)	other**s** (are)	
tekil - belirli	the other book (is)	the other (is)	
çoğul - belirli	the other books (are)	the other**s** (are)	

(Bahsedilen kişiler ve kaç kişi olduğu net değil.)

☺ ☺ ☺	☺ ☺ ☺
some students	other students / others
Some students came to school.	**Others** preferred to stay at home.

(Üç şeyden bahsediliyor; kişiler ve sayı belli.)

☺	☺	☺
one	another	the other
One is here.	**Another** is there.	**The other** is lost.

(Dört şeyden bahsediliyor; üçü söylendi ve geriye kalan bir tane belli.)

☺ ☺ ☺	☺
three students	the other student / the other
Three students are in the garden.	**The other student** is sitting in the class.

(Dört şeyden bahsediliyor; biri söylendi ve geriye kalan üç tane belli.)

☺	☺ ☺ ☺
one of the students	the other students / the others
One of the students was poisoned by the food.	**The others** were OK.

(İki kişiden bahsediliyor; biri söylendikten sonra diğeri belli.)

☺	☺
one student	the other student / the other
One student said she wanted to go home.	**The other** asked to stay.

2 ‘Two books, twins, parents, a pair of shoes, the young couple’ gibi iki şeyden ya da kişiden bahsederken ilki söylendikten sonra, ikincisi için ‘the other’ kullanmamız gerekir.

- One of my parents is a teacher; **the other** is an engineer.
- One of the two cats jumped over the fence easily. **The other** had to attempt ten times.
- One of the twins died in the accident but luckily **the other** survived.

3 **Another:** 'Bir tane daha', 'başka bir' anlamı taşır. Hem zamir hem sıfat olarak kullanılabilir. Sıfat olarak kullanıldığında kendisinden sonra tekil isim gelir. Zamir olarak kullanıldığında zaten ismin yerini tuttuğu için arkasından bir isim gelmez. Belirli şeylerden değil, genel şeylerden bahsetmek için kullanılır.

- I usually drink one cup of coffee in the morning and **another cup** in the afternoon. *(Sıfat)*
- As soon as we passed on the mountain in front of us, we saw **another** on the horizon. *(Zamir)*
- I have **another homework assignment** to finish tonight before I can sleep.
- It is only 5 p.m., so there is at least **another hour of sunlight** left before it gets dark.
- I have been walking for almost twenty minutes but I haven't seen **another person**.
- We saw many dolphins around midday but it wasn't until much later that we saw **another**.
- Sometimes after I have finished eating an apple, I will immediately have **another**.

a 'Another' kelimesiyle sayı kullanıldığında, 'ekstra', 'daha' anlamı verir ve olağan kullanımının aksine, kendisinden sonra 'sayı + çoğul isim' gelir.

- I found five dollars on the ground and then I found **another five dollars** in the elevator. *(Beş dolar daha)*
- Liz wants to finish in time but she needs **another two months** to translate the book.
- I had to go **another four stops** before getting off the bus to find the hospital.

b 'Another' sıfat olarak kullanıldığından dolayı kendisinden sonra 'one' zamiri gelebilir. Tekil isimlerden önce geldiği için çoğul ismin yerini tutan 'ones' kendisinden sonra asla kullanılmaz. (başka bir, bir tane daha)

- I've already eaten two sandwiches but I want to have **another** one.
- **Dorothy** : You can borrow more of these books if you like.
  Luke : OK. I will take **another** one.

Not *'Another'dan önce kelimenin başındaki 'an'den dolayı miktar belirten herhangi bir kelime kullanılamaz. (~~some~~ another)*

4 **Other / others:** 'Other' sıfat, 'others' zamirdir; diğer bir deyişle, 'other'dan sonra isim gelirken, 'others'tan sonra bir isim gelmez. 'Other'dan sonra kullanılacak olan isim çoğuldur; çünkü tekil isimlerle birlikte 'another' kullanılır. Belirli şeylerden değil, genel şeylerden bahsetmek için kullanılır.

- The cafeteria was serving soups, salads, some meat with rice and **other** dishes for lunch.
- Some people like to drink coffee in the morning. **Other** people prefer to have a cup of tea.
- Having warm blood, hair on their bodies and looking after their young are the characteristics of monkeys and **other** mammals.
- Everyone expected last year's winner to win the race again, but the **other** runners were faster than him this year.
- During some weeks, we have no rain at all. In **other** weeks, it rains from Monday until Sunday.
- Some of the students decided to start work on the assignments straight away. **Others** left it to the last minute.
- Some people can lose weight on their own, but **others** need support and professional help to do so.

5 ‘Every other + tekil isim’ yapısı, bir eylemin birer atlayarak yapıldığını anlatırken kullanılır.

- I go and visit my grandma for lunch **every other Sunday**. *(iki Pazar’da bir ...)*
- Tabatha had a biology laboratory class to go to **every other Tuesday**. *(iki Salı’da bir ...)*
- **Every other year**, Jim would fly back to California to visit his extended family.
- Rhonda had lots of skin problems, so she had to visit her dermatologist **every other week**.
- I go running through the park almost **every other day** as part of my exercise programme.

6 ‘Other’ ve ‘others’, ‘some, any, no, all, several’ ve ‘every’ gibi miktar belirten kelimelerden sonra kullanılabilir. Miktar belirten kelimelerle ‘other(s)’ arasına ‘the’ gelmez. (any ~~the~~ other, some ~~the~~ others)

- Many people like going to the cinema to see movies. However, there are **many others** who prefer the theatre.
- Howard was only able to pass his History class. **Any other class** that he had taken he failed.
- Harriet had never met **any other person** who was as thoughtful and intelligent as James.
- Jordan sat down on the couch and read his book all day as he could think of **no other activity** to keep himself entertained.
- Thomas went to sign up for a club; he ended up going for the chess club as **all other clubs** were full.
- There were **several other people** walking up the same hiking trail like us. It was mostly empty.
- My friend, Pauline, is going on talking about **some other incidents** she is involved in, but I am not listening to her.
- **All other seats** at the movie theatre were taken except the ones in the front row, so we sat there.
- There were **some others** besides my friends that I didn’t recognize in class today.
- Sandy always went to the same restaurant near her house because there were **no others** nearby.
- There are **several other ways** you can improve your health besides just a healthy diet and regular exercise.

7 **The other / the others:** ‘Öteki’, ‘diğeri’, ‘geri kalan’ anlamlarında kullanılır. Daha önce bahsedilen bir grup içinde geri kalan veya kalanları anlatmak için kullanılır. Bu iki yapıdan en çok dikkat edilmesi gereken ‘the other’dır; çünkü işlevleri fazladır: Hem tekil hem çoğul isimlerle kullanılmasının yanı sıra, hem sıfat hem de zarf olarak kullanılmaktadır. Yani ‘the other’ için her seçenek mevcuttur. ‘The others’ ise çoğul ismin yerini tutan bir zamir olduğundan dolayı kendisinden sonra bir isim almaz. Yapıların başındaki ‘the’ kelimesinden de anlaşılacağı üzere, ‘the other(s)’ genel şeylerden değil, belirli şeylerden bahsetmek için kullanılır.

- The first balloon I saw in the sky was red, all **the other ones** were green, blue and purple.
- Some of the students in my language school speak English very well. **The others** are not very good, though.

8 ‘Other’ sıfat olarak kullanıldığından dolayı, kendisinden sonra ‘ones’ gelebilir. Çoğul isimlerden önce geldiği için tekil ismin yerini tutan ‘one’ kendisinden sonra kullanılmaz. ‘The other’ dan sonra ise hem ‘one’ hem de ‘ones’ kullanılabilir.

- You don’t have to buy these shoes. There can be **other** ones you may like. *(= shoes)*
- **Alfred** : You can borrow my dictionaries if you want.
  Brooke : Thanks, but I need **other** ones. *(= dictionaries)*

9 ‘One after the other / one after another’ yapıları, ‘peş peşe’, ‘art arda’ anlamına gelmektedir.

- The students all entered the school **one after the other** / **one after another**.
- The people standing in line went up to talk to the passport officer **one after another**.
- I ate two sandwiches in a row at lunchtime, **one after the other**.
- I have two classes today **one after the other**. The first is at two and the second is at four o’clock.
- The swans flew out of the pond, **one after another**, until none were left.

Sample Questions 7

1. ---- parcels look really heavy, so I don’t want to carry them all ----.

A) Those / on my own
B) This / yourself
C) Those / mine
D) That / by myself
E) These / on your own

2. All plants and animals depend on ---- because of the things they need to stay alive.

A) each other’s B) by themselves
C) every other D) one another
E) one after the other

3. Potatoes produce more food per unit area of land planted than any ---- major crops.

A) others B) other
C) the others D) the other
E) another

4. The use of computers has changed the life of humans and the use of all machines ----.

A) of its own B) one after the other
C) each other D) others
E) those

5. ---- who work in the offices need to do more exercise than an active person. Sitting on a chair all day weakens your circulatory system.

A) These B) That of
C) One D) Those
E) These people’s

6. While we were going to the wedding in the city centre, some of us got on the bus earlier and there were no seats left, so ---- had to wait for the next bus or walk.

A) other B) one another
C) the others D) one after another
E) those others

7. ---- month, she goes abroad to renew herself and make a fresh start. That’s a total of six holidays in a year.

A) Another B) One another
C) One D) Every other
E) The others

8. My sister ordered a large glass of hand-made lemonade in the café and I asked for ---- as well. It was delicious.

A) that B) some
C) other D) one after another
E) those

9. In Physics, there is an equal force of gravity between two objects. They pull ---- towards themselves. The bigger object wins eventually.

A) each other B) another
C) the same D) theirs
E) oneself

10. I will be more than happy to help you if you could show me where your luggage is. Is ---- yours? The one with blue stripes, I mean.

A) one B) those
C) another D) other
E) that

10 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the forms of 'other'.

1. I will send one of the documents to you by email now, and tomorrow I will send ____________________.
2. Go and wake up your brother, so he can go to school, but do it quietly because there are ____________________ people sleeping in the house.
3. I usually have one apple for lunch, but if I am still hungry after I have finished eating, I will go and get ____________________.
4. This is my favourite café to go to for a good coffee, but sometimes it is too busy, so I go to ____________________ one that is close by and also good.
5. Some students like to take only three classes every semester, but ____________________ students take four or even five.
6. My Italian shoes are very good quality and they were expensive but my ____________________ pairs of shoes are not very good.
7. Berlin is a great city to visit as there are many interesting things to do there. ____________________ cities in Germany are equally interesting.
8. We have to solve this problem today, tomorrow we can solve ____________________ as they are not as important as this one.
9. Exercise is a great way to lose weight, but you don't have to go to the gym to exercise. There are many ____________________ things you can do like walking or playing sports.
10. My brothers don't get to see ____________________ very often because they live in different cities and it's hard to find time to travel.

11 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the forms of 'other'.

1. The party is at my house. Please make sure to invite ____________________, as there's plenty of food to eat.
2. I have three best friends who I see all the time, and ____________________ friends who I only see occasionally.
3. When travelling abroad, it is important to carry a copy of your passport and ____________________ important papers.
4. It is important for children to participate in ____________________ activities and not just sports when growing up.
5. When visiting a foreign country, it is important to go to ____________________ provinces besides the capital city, as the culture there can be quite different.
6. My sister has just given birth to ____________________ baby; my nephew is going to be a big brother.
7. We have a great tradition in my family of giving back to ____________________ who have less than us.
8. In school, our teachers advise us to help ____________________ students who are struggling with their studies.
9. I had the great opportunity to meet my favourite football player and ____________________ members of the team.
10. Throughout history, there have been countless times when one country has come to the aid of ____________________.

1 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable pronoun.

1. Don't worry if you make some mistakes now and then, ____________________ is perfect and everyone makes mistakes.
2. My sister didn't leave my parents and move into ____________________ own house until she was 25.
3. There is ____________________ on your shirt, I think you may have spilled some food on it at lunchtime.
4. My uncle and aunt have always been very protective of ____________________ young children.
5. We spent weeks planning our trip to Russia and it was great. ____________________ went as well as we had hoped.
6. I was surprised to see that the student seemed to have been able to solve the math problem ____________________.
7. I don't think that I will be able to solve all ____________________ problems without someone helping me.
8. My mum asked me if I could go to her closet and try to find her shirt; the ____________________ with red flowers on it.
9. My mum and dad want to try and sell their house ____________________, without a real estate agent.
10. It is important that two people respect ____________________ in order for their relationship to work.

2 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable pronoun.

1. They watched the security video but they couldn't see the thief's face, so it could have been ____________________.
2. Men usually have faster times in the 100-metre race than ____________________ women.
3. Even though ____________________ life is a bit of a mess, Henry is always giving other people advice on what they should be doing.
4. If you want to hire a nanny to look after your children, you must make sure the person is ____________________ very trustworthy.
5. I can't remember which restaurant we went to last time but I think it was ____________________ on the main street.
6. I tried to find a house in my favourite area of the city next to the sea, but the rent was very expensive, so I had to look ____________________ affordable.
7. Mary always thinks that ____________________ presentation is the best, but I don't think she's as smart as she thinks she is.
8. There were many boxes in the attic and I thought there might be ____________________ interesting inside them but they were all full of books.
9. ____________________ days it seems that everybody wants to get famous on YouTube.
10. The long length of our intestines allows ____________________ to get most of the nutrients out of the food that we eat.
11. ____________________ knows the reason why the plane crashed into the ocean. Maybe there was a problem with the plane's engine.
12. Now and then, when I am really hungry, I'll eat ____________________ hamburger right after I finish the first one.
13. You can study ____________________ you want at university, but some degrees will make it a lot easier to find a job when you graduate.
14. If you can't go to the gym every single day, you could try going every ____________________ day instead.
15. ____________________ told me that if I put my iPhone in the microwave, it would charge the battery. Unfortunately, it destroyed my phone when I tried it.

3 REVISION:

Choose the correct option.

1. **I told my brothers that if they were going to complain about the house, they could pack ---- bags and go somewhere else.**

   A) them B) their

2. **It was really ---- fault that the building collapsed, it was just very old and couldn't survive the earthquake.**

   A) nobody's B) anybody's

3. **Sometimes I'm so tired in the mornings that as soon as I finish one coffee, I go and get ---.**

   A) another B) one another

4. **The temperature needed to boil water is lower on a mountain than ---- at sea level because the pressure is different.**

   A) that B) those

5. **Don't be quick to judge someone before you ---- have experienced what they are going through.**

   A) yours B) yourself

6. **Many businesses do not pay as much tax as they should because ---- finance teams are able to find legal loopholes.**

   A) theirs B) their

7. **Some people like to go to hot countries for vacation, while ---- prefer to go to cold ones.**

   A) others B) other

8. **Sandra was worried that ---- would be talking about what had happened to her at school yesterday.**

   A) everyone B) everything

9. **The author went on a book tour to try and promote ---- new book that he had just published.**

   A) he B) his

10. **If you don't like sports, there are many ---- things you can do to get some exercise.**

    A) other B) another

11. Not ---- in my class was able to pass the final exam, so some of them will have to take the course again next year.

A) no one
B) everyone

12. Sometimes the professor talks very fast and it is difficult to understand ---- accent.

A) his
B) himself

13. Every now and then, I like to travel to ---- parts of the country and do some hiking.

A) other
B) others

14. I told the hotel receptionist 'If ---- calls and asks for me, can you please tell ---- to try again later tonight?'

A) someone / their
B) anyone / them

15. It seems like as soon as one store closes, ---- opens up to take its place.

A) another
B) every other

16. It seems obvious that ---- would be healthier if they stopped eating junk food all the time.

A) somebody
B) everybody

17. I thought that my homework was in my bag but it looks like I have lost ----.

A) it
B) its

18. ---- might go wrong when you go on a hiking trip, so it is important to go with ---- person.

A) Something / another
B) Everything / other

19. My favourite types of parties are the ---- where you don't know most of the people.

A) ones
B) one's

20. When I came back from holiday it was clear straight away that ---- had broken into my house.

A) anybody's
B) someone

PRONOUNS

TEST 1

1. **Lucy thought she had lost ---- textbook at school but after spending 15 minutes looking for ----, she remembered that the book was at home.**

A) her / it
B) his / one
C) she / itself
D) hers / it
E) himself / one

2. **I have to take the bus or the metro to get around the city. One day, I hope to have a car ----, so I can drive instead.**

A) each
B) of myself
C) of my own
D) itself
E) my own

3. **If one type of medication does not help you, you can ask your doctor to try ---- one to see if it works better.**

A) others
B) the others
C) another
D) one after another
E) each another

4. **Even though there were many fires last year in the city, ---- has been done to improve fire safety, so there will probably be many fires this year, too.**

A) somewhere
B) nothing
C) something else
D) anyone
E) anything

5. **Sam was one of ---- people who never went anywhere. He wasn't really friends with ----.**

A) these / no one
B) the ones / anyone
C) they / someone else
D) those / anyone
E) the ones / someone else

6. **The girl was only three years old but she had already learned to tie her shoelaces ----.**

A) oneself
B) by herself
C) on herself
D) her own
E) himself

7. **When they are building a rocket, the scientists and engineers have to be very careful because if ---- goes wrong, the rocket could explode.**

A) everything else
B) itself
C) nothing
D) other
E) anything

8. **Even though they are both in North America and they share borders, Mexico and The United States of America are very different from ----.**

A) another
B) everything
C) one another's
D) anyone
E) each other

9. **The Burj Khalifa in Dubai is the tallest building in the world. ---- in the world is there a taller building.**

A) Nowhere else
B) Anything
C) Anyone else
D) Something
E) Somewhere

10. **My father got me a job interview with Tom, a friend of ----. I am a little bit nervous about going to the interview and meeting ----.**

A) his / theirs
B) himself / him
C) theirs / her
D) hers / them
E) his / him

11. If you try to solve all your problems ----, you might find it is a lot harder than if you ask family and friends for help.

A) himself
B) itself
C) your own
D) themselves
E) by yourself

12. I wanted to try some Japanese food for dinner, but ---- who were with me wanted to eat Italian food.

A) another
B) the others
C) the other
D) one another
E) each other

13. Unfortunately, my computer fell out of my bag and is totally broken. I will have to buy ---- one.

A) some others
B) another
C) other
D) all the other
E) the others

14. If you do not carefully lock your house up when you go on holiday, ---- might break in and steal your belongings.

A) nobody
B) everyone
C) someone
D) the others
E) everybody

15. ---- was a very boring two hours. I had to sit in the hospital for too long until I could see the doctor.

A) Its
B) Those
C) Itself
D) That
E) Them

16. She looked ---- for her necklace but she could never find it anywhere.

A) everywhere
B) somewhere
C) anyone
D) nowhere else
E) nowhere

17. ---- said anything to John about dinner being cancelled, so ---- was the only one who went to the restaurant at 8.

A) Everyone / he
B) Everybody / him
C) Anyone / he
D) Nobody / he
E) Someone / him

18. Some people find it easy to do well at sports, but ---- have to practise very hard before ---- are any good.

A) others / they
B) someone / that
C) another / that
D) others / that
E) someone / they

19. Renewable energy sources like the sun or wind can help ---- make power without causing as much pollution as other types of energy sources like coal, gas and oil.

A) each other
B) them
C) him
D) their
E) us

20. When my daughter turns ten years old, I will buy her a cellphone ---- to use.

A) herself
B) itself
C) of her own
D) by herself
E) his own

PRONOUNS

TEST 2

1. **The naked man was standing on one corner of the road and people were staring at ---- on the other side, wondering what he was going to do to himself with the gun in his hand aimed at ---- head.**

A) her / himself
B) him / his own
C) them / themselves
D) his / him
E) they / their own

2. **The cafeteria on the main street opened at ten in the morning and ---- was full within ten minutes with ---- loyal customers.**

A) it / its
B) its / his
C) she / it
D) it / it
E) she / his

3. **I am very selective by nature so the salespeople in the shop had to show me all ---- designs to convince ---- to buy one of them.**

A) they / them
B) their / us
C) my / me
D) their / me
E) our / my

4. **I bought a new computer this month, as ---- I had was very old and ---- didn't work properly and fast enough.**

A) another / its
B) the one / me
C) the other one / it
D) other / they
E) all other ones / it

5. **---- who come to school without doing their homework are ---- who will keep their attitude for the rest of their lives and keep working without a plan or preparation.**

A) That / the one
B) These / ones
C) Those / others
D) That / others
E) Those / the ones

6. **The boy had never liked drinking milk till ---- doctor told ---- that he had no other option as he was missing the needed calcium for bone growth.**

A) his / him
B) him / his
C) her / hers
D) her / her
E) him / he

7. **---- has a unique way of dealing with stress and pain but the loss of loved ones requires sharing your misery with ---- around you to ease your pain.**

A) Everything / ones
B) Anybody / other
C) Somebody / someone
D) Everybody / the others
E) Someone / another

8. **'Puerperium' is the term referring to the period after a woman gives birth and from a medical perspective ---- is believed to be one of the most critical stages of ---- life.**

A) these / her
B) that / one
C) this / other's
D) those / one's
E) this / one's

9. **The girl looked at the menu in astonishment as ---- didn't expect to see Indian food in a Chinese restaurant but since she liked ---- cuisines, she ordered dishes from each.**

A) he / all
B) she / neither
C) her / each
D) I / every
E) she / both

10. **---- of the soldiers were injured during the combat and ---- had to be carried to the nearest health care unit as soon as possible by the non-wounded ones.**

A) Much / they
B) All / he
C) Many / others
D) Several / they
E) Most / ones

11. I parked ---- car under a mulberry tree not knowing the stain from it would never come out and ---- would have to be scraped from the window by a professional.

A) me / they
B) my / it
C) mine / its
D) my / mine
E) I / me

12. The poor bird perched on the sill looking into my eyes and begging ---- to let him inside and when we did, it threw ---- on the other end of the room seeking some warmth.

A) us / his
B) me / himself
C) us / itself
D) me / oneself
E) we / his own

13. The green, newly-blossoming grass was a feast for the cows. ---- ran around jumping up and down when ---- were full to celebrate the first grazing of the year.

A) Them / their
B) Their / they
C) They / they
D) It / it
E) Theirs / it

14. Stephanie asked the hotel owner for a new towel and hid ---- in her luggage to take home as she liked the quality of ---- a lot.

A) hers / it
B) her / them
C) his / them
D) her / its
E) herself / it

15. The girls had known ---- since they were little and lived in the same area and were shocked to meet ---- on a different continent after so many years.

A) everyone / every other
B) each other / one another
C) another / each other
D) other one / one another
E) anyone / each

16. In a world of technology ---- cannot live a life free of an electronic tool of some kind. Telephones, TVs, computers are the central pieces of ---- lives and we are dependent on them.

A) ones / our
B) we / their
C) everyone / their
D) those / my
E) one / our

17. When the doctor asked me if I was taking my medication, I told him I had taken ---- and I would refuse to take ---- for the rest of my life.

A) none / any
B) many / none
C) several / much
D) most / no
E) each / most

18. I stayed awake all night as ---- was bothering me and I couldn't get it out of my head all night and kept on torturing ---- with it.

A) something / myself
B) everything / mine
C) nothing / me
D) someone / my own
E) anything / myself

19. The clown made the kids laugh at ---- rather than himself as he included them in his play and made ---- do funny things to each other.

A) they / his
B) them / himself
C) themselves / them
D) himself / themselves
E) their own / oneself

20. Have you ever considered opening up ---- restaurant in the city? You are an excellent cook but you can always work at mine if you don't want to start a business ----.

A) yourself / yourself
B) mine / by myself
C) yours / on your own
D) your own / by yourself
E) your / yours

TENSES

1. SIMPLE TENSES
2. PERFECT TENSES

2 TENSES

İngilizcede, her dilde olduğu gibi, zamanlar temel yapılardır ve doğru zamanı kullanmak çok önemlidir. Zamanlar; 'Simple Tenses' ve 'Perfect Tenses' olarak ikiye ayrılır. İngilizcede genel cümle yapısı aşağıdaki gibidir.

Subject		Verb		Object		Place		Time
(Özne)	+	(Fiil)	+	(Nesne)	+	(Yer)	+	(Zaman)

Zamana göre fiilde (verb) ve yardımcı fiilerde (auxiliary verbs) değişiklikler yapılır ama genel yapı değişmez.

Bare Infinitive	Past	Past Participle
eat	ate	eaten
work	worked	worked
listen	listened	listened
have	had	had
do	did	done

Olumsuz cümle kurarken yardımcı fiile 'not' yapısını ekleriz. Soru sorarken yardımcı fiil öznenin önüne alınır. ('Yardımcı fiil cümlenin başına alınır.' ifadesi doğru değildir; çünkü soru cümleleri her zaman 'yes / no questions' şeklinde değildir. Eğer bir soru sözcüğüyle soru oluşturuyorsak, cümlenin başına o soru sözcüğü gelir.) Olumsuz soru oluştururken olumsuzluk belirten 'not'ı yardımcı fiile eklemek yeterlidir.

1. SIMPLE TENSES

A THE SIMPLE PRESENT TENSE (V_1 → work, live, make, etc.)

YAPI:

1 Olumlu cümlelerde fiilin yalın hali (bare infinitive) kullanılır.

Subject		Verb		Object		Place		Time
(Özne)	+	(Fiil)	+	(Nesne)	+	(Yer)	+	(Zaman)

- I **take** photos when I go travelling.
- Denzel and I **have** a good relationship.
- My parents **support** me truly whenever I need help.
- I **care** a lot about Damien and **want** to spend as much time with him as possible.

2 Üçüncü tekil şahısların (he, she, it) olduğu olumlu cümlelerde fiilin sonuna '-s' takısı gelir.

Subject		Verb + s		Object		Place		Time
(Özne)	+	(Fiil)	+	(Nesne)	+	(Yer)	+	(Zaman)

- He **eats** a lot of fast food, so he is a little bit overweight.
- He **goes** to the cinema quite often.
- She **plays** computer games on her laptop.
- She **studies** French during the weekends.

3

'-s' takısı fiillere farklı şekillerde eklenebilir. Aşağıdaki tabloda '-s' takısının eklenmesi ile ilgili kurallar verilmiştir.

-s	-es	-ies
Genel olarak fiillere '-s' takısı eklenir.	Eğer fiil (-ch, -sh, -s, -x, -z) sesleri ile bitiyorsa fiile '-es' takısı eklenir.	Eğer bir fiil sessiz harf + y ile bitiyorsa fiildeki '-y' düşer, yerine '-ies' takısı gelir.
rains eats cheats falls tells makes loves	watches washes teaches relaxes wishes catches buzzes	apply / applies fly / flies bury / buries cry / cries dry / dries study / studies fry / fries
• Ayrıca eğer fiil sesli harf + y ile bitiyorsa sadece '-s' eklenir. pays says plays		

Yukarıdaki kuralların yanı sıra bazı düzensiz fiiller de söz konusudur. Bunlar aşağıdaki gibi '-s' takısı alır.

go - goes   do - does   have - has

4

Olumsuz cümleler; bu zamanın yardımcı fiilleri olan 'do' (I, we, you, they) ve 'does' (he, she, it)'a 'not' eklenerek aşağıdaki gibi oluşturulur.

Subject (Özne) + **do not / does not (don't / doesn't)** + **Verb** (Fiil) + **Object** (Nesne) + **Place** (Yer) + **Time** (Zaman)

- I **don't want** to go to the store.
- We **don't like** playing outside.
- He **doesn't want** to go to the movies tonight.
- She **doesn't like** to read when she is in the car.

⚠ **Not** *Olumsuz cümlelerde 'he, she, it' ile birlikte 'does' kullanıldığı için fiile eklenen '-s' takısı çıkarılır ve fiil yalın haliyle (bare infinitive) kullanılır.*

5 Soru cümlelerinde, yardımcı fiil olan 'do' (I, we, you, they) ve 'does' (he, she, it) öznenin önüne alınır. Olumsuz soru oluşturmak için 'do' ve 'does'a 'not' eklemek gerekir.

Do Does + Subject (Özne) + Verb (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- **Do** you **help** your father with his work?
- **Do** they **like** walking on the beach?
- **Does** your sister **eat** at home or out at restaurants during the weekend?
- **Does** your teacher **make** you do homework every night?

⚠ **Not** *Soru cümlelerinde de 'he, she, it' ile birlikte 'does' kullanıldığı için fiile '-s' takısı eklenmez ve fiil yalın haliyle (bare infinitive) kullanılır.*

6 'Be' fiili özel bir kullanıma sahiptir ve geniş zamanda öznelere göre çekimlenmektedir.

- I → am / am not
- he / she / it → is / isn't
- we / you / they → are / aren't

7 'Be' fiilinden sonra, 'noun' (isim), 'adjective' (sıfat) veya 'prepositional phrase' (edat + isim) kullanılır.

- They **are** soldiers. They go to war. *(noun)*
- He **is** very tall. He can reach things on high shelves. *(adjective)*
- They **aren't** in the café. They are drinking coffee at home. *(preposition + noun)*
- They **are** at the cinema. They are watching a movie. *(preposition + noun)*

⚠ **Not** *'Simple Present Tense' yapısında olumlu cümlelerde vurgu yapmak için 'do, does' kullanılabilir.*

- ***Thomas*** *: I believe, you don't want to do this any more.*
  Wilson *: No, I **do want** to do it.*
- ***Ashley*** *: You don't enjoy this music.*
  Janice *: No, I **do enjoy** it sometimes.*
- *I **do want** everyone else in this class to pass their exams.*
- *We **do wish** you to live your own life freely.*
- *I **do think** that you should never give up.*
- *My sister **does like** swimming in the sea.*
- *Her husband **does want** to move into a new house but she doesn't.*

KULLANIM:

1 'Simple Present Tense'i, değişmeyen doğa olayları ve bilimsel gerçeklerden bahsederken kullanırız.

- It **is** the oxygen in the air that we **breathe** that **keeps** us alive.
- The Moon **orbits** around the Earth once every 27 days.
- Humans **have** five main senses; sight, hearing, smell, taste and touch.
- Cows **have** four stomachs to help them with digestion.
- Light **travels** at around 300 thousand metres per second.
- It **takes** light eight minutes and seventeen seconds to travel from the Sun to Earth.
- The Earth **is** hit by around one hundred bolts of lightning every second.
- It **takes** a blood cell about one minute to travel once around the body.
- There **are** more tiny organisms living on your skin then there **are** humans on the Earth.
- Female sharks **have** thicker skin than male sharks.

2 Fikir, duygu ve düşünce belirtirken 'feel, hate, love, like, prefer, want, agree, believe, know, mean, remember, think, understand' ve 'seem' gibi fiillerle beraber kullanırız.

- Lions **prefer** to live near rivers because of constant water supply.
- Many scientists **believe** that inhabitants of the Earth are responsible for global warming.
- Most people **think** that telepathy is a rare ability gifted only to a few people.

3 Zaman çizelgesine bağlı olan (uçak, sergi, konser vb.) ve gelecekte olacak olan eylemlerden bahsederken kullanırız.

- My favourite television show **finishes** next month.
- My bus **leaves** early in the morning tomorrow, so I should get a good sleep.
- The concert **doesn't start** for another few hours, so we have plenty of time.
- **Does** your favourite restaurant **close** at 10 p.m. or 11 p.m.?
- The arts festival **begins** at the start of October every year.

4 Bir töreni ya da maçı anlık olarak anlatırken kullanırız.

- Messi **takes** the ball, **beats** two men and **centres** it beautifully into the goal-mouth.
- The goalkeeper **catches** the ball and **saves** the team.

5 Birisinin başından geçen olayları ve tarihi olayları canlandırma yaparak anlatırken kullanırız.

- The Seljuk Sultan Ruknaddin Suleiman Shah **decides** to crush Georgia and **invades** it with an army of allegedly 300,000.
- Mehmed the Conqueror **takes** his ships into the Bosphorus via land to conquer Constantinople.

6 Gazete manşetlerinde kullanılır.

- Professors **protest** pay cuts.
- Immigration **soars** 20% in a year.
- The Prime Minister **leaves** his position after the Brexit.

7 Bir yere varma veya ayrılma belirten ünlem cümlelerinde kullanılır.

- Here **comes** the last train!
- There **goes** the milkman!

8 Uzun süre geçerli olan eylemleri, sıklık zarfları ve diğer zaman zarflarıyla tekrarlanan eylemleri, alışkanlıkları ve alışılagelmiş davranışları anlatırken kullanılır.

- My uncle **lives** in an apartment building in the capital city.
- Tom **studies** Economics and Politics at university.
- Each person in my family **has** their own house and their own car.
- My brother and I both **work** for the same advertising company.
- The old people in the village **pass down** their knowledge to the youngsters.
- The shoe maker **makes** about ten pairs of shoes a day in his workshop.
- Mark **plays** golf at the club at least once a month.
- Many people **go** fishing off the bridge to try to catch some fish.

9 'Simple Present Tense' ile kullanılan sıklık zarfları (adverbs of frequency) aşağıdaki gibidir:

always	*her zaman*
almost always	*neredeyse her zaman*
usually = generally = normally	*genellikle*
very often	*çok sık*
often = frequently	*sık sık*
quite often	*oldukça sık*
sometimes / at times	*bazen*
occasionally	*ara sıra*
rarely = seldom	*nadiren*
hardly ever = scarcely = barely	*neredeyse hiç*
never	*asla, hiç*

Sıklık zarfları ana fiilden önce, bazen de cümlenin en başında ya da en sonunda kullanılabilirler.

- Lipomas are harmless tumors that **hardly ever** pose a threat.
- Depression **almost always** requires medication and counselling.
- Do you go out to eat **very often**?
- My boss stays at work late in the evening and is **usually** the last one to go home.
- Elderly people **often** go to bed early and wake up early as well.
- **Generally**, people with wealthy parents get a higher level of education than people with poorer parents.

10 ‘Hardly ever’, ‘rarely’, ‘scarcely’, ‘barely’, ‘seldom’ ve ‘never’ zarfları olumsuz cümlelerde kullanılmazlar. Sadece olumlu cümlelerde kullanılabilirler. Cümle yapı olarak olumlu, anlam olarak olumsuzdur.

- She **hardly ever** smiles.
- Finding a proper hotel to stay is **rarely** a problem.
- They **scarcely** see their grandparents.
- Our headmaster **seldom** shouts at us.
- Living in peace **never** harms anyone.

11 ‘Seldom’, ‘rarely’, ‘never’ ve ‘hardly ever’ zarfları ayrıca cümle başında da kullanılabilirler. Fakat cümle başında kullanıldıklarında, cümlenin devrik olması gerekir. Devrik cümleler, soru cümlesiyle aynı dizilime sahiptir. (Yardımcı fiil özneden önce gelmektedir.)

- The man **seldom** does anything outside of his normal daily routine.
- **Seldom** do storms hit our town; maybe just once or twice a year.
- I **rarely** eat red meat because it upsets my stomach.
- **Rarely** do we get a day warmer than ten degrees here in the mountains.
- Shelly **never** does anything that might upset her mother.
- **Never** do I go into the dangerous part of the city. *(= I never go ...)*
- **Never** did I mention his name at the meeting. *(= I never mentioned ...)*
- **Seldom** do we eat out at the weekends. *(= We seldom eat out ...)*
- **Rarely** do they complete their given tasks. *(= They rarely complete ...)*

12 **Diğer zaman zarfları** (Genellikle cümle sonunda, bazen de cümlenin en başında kullanılabilirler.)

every day / week / month / year	*her gün / hafta / ay / yıl*
once, twice, three times, four times...	*bir kez, iki kez, üç kez, dört kez...*
on Mondays, in winters, at weekends	*pazartesileri, kışları, hafta sonları*
whenever	*her ne zaman olursa, herhangi bir zamanda*
from time to time	*zaman zaman*
every now and then	*arada bir, ara sıra*
most / much of the time	*çoğu zaman*
It's / That's the last time	*bu son kez...*
The moment	*o an*

- Most people in my city wear shorts **in summers**.
- Do you eat breakfast at home **in the mornings**?
- Thomas goes to the market **once a week**.
- Most people like to go to the movies **every now and then**.
- My sister usually swims in our swimming pool **on Sundays**.

B THE PRESENT CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE (am, is, are + V_{ing})

YAPI:

Present Continuous Tense 'to be' fiili ile birlikte kullanılır. Fiil özneye göre 'am, is, are' olarak çekimlenir ve ana fiile '-ing' takısı eklenir.

1 Olumlu cümlelerde 'am, is, are' ve fiilin '-ing' almış hali kullanılır.

Subject	+	am, is, are	+	Verb + ing	+	Object	+	Place	+	Time
(Özne)				(Fiil)		(Nesne)		(Yer)		(Zaman)

- We **are going** out with my friends tonight.
- She **is talking** to the director in her office at the moment.
- I **am wearing** a blue jacket and a red scarf for you to recognize me.
- Camilla **is making** a cake while we **are speaking** to each other right now.

2 '-ing' takısı fiillere farklı şekillerde eklenebilir. Aşağıdaki tabloda fiillere göre '-ing' takısının eklenmesi ile ilgili kurallar verilmiştir.

'**-e**' ile biten fiillerde 'e'den önceki harf sessizse, '**e**' düşer ve '**-ing**' eklenir.

receive	→	receiv + ing	→	receiving
ache	→	ach + ing	→	aching
delete	→	delet + ing	→	deleting
soothe	→	sooth + ing	→	soothing

'**Be**' fiili bu kuralın istisnasıdır; '**e**' harfinde düşme olmadan '**-ing**' eklenir.

be	→	be + ing	→	being

Sonu '**ee**', '**ye**' ya da '**oe**' ile biten fiillere sadece '**-ing**' eklenir.

agree	→	agree + ing	→	agreeing
dye	→	dye + ing	→	dyeing
flee	→	flee + ing	→	fleeing
tiptoe	→	tiptoe + ing	→	tiptoeing

Sonu '**ie**' ile biten fiillerde sadece '**ie**', '**y**' harfine dönüşür ve '**-ing**' eklenir.

lie	→	ly + ing	→	lying
tie	→	ty + ing	→	tying
die	→	dy + ing	→	dying

Son üç harfi '**sessiz + sesli + sessiz**' harf dizilimine sahip tek heceli fiillerde son harfte türeme olduktan sonra '**-ing**' eklenir.

grin	→	grin + n + ing	→	grinning
beg	→	beg + g + ing	→	begging
rip	→	rip + p + ing	→	ripping

Son üç harfi '**sessiz + sesli + sessiz**' harf dizilimine sahip tek heceli fiillerde son harf '**x**', '**w**' veya '**y**' ise türeme olmaz, sadece '-**ing**' eklenir.

mix	→	mix + ing	→	mixing
pray	→	pray + ing	→	praying
snow	→	snow + ing	→	snowing

Son üç harfi '**sessiz + sesli + sessiz**' harf dizilimine sahip iki heceli fiillerde vurgu son hecedeyse, son harfte türeme olduktan sonra '**-ing**' eklenir.

admit	→	admit + t + ing	→	admitting
begin	→	begin + n + ing	→	beginning
prefer	→	prefer + r + ing	→	preferring
refer	→	refer + r + ing	→	referring

Son üç harfi '**sessiz + sesli + sessiz**' harf dizilimine sahip iki heceli fiillerde vurgu son hecede değilse, herhangi bir ses olayı olmadan sadece '-**ing**' eklenir.

answer	→	answer + ing	→	answering
suffer	→	suffer + ing	→	suffering
offer	→	offer + ing	→	offering
visit	→	visit + ing	→	visiting

Bir fiilin son harfi '**l**' ise ve '**l**'den önce de sesli bir harf varsa '**l**' harfi türer, daha sonra '**-ing**' eklenir. (Bu kural sadece İngiliz İngilizcesinde geçerlidir; Amerikan İngilizcesinde türeme olmadan '**-ing**' eklenir.)

marvel	→	marvel + l + ing	→	marvelling
equal	→	equal + l + ing	→	equalling

Bir fiilin son harfi '**c**' ise ve '**c**'den önce de sesli bir harf varsa kelimeye '**k**' harfi eklendikten sonra '**-ing**' eklenir.

picnic	→	picnic + k + ing	→	picnicking
mimic	→	mimic + k + ing	→	mimicking

Bu kuralların dışında kalan tüm fiillere sadece '**-ing**' eki eklenir.

modify	→	modify + ing	→	modifying
tell	→	tell + ing	→	telling
start	→	start + ing	→	starting
lead	→	lead + ing	→	leading

3 Olumsuz cümle oluştururken yardımcı fiil olan 'am, is, are'a 'not' eklenir. Ana fiile yine '-ing' takısı eklenir.

Subject (Özne) + am, is, are + not + Verb + ing (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- Alex **isn't having** lunch in the kitchen. He might be out.
- I **am not playing** a game, mum; I am studying, so stop yelling at me.
- You **aren't sitting** properly James; this style would only tire you. Let me teach you.
- Matt **isn't swimming** in the pool; he is in the kitchen.

4 Soru cümlelerinde, yardımcı fiil olan 'am, is, are' öznenin önüne alınır. Ana fiil yine '-ing' takısı ile kullanılır. Olumsuz soru oluşturmak için 'am, is, are'a 'not' eklenir.

Am / Is / Are + Subject (Özne) + Verb + ing (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- **Are** you **making** an omelette daddy? I am starving.
- **Is** Cynthia **sweeping** the floors now? I will kill her if she isn't.
- **Aren't** you **sleeping** dear? Your eyes are still open.
- **Isn't** Salvador **helping** Maria with her homework now? He just told me he was.

KULLANIM:

1 Konuşma anında gerçekleşmekte olan eylemlerden bahsederken ya da ünlem cümleleriyle kullanılır. Bu durumu anlatmak için ve genel olarak 'Present Continuous Tense' ile birlikte aşağıdaki zaman zarfları kullanılır:

now	*şimdi*
right now	*şu anda*
for now	*şimdilik*
at the moment	*şu anda*
at present	*şu anda*
for the time being	*içinde bulunduğumuz zamanda, şu anda, şimdilik*
just now	*tam şu anda*

- My mother **is cooking** some chicken for dinner at the moment.
- We **are walking up** to the top of the mountain to watch the sunset now.
- **Are** you **having** a good time here at the party now?
- The police **are looking for** the murder suspect all around the city at the moment.
- At the moment, my brother **is studying** for an important exam that he has tomorrow.
- We **are going** to the market now to buy some fresh fruits and vegetables.

- I'**m trying** to lose some weight but it's hard to find the time to exercise for the time being.
- The political party **is trying** to gain popularity but they are not doing well at present.
- My friends and I **are looking for** an apartment that we can move into together at the moment.
- There are many teenagers who **are sitting** in small groups around the park right now.
- 'Hey, there! **Are** you **paying** attention? Just now, I'**m explaining** what will be on the test,' said the teacher.

2 Belli bir süreliğine olan ya da her zaman yapılan eylemlerin istisnası olarak gerçekleşen geçici durumlardan bahsederken kullanılır. Bu durumu anlatmak için genelde aşağıdaki zaman zarfları kullanılır:

today	*bugün*
this week	*bu hafta*
these days = nowadays	*bu günlerde*
currently	*şu sıralar, şu anda*

- Nowadays**,** I **am avoiding** going to restaurants to eat because I don't have much money.
- My teacher is usually a calm and patient person, but today he **is getting** angry a lot.
- Most of the time I can tell what my wife is thinking, but today she **is acting** strange.
- Today Jill **is running** all over the place; normally she just sits at her desk.
- She **is training** the new interns at work this month**,** so she is very busy.
- This week my team and I **are working** on a new product that we hope to sell.
- The movie director is away in Italy for the next few months, where he **is filming** his new movie nowadays.
- I **am working** hard to save money this year so that I can buy a house.
- My flatmates and I **are taking** the bus to work this week because my car has broken down.
- Rachel's parents **are staying** with her this month while their house is being renovated.
- The government **is preparing** for emergencies because it is hurricane season at the moment.

3 Adım adım gelişen süreçler ve değişmekte olan eğilimlerden bahsederken kullanılır. Bu anlamıyla genelde 'get, change, become, increase, decrease, rise, fall, grow, improve, begin' ve 'start' fiilleriyle kullanılır ve kendisinden sonra comparative (-er / more ... than) yapısı gelebilir. Bu durumu anlatmak için genelde aşağıdaki zaman zarfları kullanılır:

these days	*bu günlerde*
nowadays	*bu günlerde*
currently	*şu sıralar*
day by day	*günden güne*
step by step	*adım adım*
still	*hala*

- My bank balance **is shrinking day by day.**

- Steven has started to eat a lot of fast food and he **is getting** fatter **these days**.
- As the civil war continues, it **is becoming** harder to live safely **these days**.
- **Nowadays**, people in my town **are becoming** more fearful every time the serial killer appears on the news.
- John has started a special training program and he **is running** faster each time he goes around the track **nowadays**.
- Lucinda has hired a private Spanish tutor and her Spanish **is improving week by week**.
- We **are trying** to finish all the levels in the project **step by step**.

4

'Always', 'forever', 'constantly' ve 'continually' gibi ifadelerle birlikte sürekli tekrarlanan rahatsız edici eylemlerden şikayetçi olunurken kullanılır.

- I'**m always forgetting** to turn down the burner. It's so annoying.
- **Martin** : I think I'll stay in and read a book.
  Julia : You **are continually changing** your mind.
- Stop bickering! You **are constantly complaining** about everything.
- It **is taking** you **forever** to get dressed. We have to get moving.

5

Gelecek zaman zarflarıyla birlikte programlanmış bir iş veya gelecekle ilgili bir plan anlatırken kullanılır. Bu durumu anlatmak için genelde aşağıdaki zaman zarfları kullanılır:

next week / month	*gelecek yıl / ay*
this weekend / year	*bu hafta sonu / yıl*
tonight	*bu gece*
today	*bugün*
tomorrow	*yarın*
in a few days	*birkaç gün içinde*
starting tomorrow	*yarından itibaren*

- **Are** you **going** out tonight?
- We **are having** a big meeting next week to decide how to plan the event.
- My parents **are staying** with me tomorrow night, so I need to clean the house.
- I **am taking** an important exam in a few days, so I need to study hard.
- Tom and Sally **are driving** to San Francisco together this weekend.
- The protestors **are gathering** at the city centre this Friday for a big protest.
- The banks **are lowering** their interest rates next month.
- Starting tomorrow, I'**m eating** nothing but healthy foods and **exercising**.
- James **is flying** to London for his important business meeting tomorrow.

6

Ayrıca resim ve fotoğraflarda gördüğümüz şeyleri anlatırken kullanılır.

- In the photo on page 92, the people **are waiting** for a bus.
- The woman in the shop **is dressing** the window.
- Look at this photo! Nick **is arguing** with the greengrocer about the cost of tomatoes.

7 ‘Present Continuous Tense’ ile ‘non-progressive’ fiiller kullanılmaz fakat anlam değişikliği oluyorsa ve fiil bu anlamıyla hareket bildiriyorsa kullanılır.

Non-Progressive Verbs:

Duyguları ifade eden fiiller	*love, adore, forgive, hate, like, detest, appreciate, mind, care*
Sahiplik ifade eden fiiller	*have, possess, own, belong*
Duyu fiilleri	*sound, smell, see, feel, taste*
Zihinsel durum ifade eden fiiller	*know, think, realize, suppose, assume, agree, believe, understand, recognize, remember, forget*
Diğerleri	*need, be, require, prefer, want, contain, mean, resemble, cost, owe, consist of*

8 Bazı ‘non-progressive’ fiiller ‘Present Continuous Tense’ ile kullanıldıklarında anlam değişikliği olur ve fiil hareket bildirir. Bu fiiller ‘progressive’ zamanlarla kullanıldıklarında anlamları şu şekildedir:

smell	*koklamak*
weigh	*tartmak*
sound	*(korna, zil vb.) çalmak*
taste	*tadına bakmak*
feel	*dokunmak*
have something	*yemek, içmek*
have a row, have a fight, have a bath, have a meeting, etc.	*tartışmak, kavga etmek, banyo yapmak, toplantı yapmak vb.*
see	*görüşmek, ziyaret etmek*
think	*kafa yormak, zihni meşgul olmak*
remember	*anmak, hatırlamak*
appear	*sahneye çıkmak*

Non-Progressive		**Progressive**
appear: *görünmek* • It **appears** that he is busy.	⇐⇒	appear: *sahneye çıkmak* • The band **is appearing** at the local theatre.
be: *olmak (am / is / are)* • Jack **is** selfish.	⇐⇒	be: *her zamankinden farklı davranmak* • Jill **is being** selfish.
depend: *dayanmak, bağlı olmak* • It **depends** on what you mean.	⇐⇒	depend: *güvenmek* • We’**re depending** on you to win the game.
feel: *... hissi vermek* • The surface **feels** hard.	⇐⇒	feel: *hissetmek* • I’**m feeling** terrible.
have: *sahip olmak* • Charles **has** a Porsche.	⇐⇒	have: *kendisinden sonra gelen sözcüklerle ‘yapmak’, ‘etmek’* • We’**re having** an interesting conversation.

hear: *duymak* • I **hear** someone calling my name.	⇐⇒	hear: *gaipten sesler duymak; dinlemek* • She behaves oddly and says she**'s hearing** things. hear: *(mahkemede) dinlemek* • The Supreme Court **is hearing** the case.
imagine: *hayal etmek* • I often **imagine** myself living in Paris.	⇐⇒	imagine: *hayal görmek* • **Anna** : Did you hear a noise? **Becca** : No, you**'re imagining** things.
look: *görünmek* • The roads **look** very icy.	⇐⇒	look: *bakmak* • She **is looking** out of the window.
measure: *belli bir ölçüde olmak* • A whale **measures** 60 feet in length.	⇐⇒	measure: *ölçüsünü almak, ölçmek* • This machine **is measuring** his heart rate.
see: *görmek* • I **see** dark clouds in the sky.	⇐⇒	see: *görüşmek* • They**'re seeing** friends at the moment.
smell: *kokmak* • The room **smells** bad.	⇐⇒	smell: *koklamak* • The woman **is smelling** the flower.
taste: *tat vermek* • This fish **tastes** awful.	⇐⇒	taste: *tadına bakmak, tatmak* • I**'m** just **tasting** the soup.
think: *sanmak* • I don't **think** Jude will get the job.	⇐⇒	think: *bir konu hakkında düşünmek* • David**'s thinking** about getting a new job.
weigh: *ağırlığında olmak* • The luggage **weighs** 20 kilograms.	⇐⇒	weigh: *tartmak* • We**'re weighing** the parcel.

Non-progressive:

- I **feel** like my parents never listen to me.
- The food **smells** a little funny, so I hope it **tastes** OK.
- I **have** a new laptop now, so I don't need to save any more money.
- The concert **sounds** great. I can't wait to get inside.
- I **think** I know what you are saying but I'm not quite sure I understand.
- I **need** to be alone for a little while.
- The new student **feels** like she **doesn't belong** in the class.
- I **assume** that you **know** how to do this.
- I **own** several different watches that I **like** to wear on different days.

Progressive:

- I think I should go to the doctor's because I **am seeing** stars.
- Normally, Angelina is a loud and talkative person, but today she **is being** very quiet.
- The girl **is tasting** all of the different types of ice-cream in the shop.
- I **am thinking** about going out tonight but I'm not sure.
- I **am feeling** a little sick today, so I won't go to work.
- I **am having** a dinner party tonight and you're invited.
- I **am hearing** strange noises outside, so I think I had better go and check.

1 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Simple Present or the Present Continuous forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. I am entertaining our guests while my wife ________________ (**cook**) dinner for everyone in the kitchen.
2. Tonight, I ________________ (**take**) the bus to get home because my car is at the repair shop.
3. Tony ________________ (**stay**) with his aunt and uncle for a few months while his parents are away for the summer.
4. Usually I ________________ (**not / eat**) breakfast in the morning because I'm not very hungry.
5. Jennifer will stay at home tonight because she________________ (**study**) for a test she has tomorrow.
6. We ________________ (**stay**) late at work every day now to try to finish our project in time.
7. New research ________________ (**show**) that taking vitamin C tablets when you have a cold probably doesn't do much to help.
8. I have to get to the airport early this morning because I ________________ (**leave**) on a 9 a.m. flight.
9. Sally's parents ________________ (**not / support**) her dream of becoming a dancer.
10. Everyone at my office ________________ (**plan**) a big surprise birthday party for my boss for tomorrow.

2 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Simple Present or the Present Continuous forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. My mother ________________ (**look for**) a new maid because she is not happy with the one she has now.
2. I don't want to ________________ (**deal with**) any of my co-workers' drama today, so I ________________ (**sit**) by myself.
3. Timothy ________________ (**already / go**) to a different party on Friday night, so he can't come to ours.
4. Mostly everyone ________________ (**want**) to live a happy, peaceful life but unfortunately, that is not always possible.
5. William ________________ (**not / want**) to go to work today because he didn't sleep much last night and he is tired.
6. The textbook ________________ (**cover**) all the basic principles of physics well but some of the examples are not very clear.
7. There are many different things that people ________________ (**use**) their smartphones for.
8. Tommy often ________________ (**go**) to work on his bicycle but today he ________________ (**go**) on foot.
9. My wife and I ________________ (**read**) simple books in French to help us learn the language.
10. We ________________ (**move**) out of this city soon because my father got a job in another part of the country.

C THE SIMPLE PAST TENSE ($V_2 \rightarrow$ went, saw, made, etc.)

YAPI:

1 'Simple Past Tense' fiilin past hali (V_2) ile birlikte kullanılır. Özneye göre değişen bir yapısı yoktur. Bütün öznelerde (I, you, he, she, it, we, they) bütün cümle yapılarında (olumlu, olumsuz, soru) aynıdır.

Subject (Özne) + Verb$_2$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- I **hated** eggplant when I **was** a child but now I love it.
- She **made** a cake to take to the picnic but unfortunately she **left** it at home.
- Harrison **called** an ambulance when his wife **collapsed** on the street.
- Tim **survived** a bear attack last summer but he **lost** a leg.

2 Olumlu cümlelerde bütün öznelerde fiilin 2. hali kullanılır. Fiilin 2. hali iki şekilde olabilir: Düzenli (regular) ve düzensiz (irregular) fiiller. Düzenli fiillerin 2. hali fiilin sonuna '-ed' takısı eklenerek oluşturulur.

Aşağıdaki tablolarda fiillere '-ed' takısının eklenmesi ile ilgili kurallar verilmiştir.

'**-e**' ile biten fiillerde sadece '**-d**' harfi eklenir.

stare	→	stare + d	→	stared
type	→	type + d	→	typed
hope	→	hope + d	→	hoped
dine	→	dine + d	→	dined

Fiilin en son harfi '**y**' ise ve '**y**'den önce de sessiz bir harf varsa, '**y**' harfi düşer ve fiilin sonuna '**-ied**' takısı eklenir.

worry	→	worr + ied	→	worried
marry	→	marr + ied	→	married
cry	→	cr + ied	→	cried
bully	→	bull + ied	→	bullied

Fiilin en son harfi '**y**' ise ve '**y**'den önce de sesli bir harf varsa, '**y**' harfinde düşme olmaz, sadece '**-ed**' takısı eklenir.

play	→	play + ed	→	played
annoy	→	annoy + ed	→	annoyed

Son üç harfi '**sessiz + sesli + sessiz**' harf dizilimine sahip tek heceli fiillerde son harfte türeme olduktan sonra '**-ed**' takısı eklenir.

stop	→	stop + p + ed	→	stopped
chat	→	chat + t + ed	→	chatted
plan	→	plan + n + ed	→	planned
sip	→	sip + p + ed	→	sipped

Son üç harfi '**sessiz + sesli + sessiz**' harf dizilimine sahip tek heceli fiillerde son harf '**x, w**' veya '**y**' ise türeme olmaz, sadece '**-ing**' eklenir.

fax	→	fax + ed	→	faxed
glow	→	glow + ed	→	glowed
spray	→	spray + ed	→	sprayed

Son üç harfi '**sessiz + sesli + sessiz**' harf dizilimine sahip iki heceli fiillerde vurgu son hecedeyse, son harfte türeme olduktan sonra '**-ed**' eklenir.

permit	→	permit + t + ed	→	permitted
refer	→	refer + r + ed	→	preferred

Son üç harfi '**sessiz + sesli + sessiz**' harf dizilimine sahip iki heceli fiillerde vurgu son hecede değilse, herhangi bir ses olayı olmadan sadece '-**ed**' eklenir.

inherit	→	inherit + ed	→	inherited
target	→	target + ed	→	targeted

Bir fiilin son harfi '**l**' ise ve '**l**'den önce de sesli bir harf varsa '**l**' harfi türer ve sonra '-**ed**' eklenir.
*(Bu kural sadece İngiliz İngilizcesinde geçerlidir; Amerikan İngilizcesinde türeme olmadan '-**ed**' eklenir.)*

travel	→	travel + l + ed	→	travelled
distil	→	distil + l + ed	→	distilled

Bir fiilin son harfi '**c**' ise ve '**c**'den önce de sesli bir harf varsa kelimeye '**k**' harfi eklendikten sonra '**-ed**' eklenir.

mimic	→	mimic + k + ed	→	mimicked
traffic	→	traffic + k + ed	→	trafficked

Bu kuralların dışında kalan tüm fiillere sadece '**-ed**' eki eklenir.

end	→	end + ed	→	ended
watch	→	watch + ed	→	watched
mock	→	mock + ed	→	mocked
press	→	press + ed	→	pressed

- We **travelled** to Germany for a holiday last year.
- They **helped** me carry the couch up the stairs.
- The baby **cried** all day last Sunday.
- The companies **ended** their agreement last year.
- John **inherited** a huge amount of money from his parents.
- Her parents **permitted** her to join the summer camp.
- My father **arrived** home very late last night.
- Tara **carried** those heavy bags all by herself.
- The government **banned** smoking in public places.

3 Düzensiz fiillerin ise kendilerine has ikinci halleri vardır. Aşağıdaki mini tabloda bazı düzensiz fiiller verilmiştir. *(Tüm düzensiz fiiller için kitabın sonundaki 'Düzensiz Fiiller' listesine bakınız.)*

Bare Infinitive	Past	Past Participle
be (am, is, are)	was, were	been
drink	drank	drunk
make	made	made
sleep	slept	slept
put	put	put
come	came	come
hide	hid	hidden

- I **went** to my friend's house yesterday.
- He **drank** a mug of coffee and **left**.
- The firm **ran** into financial trouble that year.

4 Olumsuz cümle oluştururken 'Past Tense'in yardımcı fiili olan 'did'e 'not' eklenir. Cümlede 'did' kullanıldığında (olumsuz ve soru cümleleri) past halinde olan fiil yeniden yalın haline (bare infinitive) çevrilir.

Subject (Özne) + did not (didn't) + Verb (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- Mel and I **didn't meet** at a party. She is my childhood friend.
- The boys **didn't take** the trash out when they left, so I have to do it now.
- My mother **didn't clean** the kitchen, so my brother did it because he thought she was too tired.
- I **didn't see** anyone outside. Are you sure you have heard a noise?

5 Soru cümlelerinde yardımcı fiil olan 'did' öznenin önüne alınır. Yine cümlenin içinde 'did' olduğu için fiil yalın haliyle (bare infinitive) kullanılır. Yardımcı fiil olan 'did'e 'not' eklenerek olumsuz soru cümlesi oluşturulabilir.

Did + Subject (Özne) + Verb (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- **Did** Mary **take** her children to school today? Their front door is open.
- **Did** your teachers **grade** you fairly when you were in high school? Mine didn't.
- What **did** Jim **say** to his father to irritate him so badly?
- How **did** you **manage** to injure yourself so badly?
- **Didn't** anybody **tell** you that the office would be closed today? I thought everyone knew.
- **Didn't** Huck **see** that there was a car behind him? He crashed his car badly.
- Why **didn't** anyone **call** me? I should be the first one to know such things.

⚠ Not *Vurgu yapmak amacıyla olumlu cümlelerde yardımcı fiil 'did' ve fiilin yalın hali (bare infinitive) birlikte kullanılabilir. Bu durum 'Simple Present Tense'te aynı amaçla kullanılan yapıdaki yardımcı fiiller 'do' ve 'does'ın kullanımıyla aynıdır.*

Simple Past Tense:

- ***Jeff*** *: You didn't go to school, did you?*
  Jason *: No, I **did go** there.*
- *I **did like** the painting that you have in your kitchen.*
- *I **did have** a good time at the fancy dress party.*
- *I **did call** out for help when I saw the shark. Did you see me?*
- *He **did ask** me for some money. How do you know that?*

6 'Be' fiili geçmiş zamanda da öznelere göre çekimlenmektedir. Tekil özneler (I / he / she / it) için 'was, wasn't'; çoğul özneler (we / you / they) için 'were, weren't' kullanılır.

- He **was** at the airport very early yesterday for his morning flight.
- She **wasn't** a good singer when she **was** young.
- We **were** all supposed to meet for dinner last weekend.
- They **weren't** all at the party together.

⚠ Not *'Was', 'were' yapılarının olumlu kullanımında kısaltma yapılamaz.*

It's → it is
it has
~~*it was*~~

They're → they are
~~*they were*~~

KULLANIM:

1 'Simple Past Tense' geçmişte olup bitmiş, şimdiki zamanla hiçbir alakası olmayan eylemleri anlatırken kullanılır. Bu zamanda önemli olan eylemin ne zaman yapıldığıdır.

Bu durumu anlatmak için aşağıdaki zaman ifadeleri ve zaman zarfları kullanılabilir.

in 1980	*1980'de*
yesterday	*dün*
last week / month	*geçen hafta / ay*
two hours ago	*iki saat önce*
once	*bir keresinde*
once upon a time	*bir zamanlar*
that day	*o gün*
those days	*o günlerde*

in the past	*geçmişte*
at that time	*o zaman*
then	*o zaman*
When I was ...	*ben ... -iken*
How long ago?	*Ne kadar önce?*
in the 19th century	*19. yüzyılda*
in old days	*geçmiş günlerde*
the other day / week / morning	*önceki gün / hafta / sabah*
in antiquity	*eski zamanlarda*

- Chris **phoned** me yesterday because he **wanted** to ask me something.
- Last night, the detectives **discovered** the gang's hideout and they **arrested** all the gang members.
- When I **was** young, I **climbed** many trees and one day, I **fell off** one and **broke** my arm.
- I **had to** go home early from work yesterday because I **had** a headache and I couldn't concentrate on my work.
- When I **was** in China, I **went** out most evenings for dinner because it **was** so cheap.
- Japan **sent** in war planes to Pearl Harbour in 1941 and they **bombed** the USA ships that **were** in the harbour there.
- In the 17th century, Galileo Galilei **discovered** some of the moons of Jupiter with his telescope.

2 'Simple Past Tense' geçmişte tekrar edilen eylemler ve alışkanlıklardan bahsederken kullanılır.

- Each time before he **shot** the arrow, the hunter **breathed out** deeply and **relaxed** his body.
- Isaac Asimov was a famous science fiction writer who **produced** hundreds of novels and short stories during his life.
- Every morning before going to work, my father **shaved** his face to make sure it was completely smooth.
- The artist always **walked** around the park or by the lake for inspiration before starting a new painting.
- Scientists think that the tyrannosaurus rex was a predator that **hunted** other dinosaurs for food.
- The writer **cracked** his knuckles before he **started** writing as a habit.

3 'Simple Past Tense'te de tıpkı 'Simple Present Tense'te olduğu gibi alışkanlıklardan söz ederken sıklık zarflarını kullanmamız gerekir.

- I **always brushed** my teeth at night before I went to bed.
- My wife and I **seldom went** to the movies unless there was something really good on.
- Judy used to care a lot about her looks. She **always wore** make-up.
- I **occasionally ate** fast food, but most of the time I avoided it.

- When Jim was young, he **never ate** any vegetables unless his mother forced him to.
- We **rarely travelled**, but when we did, we flew with Emirates.
- Sandy **frequently checked** his phone for emails or messages.
- I **occasionally called** my brother to see how he was doing.

4 Art arda gerçekleşmiş olan eylemleri aktarırken kullanılır.

- She **woke up** when the alarm clock **went off**.
- They **arrived** at the airport around 10 a.m. and **went** to the motel by taxi. Then, they **ate** lunch at the restaurant but they **didn't have** any drinks.

5 Geçmişte belli bir süre devam etmiş ve sona ermiş eylemlerden söz ederken kullanılır.

- The Byzantine emperor Justinian the Great **lived** from 482 to 565.
- My father **worked** in the same company for about nine years.

6 Geçmişle ilgili genel geçer doğrulardan bahsederken kullanılır.

- Six decades ago, people **had** difficulty in heating the leftovers before the advent of microwave oven.
- Children **didn't have** electronic toys occupying their time in the past.

7 Durum belirten (non-progressive) fiillerle kullanılır.

- That diamond necklace **belonged** to my grandmother.
- I **heard** that you argued with your boss over your salary.

8 Bir hikâyedeki olayları anlatırken kullanılır.

- … Damien **heard** the barking of the dog. Then, the kitchen window slowly **opened** and …
- Hansel **knew** there **was** a monster at the door. He **waited** patiently...

Bazı yapılarla beraber 'Simple Past Tense' kullanılır ve bu yapılar belirli anlamlara gelirler.

a

It's time ...
It's about time ... + someone + did something
It's high time ...

Bu yapılar 'zamanı geldi de geçiyor' anlamına gelir.

- It's time we **prepared** the dinner.

- It's about time they **came** back to the office.
- It is time we **went** to bed.
- It is time that Jane **started** to look for a new job.
- You have been working out at the gym for over a month and you haven't lost weight. I think it's time that you **hired** a trainer.
- I think that it is high time that they **increased** our salaries.
- It is high time that you **called** your parents as they are worried sick about you.
- It is high time that you **stopped** taking money from your parents.

b

would rather
would sooner
+ someone + did something

Bu yapıyı birinden bir şey yapmasını istemek için kullanırız.

- I would rather you **paid** me the money now.
- I would sooner our students **studied** harder to pass their exams.

c

Suppose
Supposing
+ someone + did something

Bu yapı 'Farzedelim ki ...' anlamına gelir.

- Suppose / Supposing we **went** to Paris, where would you like to visit first?
- Suppose / Supposing your mother **showed** at the door now, how would you feel?

d

What if + someone + did something

Bu yapı 'Farzedelim ki ...' anlamına gelir.

- What if they **weren't** honest with you?
- What if Neil and Johannes **were** actually related?

e

I wish
+ I + did something
+ someone + did something

Bu yapı 'Keşke ...' anlamına gelir.

- I wish I **didn't waste** so much time playing video games.
- I wish I **didn't have** so many freckles all over my body.
- I wish Janet **stopped** bickering.

İngilizcede varsayımsal ifadeler kullanırken, bahsedilen zaman ve kullanılan zaman farklıdır. Böyle durumlarda cümle asıl zamandan bir 'tense' geriye atılır. Şimdiki zamandan bahsederken 'Past Tense', geçmiş zamandan bahsederken 'Past Perfect Tense' kullanılır. Yukarıdaki yapıların hepsi varsayıma dayalı hayali ifadelerdir. Dolayısıyla bahsedilen şimdiki zaman olmasına rağmen kullandığımız zaman, 'Simple Past Tense'tir.

⚠ **Not**

* *'It's time' ve benzeri yapılardan sonra her zaman cümle gelmeyebilir. Kendisinden sonra bir fiil de alabilir. Bu durumda ardından gelen fiilden önce 'to' kullanılmalıdır.*

▶ *It is time we **went** to work.*

▶ *It is time **to go** to work.*

▶ *It is time for us **to go** to work.*

* *Bazı durumlarda cümlede 'Simple Past'a ait zaman zarfları olmamasına rağmen 'Simple Past' kullanmamız gerekir. Bu durumlar:*

a) Herkes tarafından bilinen tarihi olaylar;

▶ *Too many soldiers **died** in the Second World War.*

b) Ölmüş olduğu bilinen birinin gerçekleştirmiş olduğu eylemler;

▶ *Shakespeare **wrote** at least thirty-seven plays.*

• Hayatta olan kişiler için 'Present Perfect Tense' kullanılır:

▶ *Ahmet Ümit **has written** many crime novels.*

* *Cümlelerde zamanı belli eden herhangi bir ipucu yoksa, 'tense' uyumuna bakılması gerekmektedir.*

▶ ***They ---- the project, so they ---- out.***

A) have finished / went **B) finished / went*

C) finish / went *D) finished / have gone*

D THE PAST CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE (Was / Were + V_{ing})

YAPI:

1 'Past Continuous Tense', 'to be' fiilinin ikinci hali olan 'was, were' ve fiilin '-ing' takısı almış haliyle birlikte kullanılır. 'Was' tekil zamirlerle (I, he, she, it) ve 'were' çoğul zamirlerle (we, you, they) kullanılır.

Subject (Özne) + was, were + Verb + ing (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

▶ I **was climbing** the cherry tree in the garden when I heard her scream.

▶ She **was never trying** to understand us when we were children.

▶ Max **was dancing** in the ballroom while I **was looking for** him in the attic.

▶ Jeremiah and I **were writing** the essay homework together when our teacher saw us.

2 Olumsuz cümlelerde yardımcı fiil konumundaki 'was, were' e 'not' ekleriz. '-ing' takısı ana fiilin sonunda kullanılmaya devam eder.

Subject	+	was, were + not (wasn't, weren't)	+	Verb + ing	+	Object	+	Place	+	Time
(Özne)				(Fiil)		(Nesne)		(Yer)		(Zaman)

- They **weren't swimming** in the stream. They were trying to catch a fish.
- Mandy **wasn't combing** her hair when her future husband saw her but that's what he says she was doing.
- Damien and Denzel **weren't shooting** birds. They were simply having a shooting exercise for military.
- Nancy **wasn't coming** home then. She was running away to see her boyfriend.

3 Soru cümlesi oluşturmak için yardımcı fiil konumundaki 'was, were' öznenin önüne alınır. Olumsuz soru cümlesi oluşturmak için yardımcı fiile 'not' eklenir.

Was Were	+	Subject	+	Verb+ing	+	Object	+	Place	+	Time
		(Özne)		(Fiil)		(Nesne)		(Yer)		(Zaman)

- What **was** she **doing** in the kitchen at three in the morning?
- **Wasn't** Joe **writing** a novel? He always boasted about that.
- **Were** they **fishing** or just **taking** a tour on the lake?
- **Were** you **asking** questions or **were** you just **listening** to understand?

KULLANIM:

1 'Past Continuous Tense'i geçmişte eş zamanlı olarak devam eden eylemlerden bahsederken kullanırız.

- While Mike **was doing** the shopping, I **was waiting** in the car.
- My brother **was doing** his homework while I **was playing** a computer game.
- Sarah **was decorating** the living-room. Meanwhile, Jim **was painting** the fences of their garden.

2 Bu durumu anlatmak için aşağıdaki zaman ifadeleri ve zaman zarfları kullanılabilir.

at the time	*o zaman*
still	*hala*
during	*-iken, esnasında*

meanwhile	*esnasında*
at this time yesterday	*dün bu zamanlarda*
at that time	*o zaman*
at the same time	*aynı zamanda*
all day yesterday	*dün bütün gün*
from 5 to 10	*beşten ona kadar*
when, while, just as	*-ında, -unda, -iken*

3 ‘Past Continuous Tense’in zaman bağlaçlarıyla kullanımı (when, while, as):

Geçmişte aynı anda gerçekleşen iki eylemi anlatmak için kullanılır.

- Half of the guards **were sleeping** while the other half **were patrolling** around the walls, then at midnight they swapped.
- While all the police **were watching** the front entrances, the criminal **was escaping** through the back entrance.
- Last weekend, while all my friends **were watching** movies at the cinema and **having** fun, I **was studying** for my exams.
- Vernon **was studying** in his room but he **was having** trouble as his younger brother, Matthew, **was talking** on the phone loudly in the next room.
- Lee **was cooking** in the kitchen while his wife **was talking** to the guests in the living room.
- Benjamin **was working** hard on our group project while I **sat** there playing on my phone.
- I **sat** waiting on a bench outside the building while my husband **was talking** to the lawyers inside.

4 Geçmişte devam eden bir eylemi anlatırken ‘Past Continuous Tense’, bu eylemi kesen ani eylemleri anlatırken de ‘Simple Past Tense’ kullanılır.

- Yesterday Shaun **was driving** to work when he **had** an accident.
- Lucy **was sitting** on her front step when her father **arrived** home.
- While I **was visiting** Japan on holiday, I **tried** some sushi but I didn’t like it very much.
- When the police **arrived** in the centre of the city, the group of protestors **were rioting**.
- Edward **was driving** to work last week when his car **got** a flat tire, and that made him late.
- Jonathan **was working** out at the gym when his favourite song **started** playing on the radio.
- I **was studying** hard in the evening yesterday when I **started** to get a headache and decided to stop.
- Jim and Mary **were walking** through the forest when all of a sudden a rabbit **ran across** their path.
- We **were** all **working** hard on our assignment when the fire alarm **went off** and we had to go outside.
- In January, the famous scientist **discovered** a new type of chemical while he **was working** in his lab.

- My grandma **fell down** the stairs when she **was trying** to go down to the basement to find some old photos.
- When the boss **arrived** at work fifteen minutes late, all of his employees **were** already **complaining** about him.
- Last week when we **were walking** around the neighbourhood, we **found** a nice Italian restaurant.
- My friends and I **were waiting** in line for the film festival movie when the organiser **came out** and **told** us it was cancelled.

5 'Past Continuous Tense', geçmişte belli bir zamanda devam eden eylemlerden bahsederken kullanılır.

- Yesterday at midday, I went into the bank to cash my check but all the bank workers **were having** their lunch.
- The secretaries **were replying** e-mails when the boss came in.
- **Were** you **chatting** to your boyfriend online at midnight last night?
- Henry is in the kitchen eating hamburgers. At this time yesterday, he **was also eating** hamburgers. That's all he ever does.

6 Geçmişte gerçekleşen geçici durumları anlatırken kullanılır.

- At the time, I **was working** for a large software company in California.
- During my training, I **was earning** more than my friends.
- We **were living** in Paris during the Second World War.

7 'Get' ve 'become' fiilleriyle birlikte gelişmekte ve değişmekte olan durumları anlatırken kullanılır. (Genellikle arkalarından 'comparative' bir yapı gelir.)

- Those days, it **was becoming** more and more difficult to find a decent job.
- We **were getting** frustrated with our cable TV provider, so we decided to change it.

8 'Always', 'continually', 'constantly', 'forever' gibi zaman zarflarıyla birlikte geçmişteki rahatsız edici alışkanlıklardan bahsederken kullanılır.

- My late grandfather **was** continually **smoking** cigarettes.
- I never really listened to myself, as I **was** always **taking** advice from others.
- Beethoven **was** forever **falling** in love with woman after woman, almost always to be ignored.

9 Hikâyelerde arka plan veya manzara tasviri yapmak için kullanılır.

- Darkness **was falling** over the town as Merriam hurried back home.
- When we arrived at the beach, the sun **was rising** and people **were talking** happily.
- It **was snowing** heavily outside and people **were making** their way home after work.

10 'Still' geçmişte başlamış bir eylemin sürekliliğini vurgularken kullanılır.

- The company started producing the iron in 1985 and it **was** still **producing** it 20 years later.
- He started his career in this office and he **was** still **doing** the same things ten months later.

11 'Expect', 'hope', 'intend', 'mean' ve 'plan' gibi fiillerle geçmişte planlanan eylemleri anlatırken kullanılır. Bu durumda olay ya gerçekleşmemiştir ya da fikir değiştirilmiştir.

- **Were** you **expecting** to see the manager this afternoon? I'm afraid he is too busy today.
- They **were planning** to come to your wedding but Eddy fell ill, so they weren't able to make it.
- We **were hoping** to go on a picnic but it started to rain suddenly.

12 'Think', 'hope' ve 'wonder' fiilleriyle kibar bir şekilde ricada bulunmak ve belirsizlik anlamı vermek için kullanılır. Bu kullanımda zaman zarfına bakılmaz.

- I **was thinking** of holding a meeting tomorrow.
- I **was hoping** you would join in our club soon.
- I **was wondering** if you could give me a lift.

⚠ Not *'Past Continuous Tense' durum belirten (non-progressive) eylemlerle kullanılmaz; eylem belirten fiillerle kullanılır. Durum belirten fiillerle, 'Simple Past Tense' kullanırız.*

- ***Were** you **having** a lot of toys when you were a child? (X)*
  ***Did** you **have** a lot of toys when you were a child? (✓)*
- ***Were** you **having** a drink with Joan? (✓)*

3 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Simple Past or the Past Continuous forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. While a lot of the soldiers __________________ (**sleep**) in their tents, the enemy army __________________ (**attack**) the camp.
2. I __________________ (**study**) to be a doctor at university but I __________________ (**decide**) to quit because it was too hard.
3. While we __________________ (**drive**) to a different city, our car __________________ (**break down**) so we had to call a repair truck.
4. The company __________________ (**sell**) many different products a few years ago but now it only sells a few.

5. I __________________ (**have**) a very hard time adjusting when I __________________ (**go**) to university because I had never lived away from my family before.
6. The loud bang __________________ (**cause**) the young boy to fall off the wall which he __________________ (**read**) on.
7. The dodo __________________ (**die out**) because they were very easy to hunt and people __________________ (**kill**) them all.
8. I __________________ (**go**) to my friend's house yesterday on the bus but it broke down, so I __________________ (**walk**) the rest of the way.
9. Last year, my company __________________ (**increase**) the amounts of profits that it __________________ (**earn**) by selling a popular new product.
10. The ancient Chinese __________________ (**build**) their Great Wall in order to stop the Mongolian army from invading.

4 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Simple Past or the Past Continuous forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. I __________________ (**drink**) some tea in the living room when my mother __________________ (**call**) on the phone to tell me the bad news.
2. The general of the army __________________ (**withdraw**) his troops from the battlefield when he saw that they __________________ (**lose**).
3. I __________________ (**notice**) that many of my dinner guests __________________ (**not / eat**) the soup that I had prepared.
4. My friend, Carlos, __________________ (**cook**) a Spanish dinner last night and it __________________ (**be**) delicious!
5. Sam __________________ (**eat**) breakfast while his mother __________________ (**make**) more pancakes.
6. When Jason __________________ (**give**) his wife a bunch of flowers on her birthday, she was very pleased and couldn't stop smelling them.
7. All my friends __________________ (**say**) that the pizza we __________________ (**eat**) last night was delicious, but I __________________ (**not / think**) it was very good.
8. Theo __________________ (**study**) for his maths test when all of a sudden someone __________________ (**knock**) very loudly on his door.
9. We __________________ (**walk**) on the beach when suddenly a huge wave __________________ (**crash**) into us and almost __________________ (**pull**) us out to sea.
10. Jane __________________ (**try**) to focus on her painting, but she __________________ (**be**) distracted by the music coming from the apartment above her.

E THE SIMPLE FUTURE TENSE

1. Be Going To + V_1 (am / is / are going to + V_1)

YAPI:

1 'Simple Future Tense' iki şekilde kullanılır. Bunlardan ilki 'be going to' yapısıdır. Bu yapıdan sonra fiilin yalın hali (bare infinitive) gelir. 'To be' fiilinin kullanımı gereği yardımcı fiil özneye göre 'am, is, are' şeklinde çekimlenir.

Subject (Özne) + am, is, are going to + Verb (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- Tim **is going to buy** two lamps to replace the broken ones in the kitchen.
- They **are going to start** taking a dancing lesson this Friday.
- We **are going to go** to Paris.
- We **are going to try** to finish all of the work.

2 Olumsuz cümle kurarken yardımcı fiil konumundaki 'am, is, are'a 'not' eklenir. Yine fiilin yalın hali (bare infinitive) kullanılır.

Subject (Özne) + am, is, are not going to (am not going to) (isn't going to) (aren't going to) + Verb (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- I **am not going to insult** any of my students when I become a teacher. I am going to love them all.
- She **is not going to eat** breakfast.
- They **are not going to fly** any more.
- He **isn't going to change** his class tomorrow. He **is going to stay** in the same class.

3 Soru cümlesi oluştururken yardımcı fiil olan 'am, is, are' öznenin önüne alınır. Olumsuz soru cümlesi oluşturmak için yardımcı fiile 'not' eklenir.

Am / Is / Are + Subject (Özne) + going to + Verb (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- What **is** Amy **going to wear** to the ball? She can't choose.
- **Are** Wilson and Harry **going to stay** with the royal family in the hotel or **are** they **going to spend** the night with their friends?
- How **are** they **going to pass** all those bags from the airport security control?
- **Are** you **going to join** us for the party this evening?

KULLANIM:

1 ‘Be going to’ yapısını gelecek ile ilgili bir kanıta dayalı tahminde bulunmak için kullanırız.

- When you start your new job, you **are going to feel** lost at first, but you will quickly become settled.
- Some of the countries who have oil-based economies **are going to face** big problems in the near future as the world stops using oil.
- When you start to learn a new language, it can be very difficult at first, but once you master the basics, you **are going to find** it a lot easier.
- Animals such as polar bears at the North Pole **are going to struggle** to survive as more and more of the ice melts.
- Many cities **are going to have** problems with traffic as more people move to the city from the countryside in the next few decades.
- Your new pet kitten may be hard to look after at first, but once it gets a bit older, it**’s going to be** easier to look after.

2 ‘Be going to’ gelecekle ilgili alınan kararlardan ya da yapılan planlardan bahsederken kullanılır. (‘Go’ ve ‘come’ fiilleri için genellikle ‘Present Continuous Tense’ tercih edilir.)

- We’ve decided what to do. We **are going to call** the police.
- I’ve made a decision about my future. I **am going to study** medicine at university.
- Everything is booked. We **are going to stay** at a five-star hotel and a driver will pick us up from the airport.
- I have my driving test next week, so on Sunday **I’m going to practise** driving with my parents all day.
- Our team leader has booked the meeting room for tomorrow, so we **are going to spend** the morning there.
- We **are going to visit** India next month; we will start in the South and then travel to the North.
- I would love to come out with everyone tonight but I can’t because **I’m going to go** and **see** my mother at the hospital.
- I will be a little late to work tomorrow because I **am going to stop** by the pharmacy first to pick up my medicine.

3 Bu durumu anlatırken aşağıdaki zaman ifadeleri ve zaman zarfları kullanılabilir:

tomorrow	*yarın*
tonight	*bu akşam*
on Monday	*Pazartesi*
soon	*yakında*
shortly	*kısa bir sürede*
before long	*yakın zamanda*

next week / month	*gelecek hafta / ay*
within two years	*iki yıl içinde*
in a decade	*on yıl içinde*
this weekend / year	*bu hafta sonu / yıl*
the day after tomorrow	*yarından sonraki gün*
two days from now on	*bugünden itibaren iki gün sonra*

⚠ Not *'Be going to' yapısının geçmiş zamana göre çekimlenmiş hali olan 'was / were going to' yapısı planlanmış fakat gerçekleştirilememiş eylemler için kullanılır.*

- *I **was going to finish** my homework last night, but I was too tired, so I went to bed early instead.*
- *We **were going to go away** for our holiday, but we decided we didn't have enough money to afford it.*
- *Jackson **was going to run** the full marathon last month, but he hurt his knee.*
- *Christopher and George **were going to go** biking together yesterday, but it started raining.*
- *I **was going to see** a movie at the cinema yesterday, but I ended up staying late at work.*
- *They **were going to have** a tour of the island, but the guide got sick and couldn't take them.*

2. Will (Shall) + V_1

YAPI:

1 'Simple Future Tense'in bir başka kullanımı 'will (shall)'dir. Bu yapıların her ikisinden sonra da fiilin yalın hali (bare infinitive) gelir.

Subject (Özne)	+	will	+	Verb (Fiil)	+	Object (Nesne)	+	Place (Yer)	+	Time (Zaman)
Subject (I, we)* (Özne)	+	shall	+	Verb (Fiil)	+	Object (Nesne)	+	Place (Yer)	+	Time (Zaman)

- I **shall fix** the garage tomorrow.
- My friend **will fly** from Canada in about five hours.
- I **will study** for my exam during the weekend when I have some free time.
- Sandy **will go** to the doctor's tomorrow.
- I **will (shall) help** you practise for the speaking part of your presentation.
- We **will (shall) try** to finish building this wall after we ask a builder for advice.
- We **shall do** everything we can to get you back to good health.
- I **shall help** you whenever you need me.

2 * 'Shall' yapısı sadece 'I' ve 'we' özneleriyle kullanılır. Teklif ve öneri belirtmek için soru cümlelerinde, kararlılık belirtmek için olumlu cümlelerde kullanılır. Olumsuz hali 'shan't'tır.

- **Shall** I **make** you a sandwich? *(offer - teklif)*
- **Shall** we **have** a cup of tea? *(suggestion - öneri)*
- We **shall** never **forget** what they did to us. *(decisiveness - kararlılık)*
- Let's go there, **shall** we? *(question tag)*
- I **will (shall) try** to join you for dinner tomorrow.
- If we can't find a cheap flight, then we **will (shall) not go**.
- I **will (shall) make** a big effort to finish everything tomorrow.
- If the weather is nice tomorrow, we **will (shall) go** to the beach.

3 Olumsuz cümle kurarken yardımcı fiil konumunda olan 'will ve shall' yapılarına 'not' eklenir. Bu yapılardan sonra da fiilin yalın hali (bare infinitive) gelir.

Subject (Özne) + will not (won't) + Verb (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

Subject (I, we) (Özne) + shall not (shan't) + Verb (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- I **will not go** home unless my mother apologizes to me right now.
- We **will (shall) not invite** Timothy to the wedding because his ex-wife will be there.
- You **won't understand** what I am going through if it doesn't happen to you.
- A new Prime Minister **will not be needed** for five years till the next elections unless he decides to leave himself.
- I **won't (shan't) make** a cake tomorrow because I won't have the time.

⚠ **Not** *'Shall' öneri, teklif anlamı dışında, gelecek zaman anlatmak için çok tercih edilen bir yapı değildir. Nadiren kullanılır.*

4 Soru cümlesi oluştururken yardımcı fiil olan 'will (shall)' öznenin önüne alınır. Olumsuz soru oluşturmak için yardımcı fiile 'not' eklenir.

Will + Subject (Özne) + Verb (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

Shall + Subject (I, we)* (Özne) + Verb (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- **Will (Shall)** we **come over** and visit you in the hospital today?
- **Will** you **make** me a sandwich? I am too hungry to go into the kitchen.
- What **will (shall)** I **prepare** for dinner? Would you like to eat pasta?

- How often **will** it **be** possible for you to travel for this job?
- **Will** James **continue** his career as a violinist or a singer?

KULLANIM:

1 Konuşma anında aldığımız, anlık kararlardan bahsederken kullanılır.

- **Jean** : It looks like that man is going to rob the bank!
  Tim : I'**ll call** the police.
- **Sally** : Did you forget about the assignment due tomorrow?
  Sam : Oh yes I did, **I'll start** it now.
- **Elizabeth** : You should probably call your parents to tell them you're OK.
  Steven : Good idea, **I'll do** that now.
- **Tom** : Which way should we go?
  Jane : I don't know; **I'll ask** that man over there.
- **Jenny** : We should start packing for our trip.
  John : I'**ll begin** right away.

2 Kanıta dayalı olmayan kişisel tahminlerden bahsederken kullanılır.

- In the future, people **will live** and **work** in space.
- Human beings **will be** able to live on other planets.
- Maybe it'**ll take** fifty years for temperatures to return to normal.
- You have been studying really hard so I'm sure that you **will pass** your test.
- Everyone thinks that our President **won't be** elected again.
- I think that the horse 'Lucky' **will be** the winner of the next race.
- I think that Hussein Bolt **will run** faster than ever before in the next Olympics.
- If you continue to eat like that, I think that you **will gain** weight.

3 Engelleyemeyeceğimiz, olması kesin olan olaylardan bahsederken kullanılır.

- My mother **will be** fifty-one next year.
- There **won't be** light before six o'clock in the morning.
- Everyone is worried because tomorrow a big storm **will hit** the coast.
- I'm excited because in just ten days there **will be** a lunar eclipse.
- My wife **will give** birth to our son sometime next month.

4 Bazı yapılarla birlikte 'will' kullanılır:

I don't think	*sanmam*
I don't expect	*ummuyorum*
I suppose	*sanırım*

I hope	*umarım*
I imagine	*hayal ediyorum / farzediyorum*
I reckon	*sanırım*
I wonder	*merak ediyorum*
I bet	*bahse varım ki*
I'm sure	*eminim ki*
perhaps	*belki*
maybe	*belki*
possibly	*muhtemelen*
probably	*muhtemelen / büyük ihtimalle*
definitely	*kesinlikle*
certainly	*kesinlikle*
no doubt	*hiç şüphe yok ki*

- Do you think Jack **will join** us?
- The teacher looks so cross. I bet he **will keep** scolding us.
- Do you think he'**ll accept** our offer?
- The teacher thinks we **won't be** successful.
- Scientists **will** probably **find** a cure for cancer.
- I hope that we **will** be able to **work** together again in the future.

Not *'Probably', 'definitely' gibi yapılar cümle olumsuzsa yardımcı fiilden önce, olumlu ise yardımcı fiilden sonra gelir.*

5 Birini tehdit ederken kullanılır.

- Stop wearing my clothes or I'**ll tell** my mother.
- I'**ll deal with** you later.
- If you keep coming into work late, you **will** very likely **lose** your job.
- If you do not stop making so much noise at night, we **will call** the police.

6 'Will' de tıpkı 'shall' gibi rica ve teklif belirtirken kullanılır.

- **Will** you **try** to finish all of your work on the project by the end of the week?
- **Will** you **have** some of these grapes? They are delicious.

7 Birisine söz verirken (genellikle 'I promise ...' yapısıyla birlikte) kullanılır.

- I'**ll give** you some money on Monday.
- I'**ll work** harder this semester, I promise.
- I **won't allow** silly behaviours in my class.
- We **will do** everything we can to help you fix up your house and garden.

8 Bir kişinin ya da bir şeyin tipik davranışlarından, onaylamadığımız bir alışkanlıktan bahsederken kullanılır.

- Darren is so lazy. He **will spend** the whole day sitting on a chair, playing computer games.
- Don't worry about being a little bit late to the cinema. The movie **won't start** until they show some adverts first.
- I know that whenever I don't get enough sleep I **will have** a headache the next day.
- I feel bad for new employees at my work because my boss **will** always **treat** them badly at first.
- You have to be careful about riding my bike down hills because the brakes **won't work** very well.
- My mother is a very pleasant person. She **will be** kind to anyone that she meets.

9 'Won't' ve 'shan't' yapıları reddetme anlamı taşır.

- Don't bother persuading your brother; he **won't come**.
- **Amanda** : I command all of you to obey me.
  Beatrice : No, we **shan't**.

10 'Future in the past' (Geçmişteki Gelecek)

Bu yapı geçmişte olacağını düşündüğümüz şeyleri anlatmak için kullanılır. Bunu ifade etmek için 'will' ve 'be going to' yapılarının 'past' hallerini kullanırız. (would + V_1; was / were going to + V_1). 'Would', bir iş için gönüllü olma ya da söz verme anlamı içerirken; 'was / were going to' gerçekleşmemiş planları anlatmak için kullanılır. Tahmin belirtirken her ikisi de kullanılabilir.

- I knew you **would come** here to see me off. *(voluntary action)*
- Sam **was going to come** to the party with his sister but she fell ill. *(failure in plan)*
- I had a feeling that the seminar **was going to** / **would be** great. *(prediction)*
- He promised he **would send** the parcel when he got there. *(promise)*

⚠ Not *'Was / were going to' yapısı ortada bir beklenti olması ama bu beklentinin gerçekleşmemesi sebebiyle genellikle 'but', 'however' ve 'yet' gibi bağlaçlarla kullanılabilir.*

F THE FUTURE CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE (will be + V_{ing})

YAPI:

1 Bu zamanda cümle kurulurken hem yardımcı fiil olan 'will' hem de 'be + V_{ing}' kullanılır. Bütün öznelerde aynı yapı kullanılır.

Subject (Özne) + will + be + Verb + ing (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- I **will be going** out a lot this week because my boyfriend is in town.
- My brother **will be visiting** us from Austria this time next week.

- Our boss and her husband **will be travelling** together during the business trip.
- Pam **will be seeing** you in her office in two hours, so please be a little kind to her.
- I **will be eating out** this week as my wife is away on holiday.

2 Olumsuz cümlelerde yardımcı fiil olan 'will'e 'not' eklenir. 'be + V_{ing}' kullanılmaya devam eder.

Subject (Özne) + will + not + be (won't) + Verb + ing (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- She **won't be arriving** soon, so we had better get started.
- Ford **will not be producing** any of their classical cars any more from 2020 onwards.
- We **won't be joining** you for the party and I would like to apologize for the inconvenience in advance.
- We **won't be going** anywhere for the summer holiday.

3 Soru cümlesi oluşturulurken yardımcı fiil olan 'will' öznenin önüne alınır. Olumsuz soru oluşturmak için de yine 'will'e 'not' eklenir.

Will + Subject (Özne) + be + Verb + ing (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- **Will** you **be enjoying** your wine on the beach while I am suffering at work tomorrow?
- **Will** Stuart **be working** from home next week or at the office?
- What **will** she **be doing** this afternoon? Do you know?
- Why **won't** she **be accompanying** us on such a lovely occasion?
- **Will** you **be working** next Friday?

KULLANIM:

1 Bu zaman kişisel planlar ile ilgili kibar sorular sormak ya da planlarımızdan bahsetmek için kullanılır.

- Sorry, **will** we **be stopping** for a break during our journey?
- **Are** you **coming** to the office? *(informal)*
  Will you **be coming** to the office? *(formal)*
- Martin is working, so he **isn't coming** to the seminar this afternoon.
- **Will** you **be going** to the market today? If you go, can you get me some eggs?

2 Kişisel planlarımızdan bahsederken 'Future Continuous Tense' (will be + V_{ing}) ile birlikte aşağıdaki zaman ifadeleri ve zaman zarfları kullanılabilir.

at this time tomorrow / next week	*yarın / gelecek hafta bu zamanlarda*
within / in a few hours	*birkaç saat içinde*
soon	*yakında*
in ten years' time	*on yıl içinde*
at 2 p.m. tomorrow	*yarın saat ikide*
later today	*bugün ilerleyen zamanlarda*
between 9 and 11	*9 ile 11 arası*
by next week / year	*gelecek haftaya / yıla kadar*

3 'Future Continuous Tense' gelecekte sözü edilen belirli bir zamanda devam eden eylemlerden bahsederken kullanılır.

- At ten thirty tomorrow, I **will be sailing** to Izmir on my new yacht.
- At midday tomorrow, I **will be having** lunch with my parents.
- On Saturday afternoon, I **will be swimming** in the sea.
- I **will be attending** a conference at this time tomorrow.
- Make sure that you lock up the house because none of us **will be returning** tonight.
- On Sunday, I **will be sleeping** at home until at least midday.
- The doctor **will be performing** surgery on the patient at 3 p.m. today.
- We probably won't get much sleep tonight because all of the neighbours **will be playing** music loudly.
- On Monday morning, all of us **will be eating** a big buffet breakfast together.
- This month, I have a lot of work to do but next month I **will be doing** nothing else except relaxing.
- A special guest **will be giving** a talk on quantum physics in the lecture hall tonight.

4 'Future Continuous Tense' gelecekle ilgili tahminde bulunmak için kullanılır.

- My son is doing very well in high school, so I think that in a few years **he will be studying** at a good university.
- I think that in the next twenty years, **we will** all **be using** free Internet and phone services.
- I'm starting to become sick of my job. I think by this time next year, **I will be working** at a different company.
- Sometime in the next 100 years, humankind **will be living** on both Earth and on Mars.

5 Çok yaygın bir kullanım olmasa da 'will be doing' yerine 'am / is / are going to be doing' yapısı da kullanılabilir.

- I don't want to take any phone calls from customers this week. **I'm going to be staying** with my family.
- On Friday, everyone from the office is going to the park and **we are going to be playing** sports and having a barbecue.

- In the future, humans **are going to be living** on Mars and in Space as well as on Earth.
- **I'm going to be doing** my homework all Friday night so that I can go out with my friends on Saturday.

5 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Simple Future (will or be going to) or the Future Continuous forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. We __________________ (**go**) to the airport at this time tomorrow evening to catch our flight to Germany.
2. I think that next year my Spanish definitely __________________ (**improve**) because I am going to go and live in Spain for a few months.
3. All the 12th grade students __________________ (**have**) a debate in the school's conference hall tonight.
4. This year, the country __________________ (**celebrate**) the 100th anniversary of their independence day.
5. My family are all going away on holiday to Thailand next week but I __________________ (**remain**) at home because I can't get time off work.
6. In the next few days, Liam __________________ (**study**) in his room and not doing much else because of his exam next week.
7. My sister __________________ (**apply**) for the position of regional manager in the company she is working for at the moment.
8. My husband and I __________________ (**have**) a dinner party on Friday night and you are all invited!
9. Thomas __________________ (**not / work**) next week because he is going to his son's wedding.
10. I hope that one day my favourite politician __________________ (**become**) the leader of the country as I think he could do a lot of good.

6 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Simple Future (will or be going to) or the Future Continuous forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. James __________________ (**go**) to the pet shop tomorrow to buy a puppy for his daughter's birthday.
2. I __________________ (**sleep**) late tomorrow morning, so please don't call me until the afternoon.
3. I have to call my best friend tomorrow and tell him that I can't help him move his house; I hope that he __________________ (**understand**).
4. With any luck, this time next year I __________________ (**work**) as a manager and will have a higher salary.
5. My friend, Sally, __________________ (**take**) some photography lessons so that she can get better at taking photos of us.
6. This year, we __________________ (**celebrate**) Christmas on the beach because we are going to be in Australia!

7. I am sure that after the big test next week, at least one or two students __________________ (**fail**) the class.
8. Henry decided that he __________________ (**learn**) how to fix his own computer, but he changed his mind.
9. Marcus __________________ (**try**) to start going to the gym next month and to eat healthier food.
10. Tonight, I __________________ (**put**) on my formal suit for the first time in a long time because I'm going to an awards event.

⚠ **Not** *'Simple Tense'lerin Türkçe karşılıklarını inceleyelim:*

*Most people **work** from around 8 a.m. till 5 p.m.*	*çalışır*
*They **are working** on a solution to the problem.*	*çalışıyorlar*
*I **worked** all day yesterday.*	*çalıştım*
*People **worked** harder to support their families fifty years ago.*	*çalışırdı*
*We **were** all **working** hard when the boss came in.*	*çalışıyorduk*
*I **won't do** any work this weekend; I need to rest.*	*çalışmayacağım*
*My co-workers and I **will work** long hours this week.*	*çalışacağız*
*I **am going to work** a little bit over the Christmas break.*	*çalışacağım*
*They **will be working** late tomorrow night.*	*çalışıyor olacaklar*
*I **won't be working** next year.*	*çalışıyor olmayacağım*

7 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. I __________________ (**go**) out tonight with my friend Bill, but it seems I won't be able to because my pipes are leaking.
2. Paul __________________ (**work**) really hard from morning till night, but his co-workers often don't __________________ (**work**) at all.
3. I saw the advertisement in the newspaper that said you __________________ (**sell**) your motorbike.
4. Humans __________________ (**reach**) Mars by the end of this century and start living there.
5. We __________________ (**enjoy**) sitting on the beach in the sunshine but my son __________________ (**want**) to go back to the hotel yesterday.
6. It was at this time yesterday that we __________________ (**sit**) in our broken down car by the side of the road waiting for the repair truck to come.
7. The mammoths all __________________ (**die**) over hundreds of years ago, mostly because people found them very easy to hunt and kill.
8. The use of solar power __________________ (**grow**) all over the world this year as countries start to switch to renewable energy.
9. According to recent research, vitamin C __________________ (**not / improve**) the immune system unless someone is getting enough vitamin C naturally.
10. Many animals __________________ (**adapt**) to the changes in their environment caused by humans and are able to survive.

8 **EXERCISE:**

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. Brad Pitt and Angelina Jolie __________________ (**remain**) some of the most famous actors in the world.
2. My friend who __________________ (**have**) an accident yesterday __________________ (**stay**) in the hospital for the next few days.
3. The city council __________________ (**plan**) to lower the speed limit on the roads to reduce the amount of accidents that have been happening this year.
4. While I __________________ (**run**) down by the beach, I __________________ (**notice**) that a dog had lost its owner there.
5. Yesterday I __________________ (**have**) a headache, but today I __________________ (**feel**) much better, probably because I slept well.
6. Kevin __________________ (**go**) on vacation to Paris this month, but because of the recent terrorist activity there, he cancelled the trip.
7. By this time next week, we __________________ (**live**) in our new apartment on the other side of the city.
8. A fight __________________ (**break**) out at the restaurant yesterday, but it had already ended before the police __________________ (**arrive**).
9. Since our last nanny quit to move back home, we __________________ (**look for**) a new one to take care of the kids during the day.
10. Almost all of the people who were on holiday __________________ (**leave**) early because of the news that there was going to be an earthquake.

2. PERFECT TENSES

G THE PRESENT PERFECT TENSE (have / has + V_3)

YAPI:

1 'Present Perfect Tense' yapısında tekil öznelerle (he, she, it) 'has + past participle (V_3)' yapısı kullanılır. Çoğul özneler (we, you, they) ve 'I' ile birlikte ise 'have + past participle (V_3)' kullanılır.

Subject	+	have has	+	Verb$_3$	+	Object	+	Place	+	Time
(Özne)				(Fiil)		(Nesne)		(Yer)		(Zaman)

- I **have prepared** dinner for you.
- They **have left** the house.
- She **has done** her homework.
- We **have prepared** a surprise party for my sister.

2

‘Be’ fiilini, ‘have been / has been’ şeklinde kullanırız.

- We **have been** fans of Robert Downey Junior since the first *Iron Man* movie.
- It **has been** three days since we had breakfast together.
- It **has been** a while since I last saw my cat.

3

Olumsuz cümlelerde yardımcı fiil olan ‘have, has’e ‘not’ eklenir. Fiil yine 3. hali (past participle) ile kullanılır.

Subject (Özne) + have not (haven’t) / has not (hasn’t) + $Verb_3$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- I **haven’t heard** of any animal faster than a cheetah.
- Alice **has not met** Tommy yet, but I think she will like him.
- Abby and Omar have gone on a trip to France and I still **haven’t heard** from them.
- The doctor **hasn’t diagnosed** me with an illness, even though it is extremely difficult for me to breathe.

4

Soru cümlesi oluşturulurken yardımcı fiiller ‘have’ ve ‘has’ öznenin önüne alınır. Olumsuz soru oluşturmak için yardımcı fiile ‘not’ eklenir.

Have / Has + Subject (Özne) + $Verb_3$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- **Maisie** : **Have** you **ever danced** in front of a jury?
  Natasha : I have, and it makes me really nervous even though I am a great dancer.
- What **has** Alma **done** to her hair? She looks stunning.
- **Haven’t** you **seen** this film before? I remember you telling me about it and now you want to watch it again.
- **Has** Miriam **found** out about her husband’s betrayal? I didn’t see her wedding ring on her finger yesterday.

KULLANIM:

1 »»

Belli bir zaman belirtilmemiş, geçmiş zamanda olmuş eylemleri anlatırken kullanılır. ‘Present Perfect Tense’ ile kurulan cümleler ‘when’ sorusunun cevabını vermez; çünkü bu zamanda olayın ne zaman olduğunun bir önemi yoktur. Önemli olan eylemin gerçekleşmesidir.

- I have prepared it yesterday. (✗)
  I prepared it yesterday. (✓)
  I have prepared it. (✓)
- I have bought some new furniture. *(Ne zaman sorusunun cevabı cümlede yok. Önemli olan eşyaları satın almış olmam.)*
- I bought some new furniture last week. *(Eylemin yapılış zamanı cümlede belli.)*

2 ‘Present Perfect Tense’ ile kullanılan zaman ifadeleri aşağıdaki gibidir:

up to now	*şimdiye kadar*
up till / until now	*şimdiye kadar*
by now	*şimdiye kadar, şimdiye dek*
up to present	*şimdiye kadar*
so far	*şimdiye kadar*
lately	*son zamanlarda*
recently	*son zamanlarda*
in recent years	*son yıllarda*
ever since	*o zamandan beri*
since	*-den beri*
since then	*o zamandan beri*
for	*-dır, -dir, boyunca*
ever	*hiç*
never	*hiç*

3 Bu zamanı geçmişte başlamış, konuşma anında da devam eden eylemlerden bahsederken de kullanırız.

- **Have** you **worked** at the company you are at now for a long time?
- Steven **hasn't been** able to travel outside the country since he lost his passport.
- We **have prepared** a party for Lucy so that we can surprise her when she gets back from work.
- He **has received** a new bicycle for his birthday but I don't think he has taken it for a ride yet.
- John **has had to listen** to a lot of complaining from his housemates since he brought his dog to the house.
- Mary **has done** all her chores and homework, so now she can go and play with her friends.
- My parents **have gone away** on holiday, so now it is quiet in the house.
- James **has ordered** pizza for all of us, so we are watching a movie while we are waiting for it.

4 Bir olayı haber verirken kullanırız.

- My daughter **has had** a fight with another girl at school, so I have to go to the school and talk to the principal.
- They **have just announced** the winner of the election on television.
- The protesters in the city centre **have rioted**, so we should avoid that part of the city.
- The government **has released** their report on the investigation into corruption.
- I'm sorry but I **have not been** able to get dinner ready as I came home half an hour ago.
- The company's CEO **has announced** that the company is bankrupt.
- My son **has had** his vaccination shots, so I don't think he will get sick.

5 Kişinin yaşadığı olayları ve tecrübeleri anlatırken, genellikle 'ever / never...before', 'once, twice, ...times' yapılarıyla kullanırız.

- My mother **has** never **been** to China because she doesn't like Chinese food.
- I **have travelled** by boat several times in my life but only on small ones.
- James **has tried** different food from all over the world many times.
- She has seen a lot of violence in her life but she **has** never **seen** anyone die.
- I **have gone** skiing before in the mountains but not snowboarding.
- Lions **have suffered** many losses to their habitat before.

6 Bitmemiş, devam eden zaman diliminde gerçekleşen eylemlerden bahsederken kullanırız.

- Tonight I **have seen** three shooting stars in the night sky.
- So far today, I **haven't been** able to call my friend as I am very busy with my work.
- My co-workers and I **have tried** hard to improve our performance this month.
- This week, I **have worked** out at the gym almost every day.
- This year, we **have tried** three times to get tickets to a big concert.
- I **have been** on the phone for two hours with the customer service so far.

7 Geçmişi ve şimdiki zamanı karşılaştırıp meydana gelen değişiklikleri ifade ederken kullanırız.

- The climate **has become** much hotter in recent years.
- The prices of everything **have gone up** over the years.

8 Superlatives (the easiest, the most difficult, etc.) ve ordinal numbers (the first, the second, the last, etc.) gibi yapılardan sonra kullanılır.

- This is the worst coffee I **have ever drunk**.
- This is the third time I **have visited** Canada but it is the first time I **have travelled** by plane.
- She is the nicest person I **have seen** so far.
- England is the most expensive country I **have ever been to**.

⚠ **Not**

'To be' fiilinin üçüncü hali 'been'dir.

1. Present, Future Tenses → am, is, are
2. Past Tense → was, were
3. Perfect Tenses → been

9 Been to / Gone to / Been in

Been to: Kişinin bir yere gidip geldiğini, artık orada olmadığını anlatmak için kullanılır.

- I'**ve been to** Moscow before, so I can assure you that it's a wonderful city. *(I'm back now.)*
- My mother and father **have been to** Ireland. *(They have come back. Now they are here.)*
- My best friend **has been to** the coast. *(He has come back. He is here now.)*

> **Not** *Bu yapıdaki 'to', 'be away' ve 'be abroad' gibi zaten zarfla birlikte kullanılan yapılarla birlikte kullanılmaz.*
> - *They **have** never **been** abroad.*
> - *The babies' parents **have been** away for a while.*

Gone to: Kişinin bir yere gittiğini ve hala orada bulunduğunu anlatmak için kullanılır.

- **Abe** : Where is your daughter?
  Bennito : She **has gone to** school but she'll be here soon. *(She is not here.)*
- My mother and father **have gone to** Ireland. They will be back next week. *(They aren't here now.)*
- My best friend **has gone to** the coast. He will be back tomorrow. *(He isn't here now.)*

Been in: Kişinin bir yerde olduğunu belirten durumlarda kullanılır.

- **Annabel** : How long **have** you **been in** London?
  Brad : I **have been** here for almost ten years and I don't think of going back to Los Angeles.

10 Ever & Never

Ever & Never: Aynı anlama gelirler. İkisi de 'hiç' demektir. 'Ever' soru cümleleri ve olumsuz cümlelerde, 'never' olumlu cümlelerde kullanılır, fakat cümlenin anlamını olumsuz yapar.

- Have you **ever** been to Finland?
- My best friend has **never** let me down.
- No one has **ever** proved that silicon implants are unsafe.
- Nobody has **ever** climbed Mount Everest without using oxygen.
- I have **never** been to that pavement café before.

11 Just / already / yet

'Just' eylemin henüz yapıldığını, 'already' eylemin beklenen zamandan önce yapıldığını belirtir. İkisi de ana fiilden hemen önce ve olumlu cümlelerde kullanılır. 'Yet' ise cümlenin sonunda, olumsuz cümlelerde ya da soru cümlelerinde kullanılır.

Just / already → olumlu cümleler
Yet → olumsuz cümleler, soru cümleleri

- **Antoine** : Let's eat a sandwich.
  Bruce : No, let's not. I have **already** had lunch.
- **Arvin** : Is the coffee ready?
  Chloe : Yes, I've **just** made it.

- **Aubrey** : Have you posted the parcel **yet**?
  Benita : No, I haven't sent it **yet**.
- **Kenny** : Have you found some time to clean the kitchen **yet**?
  Jane : No, I have **just** finished my assignment. I will clean it now.
- **Tommy** : Would you like to come over to my house and have some lunch?
  Cindy : Unfortunately, I have **already** had lunch at my house.
- The bus has **just** left the terminal, so there is no need to hurry any more.

12 For / since

'Since' yapısından sonra eylemin gerçekleşmeye başladığı zaman söylenir.

since 5 o'clock	*saat beşten beri*
since last year	*geçen yıldan beri*
since my childhood	*çocukluğumdan beri*
since lunch time	*öğle yemeğinden beri*
since the day before yesterday	*dünden önceki günden beri*
since two days ago	*iki günden beri*

- The country has not had a strong economy **since** the recession in 2008.
- There have been some problems with the Internet connection **since** last Wednesday.
- I haven't been able to call anyone on my phone **since** yesterday when it stopped working.
- More and more people have lived in cities **since** the Industrial Revolution around two hundred years ago.

'For' yapısından sonra eylemin başlangıcından konuşma anına kadar geçen sürenin kaç gün, kaç yıl vb. olduğu belirtilir. Yani, toplam süreden bahsetmek için kullanılır.

for ages	*yıllardan beri*
for a week	*bir haftadır*
for three hours	*üç saattir*
for a long time	*uzun zamandır*
for centuries	*yüzyıllardır*

- I have not received a phone call from either of my parents **for** more than two weeks.
- We have worked on the project together **for** three weeks.
- I have not left my house **for** the entire weekend.
- It hasn't rained in this area **for** three days.

Not *'For' sadece 'perfect tense'lere ait bir yapı değildir; başka zamanlarla da kullanılabilir.*

- *Next week my co-workers and I will go through a training programme that will last **for** six hours.*
- *We had to wait **for** twenty minutes outside the restaurant before they had a table for us.*
- *I am going to be in Scotland **for** three weeks, so I will try to see as much of it as possible.*
- *Tomorrow, I will go to the airport early because I will probably have to wait in the line **for** a long time.*
- *We had to walk **for** over an hour before we reached the next place that had a phone.*

13 'Since'in Kullanım Şekilleri

a Preposition (Edat) olarak: -den beri

- I have studied Chemistry at college **since** last year.
- She has loved Maths **since** her early school years.
- Bennie and Abbie have desired to be doctors **since** their childhood.

b Adverb (Zarf) olarak: o zamandan beri

- We started to live in Samsun in 2010 and I haven't gone back to Antalya **since** / **ever since** / **since then.**
- The Churchills went to Germany in 1970 and they have resided there **since** / **ever since** / **since then**.
- Jane and I became friends a year ago and we have spent time together **since** / **ever since** / **since then.**
- I got cross with Julie last week. **Since then**, I haven't talked to her.

c Conjunction (Bağlaç) olarak: -den beri, o zamandan beri

- **Since** / **Ever since** we moved here, we haven't eaten out.
- **Since** / **Ever since** I started working at weekends, I haven't been able to go out with my friends.
- **Since** / **Ever since** the President announced his new policy last month, he has not been very popular.

- Aşağıdaki notlara dikkat edelim.

Not

'Since'li cümlenin fiili 'be' ise her iki taraf 'Present Perfect' olabilir.

- ***Since** I have been here, I have drunk three cups of tea.*
- *I have been together with Tina **since** she has been here.*

Not

'For a long time' yapısı genellikle olumlu cümlelerde kullanılır. Olumsuz cümlelerde ve soru cümlelerinde bunun yerine 'for long' ya da 'long' kullanılır.

- *I haven't heard from him **long / for long**.*

Not

in the last millenium	*son bin yılda*
for the last three months	*son üç ayda*
during the past decade	*son on yılda*
over the last five weeks	*son beş haftada*
for the past ten days	*son on günde*

Not *'The last' ve 'the past' yapısı son derece önemlidir ve testlerde de karşımıza çıkmaktadır. Bu yapılar sadece 'Present Perfect Tense' ile kullanılmaktadır ve testlerdeki en büyük çeldiricisi 'Simple Past Tense'tir. Bu yüzden, 'last year' ve 'in the past' yapıları 'Simple Past Tense' ile kullanılırken, 'in the last year' ve 'in the past year' yapılarının ise 'Present Perfect Tense' ile kullanıldığını bilmek önemlidir.*

- *I have eaten way too much **in the past few days**. (= in the last few days)*
- *I didn't eat **last night**.*
- *Employee salaries have not got any higher **in the past couple of years**.*
- *The cost of buying a house has increased a lot **in the past ten years**.*
- *If I want to, I can quit my job because I have made so much money **in the past five years**.*
- *The population of the city has increased very quickly **in the past year**.*

Not *Throughout history / ages (Tarih / çağlar boyunca)*

- ***Throughout** history, the world has experienced urbanisation.*
- ***Throughout** ages, culture has been a guiding force in shaping a country and its people.*

14 'Simple Past Tense' ile 'Present Perfect Tense'in karşılaştırıldığı aşağıdaki tabloyu inceleyiniz.

Simple Past	**Present Perfect**
Eylemin zamanı bellidir.	Eylemin zamanı belli değildir.
▸ I met John **last summer**.	▸ I have met Aylin.
Zaman dilimi farklıdır.	Zaman dilimi aynıdır.
▸ I talked to him this afternoon. *(Cümle kurulduğunda vakit akşam.)*	▸ I have talked to him this afternoon. *(Cümle kurulduğunda vakit yine öğleden sonra.)*
Özne vefat etmiştir.	Özne hayattadır.
▸ Orhan Veli Kanık wrote many poems.	▸ J. K. Rowling has written many novels.
Eylemin etkisi bitmiştir.	Eylemin etkisi devam ediyordur.
▸ My mother baked some cookies and my sister ate them all.	▸ My mother has baked some cookies. We can eat a few.

Aşağıdaki cümleler Türkçeye çevrildiğinde 'past tense' gibi görünseler de; dikkat etmemiz gereken şey işlevdir. Aşağıdaki eylemlerin üçü de geçmişte gerçekleşmiştir.

- Arthur **broke** his new laptop yesterday. Today he was able to fix it.
  (Zaman bellidir, önemli olan olayın dün olmuş olmasıdır.)
- Arthur **broke** his new laptop yesterday. Today he has to take it to get it fixed.
  (Zaman bellidir, önemli olan olayın dün olmuş olmasıdır.)
- Arthur **has broken** his new laptop. He has to take it back to the store today.
  (Önemli olan bilgisayarın kırılmış olmasıdır, zaman önemli değildir.)

Not *'Present Perfect Tense', Türkçeye farklı şekillerde çevrilebilir. Dolayısıyla bakılması gereken şey cümlenin Türkçeye nasıl çevrildiği değil, zamanın işlevi ve ilgili zaman ifadeleridir.*

- *We **have gone** to the same restaurant about fifteen times. (gittik)*
- *I **have worked** for this company since I graduated from university. (çalışıyorum, çalışmaktayım)*
- *Nobody **has managed** to get a perfect score in that class. (başaramadı, başaramamış)*
- ***Have** you **seen** the new play yet? (gördün mü)*
- *Today we **have visited** all the sights in this city. (gezdik)*
- *I think that I **have read** that book before. (okudum, okumuştum)*

9 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Simple Past or the Present Perfect forms of the verbs in the parentheses.

1. I __________________ (**watch**) a movie last night with my friends. It was good but I missed the start because I __________________ (**arrive**) late.
2. I __________________ (**know**) her for almost ten years. She is a very hardworking and honest person.
3. We __________________ (**not / have**) time to do anything fun yet as we __________________ (**be**) so busy with work and looking after the kids.
4. Things __________________ (**change**) a lot in the city since I first moved here. It's almost twice as big now as it was then.
5. Last year, I __________________ (**travel**) to France on holiday. I __________________ (**see**) many interesting things and tried lots of French food.
6. I __________________ (**tell**) him not to go biking off the track but he did it anyway and broke his ankle when he __________________ (**fall**) off his bike!
7. She __________________ (**study**) two foreign languages so far and now she can speak them both very well.
8. He __________________ (**practise**) his guitar every night for months, and last night he __________________ (**play**) a song for all of us.
9. Computer programming __________________ (**be**) a very popular class last semester, so they __________________ (**expand**) the class this semester.
10. Communication __________________ (**become**) much easier and cheaper because of new technology like the Internet and cell phones.
11. They __________________ (**not / have**) a chance to go to the shopping mall yet today because they __________________ (**be**) busy with other things.
12. Before the Industrial Revolution, most people didn't live in cities, they __________________ (**live**) in the countryside.
13. When I __________________ (**be**) younger and living at home with my parents, I __________________ (**work**) part time as a waiter.
14. My best friend and I __________________ (**work**) together at the same company for the past five years.
15. Business __________________ (**become**) one of the most popular subjects for university students these days.

H THE PRESENT PERFECT CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE (have / has been + V_{ing})

YAPI:

1 'Present Perfect Continuous Tense' yapısında tekil özneler (he, she, it) 'has + been' ve ardından fiil, '-ing' takısı ile birlikte kullanılır. Çoğul özneler de (we, you, they) ve 'I' da 'have + been' ve ardından fiil '-ing' takısı ile birlikte kullanılır.

Subject (Özne) + have / has + been + $Verb_{ing}$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- We **have been working** outside all day.
- I **have been trying** to finish reading my book for weeks.
- He **has been trying** to fix the computer for two hours.
- Bernardo **has been expecting** to get a promotion but instead, his friend has been promoted.

2 Olumsuz cümlelerde yardımcı fiil olan 'have, has'e 'not' eklenir. Yine 'been + V_{ing}' kullanılmaya devam eder.

Subject (Özne) + have not (haven't) / has not (hasn't) + been + $Verb_{ing}$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- It **hasn't been raining** in the region for more than three months.
- They **haven't been walking** for very long.
- I **haven't been doing** my homework recently.
- She **hasn't been looking after** her dog properly.

3 Soru cümlelerinde yardımcı fiiller 'have' ve 'has' öznenin önüne alınır. Olumsuz soru cümlesi oluşturmak için yardımcı fiile 'not' eklenir.

Have / Has + Subject (Özne) + been + $Verb_{ing}$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- **Have** you **been getting** any news from Salma? She seems to have been lost recently.
- **Has** anybody **been jumping** on this bed? It feels like it has been under a lot of imbalanced pressure.
- What **has** the babysitter **been feeding** this baby? She has gained more weight than ever.
- How many people **have been taking** these pills since they were first released? They have been proven to be fatally dangerous.

KULLANIM:

1 'Present Perfect Continuous Tense' ile ifade edilen eylem ya yeni bitmiştir ya da halen devam ediyordur. Cümledeki vurgu eylemin sonucunda değil, eylemin kendisindedir.

- I **have packed** our bags. We can leave now. *(sonuç)*
  I **have been packing** our bags. I am almost done. (I am still packing.) *(süreç)*
- I **have helped** our son study for the test. He is ready for it now. *(sonuç)*
  I **have been helping** our son to study for the test. He is almost ready. (I am still helping him.) *(süreç)*

2 'Present Perfect Continuous Tense'te kullanılan zaman ifadeleri aşağıdaki gibidir:

since, for, recently, today	*-den beri, boyunca, son zamanlarda, bugün*
all day / week / month	*bütün gün / hafta / ay*
for the last / past two weeks	*geçtiğimiz iki haftadır, son iki haftadır*
in the last / past two weeks	*geçtiğimiz iki haftada, son iki haftada*
how long	*ne kadar süredir*

3 Geçmişte başlamış ve hala devam eden eylemlerden bahsederken kullanılır.

- It **has been raining** for the past 24 hours and I don't know if it will stop anytime soon.
- The people in the apartment next to us **have been listening** to really loud music all night. I hope they turn it off soon.
- We **have been driving** all morning to get to the beach. I hope that we get there soon.
- He has a big test tomorrow, so he **has been studying** all day. He probably won't finish until later tonight.
- She **has been sleeping** all morning. We should probably wake her up soon or she will sleep all day!
- I **have been building** a shed in my backyard for the past few months and I hope to finish it sometime soon.
- The criminal **has been hiding** from the police for the past two years but they think they will catch him soon.
- My mother **has been cleaning** the house by herself recently as she hasn't found a maid she wants to hire yet.

4 Yeni bitmiş olan ve etkisi hala devam eden (genellikle sebep-sonuç ilişkisi olan durumlarda) eylemlerden bahsederken kullanılır.

- I'm about to start my test but I feel totally confident because I **have been studying** all week.
- I am very angry as I **have been trying** to call that company all day and nobody has answered until now.

- I'm very hungry, so I think now that I'm home, I will make a big dinner. I **have been running** around all day and have not had time to eat properly.
- My wife looks very tired this morning which is not surprising as the baby **has been crying** all night.
- **John** : That is great. You got a promotion. **Have** you **been expecting** that for long?
  Jane : No, I have only expected it in the last two months.
- **Brian** : Do you have much work left to do?
  Steven : Actually I **have been doing** my assignment all day and now I'm finished.

5 Geçici durumları anlatırken kullanılır.

- I **have been living** with my uncle for three years but I'm going to move into my new apartment tomorrow.
- I **have been working** at a bank but I will look for a new job soon.
- She **has been enjoying** Jack's company for a while now but she is not taking him seriously.

6 'Non-progressive' fiiller 'Present Perfect Continuous Tense'te kullanılmaz. Fakat, 'wish', 'want', 'hope' gibi fiiller beklenti olduğunda vurgu yapmak amacıyla kullanılabilir.

- I ~~have been admiring~~ / **have admired** him for a long time.
- My friend, Sam, ~~has been knowing~~ / **has known** me since I was a child.
- My neighbour ~~has been having~~ / **has had** problems with people throwing trash into his yard all year.
- We have been **wanting** / **waiting** / **wishing** / **hoping** to go on a holiday in summer.

7 Sıklık bildiren zarflarla (always, never, sometimes, etc.) ve eylemin bitmiş olduğunu vurgulayan 'just', 'already' ve 'yet' gibi yapılarla bu zaman kullanılamaz.

- **I ---- my homework yet.**
  A) haven't been doing (X)
  B) haven't done (✓)
- **He ---- as a lawyer for six months now.**
  A) has worked (✓)
  B) has been working (✓)

8 Yapılması ve gerçekleşmesi uzun süren 'teach', 'rain', 'sleep', 'stand', 'snow' ve 'wait' gibi fiiller hem 'Present Perfect Tense' hem de 'Present Perfect Continuous' ile; 'cut', 'break', 'stop' ve 'die' gibi kısa süreli fiillerse sadece 'Present Perfect Tense' ile kullanılır.

- He **has broken** his leg.
- She **has stopped** the car.
- I **have waited** for you since 1 o'clock.
  I **have been waiting** for you since 1 o'clock.
- I **have been teaching** in this school for the past six years.
- She **has been cutting off** pieces from the huge cake for several days, but still, she has some left. *(Bu cümlede kullanılan 'cut' eylemi anlık olmadığı için 'Present Perfect Continuous' ile de kullanılabilir.)*

9 Cümlede 'how much' ve 'how many' sorularının cevabı varsa 'Present Perfect', 'how long' sorusunun cevabı varsa genellikle 'Present Perfect Continuous Tense' kullanılır. 'Non-progressive' fiiller için bu kural geçerli değildir.

- We **have tried** to contact him three times this week. *(how many)*
- So far, I **have completed** two of my homework assignments. *(how many)*
- We **have been living** next to each other for about two years. *(how long)*
- The author **has been writing** his new novel since the start of the year. *(how long)* He **has written** almost eight chapters. *(how many)*
- We **have been driving** in the car all day and so far we **have driven** about 400 kilometres. *(how long / how many)*
- You **haven't been doing** your homework for three days in a row, is something wrong? *(how long)*
- For the past four days I **have been staying** at home to look after my sick child. *(how long)*
- I **have been running** laps for the past hour. *(how long)* I **have run** ten laps already. *(how many)*
- The author **has been writing** novels for five years. *(how long)* He **has written** eight so far. *(how many)*
- My best friend and I **have been talking** on the phone all evening; we **have talked** about several subjects so far. *(how long / how many)*
- I **have spent** a lot of money recently. *(how much)*

Present Perfect

Vurgu eylemin bitmesindedir.

- The country **has prepared** an economic plan.

⇐⇒

Present Perfect Progressive

Vurgu eylemin devam etmesindedir.

- The country **has been preparing** an economic plan for a week.

Present Perfect

Sonuç önemlidir.

- **I've prepared** the meal; there it is.

⇐⇒

Present Perfect Progressive

Eylemin kendisi önemlidir.

- I **have been preparing** the dinner all afternoon.

Present Perfect

How much / How many

- She **has appeared** in the series three times this season.

⇐⇒

Present Perfect Progressive

How long

- She **has been appearing** in the series all season.

Present Perfect

Kalıcı durumlardır.

- People **have consumed** much more Coke in the last twenty years than before.

⇐⇒

Present Perfect Progressive

Geçici durumlardır.

- People **have been consuming** less Coke recently due to its health hazards.

10

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Present Perfect or the Present Perfect Continuous forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. The butler __________________ (**serve**) the rich family for almost forty years and now he is getting close to retirement.
2. Many civilizations __________________ (**utilize**) rivers to give their towns and cities some defence.
3. They __________________ (**sit**) outside in the garden, smoking cigarettes and chatting for over an hour now.
4. The Industrial Revolution __________________ (**be**) one of the most significant events in the history of mankind.
5. The actor __________________ (**act**) in movies and television shows for over ten years and will continue to do so for many more.
6. Many people __________________ (**apply**) to get into the master's programme at my university for the next semester.
7. It __________________ (**rain**) for over three days now, so there may be floods and you probably shouldn't drive on the roads.
8. I __________________ (**follow**) all the big technology companies in the news to see if I should invest in them or not.
9. I __________________ (**drive**) all night, so I think I should probably find somewhere to stop and rest.
10. My boss __________________ (**explain**) what he wants all of us to do but I'm still a little confused about my role.

11

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Present Perfect or the Present Perfect Continuous forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. Scientists __________________ (**discover**) that there is a gene that they can alter in mice that reduces their chances of being overweight.
2. I __________________ (**watch**) several movies by this director so far and one of them __________________ (**be**) an Oscar winner.
3. Since PayPal was invented, it __________________ (**change**) the way that we pay for things online.
4. Nobody __________________ (**feed**) my cat since I had to go on an emergency business trip, so I hope that she is OK.
5. It is my wife's birthday tonight so I __________________ (**cook**) in the kitchen for the past few hours to make her favourite meal.
6. Our teacher __________________ (**explain**) the causes of the war for the past hour now and it is getting a little boring.
7. I __________________ (**work**) at the same company for almost four years now, so I think it's time for a change.
8. People __________________ (**paint**) other forms of art for thousands of years.
9. Jane __________________ (**be**) a member of our book club since I invited her to join three months ago.
10. My boss and I __________________ (**reach**) an agreement about what days I can take off for my vacation this year.

THE PAST PERFECT TENSE (had + V_3)

YAPI:

1 ‘Past Perfect Tense’ yapısında bütün öznelerle ‘had’ (yardımcı fiil) ve fiilin 3. hali (past participle → V_3) kullanılır.

Subject (Özne) + had + Verb$_3$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- She **had seen** the city before, so she wasn’t as amazed as me by its architecture.
- I **had downloaded** the film and watched it with my friends before it was shown at the cinema.
- Nancy **had imagined** her husband to be more loving but he turned out to be abusive after they got married.
- They **had adopted** a baby from Cambodia before they had their biological child.
- We **had just started** to cook when the first guests arrived.
- I **had wanted** to leave work early but we started another project.

Not *‘Had’ yardımcı fiilinin kısaltılmış hali ‘I’d’, ‘we’d ...’ şeklindedir.*

- *He’**d never seen** a shooting star before that night.*
- *We’**d tried** to drive all the way there before the event started.*
- *She’**d finished** cleaning when her parents came over.*
- *They’**d played** basketball for about an hour before their parents told them to come home.*

2 Olumsuz cümlelerde yardımcı fiil olan ‘had’e ‘not’ eklenir. Ardından yine fiilin 3. hali (past participle) kullanılır.

Subject (Özne) + had + not (hadn’t) + Verb$_3$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- Alison **hadn’t expected** to fall in love with the new boy but she couldn’t help it.
- The pilot **hadn’t flown** that much before the cross-Atlantic flight, so he panicked a little.
- The people on the street **hadn’t gathered** to protest the government but the police dispersed them with water cannons anyway.
- The world **hadn’t experienced** such an extensive explosion previous to the meteor hit this month.

3 Soru cümlesi oluşturulurken yardımcı fiil 'had' öznenin önüne alınır. Olumlu ve olumsuz cümlelerde olduğu gibi fiilin 3. hali (past participle) kullanılmaya devam eder ve bütün öznelerde 'had' yardımcı fiili kullanılır. Olumsuz soru oluşturmak için yardımcı fiile 'not' eklenir.

Had + **Subject** (Özne) + **Verb$_3$** (Fiil) + **Object** (Nesne) + **Place** (Yer) + **Time** (Zaman)

- What **had** they **done** to eliminate the effects of radiation before 1945?
- **Had** they **left** by 8 o'clock or were they still with you then?
- **Hadn't** we **met** before the party or was it the first time we had seen each other?
- **Had** you **eaten** your dinner before James called you?

KULLANIM:

1 Geçmişte belirli bir andan, tarihten ya da olaydan daha önce olup bitmiş eylemleri anlatmak için kullanılır. Bu zaman için geçmişin geçmişi demek doğrudur.

- Yesterday afternoon, I was bored. I **had done** the shopping, I **had done** the cleaning and I'**d finished** all my assignments, so I decided to go out with my friends.

Past Perfect	*Simple Past*	*Present*
I had done the shopping. *I had done the cleaning.* *I'd finished all my assignments.*	*I was bored.* *I decided to go out with my friends.*	*I'm speaking now.*

- The conference **started** when I **arrived**. → I arrived and the conference started.
  The conference **had started** when I **arrived**. → The conference started, then I arrived.

- When I **arrived** home my front door was open and my television was missing, so it was clear someone **had robbed** me.
- I **wanted** to order from the breakfast menu but the restaurant **had switched** to the lunchtime menu already.
- Luckily for me, I **saved** the big project that I **had worked** on right before the computer **crashed**.
- When I realised I didn't have my keys, I ran back home but by the time I **arrived**, my flatmate **had** already **left**.
- We **went** online to try to find tickets for the concert but they **had sold out** the night before.
- Unfortunately, when I presented my PowerPoint slide to the class, I **noticed** that **I had made** some spelling mistakes.

2 Geçmişte bir eylem ya da olaydan önce başlamış olan ve bu eylem esnasında hala devam etmekte olan eylemlerden bahsetmek için kullanılır.

- My father **had worked** at the same company for almost twenty years when he decided to retire.
- I **had** already **thought** about studying law when my father suggested it to me.
- By the time I decided to stop working on my essay for the night, I **had written** three pages.
- Susan **had ridden** her bicycle for over two hours before she stopped at a café for a rest.
- We **had lived** next to each other for three months before I actually introduced myself to my neighbours.
- The president **had campaigned** for over a year before he was actually elected to office.
- I **had worked** on my presentation for two weeks before my professor told me we didn't need to do it any more.

3 'Past Perfect Tense' ile kullanılan bazı zaman ifadeleri ve kullanımları şu şekildedir:

Before

Before + Simple Past	Past Perfect
Past Perfect	before + Simple Past

- We had finished our assignment **before** the bus called us over.
- **Before** she graduated from college, Sue had taken acting lessons.

After

After + Past Perfect	Simple Past
Simple Past	after + Past Perfect

- The war broke out **after** she had lost her baby.
- **After** they had talked about the plan in detail, they went on the next items on the agenda.

⚠ **Not**

Yukarıdaki örneklerde 'Past Perfect Tense' ile kullanılan eylemler 'Simple Past Tense' ile de kullanılabilir. Arka arkaya olan iki eylemin ikisini de 'Simple Past' ile anlatabiliriz. Bu kullanım iki eylem arasındaki sürenin kısalığını vurgular. 'Past Perfect' kullanıldığında ne kadar önce olduğu belli olmaz, sadece önce olduğu anlatılmış olur.

- *We **hired / had hired** a car before we went to the beach.*
- *Everyone decided to go to bed after they **finished / had finished** the movie.*

4 Birçok durumda 'Past Perfect', 'Present Perfect'in geçmiş halidir. 'Present Perfect'le kullanılan yapılar (zaman zarfları hariç) genellikle 'Past Perfect'le de kullanılırlar. 'Present Perfect' şimdiki zamanla alakalıyken, 'Past Perfect' sadece geçmişle ilgilidir.

- Jean **is** feeling depressed because her favourite show **has been cancelled**.
  (How she feels now.)
  Jean **was** feeling depressed because her favourite show **had been cancelled**.
  (How she felt in the past.)
- George **is** going to call the police because he **has been attacked**.
  George **was** going to call the police because he **had been attacked**.

5 Tıpkı 'Present Perfect' gibi 'superlatives' ve 'ordinal numbers'tan sonra 'Past Perfect' kullanılır.

- It is the worst meal I **have ever eaten**. *(Present)*
  It was the worst meal I **had ever eaten**. *(Past)*
- We went to Brazil in 1999. It was the first time we **had travelled** outside Asia.
- It was the best movie I **had ever seen.**

6 'Hope, 'expect', 'intend', 'plan', 'think', 'know', realize', 'believe', 'decide', 'forget', 'remember', 'be sure', 'suspect' ve 'understand' gibi fiillerden sonra kullanılır.

Not *Bu fiillerdeki mantık; 'hope' ve 'expect' gibi fiillerde beklenti olması, yani diğer bir deyişle ilk önce beklentinin olması, daha sonra bu beklentinin gerçekleşip gerçekleşmediğinden bahsedilmesi; 'realize' ve 'understand' gibi fiillerin de önceden olmuş olan bir olayın farkına varma ve anlama anlamı taşımasıdır.*

- I **had expected** to go on a vacation but I had to work during the summer.
- John knew we **had made** a mistake but he didn't say anything.
- I thought we **had sent** the parcels to the customer but they weren't shipped.
- When the teacher finished grading the papers, she realized that one third of the students **had got** a passing grade.
- Sarah knew she **had seen** the woman somewhere before.
- I was sure that I **had turned off** the heating.
- When they arrived home, they realized that it **had been broken into**.
- The police suspected that the murderer **had stalked** the victim for a long time.

Not *'Past Perfect' bir cümlede tek başına kullanılmaz.*

- *I ~~had waited~~ for him yesterday.(X)*
  I waited for him yesterday.(✓)

7 Ancak cümlede aşağıdaki gibi yapılar varsa tek bir cümlede de 'Past Perfect' kullanılabilir.

by 2000	*2000 yılına kadar*
prior to the WWII	*İkinci Dünya Savaşı öncesi*
before the fall of the USSR	*Sovyet Rusya'nın dağılmasından önce*
until	*-e kadar*

- I **had waited** for him until 3 o'clock.
- Before the 19th century, people **had made** laundry soap at home by mixing fat, ash and salt.
- We called the landlord about the sink on Tuesday and by the next morning, he **had fixed** it.
- They informed the boss about the problem two days ago and by the next afternoon, he **had solved** it.

⚠ **Not**

'Past Perfect' asla şimdiki zaman ya da gelecek zamanla alakalı bir yapı ya da cümleyle kullanılamaz. Sadece geçmiş zamanla alakalı yapılarla kullanılır.

- ***I had worked hard, so I ---- a rest.***

  A) have needed (present) **B) needed (past)*
  B) need (present) *D) will need (future)*

J THE PAST PERFECT CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE (had been + V_{ing})

YAPI:

1 'Past Perfect Continuous Tense' yapısında bütün öznelerle 'had + been' yapısı ve fiil '-ing' takısı almış olarak kullanılır.

Subject	+	had	+	been	+	$Verb_{ing}$	+	Object	+	Place	+	Time
(Özne)						(Fiil)		(Nesne)		(Yer)		(Zaman)

- She **had been feeling** unwell for a long time when she died.
- They **had been telling** her to stop smoking since she had a heart attack but, of course, she didn't listen.
- I **had been giving** them orders for years when they told me they didn't like the way I bossed them around.
- The computer **had been giving** signals for two hours by the time it collapsed.
- He **had been waiting** in the rain for almost twenty minutes before the bus came.
- She **had been working** at her father's company for over a year before she left.
- James'**d been living** with his family for three years when he decided to get an apartment for himself.
- We'**d been eating** outside in the garden when it started to rain.
- I'**d been sitting** in the waiting room for an hour, but they had not called me into the office yet.

2 Olumsuz cümlelerde yardımcı fiil olan 'had'e 'not' ekleriz. Yine bütün öznelerde 'been + V_{ing}' kullanılır.

Subject	+	had not (hadn't)	+	been	+	$Verb_{ing}$	+	Object	+	Place	+	Time
(Özne)						(Fiil)		(Nesne)		(Yer)		(Zaman)

- Natalie **hadn't** really **been teaching** anything to her students when the parents complained about her.
- I **hadn't been dancing** for years before I started again this year.

- My parents **hadn't been planning** to move out of their old house before they saw cracks on the walls.
- Mark **hadn't been enjoying** himself before he met a backpacker group and started travelling with them.
- I **hadn't been studying** Spanish for very long before I went on a vacation to Spain.
- We **hadn't been travelling** all year when we won the free trip to Hawaii.

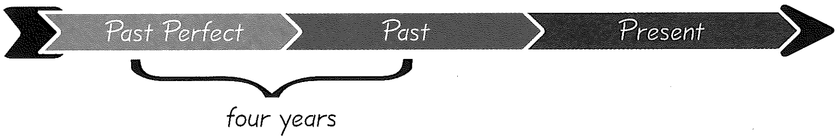
3 Soru cümlelerinde yardımcı fiil olan 'had' öznenin önüne alınır. Olumsuz soru cümlesi oluşturmak için yardımcı fiile 'not' eklenir.

Had + Subject (Özne) + been + Verb$_{ing}$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- **Had** they **been travelling** when I saw them in Nepal? That's so amazing.
- Who **had** they **been keeping** in jail if the murderer was out all that time?
- **Hadn't** she **been interviewing** the candidates all this time? What **had** she **been doing** then?
- What **had** she **been doing** before she graduated from university?

KULLANIM:

1 Geçmişte belli bir andan önce bir süredir devam etmekte olan eylemleri anlatmak için kullanılır.



- **She ---- French for four years when she went to Algeria.**

A) was studying
(bir eylemin ne kadar sürdüğünü belirtmez.)

*B) had been studying
(eylemin ne kadar sürdüğünü belirtir.)

(Cezayir'e gittiğinde dört yıldır Fransızca öğrenmekteydi. Yani Fransızca öğrenme eylemi Cezayir'e gitmeden önce başladı ve Cezayir'e gidene kadar bu eylem dört yıl sürdü.)

- The police **had been investigating** the murder for five weeks before they were able to reveal the truth.
- My parents **had been arguing** and **fighting** for over a year before they finally got a divorce.
- The train **had been operating** for over forty years before it finally broke down and was replaced by a newer model.
- When I saw on the news that it **had been snowing** all night, I decided to cancel my plans and stay in.
- Ben **had been trying** to fix his computer for over an hour when he finally gave up.
- Timothy **had been getting** advice from his father all year about how to get promoted at work.

- The President **had been talking** about a new economic plan for a month when he decided to abandon the idea.
- When I worked in a coffee factory for the summer, I met a woman who **had been working** there for almost twenty years.
- Since it was nearly midnight and I **had been studying** since 6 p.m. that evening, I decided to stop for the night.

2 'Past Perfect Continuous' ile kullanılan zaman ifadeleri aşağıdaki gibidir:

since	*-den beri*
for	*boyunca*
when	*-diği zaman*
after	*sonra*
before	*önce*
by the 20th century	*20. yüzyıla kadar*
by the time, etc.	*-inceye kadar, - e kadar*

3 Geçmişte belli bir andan önce başlamış ve bitmiş, fakat etkisi bir süre devam etmiş olan eylemleri anlatmak için de kullanılır. Bu eylem ve devam eden etkisi geçmişte gerçekleşmiştir.

- I decided to take a break because I **had been studying** since early in the morning.
- My boss looked really tired on Monday morning, so I guessed he **had been working** over the weekend.
- We decided to take a break once we reached the top of the hill as we **had been hiking up** for two hours.
- My gym instructor told me to take the day off today as I **had been working out** hard all week.
- The police **had been searching** the city for the missing girl all night until the search was finally called off at 3 a.m.
- My dog's legs were all covered in mud. He **had** probably **been chasing** rabbits in the field again.

4 Bu zaman, geçmişteki bir eylemin nedenini belirten yan cümleciklerle kullanılır.

- His eyes were red and puffy as he **had been crying**.
- His clothes were dirty as he **had been mending** the car in the garage.

12 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Simple Past, the Present Perfect or the Past Perfect forms of the verbs in parentheses. Continuous forms can also be used.

1. Penelope wasn't very surprised when the doctor told her she had lung cancer as she ____________________ (**smoke**) for thirty years.
2. Before I ____________________ (**meet**) my wife, I ____________________ (**start**) to think that I would be alone for the rest of my life.
3. My girlfriend and I ____________________ (**date**) for the past six months since we met at a café.
4. I ____________________ (**walk**) halfway to work before I realised that I ____________________ (**forgot**) to lock my front door.
5. Yvette ____________________ (**already / work**) for the company as a freelancer for many years when they offered her a full-time position.
6. Jane ____________________ (**run**) long distance for the school's track and field team ever since she joined the school.
7. Ever since I got a new computer for my birthday, I ____________________ (**spend**) most of my free time playing computer games.
8. My favourite author ____________________ (**write**) the third novel in his series for the past three years.
9. Tommy ____________________ (**live**) in Asia for ten years before he ____________________ (**move**) back to his hometown in Canada.
10. After I ____________________ (**present**) my PowerPoint slide to the class I ____________________ (**ask**) everyone if they had any questions.
11. Jill ____________________ (**lie**) to her parents about what she was doing at weekends for almost six months before they found out the truth.
12. I ate something a bit strange for lunch. Now it is late afternoon and I ____________________ (**start**) to feel a little bit sick.
13. By the time I got to the train station, my train ____________________ (**already / leave**), so I had to take the bus.
14. I ____________________ (**study**) for my history test for almost an hour before I ____________________ (**remember**) that it had been cancelled.
15. Jane ____________________ (**buy**) her textbooks before the beginning of the semester, so she could get a head start on her work.

13 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Simple Past, the Present Perfect or the Past Perfect forms of the verbs in parentheses. Continuous forms can also be used.

1. I ____________________ (**finish**) all the work I have to do today so I think I will go home early.
2. When I came back to my car after shopping in the mall, I saw that someone ____________________ (**leave**) a note on my car, saying I was bad at parking.
3. By the early 20th century, the English Empire ____________________ (**expand**) to many countries all over the world.

4. Martin ________________ (**always** / **want**) to go skiing, so he ________________ (**book**) a trip to Switzerland to go skiing there.
5. She ________________ (**finish**) her studies at 10 p.m. and ________________ (**decide**) that it was too late to bother going out.
6. By the time we ________________ (**arrive**) at the hospital, my grandmother ________________ (**be**) dead for over an hour.
7. Since it came out in 1999, I ________________ (**watch**) the movie *The Matrix* at least ten times.
8. She ________________ (**sleep**) when the robbers ________________ (**break**) into her house, so she didn't hear them.
9. By the time the company ________________ (**declare**) bankruptcy, it ________________ (**already** / **fire**) half of the people who worked there.
10. We ________________ (**walk**) for almost two hours along the beach until we ________________ (**reach**) the cliffs at the other end.
11. James ________________ (**apply**) for jobs at other companies when he found out he was going to be promoted.
12. Before he started studying at the university, Sean ________________ (**work**) at a small Italian restaurant.
13. Since they became common in the 2000s, most people ________________ (**buy**) a smartphone.
14. After I ________________ (**complete**) the marathon, I ________________ (**go**) back home and slept for 10 hours.
15. I felt a bit bad for the other students in my group as they all ________________ (**finish**) their parts of the assignment before I did.

K THE FUTURE PERFECT TENSE (will have + V$_3$)

YAPI:

1 'Future Perfect Tense' yapısında bütün öznelerle 'will' + 'have' yapısı ve fiilin 3. hali (Past Participle → V$_3$) kullanılır.

Subject (Özne) + **will** + **have** + **Verb$_3$** (Fiil) + **Object** (Nesne) + **Place** (Yer) + **Time** (Zaman)

- We **will have finished** what we were doing in about two hours.
- They **will have eaten** everything by the time we get there.
- I **will have graduated** from university by this time next year.
- You **will have got** your promotion by the end of the month.

2

Olumsuz cümlelerde yardımcı fiil olan 'will'e 'not' eklenir ve yine bütün öznelerle 'have + V_3' yapısı kullanılır.

Subject		will not (won't)		have		Verb$_3$		Object		Place		Time
(Özne)	+		+		+	(Fiil)	+	(Nesne)	+	(Yer)	+	(Zaman)

- The scientist **won't have found** a cure for cancer by this time next year according to the *Economist.*
- The Earth **will not have been hit** by another meteoroid till after 2069. It will be hit by the giant comet at that time.
- I **will not have doubled** my income by the next two years. I will still be seen as an intern.
- Linda **will not have come** by the time you say she will be here.

3

Soru cümlesi oluşturmak için yardımcı fiil olan 'will' öznenin önüne alınır. Olumsuz soru cümlesi oluşturmak için yardımcı fiile 'not' eklenir.

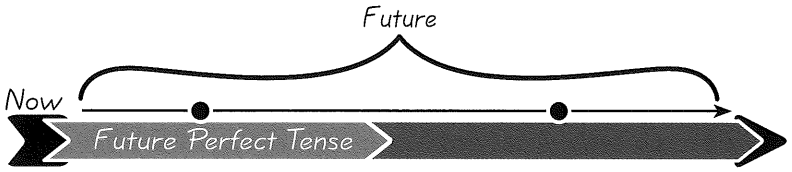
Will		Subject		have		Verb$_3$		Object		Place		Time
	+	(Özne)	+		+	(Fiil)	+	(Nesne)	+	(Yer)	+	(Zaman)

- **Will** you **have finished** your work by eight o'clock? I have two other things I need you to do.
- **Will** they **have discovered** what they are looking for within their deadline?
- How many papers **will** Joe **have written** by the weekend? I need all of them by then.
- **Will** they **have come back** from Australia by May? I want to invite them to my son's birthday party.

KULLANIM:

1

Gelecekte belirli bir zamana kadar gerçekleşecek ya da tamamlanacak olan eylemlerden bahsederken kullanılır. Gelecekte yapılacak iki eylemden ilk önce gerçekleşecek olanı anlatır.



By the time + Simple Present	Future Perfect
Future Perfect	by the time + Simple Present

- By the time the dinner is ready, I **will have finished** my homework.
  (İlk önce yapılacak olan eylem, ev ödevini bitirmek; ikinci eylem de yemeğin hazır olmasıdır. İkinci eylem olana kadar birincisi tamamlanmış olacak. Yani cümleyi kuran özne, akşam yemeği hazır olana kadar ödevini bitirmiş olacaktır.)

- By the end of the year, we **will have** either **doubled** our money or **lost** it all.
- By 2025, humans **will have gone** to Mars, according to some people.
- Hopefully, by the end of this year, I **will have found** a new job.
- In a few billion years, the Sun **will have turned** into a red giant and **swallowed** the Earth.
- By this time next week, we **will have travelled** down the coast to a different city.
- By the end of this year, I **will have earned** more money than I ever have before.
- By the end of this month, we **will have hired** a new CEO to run the company.
- Most countries **will have switched** to renewable sources of energy like solar, before the end of this century.
- By this time next week, I **will have flown** to Australia and I will be on the beach enjoying my vacation.
- Scientists hope that we **will have solved** the problem of cold fusion within the next 50 years.

Not

'By the time' bağlacı 'Future Perfect'in yanı sıra 'Past Perfect' ile de kullanılır fakat 'tense' uyumu açısından ve ilgili oldukları zamandan dolayı birisi şimdiki, diğeri geçmiş zamanla birlikte kullanılır.

By the time + Simple Past	*Past Perfect*
By the time + Simple Present	*Future Perfect*

- *The crowds of people* ***had stopped*** *protesting and* ***gone*** *home by the time we* ***reached*** *the city centre.*
- *The boat* ***will have left*** *by the time we* ***arrive*** *at the port.*
- *It* ***will have stopped*** *raining by the time we* ***go*** *outside.*
- ***By the time I ---- the dishes, my baby ---- up.***

  A) have washed / had woken **B) washed / had woken*

  **C) wash / will have woken*

  Soru kökünde geçmiş zamana ya da gelecek zamana dair herhangi bir gönderme olmadığından dolayı 'tense' uyumu gereği ve anlam olarak hem 'B' hem de 'C' seçeneği doğrudur.

Özellikle 'be' fiili olan cümlelerde farklı kullanımlar da mümkündür.

- *The group members* ***were already talking*** *about what we would do for our project by the time I* ***arrived****.*
- *I think everyone* ***will be talking*** *about what happened this morning by the time I* ***arrive****.*
- *By the time the police* ***arrived*** *at the scene of the crime, it* ***was*** *already too late.*
- *By the time everyone* ***realised*** *the truth about our Prime Minister, it* ***was*** *already too late.*

2 'Future Perfect Tense' ile kullanılan zaman ifadeleri aşağıdaki gibidir:

by 2030	*2030'a kadar*
by the time	*-inceye kadar*
by then	*o zamana kadar*
before	*önce*
for	*boyunca*

3 Gelecekte belirli bir zamana kadar bir süre devam edecek olan eylemlerden bahsederken (genellikle 'for' ile) kullanılır.

- At the end of this month, we **will have lived** together for exactly one year.
- By this time next year, I **will have worked** at my job for a total of ten years.
- Once we reach the halfway point of the track, we **will have walked** for six kilometres.
- I **will have had** this apartment for twelve years by the end of the next year.
- We **will have been** married for 25 years in two years' time.

4 'By + gelecek zaman belirteci' (by tomorrow, by 2025, by next week) yapılarının olduğu cümlelerde 'Future Perfect' kullanılır.

- It is hoped that we **will have solved** the problem of global warming **by the end of 21st century.**

⚠ **Not** *Cümlede 'by + geçmiş zaman belirteci' (by yesterday, by 2000, by last month) yapısının olduğu cümlelerde 'Past Perfect' kullanılır.*

- ***By the 19th century**, the straits **had been** a source of conflict between Britain and Russia.*

5 'Before' ile kurulan cümlelerde eylem sırası zaten belli olduğu için 'perfect tense' yerine 'simple tense' de kullanılabilir.

- Some of the children **will eat** / **will have eaten** breakfast before they come to school.
- Many of the employees probably **will quit** / **will have quit** by the end of the month.

L THE FUTURE PERFECT CONTINUOUS (PROGRESSIVE) TENSE
(will have been + V$_{ing}$)

YAPI:

1 'Future Perfect Continuous Tense' yapısında bütün öznelerle 'will + have + been' yapısı kullanılır ve fiil '-ing' takısı alır.

Subject (Özne) + will + have + been + Verb$_{ing}$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- I **will have been seeing** Simon for ten months next month when we get married.
- Sabrina **will have been playing** for the volleyball team for five years by the time she leaves next year.
- By this time next year, she **will have been working** from home for five years.
- By the time he retires from being a bus driver, he **will have been driving** for over a million kilometres.

2 Olumsuz cümlelerde yardımcı fiil olan 'will'e 'not' eklenir. Yine bütün öznelerle 'have been + V$_{ing}$' yapısı kullanılır.

Subject (Özne) + will not / won't + have + been + Verb$_{ing}$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- The patient **will not have been sleeping** for two days by eight o'clock. We need to get him to sleep.
- They **will not have been spending** any time together for almost a decade by this time next week. They are surprisingly still married on paper.
- If I don't find a job by the end of this month, I **will not have been working** for almost half a year.
- By the end of this month, I **won't have been relying on** my parents for money for a full year.

3 Soru cümlesi oluşturmak için yardımcı fiil olan 'will' öznenin önüne alınır. Olumsuz soru cümlesi oluşturmak için yardımcı fiile 'not' eklenir.

Will + Subject (Özne) + have + been + Verb$_{ing}$ (Fiil) + Object (Nesne) + Place (Yer) + Time (Zaman)

- **Will** they **have been using** those computers for four years? They will have adjusting problems when they are changed next week.
- What **will** you **have been doing** by next April? Would you like to join me on my trip?
- **Won't** she **have been swimming** for five hours if we go now?

KULLANIM:

1 Gelecekte belirli bir zamanda bir süre devam etmekte olan eylemlerden bahsederken (genellikle 'for' ile) kullanılır.

- We **will have been living** in this same apartment for ten years at the end of this year.
- By April, our company **will have been trading** publicly on the stock exchange for a full month.
- At the end of this year, our country **will have been selling** goods to foreign countries for twenty years.
- By this time tomorrow, **we will have been working** on our assignment for five days straight.
- The International Space Station **will have been operating** for almost 25 years at the end of this decade.
- By this time next year, I **will have been working** as an accountant for five years in total.

2 'Future Perfect Continuous Tense' ile kullanılan zaman ifadeleri aşağıdaki gibidir:

for	*boyunca*
when	*-dığı zaman*
by the time	*-inceye kadar*
by 2040	*2040'a kadar*

3 Gelecekte bir süre devam edecek ve belirli bir zamanda bitecek olan eylemlerden bahsederken kullanılır.

- Tonight when our flight lands in California, we **will have been flying** for 14 hours.
- By the time I finish the marathon in the afternoon, I **will have been running** for around four hours and will be very tired.
- Tomorrow, when we have our business dinner, we **will have been preparing** for it all day.
- In two days' time when we go away on vacation, we **will have been packing** for the trip for 48 hours.

4 'Future Perfect Continuous Tense', diğer 'continuous tense'lerde olduğu gibi 'non-progressive' fiillerle birlikte kullanılamaz.

- Most of you ~~**will have been hearing**~~ / **will have heard** by tomorrow that I am leaving my position in the institution.

14 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the Future Perfect or the Future Perfect Continuous forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. By the time I finish my degree at the end of this year, I ____________________ (**study**) physics for four years.
2. By the end of the month, I ____________________ (**decide**) if I want to stay at my current job or accept a job offer from a different company.
3. My uncle ____________________ (**serve**) in the military for twenty years when he retires in two years' time.
4. The city workers ____________________ (**complete**) the bridge by next January if everything stays on schedule.
5. By the end of our university tour today, we____________________ (**learn**) where everything is.
6. My family is getting together for a big party at the end of the year as my grandparents ____________________ (**be**) married for fifty years by then.
7. I am hoping that by the end of the week my phone company ____________________ (**release**) an update to fix all the bugs in the phone.
8. I have lost a lot of weight so far, and by the end of this week, I ____________________ (**diet**) for forty days in a row.
9. I don't think that I will be able to cook a meal tonight because the shops ____________________ (**close**) by the time I finish work.
10. By the time I finish tonight at 10 p.m., I ____________________ (**study**) for almost twelve hours.
11. My roommate has promised me that he ____________________ (**pay**) the rent by tonight, but I don't trust him.
12. By this time tomorrow, I ____________________ (**fly**) to the island already and I will be on vacation.
13. By 2 p.m., I ____________________ (**wait**) in front of my house for the delivery for almost an hour.
14. In just three months' time, my daughter ____________________ (**graduate**) from high school and will be on summer vacation.
15. James has promised us all that he ____________________ (**clean**) the kitchen by the end of the week. He ____________________ (**take**) out the rubbish as well.

'Perfect Tense'lerin Türkçe karşılıklarını inceleyelim.

I **have lived** in my new apartment for two months now.	*yaşadım, yaşamaktayım*
Melody **has been** to the top of Mount Everest many times.	*çıktı*
I hope that the human race **will have travelled** to Mars by 2025.	*yolculuk etmiş olacak*
John **has been** in trouble many times at school.	*sorun yaşadı*

I **will have been working** here for ten years in 2018.	*çalışıyor olacağım*
My uncles and my father **have been fighting** with each other for years.	*tartışmaktalar, tartışıyorlar*
I am sure that we **will have solved** the world's water problems by 2050.	*çözmüş olacağız*
By this time next month, we **will have been running** together in the mornings for three years.	*koşuyor olacağız*
Unfortunately, the bridge **had** already **collapsed** by the time the engineers got there to fix it.	*çökmüştü*
We **will have been living** in this country for a total of six months at the end of this week.	*yaşıyor olacağız*
My co-workers **had** already **started** working by the time I got to work.	*başlamışlardı*
When I finally moved, I realised that I **had been staying** with my parents for five months.	*kalmaktaydım, kalıyordum*

⚠ **Not** *İngilizcedeki üç ayrı zaman, 'yapıyordum' şeklinde Türkçeye çevrilebilir.*

- *I **was doing** my homework last night when my brother came home.*
- *I **had been doing** my homework last night when I remembered that I had to go and pick up my brother.*
- *I **have been doing** my homework all evening, so now I am going to take a break.*

⚠ **Not** *Belli bir anda bir eylemin ne kadar zamandır devam ettiğini anlatırken 'perfect tense'ler kullanılır; 'simple continuous tense'ler kullanılmaz.*

- *Our **boss** ~~**was running**~~ / **had been running** the company for ten years when he announced he was going to retire.*
- *I ~~**am studying**~~ / **have been studying** for this test ever since our teacher told us about it yesterday.*
- *Mary ~~**is travelling**~~ / **has been travelling** around the world ever since she won the lottery last May.*
- *Simon ~~**is working**~~ / **has been working** for twelve hours a day ever since he was promoted to manager.*
- *They ~~**are living**~~/ **have been living** on the street since they lost their home a year ago.*

TIME CLAUSES (Zaman Uyumu ve Zaman Bağlaçları)

a 'Tense' bilgisini ölçen sorularda, zamanlar arasındaki uyum en çok dikkat edilmesi gereken şeydir. İki cümlenin bir arada kullanılmasını sağlayan kelimelere 'bağlaç' denir. Bazı bağlaçlar zaman belirtirler ve bu bağlaçlar kullanılırken zaman uyumuna kesinlikle dikkat edilmelidir. Bu bağlaçlar şunlardır:

when
while
until
once
(the) last time
after
as
till
whenever
(the) next time
before
just as
as long as
every time
*(ever) since
as soon as
by the time
so long as
(the) first time

b 'Present Tense'ler, 'Present Tense'lerle; 'Past Tense'ler de yine 'Past Tense'lerle uyumludur ve birlikte kullanılırlar.

Present, bağlaç + present	veya	Bağlaç + present, present
Future, bağlaç + present	veya	Bağlaç + present, future
Past, bağlaç + past	veya	Bağlaç + past, past

- **As soon as** I saw her, I knew she was going to be my one and only. *(past + past)*
- I will contact you **after** we have received the goods. *(future + present)*
- **Once** I have finished my assignment, I will give it to you for proofreading. *(present + future)*
- **Whenever** I hear that story, it makes me sorrowful. *(present + present)*
- I will ask you **(the) next time** I need some money. *(future + present)*
- The government will announce the results of the elections **when** it finishes counting the votes. *(future + present)*
- I will cook some dinner as soon as I can, **after** I get home from work. *(future + present)*
- My group worked together on the assignment and we started writing it out **once** we had planned what we were going to do. *(past + past)*
- My grandfather decided to retire just **before** his company went bankrupt. *(past + past)*
- The builders worked on the new building and were able to start the first floor **once** they had finished the foundations. *(past + past)*

⚠ **Not**

** 'Tense' uyumuna uygun olmayan tek bağlaç '(ever) since'tir.*

(Ever) Since + Simple Past, Present Perfect
Present Perfect + (Ever) Since + Simple Past

- My team has ranked in the top ten football teams for our area **ever since** we hired a new coach.
- **Ever since** the President was appointed, he has been making many improvements in the country.
- **Since** I had a heart attack two years ago, I have been eating much healthier foods and exercising.
- **Ever since** I started my double degree at university, I have studied at weekends and in the evenings.
- My son has scored top marks on every math test this year **ever since** I hired a math tutor for him.
- I have had a lot less free time **since** I started working at my new job.
- **Ever since** I stopped eating fast food, I have felt a lot more energetic.
- We have not seen him much **since** he started playing that video game.
- My parents have been worried about me **since** I stopped coming home at weekends.
- **Since** I started watching television shows in Spanish last month, my Spanish vocabulary has improved a lot.
- **Ever since** I began to swim in the mornings, my shoulders and chest have been getting bigger.
- My business has started to attract a lot more customers **ever since** I started a new advertisement campaign.

c Her iki eylemin devam ettiği durumlarda '(ever) since'li cümlenin kendisi de 'Present Perfect' olabilir.

- My co-workers and I **have had** good relationships since we **have known** one another.
- Since we **have had** a new boss, nothing **has run** very smoothly at work.

d 'Since'in diğer tarafında bulunan ve süre bildiren ana cümlede 'it' yapısal özne durumundaysa (hava durumu, zaman vb. anlatan) 'it has been' yerine 'it is' yapısı da kullanılabilir.

- **It has been** / **It is** a while since I saw my parents.
- **It has been** / **It is** about three weeks since I moved into my new home.

⚠ Not *Zaman bağlaçlı cümlenin içinde aşağıdaki yapılar bulunmaz.*

will
am / is / are going to
would
was / were going to

'Will' ve 'am / is / are going to' yerine 'Simple Present Tense', 'would' ve 'was / were going to' yerine de 'Simple Past Tense' kullanılır. (Fakat cümleler 'then' ile bağlanıyorsa, her iki tarafta da gelecek zaman kullanılabilir.)

- **The next time** I ---- on a holiday, I ---- lighter clothes.
  A) ~~will go~~ / will wear
  B) ~~will go~~ / wear
  *C) go / will wear
  D) ~~would go~~ / wore
  E) ~~go / would wear~~ *('Tense' uyumu yok.)*

- We ---- there **until** our guests ----.
  *A) are going to wait / arrive
  B) wait / ~~are going to arrive~~

- **Once** I take my driving test at the end of the month, I will be able to drive.
  At the end of the month I am going to take my driving test. **Then** I will be able to drive.
- **After** he makes an announcement tomorrow, our boss will probably leave.
  Our boss is going to make an announcement tomorrow afternoon, **then** he will probably leave.
- **After** they reach an agreement tonight, the world leaders will go back to their countries.
  The world leaders are going to reach an agreement tonight. **Then** they will go back to their countries.

e İçinde 'while' zaman bağlacı geçen cümlecikte genellikle 'continuous tense' kullanılır ama iki eylem aynı zaman dilimi içerisinde gerçekleşiyorsa 'non-progressive tense'ler kullanılabilir.

- While I **was working** at the office, my husband **prepared** a surprise birthday party for me.
- While most of us **worked** on the group project, Sam just **sat** there and **played** on his phone.
- Sometimes I **listen** to music while I **am studying** but at other times I prefer silence.
- The employees **worked** on putting up the supermarket shelves while the boss **supervised** them.
- While we **were driving** down the street, we **saw** a dog chasing a cat on the pavement.

f 'After', 'before', 'when', 'once', 'as soon as' ve 'until' bağlaçlarının olduğu yan cümleciklerde eylemin bitmiş olduğunu belirtmek için 'perfect tense'ler kullanılabilir.

- I will be able to count up all the votes **when** we sort out / have sorted out all the 'yes' votes from the 'no' votes.
- **Once** all the passengers emptied / had emptied the train, the station closed down for the night.
- **Until** you pass / have passed the entrance exam, you cannot go to this university.
- **As soon as** we leave / have left work, we are going to go straight to the airport.

g 'As soon as' yapısıyla eş anlamlı olan 'no sooner … than', 'hardly … when', 'scarcely … when' ve 'barely ... when' bağlaçlarının özel bir kullanımı vardır.

'No sooner … than', 'hardly … when', 'scarcely … when' ve 'barely ... when' bağlaçları iki bölümden oluştuğu için 'no sooner, hardly, scarcely ve barely' bölümü genellikle 'Past Perfect', 'than' ve 'when' olan taraf da 'Simple Past' olur.

- They had **no sooner** started the lecture **than** the electricity was cut off.
  No sooner had they started the lecture **than** the electricity was cut off.
- We had **scarcely** left the hall **when** the Dean turned up.
  Scarcely had we left the hall **when** the Dean turned up.
- The lesson had **hardly** started **when** she arrived.
- He had **barely** bought his new car **when** he had an accident and lost his life.

Not

'No sooner', 'hardly', 'barely' ve 'scarcely' kelimeleri cümlenin en başında kullanıldıklarında, içinde bulundukları cümleyi devrik yaparlar.

- ***Hardly*** *had the lesson started* ***when*** *she arrived.*
- ***No sooner*** *had I seen her* ***than*** *I changed my way.*

h 'So that' ve 'in order that' yapıları zaman bağlacı olmamalarına rağmen zaman uyumu gerektirmektedirler. Her iki yapı da Türkçeye '-ması için' veya '-sın diye' şeklinde çevrilebilir.

Present / Future tense + in order that / so that + can / will / shall / may

Past tense + in order that / so that + could / would / should / might

- We have stood up **so that** we can see the singer.
- They will move away **in order that** they may have a better life.
- Sally whispered something into his ear **so that** others couldn't hear her.

- **I ---- early in order that I ---- to you.**

A) ~~will come / would talk~~ *B) have come / can talk C) ~~came / will talk~~

1 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs given in the parentheses.

1. It ________________ (**rain**) for the past three days, so I don't think that the roads are safe to drive.
2. Steven ________________ (**have**) many financial problems for the past year because of all the money he spent.
3. My mother ________________ (**feed**) my little sister too much, and now she is getting fat.
4. For years and years, the man ________________ (**look**) for his lost children, but he never managed to find them.
5. It turns out that the group of criminals ________________ (**break**) the law for a long time but nobody had ever noticed.
6. Since they ________________ (**not / find**) a solution to the problem, the students were forced to ask the teacher for help.
7. As soon as we ________________ (**arrive**) at the hotel, we ________________ (**go up**) to our rooms and took a nap for a few hours.
8. By this time next month, I ________________ (**live**) in this house for a total of ten years.
9. Rocks and mud ________________ (**block**) the mountain pass for the past week, so you have to take a different route.
10. I think that the grades for my first semester at university ________________ (**arrive**) by the end of this week.

2 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs given in the parentheses.

1. Throughout history, people ________________ (**invent**) new technologies to improve our lives and the way we live.
2. While the economy ________________ (**be**) the focus of many media stories, there are many other ways to measure how well a country is doing.
3. Allen and his friends ________________ (**have**) a lot of success with their new business idea.
4. They finally realised that the head of the finance department ________________ (**steal**) money from the company for the past five years.
5. By the end of this week, we ________________ (**work**) on this project for a full month.
6. We all ________________ (**work**) very hard on the project but we realised it was going to fail, so we stopped.
7. My brothers ________________ (**talk**) about me behind my back and they think that I don't know about it.
8. By the time we ________________ (**arrive**) at the concert, the band ________________ (**play**) for over an hour.
9. By six o'clock tonight, I ________________ (**watch**) the same show for eight hours in a row.
10. Scientists ________________ (**study**) the light that comes from distant stars for the past several hundred years.

3 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs given in the parentheses.

1. There ________________ (**be**) tension between North Korea and South Korea since the end of the civil war.
2. I ________________ (**forget**) most of what I had learned at university about marketing by the time I started my new job.
3. When I saw what the dog ________________ (**do**) to the kitchen, I decided that he would no longer be allowed in the house.
4. I hope that all of my co-workers ________________ (**quit**) when they hear that I have been fired.
5. Brian wasn't doing well with his studies, so he ________________ (**decide**) to change to a different degree.
6. By the end of this year, I ________________ (**make**) enough money to buy a house for my family.
7. I ________________ (**become**) a little too fat, so I decided that I needed to change some of my habits.
8. I ________________ (**leave**) the country that I used to live in and moved to China so that I could teach English.
9. The dogs ________________ (**play**) together in the park, running around and chasing each other.
10. Sandy ________________ (**not / eat**) any breakfast that morning, so she had an extra big lunch to make up for it.

4 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs given in the parentheses.

1. Today we ________________ (**hire**) a new lawyer to help protect our business against piracy and copyright issues.
2. Yesterday a reporter, who ________________ (**specialise**) in reporting on financial crimes, was on the news talking about the banking industry.
3. The meeting this morning ________________ (**last**) for hours, but it finally finished just in time for lunch.
4. The doctor has told me that if my son ________________ (**succeed**) in walking after his accident, then he will probably make a full recovery.
5. We ________________ (**walk**) over ten kilometres now and my legs are really starting to hurt.
6. On the news today, they reported that at least six firefighters ________________ (**lose**) their lives fighting the massive forest fire.
7. By the time the law banning slavery ________________ (**be**) passed, over twelve million slaves had been brought to America.
8. For many years, scientists ________________ (**study**) ice in Antarctica to find out about what Earth was like long ago.
9. The very first smartphones were bought by people who ________________ (**want**) to be the first people to try new technology, but now everyone uses them.
10. I ________________ (**drive**) for the past six hours, so I think I should probably stop and have a coffee.

5 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs given in the parentheses.

1. My father __________________ (**study**) different types of jellyfish for the past twenty years.
2. People __________________ (**look**) for ways to reduce the effects of aging throughout recorded history.
3. The minute I __________________ (**hear**) that my son had been in a fight, I left work and went straight to his school.
4. I am sure that when my mother comes to visit me, she __________________ (**try**) to clean my house and buy me groceries.
5. By 9:30, when the fire truck finally __________________ (**arrive**) at the burning house, it had already been burnt to the ground.
6. The new manager at my job __________________ (**take**) control of my team and is making us work much harder than before.
7. I think that it is high time we __________________ (**call**) the building manager to complain about the noise from the apartment next to us.
8. I __________________ (**decide**) not to go to work and stay home instead because of my sore throat.
9. My company __________________ (**plan**) to release a new product this month but there have been some problems with production.
10. I __________________ (**have**) a dog before it __________________ (**pass away**) last year.

6 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs given in the parentheses.

1. We sat on the cliffs watching the boats go by until we __________________ (**spot**) the ship that my father was coming on.
2. The tourists __________________ (**wait**) for half an hour in front of the museum before they realised it didn't open on Sundays.
3. James __________________ (**leave**) the city tonight and fly to Russia for a business meeting.
4. I was nervous about going to my friend's birthday party because I __________________ (**not / buy**) her a gift.
5. We __________________ (**plan**) to go to the cinema yesterday, but it was such a nice day that we decided to go to the park instead.
6. Many scientists __________________ (**study**) asteroids to see if they might be responsible for the life on Earth.
7. By the end of this year, we __________________ (**live**) in a new house on the other side of the city.
8. I didn't realise that I __________________ (**offend**) my friend with my jokes until I saw the expression on her face.
9. The invention of vaccines __________________ (**save**) hundreds of millions of lives so far.
10. When my brother called and told me he __________________ (**want**) me to go and help him, I told him I was busy.

7 **REVISION:**

Choose the correct option.

1. **There ---- many issues with the Internet at work today, so I haven't done much work.**

A) have been B) were

2. **Steven ---- late to his own wedding because his car ---- down on the way there.**

A) arrives / has broken B) arrived / had broken

3. **The President ---- two separate speeches about why he was ending the war but he still did not have public support.**

A) had given B) has given

4. **After Tony ---- his boss that the reason he wasn't coming to work was that his dog had just died, his boss ---- it and gave him the day off.**

A) had told / accepted B) told / had accepted

5. **The charity work ---- for years before someone finally realised that the money was not going where it was supposed to go.**

A) has been going on B) had been going on

6. **I ---- to take few months off work and travel to some different countries, but now I don't think I will have the time.**

A) have been planning B) had been planning

7. **It ---- many years since there was a forest fire as dangerous as to threaten to ---- down the local village.**

A) has been / burn B) is / burned

8. **I saw someone ---- past the building that I thought was my mother, but it turned out it was just someone who ---- her.**

A) walked / resembles B) walking / resembled

9. **In some countries, they ---- the worst criminals with the death penalty, but in other countries this is not legal.**

A) had punished B) punish

10. **Jenny ---- at home with her family for a year when she finally got a job and was able to move out.**

A) had been living B) was living

11. **Since I ---- studying for my master's degree, I haven't had any time to go out or have fun at weekends.**

A) started B) had started

12. **After we ---- dinner tonight, we could try going to the new café that ---- last month for desert.**

A) had / has opened B) have had / opened

13. **Since the Internet ---- created around sixty years ago, there ---- many ways which have been devised to improve all of our lives.**

A) was / have been B) has been / is

14. **My siblings and I were very surprised to find out that our parents ---- to go away on vacation without us.**

A) had been planning B) has been planning

15. **Recent studies by a group of scientists ---- that cold blooded animals like turtles ---- in the sun for help with digestion, as well as to warm up.**

A) suggest / lie B) have suggested / lay

16. **I ---- as soon as I turned 65 as I ---- for most of my life and thought that it was time for me to relax.**

A) had retired / have been working B) retired / had been working

17. **Jonathan ---- on the island for over a year when a boat came past and he was finally rescued.**

A) has been living B) had been living

18. **As my wife ---- so long to get ready, the movie ---- for some time by the time we get to the cinema.**

A) takes / will have been going on B) take / has been going on

19. **The general ---- his position on the battlefield, even though there were bullets flying all around him.**

A) maintained B) maintains

20. **The government agency ---- a review of our company recently to make sure that we aren't doing anything illegal.**

A) has conducted B) conducted

TENSES

TEST 1

1. **I ---- telling him to be more careful at work and do a better job because he ---- warned many times by the boss and if he makes another mistake, he might get fired.**

A) keep / is
B) will keep / was
C) had kept / has been
D) keep / has been
E) kept / was

2. **Sam's father ---- him his watch when Sam turned eighteen. Sam ---- to give it to his son, John, when he turns eighteen.**

A) gave / is planning
B) will give / plans
C) is giving / had planned
D) had given / planned
E) will give / will be planning

3. **Simon has found out he only has a month left to stay in his apartment before he has to move out, so for the past month he ---- for a new apartment to live in.**

A) was looking
B) has been looking
C) is looking
D) looked
E) had been looking

4. **From all the types of music that I ---- to in my life, I think that classical music is the most beautiful.**

A) had listened
B) am listening
C) was listening
D) have listened
E) would listen

5. **Paul ---- about forty minutes to get ready for work in the morning but he ---- late many times, so he needs to get ready faster.**

A) takes / has been
B) is taking / will be
C) took / is
D) will have taken / has been
E) is taking / had been

6. **Karen ---- way more food than she normally did at the restaurant and therefore ---- sick at the end of the meal.**

A) was eating / had felt
B) will eat / felt
C) had been eating / will feel
D) ate / will be feeling
E) had eaten / felt

7. **My mother ---- the cat to the vet yesterday because it ---- a fight with another cat and damaged its eye.**

A) will take / was having
B) takes / has been having
C) took / had had
D) is taking / is having
E) will take / will have

8. **Thomas has a better job offer and will soon quit his job. By next month, he ---- in a totally different company and earning more money.**

A) has been working
B) has worked
C) will be working
D) would have worked
E) would work

9. **Tony ---- problems in the classroom all year. The classroom teacher ---- to get rid of him from the class.**

A) had been causing / planned
B) has caused / planned
C) has been causing / will plan
D) is causing / is planning
E) causes / plans

10. **In recent years, the smartphone ---- a normal part of most people's lives.**

A) had been
B) will be
C) is becoming
D) has become
E) had become

11. I ---- great at spelling from a very young age. By the time I was just eight years old, I ---- my first spelling competition.

A) am / won
B) was / had won
C) had been / have won
D) am / had won
E) have been / will win

12. The holiday with my family was going really well until my brother ---- complaining about everything, which ---- us all annoyed.

A) will start / made
B) had started / will make
C) starts / makes
D) will start / will make
E) started / made

13. The university has said they will only accept Mary once she ---- the entrance exam.

A) had passed
B) is passing
C) passed
D) will pass
E) has passed

14. After the robbery that ---- her to lose all of her jewellery, Nicky ---- to check that her windows were closed and her doors were locked before leaving the house.

A) causes / will begin
B) will have caused / begins
C) had caused / will begin
D) causes / has begun
E) caused / began

15. I felt sorry that I ---- Lisa stupid in class. Since then she ---- to answer any of the teacher's questions.

A) will be calling / hasn't tried
B) have been calling / hadn't tried
C) had been calling / hasn't tried
D) was calling / won't have tried
E) will be calling / won't have tried

16. After the end of the Second World War, the USA and the Soviet Union ---- the two most powerful countries in the world.

A) are becoming
B) became
C) will have become
D) would be becoming
E) will become

17. My car has been breaking down constantly so it really is time that I ---- myself a new one that works better.

A) have bought
B) will buy
C) bought
D) buy
E) will have bought

18. Judy ---- her mother over and over for the past hour to see if she is OK, but so far her mother ---- the phone.

A) has been calling / hasn't answered
B) has called / hadn't been answering
C) will call / won't answer
D) had called / won't have answered
E) is calling / hasn't answered

19. Jackson ---- the exciting new layout in the restaurant and thought that it was a change that the restaurant ---- for years.

A) sees / has needed
B) had seen / will need
C) saw / had needed
D) had seen / needed
E) sees / will need

20. A month before the semester started, Samantha ---- to look through her textbooks to see how hard she would need to study for each class.

A) began
B) has begun
C) is beginning
D) was beginning
E) will begin

TENSES

TEST 2

1. **The new employee ---- tomorrow by ten o'clock and she ---- to work immediately as there is lots of work waiting for her.**

A) will have arrived / will get
B) will arrive / gets
C) has arrived / will have got
D) arrives / will be getting
E) is arriving / has got

2. **She ---- working on her next novel already when the publisher ---- her to ask what her future plans were.**

A) has started / will call
B) started / had called
C) had started / called
D) is going to start / has called
E) starts / calls

3. **The idea of building the new radio tower on the highest hill of the city ---- out of need as the scattered small towers ---- a huge part of that area right now.**

A) had developed / are covering
B) will have developed / will cover
C) develops / cover
D) developed / had covered
E) has developed / are covering

4. **Sarah ---- she will make her dreams come true whatever the costs are. She ---- to be rich and make everyone who has been cruel to her suffer like she has.**

A) is thinking / wants
B) thinks / wants
C) has thought / has wanted
D) had thought / wanted
E) thinks / will want

5. **I ---- my dentist tomorrow and I can't postpone it. Whatever job you have for me, it has to wait till I finish with him first.**

A) am seeing
B) see
C) have seen
D) saw
E) will have seen

6. **Don't you think it's odd? That lady ---- there for three hours and she ---- a bit yet. I think she is crazy.**

A) is standing / has moved
B) stood / hasn't moved
C) had been standing / had moved
D) has been standing / hasn't moved
E) stands / isn't moving

7. **Jamie ---- to Oslo tomorrow evening. He ---- there for the next two years and do his masters in the University of Oslo.**

A) flew / stayed
B) is going to fly / stays
C) flies / has stayed
D) has flown / will have stayed
E) is flying / will stay

8. **The baby ---- his tooth while he ---- a plastic bag. His parents should have been more careful.**

A) broke / was chewing
B) breaks / chews
C) has broken / has been chewing
D) had broken / was chewing
E) was breaking / was chewing

9. **Timothy ---- in the same room for ten years when he ---- to the UK and that must have been why his bed was the thing he missed the most.**

A) stayed / was moving
B) had been staying / moved
C) had stayed / had moved
D) is staying / will move
E) stays / moves

10. **David ---- severe headaches recently and we don't know why. He ---- a specialist this week to find out.**

A) has experienced / would visit
B) has been experiencing / is going to visit
C) will have experienced / will see
D) experienced / is visiting
E) had experienced / is going to visit

11. The bulldozer ---- over all the cars on the street smashing them when its breaks ---- on the busy street in the rush hour yesterday.

A) runs / fails
B) had run / failed
C) will run / has failed
D) was running / had failed
E) ran / failed

12. The school ---- by the time you get here and I think I ---- the time to take you around as I will have nothing to do for six weeks.

A) will be finishing / have
B) would have finished / won't have
C) will have finished / will have
D) isn't going to finish / have
E) finishes / will have had

13. At the moment my mother ---- a shower in the bathroom, so I can't go to the toilet. I ---- to make you wait, but I have to wait myself.

A) is taking / don't want
B) takes / want
C) has taken / don't want
D) is taking / haven't wanted
E) is going to take / want

14. Most people can't comprehend the grammar of a new language. They ---- it extremely boring or too complicated as they ---- used to the system of their own language.

A) are finding / have been
B) have found / are
C) will find / will have been
D) find / are
E) find / were

15. Sandy ---- for twelve years professionally when she ---- selected for the Olympic team last year.

A) swims / is
B) will have swum / will be
C) has swum / is
D) was swimming / was
E) had been swimming / was

16. She ---- her coffee on the golden sand on the beach while she ---- her son enjoy the nice warm water of the Mediterranean on a sunny August day.

A) drank / had watched
B) was drinking / was watching
C) had been drinking / watched
D) is drinking / watched
E) is going to drink / will watch

17. I ---- to go to an aviation school since I ---- that I don't have to be a university graduate for it.

A) have planned / had learnt
B) had planned / had learnt
C) plan / learn
D) planned / learnt
E) have been planning / learnt

18. Male birds ---- mostly to attract the attention of the female birds. Otherwise, they ---- quiet in a hidden area to avoid predators.

A) sing / keep
B) are singing / are keeping
C) sing / have kept
D) sang / kept
E) will sing / will keep

19. Catalonia ---- the fight for freedom for some Europeans as it ---- for its freedom from Spain for years up until now.

A) is representing / fights
B) has represented / fights
C) represents / has fought
D) had represented / fought
E) represented / fought

20. They ---- you to open your luggage at the airport if you ---- all these liquid bottles into it. If I were you, I would just buy them from my destination.

A) have asked / have put
B) ask / will put
C) are asking / are putting
D) will ask / put
E) are going to ask / will have put

MODALS

3 MODALS

'Modal'lar kendi başına anlamı olmayan, bir fiille kullanıldıklarında anlam kazanan yapılardır. Her birinin kendine has kullanımı ve anlamı vardır. Bazıları birkaç farklı anlamda kullanılabilir.
'Modal'ları bir şeyin **kesin**, **olası**, **muhtemel** (veya değil) olduğunu belirtmek için kullanırız.
'Modal'ları ayrıca **yetenek**, **izin isteme**, **istekte bulunma**, **öneriler** vb. hakkında konuşurken kullanırız.

'Modal'ların kullanımı:

1 'Modal'lardan sonra fiilin yalın hali (bare infinitive) kullanılır.

- Depending on the weather tonight, Bethany **might attend** her cousin's wedding.
- I **used to dance** when I was little but since I broke my ankle, I stopped.
- You **must submit** your university diploma to qualify for this job.

2 'Modal'ların her biri 'not' eklenerek olumsuz hale getirilebilir. 'Not' ile birlikte kullanılırken 'modal'ın yapısından kaynaklanan küçük farklılıklar olabilir.

- I **can't** sleep because I have insomnia.
- She **doesn't need to** worry about money; she is rich.
- He **daren't** come near me.
- Alex **isn't supposed to** be here.

3 'Modal'lar öznenin önüne alınarak soru cümleleri oluşturulabilir.

- **May** I come in, please?
- **Can** you come in early to help me with the cooking?
- **Might** I borrow your jacket for the party tonight?
- **Do** you **have to** go now?

4 'Modal'larda şimdiki zaman vurgusu varsa, 'modal + be + V_{ing}' şeklinde kullanılır.

- **Nancy** : I did not see Billy at the park this afternoon.
  Seymour : He **could be doing** research for his project in the library.
- **Tim** : My father wondered where our dog went.
  Katya : It **might be chasing** the neighbour's cat around in the garden.
- **Philip** : Fiona can hear the mailman from her bedroom.
  Michael : He **must be driving** up our street now.

5 Bazı ‘modal’lar kendiliğinden geçmiş zaman anlatabilirler. (had to, could, etc.) Fakat bir ‘modal’ın kendiliğinden geçmiş zaman anlamı yoksa onu ‘past’ yapmak için ‘modal + have + V_3’ (Perfect Modal) şeklinde kullanmamız gerekir.

- **Sam** : It was snowing very heavily this morning.
  Amelie : You **should have worn** your winter boots before going to school.
  *(Okula gitmeden önce kışlık botlarını **giymeliydin**.)*
- **Arabella** : The dishes were washed when I came home.
  Beatrix : My sister **must have found** the time to help me out when she got back from work.
  *(Kız kardeşim işten geldiğinde bana yardım etmek için vakit **bulmuş olmalı**.)*
- **Kate** : I might find myself in jail for shoplifting.
  Clover : You **should not have stolen** the bag of chips from the store.
  *(Dükkandan cips paketini **çalmamalıydın**.)*

6 ‘Perfect modal’ların ‘continuous’ hali ‘modal + have + been + V_{ing}’ şeklindedir.

- **Eugenie** : My mother caught a man in the backyard last night.
  Mojgan : He **must have been trying** to break into our home.
- **Simon** : I saw you at the cinema this morning.
  Sebastion : **Shouldn’t you have been studying** at home?
- **Annabel** : John did not answer my phone call yesterday evening.
  Isla : He **could have been driving** home then.

⚠ **Not**

‘Perfect modal’lar hem ‘Simple Past Tense’in hem de ‘Present Perfect Tense’in yerine kullanılabilir.

modal + have + V_3 / modal + have + been + V_{ing}

A Used to & Would

1 ‘Used to’ ve ‘would’ modal’ları geçmişe ait alışkanlıklardan ya da tekrar eden eylemlerden bahsetmek için kullanılır.

- When Paul was a teacher, he **would read** / **used to read** stories to the kids every chance he got. *(Paul öğretmenken, bulduğu her fırsatta çocuklara hikayeler **okurdu**.)*
- Before Mary was diagnosed with diabetes, she **would eat** / **used to eat** a tub of ice cream every day.

- People **used to think** that the Earth was flat.
- My family and I **used to like** going to the cinema when the movie ticket prices were still affordable.
- Growing up, my father **would always take** us to the beach if we got good grades.
- When Caroline lived in London, she **used to enjoy** walking along the Thames River every summer evening.

Not *'Would'un kısaltılmış hali ''d' şeklinde yazılır.*

- *He'**d** visit us more often in the past.*

2

'Used to' hem durum bildiren fiillerle (be, know, have, etc.) hem de hareket bildiren fiillerle (look, walk, read, etc.) kullanılırken 'would' sadece hareket bildiren fiillerle kullanılır.

- Darren and I ---- **be** close friends until we had a fight over who will win the football championship.
  ~~would~~ (X) used to (✓)
- Norman ---- often **make** breakfast for his mum when he was still living with her.
  used to (✓) B) would (✓)
- When I was a student, I ---- **love** sleeping late at weekends. *(love - durum bildiren fiil)*
  used to (✓) B) ~~would~~ (X)
- When he was at school, he ---- **play** football every Saturday. *(play - hareket bildiren fiil)*
  used to (✓) B) would (✓)

3

'Used to' yapısı olumsuz cümlelerde ve soru cümlelerinde değişiklik gösterir. ('Simple Past Tense'in fiil çekimleri ile kullanılır.)

Used to (+) → **didn't use to / usedn't to (-)**
Used to (+) → **Did ... use to (?)**

- **Did** they **use to be** very close friends?
  (Eskiden yakın arkadaş mıydılar?)
- She **didn't use to like** vegetables, but now she eats them almost every day.
  (Eskiden sebze sevmezdi ama şimdi neredeyse her gün yiyor.)
- They **usedn't to have** a dishwasher but they do now.
  (Eskiden onların bulaşık makinesi yoktu ama şimdi var.)

B Be used to & Get used to

1 'Be used to' yapısı 'alışkın olmak' anlamına gelir ve belirli bir zamanı yoktur. Kendisinden sonra isim ya da 'V_{ing}' gelir, çünkü yapının sonundaki 'to' kelimesi bir edat (preposition)'tır. (prep + noun / V_{ing}). Bu yapının başında bulunan 'to be' fiili istenilen zamana göre çekimlenebilir. (is used to, have been used to, will be used to, etc.)

- I have two younger brothers, so I **am used to** very loud noises.
  *(İki tane küçük erkek kardeşim var, bu yüzden gürültüye **alışkınım**.)*
- Jack **was not used to** the air pollution in China when he first moved there.
  *(Oraya ilk taşındığında Jack, Çin'deki hava kirliliğine **alışkın değildi**.)*
- Now that Oliver is married, he **is used to** sharing a house with his wife.
- Mary was a patient teacher because she **was used to** teaching very young kids.
- Amanda **is used to** having her dinner late as she always has to work overtime.
- I **am used to** ---- with my grandparents now but it **didn't use to** ---- easy at the beginning.
  A) ~~live~~ / be B) living / ~~being~~ C) living / be (✓) D) ~~live~~ / ~~being~~

2 'Get used to' yapısı 'alışmak' anlamına gelir ve 'get' fiili istenilen zamana göre çekimlenebilir. Sonundaki 'to' edat (preposition) olduğundan, 'to'dan sonra isim veya 'V_{ing}' gelir. 'Get' yerine bazen 'become' ve 'grow' fiilleri de kullanılabilir.

- If you want to be a doctor, you **will have to get used to** the long working hours.
  *(Eğer doktor olmak istiyorsan, uzun çalışma saatlerine **alışmak zorunda kalacaksın**.)*
- I **have become** so **used to** always having my mobile phone with me that I can't imagine how its absence would be. *(Cep telefonumun her zaman yanımda olmasına o kadar **alıştım** ki onun yokluğu nasıl olurdu hayal edemiyorum.)*
- It took Maria a month **to grow used to** giving people her new address.
  *(Maria'nın insanlara yeni adresini vermeye **alışması** bir ayını aldı.)*
- Peter **will get used to** waking up early for school now, since the summer holiday is over.
- Harry moved to Canada last year and **should get used to** the cold soon.
- Felicia **will have to get used to** living alone as her sister moved to another city yesterday.
- You **will get used to** driving this new car soon and will start to enjoy its functionalities.
- Delilah **has become used to** not having her puppy follow her everywhere since its unfortunate death last year.

3 **Be used to = Be accustomed to** (alışkın olmak)
Get (grow / become) used to = Get (grow / become) accustomed to (alışmak)

- I **am accustomed to** the life in the big city. *(Büyük şehirdeki hayata alışkınım.)*
- Henry **got accustomed to** living in Spain and eating his dinner late at night.
  (Henry İspanya'da yaşamaya ve akşam yemeğini gece geç saatte yemeye alıştı.)
- The class **is accustomed to** having their teacher give them homework every Friday.
- My father **finally got accustomed to** not drinking coffee any more after he was diagnosed with high blood pressure.

4 ‘Would’ yapısının kullanıldığı yerler aşağıdaki gibidir:

a ‘Would’ yapısı geçmişe ait alışkanlıklardan bahsetmenin yanı sıra ricada bulunmak için de kullanılır.

- **Would you help** me clear this mess? *(Bu dağınıklığı toplamama yardım **eder misin**?)*
- **Would you fetch** the salt from the pantry, please? *(Kilerden tuzu **getirir misin** lütfen?)*
- **Would Benjamin drop** me off at the train station this afternoon?

b Dolaylı anlatımlarda ‘will’in ‘past’ı olarak kullanılır.

- **Direct speech** : ‘Jason, you **will get** in trouble for swearing at your teachers,’ the principal said. *(Doğrudan Anlatım)*
  Indirect speech : The principal said that Jason **would get** in trouble for swearing at his teacher. *(Dolaylı Anlatım)*
- **Direct speech** : ‘I **will go** to work late today,’ said Katie. *(Doğrudan Anlatım)*
  Indirect speech : Katie said that she **would go** to work late that day. *(Dolaylı Anlatım)*

c Tipik davranışlardan bahsederken kullanılır.

- Colin is a stubborn boy and **wouldn’t listen** to anyone once he has made up his mind. *(Colin inatçı bir çocuktur ve bir kere karar verdi mi hiç kimseyi **dinlemez**.)*
- Gary **wouldn’t trust** anyone after his break-up.
- Pauline **wouldn’t go for** bungee jumping because she is afraid of heights.
- Tony **would do** such silly things. You know him very well.

d Belli kalıpların parçası olarak kullanılır.

would love *(istemek)*
would rather *(tercih etmek)*
would sooner *(tercih etmek)*
would like *(istemek)*
would prefer *(tercih etmek)*
would mind *(sakıncası olmak)*

- **Would** you **rather** finish your assignment tonight or at the weekend? *(Ödevini bu akşam mı yoksa hafta sonu mu bitirmeyi tercih edersin?)*
- Rachael does not really want to go to the shopping mall; she **would sooner** stay at home and relax. *(Rachael alışveriş merkezine gitmeyi gerçekten istemiyor; evde kalıp dinlenmeyi tercih ediyor.)*
- **Would** you **mind** lowering the volume of the music? *(Müziğin sesini kısmanızın bir sakıncası var mı?)*
- I told the waiter that I **would like** to have my pizza with thin crust, no olives and extra mushrooms.
- Mary **would** very much **rather** recycle the paper and cardboards than throw them out.
- John **would prefer** to live uptown than downtown to avoid the traffic and crowd.
- Billy **would not mind** going to the award ceremony on my behalf.

⚠ **Not** *'Mind' fiilinin kullanım şekilleri:*

a. *Would you mind + -ing*
Do you mind + -ing

yapılarını insanlardan kibarca bir şey yapmalarını istemek için kullanırız.

'Would you mind' daha kibardır ve daha yaygın olarak kullanılır. Anlam olarak her iki yapı da '- sorun olur mu? / - sakıncası var mı?' demektir.

- ***Would you mind** speaking up, please? We can't hear you.*
  (Daha yüksek sesle konuşmanın sakıncası var mı? Seni duyamıyoruz.)
- ***Do you mind** coming a little earlier tomorrow to help me write the final reports?*
  (Son raporları yazmama yardım etmek için yarın biraz daha erken gelmenin sakıncası var mı?)
- ***Would Ashley mind** taking the kids to school next week? I am terribly busy.*
- ***Do you mind** cleaning the entrance? We have guests tomorrow.*
- ***Would you mind** discussing this matter some other time? I am really not in the mood.*

b. *Eğer kibarca izin istiyorsak;*
Would you mind if I / he / you, etc. + past
Do you mind if I / you / he, etc. + present

yapılarını kullanırız. Anlam olarak '... için bir sakıncası var mı?' demektir.

- ***Would you mind if I** stayed with you for two nights when I am there?*
  (Oradayken iki gece sizde kalsam sorun olur mu? / Oradayken iki gece sizde kalmamın sakıncası var mı?)
- ***Do you mind if Samuel** writes the letter for me?*
  (Samuel'in benim yerime mektubu yazmasının senin için bir sakıncası var mı?)
- ***Would you mind if Lisa** borrowed your car tonight? She wanted me to ask you because she is too shy.*
- ***Do you mind if Ken and Bryan** join your football game this weekend?*
- ***Would you mind if I** came by your house to pick up my book? I have an exam tomorrow.*

⚠ **Not** *Böyle bir soru bize yöneltildiğinde; eğer sakıncası yoksa, yani cevabımız olumluysa, cevap olarak 'No, I don't mind. / No, it's OK.' gibi ifadeler kullanırız. Eğer bizim için bir sorunsa 'Yes, I do. / Yes, I don't like that.' gibi ifadeler kullanırız.*

- ***Jack** : Would you mind if I took one more Coke from your fridge?*
  ***Penny** : No, of course not. Make yourself at home.*

- ***Tom** : Do you mind if I call you later? I must talk to my mother now.*
  ***Eliza** : Yes, I do actually. It makes me feel worthless.*

e **'Wish clause'larda şikayet belirtirken kullanılır.**

- I wish my father **would buy** me the newest model of iPhone.
  (Keşke babam bana iPhone'un en son modelini alsa.)
- Helen wishes that her teacher **would stop** calling her name in class.

f **Hayali durumlar ve olasılıklardan bahsederken kullanılır. (Bu kullanım 'If Clause' konusu incelenirken ayrıntılı bir şekilde ele alınacaktır.)**

- If there weren't any warfare and violence, the world **would be** a peaceful place.
  (If Clause Type 2; If + Simple Past, would)
  *(Savaş ve vahşet olmasa, dünya daha güzel bir yer **olurdu**.)*
  - Cümlede şimdiki zamanla ilgili hayali bir durum söz konusudur. Hayali durumlarda 'tense' bir zaman geriye gider, 'present → past' olur.
- If my parents hadn't supported me financially, I **wouldn't have made** it to university.
  (If Clause Type 3; If + Past Perfect, would have V_3)
  *(Eğer ailem beni desteklemeseydi, üniversiteye **gidemezdim**.)*
  - Ailesi kişiyi desteklemiş ve üniversiteye gidebilmiş; yani bu cümlelerde geçmişle ilgili hayali durumlardan bahsedilmektedir. 'Tense' bir zaman geriye atılmış ve bu şekilde 'simple past → past perfect' olmuştur.)
- Without water and oxygen, humans **wouldn't be able to survive**.
  *(Oksijen olmadan insanlar **hayatta kalamazdı**.)*
  - Bu cümlede bahsedilen suyun ve oksijenin olmaması durumu, hayali bir durumdur.
- Jack **would not have been** able to complete the final year project if he hadn't had the scholarly journals.

1 **EXERCISE:**
Choose the correct option.

1. **After living in the big city for seven years, Joshua ---- driving in the traffic.**
   A) became used to B) used to

2. **Elizabeth sometimes wishes that her husband ---- stop ---- to be a handyman as he usually breaks things beyond repair.**
   A) would / try B) would / trying

3. **Mark said that he ---- go hungry than ---- sushi with raw fish.**
   A) would rather / eat B) would prefer / eating

4. **It took me weeks to ---- wearing glasses.**
   A) used to B) grow used to

5. **At your age, I ---- the fastest kid in the neighbourhood.**
A) would be
B) used to be

6. **I ---- even think about climbing that tower; I'm afraid of heights.**
A) wouldn't
B) used to

7. **My football team ---- have ---- the game if the goalkeeper hadn't been injured.**
A) would / win
B) would / won

8. **Susan ---- come home at 6 o'clock in the evenings while she was working.**
A) used to
B) is accustomed to

9. **Agatha ---- usually stay in reading a book instead of going to a place full of people.**
A) would
B) is used to

10. **Lucius and his son never ---- losing their pet cat; they still look for it every day.**
A) used to
B) got used to

2 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of 'would' or 'used to'.

1. Do you think Helena ________________ be able to help me with my project?
2. People have ________________ having machines. They do almost everything with them.
3. When I was three years old I ________________ sleep in my parents' room.
4. Peter ________________ stay at home and recover than go to the office.
5. ________________ you please hand in your assignments at the end of the lesson?
6. Ben said that he ________________ be going to Ashton's party because he has a dog.
7. If you want to win the marathon, you will have to ________________ waking up early and training every day.
8. My father ________________ consider getting a cat because he is allergic.
9. How long do you think it will take Peter to ________________ not having a car any more?
10. When I first started working there, I did not like the small office space but I have ________________ it over the last few months.

C Can & Be able to

1 ‘Can’ kişinin sahip olduğu yeteneklerden bahsetmek için kullanılır. (-ebilir (-im / -sin / -iz / -siniz / -ler))

- Susan **can solve** a Rubix Cube in less than five minutes.
  *(Susan bir Rubik küpünü beş dakikadan az bir zamanda **çözebilir**.)*
- You **can't see** the doctor without an appointment. *(Randevun olmadan doktoru **göremezsin**.)*
- **Can you eat** ten sausages in a minute? *(Bir dakika içinde on sosis **yiyebilir misin**?)*
- Anyone **can climb** Mount Everest if he or she has undergone intensive mountaineering training.
- I **can't lend** you my Math textbook because I need to study for the exam tomorrow.
- Nancy's car is under repair, so she **can't drive** us to the dinner party tonight.

2 Şu an sahip olduğumuz yeteneklerimizden bahsederken ‘can’, geçmişte sahip olduğumuz yetenekler ve sürekli yapabildiğimiz eylemlerden bahsederken ‘could’ kullanırız. (-ebiliyordu, -ebilirdi)

- Jack **could run** as fast as the wind before he broke his ankle.
  *(Bileğini kırmadan önce Jack rüzgar kadar hızlı **koşabiliyordu**.)*
- I **couldn't drive** when I was a teenager. *(Gençken araba **kullanamazdım**.)*
- **Could you play** the guitar when you were a child? *(Çocukken gitar **çalabiliyor muydunuz**?)*
- We **could walk** to the city centre before the new road was built.
- Jack and Jill **couldn't watch** the movie as all the tickets were sold out.

Not *‘Could’ sadece geçmiş zamandaki yeteneği anlatırken ‘past’ anlamı taşır. Bu kullanımı dışında ‘can’ ile aynı anlama gelir.*

3 ‘Be able to’ yapısı ‘-ebilmek’ anlamına gelir ve belli bir zamanı yoktur. Kullanımındaki ‘to be’ fiilinden dolayı, istenilen zamana göre çekimlenebilir. (am / is / are able to, was / were able to, will be able to, have / has / had been able to, etc.)

- Cheetahs **are able to run** extremely fast. *(Bilimsel gerçek - Simple Present)*
  *(Çitalar çok hızlı **koşabilir**.)*
- My brother, John, **has been able to walk** since he was one year old. *(Present Perfect)*
  *(Erkek kardeşim John bir yaşından beri **yürüyebiliyor**.)*
- My father **will be able to buy** a nicer house when he gets promoted. *(Simple Future)*
  *(Terfi ettirildiğinde babam daha iyi bir ev **satın alabilecek** (şu an alamıyor).)*
- When we were in Los Angeles, we **were able to eat out** much more often. *(Simple Past)*
  *(Biz Los Angeles'tayken daha sık **dışarıda yiyebiliyorduk**.)*
- I **was able to do** a perfect pirouette when I was still learning ballet.
- Five years ago, we **were able to buy** a loaf of bread for 50 pence.
- **Will** we **be able to get** from London to Paris in an hour by plane?

4 Geçmişte yapabildiğimiz eylemlerden bahsederken hem 'could' hem de 'was / were able to' kullanabiliriz. Ancak herhangi bir eylem sürekli yapılabiliyorsa 'could'; bir sefere mahsus yapılabildiyse veya zor bir işin üstesinden gelme, başarma (manage to) anlamı varsa 'was / were able to' kullanılır.

- Ben **could spell** any word he was asked because he used to read a dictionary just for fun. *(Ben istenilen her kelimeyi **harf harf söyleyebilirdi** çünkü eğlencesine sözlük okurdu. → kelimeyi harf harf söyleyebilme eylemi tek sefere mahsus değil.)*
- There was a very strong wind but the fireman **was able to save (= managed to save)** the children from the burning house. *(Çok şiddetli bir rüzgar vardı ama itfaiyeci yanan evden çocukları **kurtarabildi (= kurtarmayı başardı)**. → zor bir durum olmasına rağmen bir işin üstesinden gelme anlamı var.)*
- I **could never understand** why some people were scared of small spaces until I got stuck in an elevator.
- My little brother **could find** all the chocolate eggs because he discovered all the clues.
- Even a fool **could see** that Harry was lost because he walked around aimlessly.
- Although he lost his keys, Peter **was able to open** his front door.
- Bill and Sally took Spanish lessons and they **were able to speak** it fluently after two years.
- There were several pages torn out of the book but I **was able to understand** what it was about.

⚠ *Not*

Bu ayrım olumsuz cümlelerde yoktur. Cümleler olumsuzsa bu iki yapı birbirinin yerine kullanılabilir.

- *No matter what we did, we ---- cancel the board meeting.*
  A) couldn't (✓) *B) weren't able to (✓)*

  (Ne yaptıysak kurul toplantısını iptal edemedik.)

5 'Can', izin (permission), rica (request) ve teklif (offer) belirtebilir.

- **Can I borrow** your Chemistry notes for a week? *(asking for permission)*
- **Can I** please **get** a ride home with you tonight? *(request)*
- **Can I help** you with anything? *(offer)*

6 'Can', olma ihtimali çok yüksek olan bir olasılıktan bahsederken kullanılır. (strong possibility)

- It **can be** very dangerous to walk alone at night on the streets of Mexico.
- During winter, the weather in Vancouver **can get** very humid and rainy.
- You **can't** possibly **be** serious about the news of Mary marrying Tom, can you?
- The new law regarding the increase in food prices **can't be** real.

7 ‘Olasılık’ anlamında ‘present’ ve ‘future’ olarak ‘could’ yapısı da kullanılabilir.

- There **could be** another rise in the price of petrol soon. *(future)*
- We **could stay** here or we **could go** somewhere to drink something. *(present)*

8 ‘Can’in olumsuz hali olan ‘can’t’ veya ‘cannot’ birini bir şeyden men etme, yasaklama (prohibition) anlamı da verir.

- You **can’t speak** loudly in the library as you might disturb other people.
- We **cannot go** out without our parents’ permission.
- Students and teachers **cannot smoke** in or around the vicinity of the school.
- Passengers **can’t board** international flights without their passports.

3 **EXERCISE:**

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of ‘can’, ‘could’ or ‘be able to’.

1. ________________ I ________________ (**buy**) you dinner?
2. ________________ you please ________________ (**help**) me with the dishes tonight?
3. Dylan has an IQ of 140. He ________________ (**read**) when he turned five years old.
4. I ________________ (**not / sleep**) well at night since I watched that horror movie.
5. You ________________ (**enter**) the museum without buying a ticket.
6. I ________________ (**buy**) a new phone once I get my salary at the end of this month.
7. Eating fried chicken every day ________________ (**cause**) high cholesterol.
8. The employee ________________ (**not / enter**) the bank as the key holder was late for work this morning.
9. Susan ________________ (**bake**) her first cake after reading the instructions carefully.
10. ________________ you ________________ (**reach**) your secretary to ask about your scheduled meeting for tomorrow?

D Must & Can’t

1 Belli bir bilgiye ya da veriye dayanan bir durumdan kuvvetli bir çıkarım (deduction) yaparken ‘must’ kullanılır.

- You have been working all day. You **must be** tired. *(Tüm gün çalıştın. Yorgun* ***olmalısın****.)*
  - Bu cümlede kişinin yorgun olabileceği çıkarımı tüm gün çalışmış olduğu bilgisine dayanarak yapılmıştır. Yani yorgun olduğunu düşündürecek bir kanıt vardır. Cümlelerde bu gibi bilgiler varsa bir sorunun cevabının ‘must’ olması muhtemeldir.
- The workers **must be** very hungry as they haven’t eaten anything since this morning. *(İşçiler çok aç* ***olmalı*** *çünkü bu sabahtan beri hiçbir şey yemediler.)*
- Robert **must like** Chinese food. He frequently goes to the Chinese restaurant. *(Robert Çin yemeklerini seviyor* ***olmalı****. Sık sık Çin lokantasına gidiyor.)*

- Jack **must know** the truth about the accident because he is the only one who witnessed it.
  *(Jack kazayla ilgili gerçeği biliyor **olmalı** çünkü kazayı gören tek kişi o.)*
- The weather in Miami **must be** nice. It is always sunny there.
  *(Miami'de hava güzel **olmalı**. Hava orada sürekli güneşli.)*
- Paris **must be** Audrey's favourite city because she visits the Eiffel Tower often.
  *(Paris Audrey'nin en sevdiği şehir **olmalı** çünkü Eyfel Kulesi'ni sık sık ziyaret ediyor.)*
- Elaine **must like** cats. She has twenty-seven kittens at home.
  *(Elaine kedileri seviyor **olmalı**. Evde yirmi yedi tane yavru kedisi var.)*
- Thomas **must be** tired since he has just run a marathon.
- My grandmother **must enjoy** knitting as we get new sweaters every year.
- Adam **must be** angry at his brother for losing his new phone.
- Harry **must hate** his supervisor because she makes him work overtime and redo his reports.
- You **must be** thirsty. You haven't had a drop of water today.

⚠ **Not**

Kanıtın olduğu ve çıkarım yapılan cümleleri sebep-sonuç belirten cümleler gibi düşünebiliriz. Bu sebepten dolayı cümlelerde 'as, because, since, so, therefore' gibi bağlaçlar bulunması mümkündür. Bu bağlaçlar yoksa bile varmış gibi düşünmek de işimizi kolaylaştıracaktır; yapılan çıkarımın sebebi var olan kanıttır.

2 ⯈⯈⯈

'Must'ın çıkarım anlamındaki kullanımında olumsuz hali 'can't'tır. 'Mustn't' bu anlamda kullanılmaz.

- You just got your salary this month. You **can't be** broke again.
  *(Bu ay maaşını daha yeni aldın. Yine beş parasız **olamazsın**.)*
- My dog has just been fed. It **can't be** hungry yet.
  *(Köpeğim daha yeni beslendi. Henüz aç **olamaz**.)*
- I have just spoken to Adam on the phone, he is in Barcelona. That **can't be** him over there.
- Peter has been grounded by his parents this weekend. He **can't** possibly **feel** happy about that.
- Laura chose not to attend the dinner party. She **can't be** angry and **accuse** us of not inviting her.

3 ⯈⯈⯈

'Must be V$_{ing}$' X **'can't be V$_{ing}$'** → konuşma anı, şimdiki zaman (Continuous Modal)
(-yor olmalı) **(-yor olamaz)**

- **Jasmine** : I have not seen Anna in school lately. Do you know where she might be?
  Layla : Anna has just come back from her trip to Amsterdam. She **can't be travelling** again. *(Anna Amsterdam gezisinden daha yeni döndü. Tekrardan **seyahat ediyor olamaz**.)*
- **Lydia** : Patrick is not answering his phone. Do you know what he is doing?
  Larson : I saw him in the office this morning. He **must be working** on the new project. *(Onu bu sabah ofiste gördüm. Yeni proje üzerinde **çalışıyor olmalı**.)*

- **Jen** : Have you seen my phone? I can't find it.
  Maisie : It **can't be missing**. You just called your mother.
- **Leonard** : Do you know why my cat has not been eating its food these last few days?
  Clive : I saw it roaming around yesterday. It **must be catching** and **eating** birds from the garden.

4 **'Must have V_3'** X **'can't have V_3'** → geçmişle ilgili çıkarım; 'past / perfect tense' mantığı
(-mış olmalı) **(-mış olamaz)** (Perfect Modal)

- Henry finished first in the marathon. He **must have trained** hard for the past few weeks.
  (Henry maratonu birincilikle bitirdi. Son birkaç haftadır çok çalışmış olmalı.)
- Gary **can't have travelled** to Spain. He does not have a passport.
  (Gary İspanya'ya seyahat etmiş olamaz. Onun pasaportu yok.)
- The car ran over the cat. The driver **must not have seen** it. *(Sürücü onu görmemiş olmalı.)*
- I saw Jack sneaking around the bank yesterday. He **must have been** the robber.
- Matt was late for school this morning. He **must have stayed** up all night playing video games.
- Peter has been living in Turkey for five years. He **must have eaten** baklava up to now.
- Helen has just had her cast taken off. She **can't have broken** her arm again.
- Deborah **can't have done** the dishes because she was not home all day yesterday.
- Ben is still trying to pay off his student loans. He **can't have bought** a new house.

5 **'Must have been V_{ing}'** X **'can't have been V_{ing}'** → geçmişle ilgili çıkarım; past / perfect tense mantığı
(-yor olmalı) **(-yor olamaz)** (Perfect Continuous Modal - eylem uzun süreli)

- Tom walked into the wall. He **can't have been looking** at where he was going.
  *(Tom duvara çarptı. Nereye gittiğine **bakıyor olamaz**.)*
- You have a lot of money. You **must have been saving** for a long time.
  *(Çok paran var. Uzun süredir **biriktiriyor olmalısın**.)*
- Now it is afternoon and Martin went to bed at 11 last night. He **can't have been sleeping** by now.
  *(Şu an öğleden sonra ve Martin dün gece 11'de yattı. Şimdiye kadar **uyuyor olamaz**.)*
- Martha speaks French so fluently. She **must have been practising** very hard.
  *(Martha çok akıcı bir şekilde Fransızca konuşuyor. Çok sıkı **çalışıyor olmalı**.)*
- I saw Cathy going home last night. She **can't have been watching** the movie with you till midnight.
  *(Cathy'yi dün gece eve giderken gördüm. Gece yarısına kadar sizinle film **izlemiş olamaz**.)*
- Paul knows every street in this neighbourhood. He **must have been living** here for many years.
- Joe **must have been eating** a lot of ice cream. He gained some weight lately.
- You have not attended any classes. You **can't have been learning** anything.
- We could not believe when George was promoted to manager. He **can't have been working** for the company for that long.

⚠ **Not** *'Mustn't' yasaklama belirten bir yapıdır ve 'can't'ın yasaklama anlamıyla eş anlamlıdır; birbirlerinin yerine kullanılabilirler.*

- *You **mustn't keep** your cell phone on while travelling on a plane. (= You can't keep...) (Uçakta seyahat ederken cep telefonunu açık tutmamalısın.)*

⚠ **Not** *Yasaklama belirten modallar'ın ipuçları; 'It's forbidden.', 'It's not allowed.', 'out of bounds', 'restricted' gibi yapı ve kelimeler olabilir.*

- *You **mustn't enter** that facility. It's a restricted area. (= You can't enter...) (Bu tesise giremezsin. Orası yasak bölge.)*

4

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with 'must' or 'can't'.

1. Freddie is not at home. He ____________________ (**walk**) the dog.
2. Sean won the debate competition. He ____________________ (**prepare**) well for it.
3. Mary was invited to a buffet dinner. She ____________________ (**be**) full now.
4. Jake ____________________ (**break**) the vase. He wasn't even at home last night!
5. The horse has been running for miles. It ____________________ (**feel**) tired.
6. Fred is a very sentimental person. He ____________________ (**feel**) sad when he lost the card you gave him in high school.
7. Oliver's bird escaped from its cage yesterday. He ____________________ (**feel**) happy about that right now.
8. You ____________________ (**work**) on the computer now. I just saw you log in to the online game two minutes ago.
9. Peter looks exhausted. He ____________________ (**study**) all night.
10. Wendy ____________________ (**ask**) about buying a new car. She bought one last week.
11. Jason has lived in Portugal for twenty five years. He ____________________ (**know**) a lot about the culture.
12. I was scheduled to have a meeting in Seattle and another one in Vancouver at the same time yesterday. I ____________________ (**be**) in two places at a time.
13. Your journal of climate change is excellent. You ____________________ (**research**) on the topic for months.
14. That ____________________ (**be**) Peter in the mall now. He moved to Florida two weeks ago.
15. You haven't had anything to eat since this morning. You ____________________ (**be**) hungry!

E Must & Have to & Have got to

1 'Must' daha çok bir durumla ilgili kişisel görüşleri ve duyguları ifade ederken (konuşmacının kendisinden gelen zorunluluk ya da görev duygusu), 'have / has to' ve 'have / has got to' yapıları zorunluluğun bir kurala ya da dış etkene bağlı olduğunu ifade eder.

- If you want to lose weight, you **must exercise** regularly.
  *(Eğer kilo vermek istiyorsan, düzenli bir şekilde **egzersiz yapmalısın.**) (Konuşmacının kişisel görüşü)*
- You **must turn off** the lights before leaving the house so that you do not waste electricity.
  *(Elektriği boşa harcamamak için evden ayrılmadan önce ışıkları **kapatmalısın.**)*
  (Görev duygusu)
- I **have to finish** my assignment before the deadline, which is tomorrow. *(Ödevimi yarınki son teslim tarihinden önce **bitirmem gerek.**) (Dış etmenlerden kaynaklanan zorunluluk)*
- Every worker in this factory **has to obey** our rules.
  *(Bu fabrikadaki her çalışan bizim kurallarımıza **uymalıdır.**) (Bir otorite tarafından konulmuş kural / Dış etmenlerden kaynaklanan zorunluluk)*
- In order to get treats, the dog **has to follow** its master's demands.
- Billy **has to start** studying now if he wants to pass his exams.
- If you want to rent a car, you **must have** a valid driving license.
- Adult humans **must sleep** for at least eight hours a night to be healthy and functioning the next day.

2 Olumsuz olarak kullanıldığında 'mustn't' yapısı 'yasaklama, engelleme' ifade eder. Fakat 'have to' olumsuz olduğunda (don't have to / doesn't have to) 'gerek yok' anlamına geldiğinden, bir şeyin zorunlu ya da gerekli olmadığını ifade eder.

- You **mustn't drive** above the speed limit. If you do so, you'll pay a fine. *(Arabayı hız limitinin üstünde **süremezsin.** Eğer sürersen, ceza ödersin.) (Yasaklama / engelleme)*
  You **don't have to drive** that fast. I'm sure we can get there on time. *(Arabayı bu kadar hızlı **kullanmana gerek yok.** Eminim ki oraya zamanında ulaşabiliriz.) (Gerek olmama durumu)*
- You **mustn't carry** that parcel. You may hurt your back.
  *(Bu paketi **taşımamalısın.** Belini incitebilirsin.)*
  You **don't have to carry** those parcels. I can handle them.
  *(Şu paketleri **taşımana gerek yok.** Onları ben halledebilirim.)*
- You **mustn't cross** the road when the lights are red because it is very dangerous.
- Jill **doesn't have to go** to school tomorrow as it is off due to heavy snowfall.
- Leonard is rich, so he **doesn't have to work** part time while studying.
- You **don't have to pick** me up from my doorstep. I can walk to the bus stop.
- You **mustn't lie** to your parents. They will feel hurt.
- **I don't have to worry** about getting lost. I have a GPS navigator.
- We **mustn't use** our phones while the plane is taking off. It might crash.
- My friends **don't have to ask** their parents for permission to go out because their parents trust them.

3 'Must' birisine şiddetli bir tavsiyede bulunurken de kullanılabilir.

- You **must visit** the Blue Mosque while in İstanbul.
  *(İstanbul'dayken Sultan Ahmet Camii'ni mutlaka **ziyaret etmelisiniz**.)*
- You **must try** one of the kebabs when you are travelling in Turkey.
- You **must go** to bed early if you want to have a healthy lifestyle.
- You **must rest** your eyes every 15 minutes while using your phone.

4 'Must', 'have to' ve 'have got to' yapılarının geçmiş zamandaki hali 'had to' yapısıdır. (obligation in the past - geçmişteki zorunluluk)

- Amanda **had to take care of** her younger brother when her parents went on a holiday last week. *(Annesi ve babası geçen hafta tatile gittiğinde Amanda küçük erkek kardeşine **bakmak zorundaydı**.)*
- When she was working at the law firm last year, Betty **had to wear** formal clothes every day. *(Geçen yıl hukuk şirketinde çalışırken Betty her gün resmi kıyafetler **giymek zorundaydı**.)*
- When I was a teenager, I **had to learn** how to wash my own dishes.
- When my siblings and I were young, we **had to apologise** to each other every time we fought.
- When Thomas was renting his new apartment last month, he **had to pay** a security deposit.
- Growing up, Keith **had to go** to his grandparent's house every day after school.

⚠ **Not** *'Have to' yapısı, her zamana göre çekimlenebilir fakat bu durum 'have got to' için geçerli değildir.*

- *I **will have to finish** the project next week. (Future)*
- ***Did** you **have to finish** the project yesterday evening? (Past)*
- ***Do** you **have to finish** the project now? (Present)*
- *You **have got to understand** the importance of your medication. (Present)*

5 **EXERCISE:**

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of 'must', 'have to' or 'have got to'.

1. Harry ______________________ (**not / attend**) the meeting as he is busy with the other project.
2. You ______________________ (**respect**) your parents as they sacrificed a lot for you.
3. When Cheryl was in high school, she ______________________ (**do**) homework every day.
4. You ______________________ (**not / litter**). Otherwise, you will have to pay a fine.
5. In order to pass his probation, Jack ______________________ (**impress**) his supervisor.
6. Paul and Jill ______________________ (**buy**) a new car because their old car was stolen.
7. You ______________________ (**not / sit**) on this bench. The workers just painted it.
8. I ______________________ (**not / do**) the laundry this week as my sister will help me with it.
9. To avoid having diabetes, you ______________________ (**watch**) your sugar intake.
10. The birds ______________________ (**migrate**) for winter so that they do not freeze to death.

F Need & Needn't

1 'Need to' yapısı aslında bir 'modal' değil, 'ihtiyaç duymak' anlamına gelen bir fiildir. Fakat 'modal'lar gibi kendisinden sonra fiilin yalın hali (bare infinitive) gelir. Bir fiil olmasından dolayı her zamana göre çekimlenir. Örneğin; 'Simple Present Tense'te 'he, she, it' ile 'needs to' olarak kullanılır. 'Non-progressive' bir fiil olduğundan 'continuous' (progressive) zamanlarla kullanılmaz. 'Modal' olarak ele alındığında Türkçeye 'gerekmek' olarak çevrilir.

- You **need to have** a license to fly a plane or helicopter.
  *(Helikopter ya da uçak uçurmak için ehliyetin **olması gerek**.)*
- Do we **need to obtain** a visa to enter the Schengen Area?
  *(Schengen Bölgesi'ne girmek için vize **almamıza gerek var mı**?)*
- The government **needs to spend** more money on helping the homeless.
- I **need to add** a little more salt to the stew for more taste.
- My parents **needed to work** hard for my siblings and me to get us to university.

2 'Needn't' yapısı ise bir 'modal'dır ve 'gerek yok' anlamına gelmektedir. Her 'modal'da olduğu gibi kendisinden sonra fiilin yalın hali gelir. 'Needn't' yapısından sonra 'to' kullanılmaz.

- The neighbour **needn't mow** the lawn for us.
  *(Komşunun bizim için çimleri **biçmesine gerek yok**.)*
- You **needn't dress** formally for the event tonight; smart casual will do.
  *(Bu geceki etkinlik için resmi **giyinmene gerek yok**; şık gündelik bir kıyafet iş görür.)*
- Peter **needn't replace** the lamp since he did not break it.
- You **needn't confirm** with the secretary about your appointment because it is cancelled.

3 'Don't / doesn't have to'nun 'gerek yok' anlamına geldiğini belirtmiştik, bu anlama gelen diğer bir yapı da 'don't / doesn't need to'dur.

- We **don't need to go** out tonight for dinner. We can cook at home. (= We don't have to go…)
  *(Bu akşam yemek için dışarı **çıkmamıza gerek yok**. Evde yemek yapabiliriz.)*
- You **don't have to be** smart to be a doctor. You just have to be willing to work hard.
  (= You don't need to be…) *(Doktor olmak için zeki **olmana gerek yok**. Sadece çok çalışmaya istekli olmalısın.)*
- Mary is not feeling well and **does not have to go** to work today.

4 'Needn't' ve 'don't / doesn't need to' yapılarının anlamca farkı vardır. 'Needn't' daha çok konuşma anında ortaya çıkan durumlardan bahsederken, 'don't / doesn't need to' ise hem genel anlamda gerek olmama durumundan hem de konuşma anında ortaya çıkan durumlardan bahsederken kullanılır.

- It's OK. You **needn't pay / don't have to pay** for this service.
  *(Önemli değil. Bu hizmet için para **ödemenize gerek yok**.)*
  - Bu cümledeki durum her zaman geçerli olan bir durum değildir; sadece bahsedilen hizmete has bir durumdur. O yüzden hem 'needn't' hem de 'don't need / have to' yapısı kullanılabilir.

- You **don't need to pay** for our after-sales service.
  *(Bizim satış sonrası servisimiz için para **ödemenize gerek yok**.)*
  - Bu cümledeki durum her zaman geçerli olan bir durum ve şirketin genel politikası olan bir uygulamadır. O yüzden 'needn't' yapısı kullanılamaz. Sadece 'don't need / have to' kullanılabilir.

5

mustn't → eylemin yapılmaması gerektiğini,

don't / doesn't need to
don't / doesn't have to
needn't
} eylemin yapılmasına ihtiyaç olmadığını belirtmek için kullanılır.

- We **mustn't have** our meals before washing our hands as we might get stomach flu.
  *(Ellerimizi yıkamadan önce **yemek yememeliyiz** çünkü mide gribi olabiliriz.)*
- Jill's parents are supporting her financially, so she **needn't worry** about money.
  *(Jill'in annesi ve babası onu parasal olarak destekliyorlar, bu yüzden para konusunda **endişe etmesine gerek yok**.)*
- The students **don't have to come** / **don't need to come** to school tomorrow because it is a public holiday. *(Öğrencilerin yarın okula **gelmesine gerek yok** çünkü resmi tatil.)*
- You **mustn't speak** to your teachers like that as it is very rude.
- Gary and George **don't need to take** the Math class as they both took it last year.
- I **don't need to take** antibiotics any more because I recovered from my cold.

6

Geçmişte bir eylemin yapılmasının gerekli olmadığını ve bu yüzden söz konusu eylemin yapılmadığını anlatırken, 'didn't need to' ya da 'didn't have to' yapıları kullanılır. Türkçeye 'gerek kalmadı' ya da 'gerek yoktu (bu yüzden yapmadım)' şeklinde çevrilebilir.

- Jack **didn't need to get** a haircut as his hair wasn't that long. *(Jack'in saçını **kestirmesine gerek yoktu** (o da kestirmedi) çünkü saçı o kadar da uzun değildi.)*
- He **didn't have to drive** me home as the train arrived on time.
  *(Beni eve **bırakmasına gerek kalmadı** çünkü tren tam zamanında geldi.)*
- Harry **didn't need to waste** money buying a new TV because his was already in a good condition.
- The teacher **didn't have to continue** the lesson since the bell rang.

7

Geçmişte yapılması gerekli olmayan ve bu durum bilinmeden yapılmış olan eylemlerden bahsederken 'needn't have V_3' yapısı kullanılır. 'Yapmama gerek yoktu (ama yaptım).' şeklinde Türkçeye çevrilebilir.

- You **needn't have lied** to me about the situation. I would have understood if you had been honest.
  *(Bana durumla alakalı yalan **söylemene gerek yoktu** (ama söyledin). Eğer dürüst olsaydın seni anlardım.)*
- Rose **needn't have made** coffee as I had prepared some for her.
  *(Rose'un kahve **yapmasına gerek yoktu** (ama yaptı) çünkü ben onun için hazırlamıştım.)*

- Owen **needn't have gone** to the university today. His professors were not there.
- Felicia would have driven you home and you **needn't have taken** a taxi.
- You **needn't have brought** water for the hike as you could have filled up your bottle at the glacier.
- I **needn't have spoken** to him when he had been so rude to me.
- My sister **needn't have asked** for the dress. She could have just taken it from my closet.

⚠ **Not**

'Need' fiilinden sonra 'gerund' getirirsek cümlenin anlamı 'passive' olur.

- *The street in the town is very dirty after the parade.* ***It needs washing.*** *(It needs to be washed.)*
- *Your hair is too long.* ***It needs trimming.*** *(It needs to be trimmed.)*

6

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with 'mustn't' and the correct forms of 'need' or 'have to'.

1. I ______________________ **(not / lose)** my temper while talking to my brother even though he can be very stubborn.
2. Liam ______________________ **(not / spend)** money on the movie tickets as we bought him one.
3. Michael ______________________ **(not / rush)** to the airport as his flight is in three hours.
4. We ______________________ **(not / book)** any tickets in advance as there are many spots available.
5. I ______________________ **(not / wake up)** early on Monday as it is a bank holiday.
6. Ivan ______________________ **(not / shovel)** the snow. I would have lent him my snowblower.
7. You don't look well. ______________________ **(you / go)** to the doctor's?
8. I ______________________ **(go)** to the grocery store before we run out of milk and eggs.
9. Molly ______________________ **(not / go)** for the doctor's appointment as she is not feeling ill.
10. Mary ______________________ **(not / apply)** for a visa to go to Australia as her passport allows her to freely enter and exit the country.
11. The dog ______________________ **(go)** out for a walk after spending all day at home.
12. It wasn't a big deal. You ______________________ **(not / overreact).**
13. The principal ______________________ **(not / give)** all of us detention since we didn't break any rules.
14. You ______________________ **(not / smoke)** inside the dormitory as it is forbidden.
15. We ______________________ **(graduate)** from university to understand basic human rights.

G May & Might & Could

1 ‘May’ birisinden izin isterken, birinin istediği şeye izin verirken ya da onu reddederken kullanılır. (-ebilmek)

- **Oliver** : **May I go** to the washroom please, teacher? *(Asking for permission)*
  Archie : **Yes, you may**. *(Giving permission)*
- **David** : **May I borrow** your notes for the weekend? *(Asking for permission)*
  Bella : **No, you may not**. *(Rejecting)*
- **Sarah** : **May I come** to your house tonight?
  Dave : Sure, we’re having a dinner party at my place.
- **Bob** : **May I have** the kettle for a minute?
  Marriot : I’m sorry but I’m using it at the moment.

2 ‘May’ devrik yapılı cümlelerde (soru cümlesi dizilimine sahip düz cümleler) dua (benediction) ve beddua (malediction) etmek için kullanılır.

- **May she rest** in peace! *(Huzur içinde yatsın!)*
- **May he burn** in hell! *(Cehennemde yansın!)*
- **May you live** a long life! *(Var ol. / Çok yaşayasın.)*
- **May the odds be** ever in your favour! *(Şans sizinle olsun.)*

3 ‘Could’ ricada bulunurken ya da izin isterken kullanılır. (-ebilmek)

- **Could you pass** me the salt, please? I can’t reach it.
  (Tuzu uzatır mısın lütfen? Ulaşamıyorum.)
- **Could I get** a ride home with you today? I missed the last bus.
- **Could he help** me move my furniture? They are too heavy for me.

4 ‘Might’ da tıpkı ‘could’ ve ‘may’ gibi izin isterken kullanılır.

- **Might I donate** your old clothes? You no longer wear them.
  (Eski kıyafetlerini bağışlayabilir miyim? Onları artık giymiyorsun.)
- **Might I use** your phone to make an emergency phone call? My phone battery has gone dead.
- **Might I borrow** your pen for a moment? I forgot to bring mine.

5 ‘May’in dolaylı anlatımı ‘might’, ‘can’in dolaylı anlatımı ‘could’dur.

- **Direct speech** : ‘You may use my car’, said my brother. *(Doğrudan anlatım)*
  Indirect speech : My brother said I **might use** his car. *(Dolaylı anlatım)*
- **Direct speech** : ‘I may go to school’, Jack said. *(Doğrudan anlatım)*
  Indirect speech : Jack said he **might go** to school. *(Dolaylı anlatım)*

- **Direct speech** : 'You can share my food', said Heather. *(Doğrudan anlatım)*
  Indirect speech : Heather said I **could share** her food. *(Dolaylı anlatım)*

6

Şimdiki zamanla ilgili gerçek olmayan hayali durumlardan bahsederken (If Clause Type 2 - unreal present) 'could' kullanılır.

- If I had more money, I **could travel** round the world. (If Clause Type 2; If + simple past, could) *(Daha fazla param olsa, dünyayı **gezebilirdim**.)*
  - Şimdiki zamanla ilgili hayali bir durum anlatılmaktadır. Hayali durumlarda 'tense' bir zaman geriye gider; 'present → past' olur.
- If Rachel owned a car, she **could drive** to work instead of taking a bus every day.
- If Bobby had a job, he **could afford** to buy a new television.

7

Geçmiş zamanla ilgili gerçek olmayan hayali durumlardan bahsederken (If Clause Type 3 - unreal past) 'could have V_3' kullanılır.

- If Joseph had listened to his mum, he **could have been** a doctor. (If Clause Type 3; If + past perfect, could have V_3) *(Eğer Joseph annesini dinleseydi, doktor **olabilirdi**.)*
  - Geçmişle ilgili hayali bir durumdan bahsedilmektedir. 'Tense' bir zaman geriye atılmış ve 'past → past perfect' olmuştur.
- If you had studied harder, you **could have got** full marks for your test.
- If Nancy had practised more, she **could have been** fluent in Spanish by now.

8

'May', 'might' ve 'could' bir eylemin olma ihtimalinden (possibility) ya da imkansızlığından (impossibility) bahsederken de kullanılır. Bu kullanımdaki zamanda, şimdiki zaman ve gelecek zamana atıfta bulunulmaktadır.

- The car **may break** down. It is at least ten years old.
- My book **may be** stolen. I have left it on a bench.
- Do not leave the windows open. It **might rain** tonight and the couch **might get** wet.
- You have to brush your teeth before you sleep or you **might get** toothaches.
- Please leave the house earlier. You **could miss** the bus.
- Drive slowly. You **could run into** an accident.

9

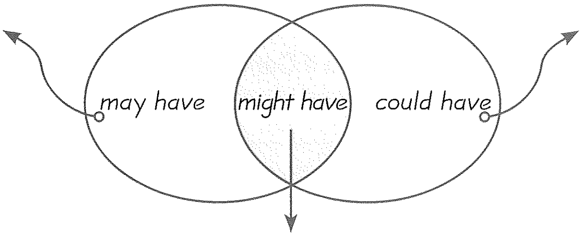
'May be V_{ing}', 'might be V_{ing}', 'could be V_{ing}' yapıları konuşma anında gerçekleşen eylemleri ve 'continuous' olan eylemleri anlatmak için kullanılır. ('-yor olabilir' şeklinde çevrilirler.)

- **Mick** : What is Jason doing in the park?
  Barrack: I think he **might be walking** his dog.
  *(Sanırım köpeğini **gezdiriyor olabilir**.) (Konuşma anı)*
- **Alfie** : Where are you going this summer?
  Jessica : I'm not sure but I **may be going** to France.

- **Mark** : Do we have a Math lesson this week?
  Jean : I don't think so. The teacher **could be going** to a conference.
- **John** : Have you seen Jack lately?
  Laila : No. I heard that he **might be writing** a new book.
- **Abba** : Where is the puppy?
  Bailey : It **could be chasing** the cat around the house.
- **Sandra** : What are you doing this weekend?
  Scarlett : I **might be attending** my cousin's wedding.

10 'May have V_3' / 'might have V_3' / 'could have V_3': Geçmişle ilgili bir olasılıktan bahsederken bu üç yapıyı da kullanabiliriz. ('-mış olabilir(di)' şeklinde çevrilirler.)

Eylemin olup olmadığıyla ilgili belirsizlik devam ediyorsa (-mış olabilir)



Eylemin olmadığı netleştiyse ve herhangi bir belirsizlik kalmadıysa (-mış olabilirdi (ama olmadı.))

Her iki durumda da kullanılabilir.

- I can't find my phone. I think I **might** / **may have dropped** it in the cinema.
  *(Telefonumu bulamıyorum. Sanırım onu sinemada **düşürmüş olabilirim**.)*
  - Telefonu sinemada da düşürmüş olabilirim, başka bir yerde de düşürmüş olabilirim. Net bir bilgi yok. Belirsizlik devam ettiği için bu durumda hem 'may' hem de 'might' kullanılabilir.
- Wendy **could** / **might have taken** her sister to the playground this evening; she stayed in and watched her favourite TV show. *(Wendy kızkardeşini bu akşam parka **götürebilirdi** (ama götürmedi); evde kalıp en sevdiği televizyon programını izledi.)*
- David hasn't arrived home yet but he **may** / **might have left** the office.
  *(David eve henüz gelmedi ama ofisten **çıkmış olabilir**.)*
- You should ask Amelia about the book you lost. I think she **may have seen** it.
- John **could have finished** his homework or he **could have played** soccer with his friends.
- Kelly **might have been** interested in buying the painting but it was too expensive.
- Isaac is nowhere to be seen. We think he **may have gone** to the mall.
- He came home alone. I wish I hadn't let him do that. He ---- lost.
  ~~may have got~~ (X) B) might have got (✓)

- Cümlede, 'Eve tek başına geldi. Keşke bunu yapmasına izin vermeseydim.' denilmektedir. Burada bahsi geçen kişinin eve yalnız geldiğini, cümleyi kuran kişinin bundan pişmanlık duyduğunu görmekteyiz. Kişi eve varmış ve başına bir şey gelmemiş, dolayısıyla kaybolmamış. Bu yüzden 'He ---- lost.' cümlesini 'may have got' ile tamamlayamayız; yani 'kaybolmuş olabilir' diyemeyiz. Çünkü kişinin eve geldiğini ve kaybolmadığını biliyoruz. Böyle net bir durumda 'might have got' dememiz gerekir. Bunun yerine 'could have got' denilseydi de doğru olurdu. (He might have got lost. Kaybolabilirdi (ama kaybolmadı).)

11 Bahsi geçen 'could have V_3' ve 'might have V_3' yapılarının olumlu ve olumsuz halleri arasında anlam farkı vardır:

could have V_3 might have V_3	'Birisi geçmişte bir eylemi yapabilirdi ama yapmadı' anlamı taşırken kullanılır.
couldn't have V_3 might not have V_3	'Kişi eylemi istese de yapamazdı' anlamı taşır.

- I **could have taken** the bus this morning but my colleague gave me a lift.
  *(Bu sabah otobüse **binebilirdim** ama iş arkadaşım beni götürdü.)*
- I **couldn't have taken** the bus this morning as I woke up late.
  *(Geç uyandığım için bu sabah (istesem de) otobüse **binemezdim**.)*
- Leon **couldn't have bought** his new suit without the discount.
- Elsa **might not have gone** with Fiona to the party if she had known Fiona was such an unfriendly person.
- The toy **might not have been** broken if Carlos had taken better care of it.

12 'Could' şimdiki zamanda, 'could have V_3' yapısı da geçmiş zamanda öneri belirtebilir.

- If you want to be financially independent, you **could consider** getting a full-time job. *(Eğer parasal olarak bağımsız olmak istiyorsan, tam zamanlı bir işe girmeyi **düşünebilirsin**.)*
- You **could have helped** your mother instead of complaining that the food wasn't ready. *(Yemek hazır değil diye şikayet etmek yerine annene **yardım edebilirdin** (ama etmedin).)*
- You **could try** to save up if you want to buy the book by the end of this month.
- Andrew **could finish** his assignments by tonight if he doesn't waste time watching the television.
- Aaron **could have used** whole wheat flour to replace white flour when he ran out.
- The lawyer **could have given** Mandy some advice instead of asking her to pay the debt.

7

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of 'may', 'might' or 'could'.

1. My mother told me that I ____________________(**go**) to the theme park with my friends if I cleaned my room.
2. We ____________________ (**not / find**) a free room at the hotel as they are very busy during this season.
3. Jack and Jill ____________________ (**have**) dinner at the new restaurant downtown right now.
4. Have you seen Peter? I think he ____________________ (**go**) home early today.
5. ____________________ (**I / use**) the swimming pool in your apartment building?
6. If I had spent more time in university, I ____________________ (**get**) a better job.
7. My family and I ____________________ (**go**) on a cruise for the coming summer vacation.
8. ____________________ (**I / borrow**) your colour pencils, please?
9. Police officers____________________ (**arrest**) Nancy for imitating her supervisor's signature.
10. Jack told his friends that he ____________________ (**join**) them for the barbecue this evening.

8 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of 'may', 'might' or 'could'.

1. I can't find my pet hamster. The cat ____________________ (**catch**) it when I wasn't looking.
2. Hannah ____________________ (**bring**) us some cookies if she had been free yesterday.
3. Colin ____________________ (**be**) involved in the bank robbery as he has a long criminal record for theft and burglary.
4. ____________________ (**you / be**) blessed with lots of happiness in your life!
5. Have you seen my phone? It ____________________ (**be**) in the glove compartment of your car.
6. My father said I ____________________ (**drive**) his car this weekend.
7. Elisa has really bad direction sense, so ____________________ (**not / find**) her way to the restaurant on her own.
8. I'm not sure what my plans are for this Saturday. I ____________________ (**go**) fishing in the lake.
9. Owen ____________________ (**be**) a famous football player if he hadn't broken his ankle.
10. ____________________ (**you / help**) me carry my bag, please?

H Would rather & Would sooner & Would prefer

1 Bu üç yapı da 'tercih etmek' anlamında kullanılır fakat aralarında yapısal farklar vardır:

would rather + V_1
would sooner + V_1
would prefer + to + V_1

- I **would rather stay** in to watch a movie this weekend.
- Andy **would rather go** skating with his friends during the holidays.
- Bethany **would sooner read** a book now.
- My brother **would sooner play** the piano.
- David **would prefer to go** to the gym to get fit.
- Lance **would prefer to have** steak for dinner.

2 Birisinden bir şey yapmasını istemek için aşağıdaki yapılar kullanılır.

would rather } + somebody + simple past **(now, future)**
would sooner } + somebody + past perfect tense **(past)**

- I **would rather** my best friend Megan **listened** more and **talked** less.
(En iyi arkadaşım Megan'ın daha çok dinleyip daha az konuşmasını tercih ederdim.)

- Robert **would rather** his father **had worked** less when he was a child. (but he worked hard)
  (Robert çocukken babasının daha az çalışmasını tercih ederdi (ama babası çok çalışıyordu).)
  - Geçmişe gönderme yaptığından bir zaman geriye gittiği için 'Past Perfect Tense' kullanılmıştır.
- Billy **would rather** his wife **spent** less on buying clothes and make-up.
- The principal **would rather** her teachers **had been** more responsible.
- Max **would sooner** his brother **not bothered** him while doing his project.
- I **would sooner** you **had offered** to give me a ride home the other day.

3

would rather **do something** than **do something else**
would prefer **to do something** rather than **do something else**

Her iki cümle yapısının da anlamı da aynıdır; sadece yapı olarak birbirlerinden farklıdır.

- I **would rather** go to bed **than** go out with my friends on a Friday night.
  (Bir Cuma gecesi arkadaşlarımla dışarı çıkmaktaktansa uyumayı tercih ederim.)
- Ken **would prefer** to work overtime **rather than** work on a public holiday.
  (Ken resmi tatilde çalışmaktansa fazla mesai yapmayı tercih eder.)
- I **would rather** sit in the garden **than** watch TV.
- Georgina **would rather** drink hot chocolate **than** have lemonade during winter.
- Ben **would rather** lie to his mother about him skipping school **than** get punished.
- My sister **would prefer** to hang out with the dog **rather than** listen to me talk about my day.
- Francis **would prefer** to go hiking in the mountains **rather than** play video games.

4

'Would rather be V_{ing}' yapısı şimdiki zamanda yapılıyor olması tercih edilen eylemleri anlatmak için kullanılır. (-yor olmayı tercih ederim)

- I **would rather be lying** on the couch now instead of being stuck on a train full of people.
  *(Bir tren dolusu insanla sıkışıp kalmak yerine kanepede **uzanıyor olmayı tercih ederdim**.)*
- The neighbour's dog **would rather be running** free in the fields instead of being locked up in a cage.

5

'Would prefer' yapısından sonra isim gelebilir ama 'would rather'dan sonra sadece fiilin yalın hali (bare infinitive) kullanılır.

- Mike **would prefer to have** / **would rather have** a house near the lake.
- I **would prefer** a car to drive in the city. ('~~would rather a car~~' olmaz.)
- They **would prefer** tea to coffee. ('~~would rather tea~~' olmaz.)
- My sister **would prefer** watermelons to apples.
- Jackie **would rather own** a dog than a cat.
- I **would rather go** to school **than be** at home.

6 Geçmişe yönelik tercihlerimizden bahsederken aşağıdaki yapılar kullanılır. (-mış olmayı tercih ederdim)

would rather have V$_3$
would sooner have V$_3$
would prefer to have V$_3$

Uyarı *'Would prefer' den sonra gelen 'to' yapısına dikkat edilmelidir.*

- Katie **would rather have spent** the evening fishing by the lake but she got called into work. *(Katie akşamı göl kenarında balık tutarak **geçirmiş olmayı tercih ederdi** ama işe çağrıldı.)*
- I **would sooner have cooked** salmon for dinner yesterday evening. *(Dün akşam yemek için somon **pişirmiş olmayı tercih ederdim**.)*
- Jenny **would prefer to have finished** painting the fence last week but she couldn't because of the rain. *(Jenny geçen hafta çiti boyamayı **bitirmiş olmayı tercih ederdi** ama yağmur yüzünden yapamadı.)*
- Joey **would rather have gone** to Norway to see the Northern Lights than go to Italy to eat gelato.
- He **would sooner have bought** the green bag than the blue one.
- William **would prefer to have travelled** by train since it would have been cheaper.

9 **EXERCISE:**
Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. Mark would prefer ____________________ (**marry**) his childhood sweetheart but she passed away in a car accident.
2. Jennifer would prefer ____________________ (**listen**) to jazz music.
3. The manager would rather ____________________ (**go**) on holiday than ____________________ (**attend**) the meeting.
4. Kevin would sooner his father ____________________ (**cook**) him dinner when he got home.
5. My brothers would prefer ____________________ (**go**) for a bike ride.
6. Susan would rather ____________________ (**have**) dinner instead of being stuck in traffic.
7. The kids would prefer ____________________ (**play**) in the playground rather than ____________________ (**watch**) cartoons.
8. I would rather ____________________ (**sunbathe**) on the beach instead of working on my master's thesis.
9. I would rather ____________________ (**have**) some ice cream instead of some cake.
10. I would rather ____________________ (**spend**) my money on a flight ticket than wasted it on new clothes.
11. James would rather his girlfriend ____________________ (**stop**) forcing him to watch romantic dramas.
12. Jessica would sooner ____________________ (**dye**) her hair brown, she doesn't like it now.
13. Dylan would prefer ____________________ (**get**) a managerial job but he was not qualified.

I Should & Ought to & Had better

1 Bu üç yapı da tavsiye vermek için kullanılır. 'Should' ve 'ought to' yapıları birbirlerinin yerine kullanılabilirler ve '-meli, -malı' şeklinde Türkçeye çevrilirler. 'Had better' ise diğer ikisinden biraz farklıdır; içinde biraz zorunluluk da barındırır. Daha çok 'yapsa(n) iyi olur' anlamında kullanılır.

- You **should not eat** fatty food if you have high cholesterol.
  *(Eğer kolesterolünüz yüksekse yağlı yiyecek **yememelisiniz**.) (genel)*
- Jason **ought to go** to the gym often if he wants to stay in shape.
  *(Eğer Jason formda kalmak istiyorsa sık sık spor salonuna **gitmeli**.) (özel)*
- Rosie **had better start** saving because she wants to buy a house.
  *(Rosie para biriktirmeye **başlasa iyi olur**, çünkü ev almak istiyor.) (özel)*
- We **should book** the bus tickets before it is too late.
- Teenagers **ought to listen** to their parents' advice as they often know best.
- Ethan **had better quit** bullying his classmates, or else he might get into trouble.

Yukarıdaki örnekler dikkatle incelendiğinde 'had better' yapısı daha çok özel durumlar için verilen tavsiyelerde; 'should' ve 'ought to' yapıları hem genel hem özel durumlara has tavsiyelerde kullanılır.

2 Bu yapıların yanı sıra 'must'ın da tavsiye vermek için kullanıldığı unutulmamalıdır. Fakat 'must / mustn't' şiddetli tavsiyelerde de kullanılır.

- If you visit a mosque during prayer times, you **must keep** quiet. *(Eğer namaz saatleri sırasında bir camiyi ziyaret ederseniz, sessiz **olmalısınız**.) (strong advice)*
- If we go to Egypt, we **mustn't miss out** on visiting the Pyramids of Giza.

3 'Ought to' ve 'should' yapıları tıpkı 'can', 'may', 'could' ve 'might' gibi bir olasılıktan bahsederken ya da bir tahminde bulunurken (-ebilir, -abilir) kullanılabilir.

- Steven started renovating his office last month and **should finish** the renovation by the end of this week. *(Steven ofisini yenilemeye geçen ay başladı ve bu haftanın sonuna kadar yenilemeyi **bitirebilir**.)*
- Emma ordered her prom dress online last week and they **ought to deliver** it today.
- My parents finish work at five in the afternoon. They **ought to be** home by now.
- We worked on the group assignment for about a week now and **should submit** it by today.
- I **should have** enough data for the research project since I started working on it last year.

4 'Should be V_{ing}', 'ought to be V_{ing}' ve 'had better be V_{ing}' yapıları konuşma anında yapılıyor olması gereken ama yapılmayan olaylardan bahsederken kullanılır; şikayet belirtir. (-yor olmalı, -yor olsa iyi olur.)

- I **should be walking** to work now; I am still lying in bed, instead.
  (Şu an yatakta yatmak yerine işe yürüyor olmam gerekiyor. (ama bunu yapmıyorum, bunun yerine hala yatakta uzanıyorum.))

- Why is it so cold when it **oughtn't to be snowing** this time of the year?
- You **shouldn't be eating** cheese if you have lactose intolerance.
- Elizabeth **ought to be paying** the rent even though she is unemployed.
- The driver in the car behind us **ought to be driving** slower as he has exceeded the speed limit.
- You **had better be sleeping** by midnight or else you won't be able to wake up for school tomorrow.

Not *'Had better' yapısının olumsuz kullanımına dikkat edilmesi gerekir.*

- *You **had better not say** anything to Maria about her plastic surgery. She might get angry with you.*
- *You **had better not touch** the light switch when your hands are wet. You might get electrocuted.*
- *Linda **had better not be reading** a book without the lights on. It is harmful to her eyes.*

5 'Should'un, 'ought to' ve 'had better'dan farklı olarak kendine has kullanım yerleri vardır. Bu kullanım yerleri aşağıdaki gibidir:

a Dolaylı anlatımlarda 'shall'in 'past' hali olarak kullanılır.

- **Direct speech** : 'We shall go to the beach.' said Emily. *(Doğrudan Anlatım)*
  Indirect speech : Emily said that we **should go** to the beach. *(Dolaylı Anlatım)*
- **Direct speech** : 'We shall not waste our money on unnecessary materials.' said my mother. *(Doğrudan Anlatım)*
  Indirect speech : My mother said that we **should not waste** our money on unnecessary materials. *(Dolaylı Anlatım)*

b 'If clause type 1' cümlelerinde, 'if'li yapının içinde 'Simple Present Tense' yerine kullanılır.

- If you **should find** my phone, please contact my friend at 123-4567.
  (Telefonumu bulacak olursan 123-4567 numaralı telefondan arkadaşıma ulaş lütfen.)
- If you **should go** out tonight, you must let your parents know beforehand.

c 'If clause type 1' cümlelerinde devrik cümle kurarken kullanılır.

- If you have the chance to go the university, do not hesitate.
  Should you have the chance to go the university, do not hesitate.
  (Devrik cümlelerde 'if' kullanılmaz.)
- If you decide to attend the event, please respond by replying to this email.
  Should you decide to attend the event, please respond by replying to this email.

d **'Subjunctive' yapılarda kullanılır. (Bu kullanım, 'Noun Clauses' konusunda ayrıntılı olarak incelenecektir.)**

- Is it necessary that your dog **should come** with us?
- Is it mandatory that we **should wear** our uniforms to the meeting?
- My aunt suggested that we **should go** to her place for brunch this Sunday.
- The boss demanded that we **should call** each customer to inform them about our new company policy.

6

should have V_3
ought to have V_3
had better have V_3
} **-mış olmalıydı (ama olmadı)**

shouldn't have V_3
ought not to have V_3
had better not have V_3
} **-mamış olmalıydı (ama oldu)**

Yukarıdaki yapılar geçmişe dönük bir serzeniş ve eleştiride bulunurken kullanılır. Eğer bu yapılar olumlu haldeyseler bir şeyin yapılmış olması gerektiği halde yapılmadığı; olumsuz haldeyseler bir şeyin yapılmamış olması gerektiği halde yapılmış olduğunu ifade ederler. Bu yapının tam çevirisini yapabilmek ve cümleleri tam olarak anlayabilmek için yukarıdaki tabloda parantez içinde verilen anlamlarını da göz önünde bulundurmak gerekir.

- They **should have selected** Lily as the class monitor since she is the most responsible among us. *(… seçmeliydiler (ama seçmediler).)*
- You **shouldn't have shouted** at your parents, so now you are grounded. *(… bağırmamalıydın (ama bağırdın).)*
- I **ought to have told** you about cancelling the dinner tonight in advance but I forgot. *(… söylemeliydim (ama söylemedim).)*
- Lucas **ought to not have driven** his motorcycle without a helmet. He could have been killed. *(… sürmemeliydi (ama sürdü).)*
- The city council **had better have warned** the residents about the snowstorm so they can be ready. *(… uyarmalıydı (ama uyarmadı).)*
- You **had better not have snuck out** last night. Your parents will not give you any allowance next month. *(… gizlice dışarıya çıkmamalıydın (ama çıktın).)*

7

'Should / ought to / had better have been doing' yapılarını 'perfect continuous tense' mantığıyla düşünebiliriz. Eylemin uzun sürmesi; sebep-sonuç ilişkisi ve eylemin devam ediyor olması gibi.

- Michael **had better have been doing** his homework instead of playing football. *(Michael futbol oynamak yerine ev ödevini **yapıyor olmalıydı (ama yapmıyordu)**.)*
- Jackson **should not have been playing** games on his phone while in class; that's why the teacher gave him extra assignments for the weekend.
- Why are you still feeling ill? You **ought to have been taking** your medicine.

10

EXERCISE:
Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of 'should', 'ought to' or 'had better'. (More than one answer may be correct.)

1. Michael said he ____________________ (**take care of**) his truck in the afternoon so he won't be able come swimming with us.
2. I am tired of Jasmine's laziness. She ____________________ (**write**) those reports or I will fire her at this very moment.
3. It is imperative that the soldiers ____________________ (**receive**) all the training they can at the boot camp or they will be defeated easily.
4. I ____________________ (**not / spend**) that much money when I was on holiday. Now I have fallen behind with the rent.
5. Luke ____________________ (**not / eat**) that much on every meal of the day as he has been getting bigger and bigger.
6. Mac ____________________ (**cook**) something now. I am going to kill him if he has invited us all and he comes up with an excuse for not having any food ready.
7. Zachary ____________________ (**get**) ready for school now as he normally leaves home in ten minutes from now.
8. You ____________________ (**consult**) your doctor if you are having sleeping problems. You may have something serious without knowing about it.
9. You ____________________ (**not / reflect**) your body image on your children if you want them to develop a healthy body image themselves.
10. April ____________________ (**know**) that she wasn't supposed to be in the building at night but she stayed one night and got fired as a result.
11. A teacher ____________________ (**not / yell**) at her students if she wants to be respected totally. She should use her affection as a tool to discipline them.
12. Lyn has suggested that we ____________________ (**go**) swimming in her parents' pool as they are on holiday.
13. The nurse ____________________ (**be**) in the hospital but she had gone out to smoke and was blamed for reckless behaviour at work and sent to jail.
14. The statement of the little child shocked her parents when she said they ____________________ (**serve**) her food for two as she was feeding two souls.

J Be to & Be supposed to

1 **'Be supposed to + V_1'**

Beklenti, gereklilik ya da bir program dahilinde yapılacak etkinliklerden bahsederken kullanılır. Anlamı 'should'a yakındır ve 'to be'nin kullanımı gereği 'am / is / are' şeklinde çekimlenebilir. (... bekleniyor, ... gerekiyor)

- The train **is supposed to arrive** soon if there are no delays.
  *(Eğer gecikme olmazsa, trenin yakında **gelmesi gerekiyor / bekleniyor.**)*
- My father **is supposed to come** home in five minutes. I had better stop watching TV.
- I **am supposed to go** and **do** groceries tonight because my fridge is empty.
- Adrian **is supposed to call** his girlfriend after work.
- Ruth **is supposed to make** sure that the doors and windows in the hotel are locked.

2 **'Be to + V_1'**

Beklenti, zorunluluk ya da bir program dahilinde yapılacak eylemlerden bahsederken kullanılır. Zorunluluk belirttiği için anlam 'must' ve 'have to'ya yakındır. 'To be'nin kullanımı gereği 'am / is / are' şeklinde çekimlenebilir.

- You **are to deliver** these documents to the office by noon today. (are to deliver = must deliver)
  *(Bugün öğlene kadar bu belgeleri ofise **ulaştırmalısın.**)*
- I **am to follow** all the school rules even though the principal is my father. (am to follow = have to follow) *(Okul müdürü babam olmasına rağmen okul kurallarının hepsine **uymalıyım.**)*
- Alice **is to make** one of the most important decisions of her life.
- Johnson **is to be** the captain of the school's football team.
- All the employees of this company **are to show up** at work at 8.30 a.m. every morning.

3 **'Was / were supposed to V_1' & 'Was / were to V_1'**

Bu yapılar geçmişte yapılması beklenen bir eylemden söz ederken kullanılır. Sadece beklentinin ne olduğunu belirtir, eylemin gerçekleşip gerçekleşmediği hakkında bilgi vermezler.

- Charles **was to grab** some pasta on the way home for his wife to make dinner.
  *(Charles'ın eşinin yemek yapması için eve giderken makarna **alması gerekiyordu.**)*
  (Makarnayı aldı mı almadı mı bilinmiyor; sonuç belli değil.)
- They **were supposed to come over** to my place to bake cookies for the charity fundraiser yesterday.
- We **were supposed to wake up** at 5 a.m. to see the sunrise.
- I **was to help** my cousin with her science project yesterday but I was occupied with my own homework.

4

'Was / were supposed to have V_3' & 'Was / were to have V_3'

Bu yapılar geçmişte yapılması gerektiği halde yapılmamış olan eylemleri anlatmak için kullanılır. Anlam bakımından 'should have V_3' ile yakındırlar. (... olması gerekiyordu (ama olmadı))

- The President **was to have attended** the ceremony yesterday but he fell ill. *(Başkanının dün törene **katılmış olması gerekiyordu** ama hastalandı.)*
- Oliver **was to have graduated** from university if it weren't for his lung infection. *(Eğer akciğer enfeksiyonu olmasa Oliver'ın üniversiteden **mezun olmuş olması gerekiyordu (ama olmadı)**.)*
- We **were to have gone** for holiday but the flights were cancelled due to adverse weather conditions.
- My phone **was supposed to have rung** at 7 a.m. this morning but the alarm did not work.
- Our teachers **were supposed to have finished** marking our papers but they got called into work this weekend.

K Dare to & Daren't

'Dare' kelimesi 'cüret etmek, cesaret etmek' anlamına gelir. Bir fiil olarak da kullanıldığı için zamanlara göre çekimlenebilir. 'Daren't' yapısından sonra 'to' kullanılmaz.

- Mark **dared to swear** at his elder brother. *(Mark abisine **küfür etmeye cesaret etti.**)*
- Patrick **daren't speak** when we confront him about his lies. *(Patrick yalanları hakkında kendisiyle yüzleştiğimizde **konuşmaya cesaret edemiyor**.)*
- How **dare** you **hit** your siblings? *(Ne cüretle kardeşlerine vurursun?)*
- We couldn't believe that Sandra **dared to run** away from the police.
- I am afraid of heights and wouldn't **dare to go** bungee jumping.
- Josephine **daren't move** when the burglar came into the house.
- How **dare** you **talk** to your father like that?

11 **EXERCISE:**
Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of 'be to', 'be supposed to', 'dare to' or 'daren't'.

1. The plastic bottles ______________________ (**recycle**) out of the city, but they weren't.
2. I ________________ (**go**) home before my curfew, which is at 8 p.m.
3. You ________________ (**wash**) your hands with soap before touching any food in the kitchen.
4. Martin ________________ (**not / go**) into the aquarium as he is hydrophobic.
5. Linda ________________ (**supervise**) five people in her new job.
6. They ________________ (**donate**) the books to the orphanage and not throw them away.
7. Why are you still cooking dinner when you ________________ (**finish**) an hour ago?
8. Jordan ___________________ (**pay**) off his mortgage by now but unfortunately, he has lost his job recently.
9. How ________________ (**you / forget**) such an important appointment?
10. They ________________ (**paint**) the bench in the park brown instead of black.

L 'Öneri' ve 'teklif'te bulunmak için kullanılan bazı yapılar aşağıdaki gibidir.

Shall we + V_1	**(...-lım mı / ...-lim mi?)**
Let's (not) + V_1	**(...-(maya)lım)**
How about + V_{ing}	**(...-maya / ...-meye ne dersin?)**
What about + V_{ing}	**(...-maya / ...-meye ne dersin?)**
Why don't you / we + V_1	**(Neden ...-mıyorsun / ...-mıyoruz?)**
Would you like + to + V_1	**(...-mak / ...-mek ister misin?)**

- **Shall we** go to the beach this afternoon?
- **Let's (not)** talk about the argument we had last night.
- **How about** watching a movie before bed tonight?
- **What about** walking to the mall instead of taking a taxi?
- **Why don't you** listen to your mother's advice?
- **Would you like** to go on an all-inclusive trip to Singapore?

1 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of 'might', 'can', 'must' and 'used to'.

1. Rick ____________________ (**go on**) adventures alone but now Melinda goes with him.
2. Depending on what movies are showing, I ____________________ (**go**) to the cinema tonight.
3. If you want this job, you ____________________ (**have**) adequate qualifications.
4. Anybody ____________________ (**be**) an expert in science with the right amount of intelligence, supposing that the education system gets better towards that direction.
5. When I was young, my mother ____________________ (**make**) me wear a sweater every time I went outside.
6. Angela and Ben ____________________ (**go**) to a dancing class every Thursday evening, but now they do.
7. If you hurry up, we ____________________ (**go**) to the beach with Susan and Helen.
8. My dog hasn't had anything to eat all day, it ____________________ (**starve**).
9. Audrey ____________________ (**attend**) my sister's wedding, depending on her availability.
10. You ____________________ (**have**) common sense if you want to survive in this world.

2 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms (continuous and perfect forms are also possible) of 'must' and 'can'.

1. Patrick ____________________ (**not /go**) to the party because his car broke down.
2. Harry ____________________ (**always / make**) me smile before our fight, now I just avoid him.
3. '____________________ (**you / pass**) me the salt, please?' asked Henry.
4. I ____________________ (**generally / do**) this kind of exercise without anyone's help. I will ask you if I need any, though.
5. Rick ____________________ (**never / understand**) why Beth married Jerry.
6. Although Archie lost his map, cell phone and keys, he ____________________ (**find**) his way in the forest and send a message to his mother.
7. ____________________ (**you / fit**) 100 straws in your mouth?
8. Do you think we ____________________ (**get**) to the train station on time in this traffic?
9. Mr Patterson ____________________ (**sell**) his house for more money because he fixed the leaking ceiling.
10. You ____________________ (**go**) to the clinic even though you haven't made an appointment. They accept patients without one.

3 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms (continuous and perfect forms are also possible) of 'must' and 'can'.

1. Surfing in Hawaii ____________________ (**be**) nice this time of the year. Everybody I know seems to be going there to do surfing.
2. Michael wasn't there, he ____________________ (**not / see**) what happened.
3. Sally caught the ball at the very last moment, he ____________________ (**have**) reflexes like a cat.
4. I just saw Deborah, she ____________________ (**rush**) somewhere because she didn't even say hello or even notice me.
5. I can't believe that Elijah finished the puzzle in record time. He ____________________ (**do**) exercises every day for a long time.
6. Charlene ____________________ (**go**) on vacation, because I have not seen her in a week.
7. That ____________________ (**be**) the most expensive car I have ever seen. I have never seen such an expensive looking design before.
8. Rick just got a new jet plane. He ____________________ (**not / buy**) another one again now.
9. This is the most accurate depiction of that era I have ever seen. They must ____________________ (**research**) for that topic for years.
10. Lucas ____________________ (**not / be**) at the market yesterday. He is travelling in Portugal.

4 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms (continuous and perfect forms are also possible) of 'may', 'might' and 'could'.

1. Don't drive that fast! There __________________ (**be**) children playing on the road.
2. Excuse me officer, __________________ (**I / park**) my car here? I am really sorry for the inconvenience. I will be back very soon.
3. __________________ (**you / help**) me lift this box, please? I can't do it alone.
4. We __________________ (**visit**) Anna's parents this weekend. I don't know if they really want me there, though.
5. If Theresa had had more money, she __________________ (**go**) to a better university thirty years ago. She has it now but she suspects that she __________________ (**like**) it even if she tried.
6. I think my cell phone __________________ (**be / steal**). I cannot find it anywhere.
7. Sam __________________ (**break**) his leg if he had landed awkwardly.
8. If I had paid more attention during history classes, I __________________ (**be**) an archaeologist.
9. It __________________ (**not / be**) Peter you saw yesterday, he moved to Canada two years ago.
10. Mummy said she __________________ (**go**) on an adventure with Rick next week.

5 REVISION:

Choose the correct option.

1. **I wonder why Jason ---- up to our meeting today. He ---- about it.**
   A) did not show / must have forgotten B) needn't show / must forget

2. **In order to make a perfect cheesecake, you ---- the best ingredients.**
   A) have to get B) have to be getting

3. **Do we ---- get some gas before we continue driving up the mountain?**
   A) have B) have to

4. **---- your marriage be filled with joy and happiness!**
   A) May B) Might

5. **Why are you wandering in the park? You ---- in school at this hour.**
   A) ought to be B) can't be

6. **Chris ---- run away from home again. His parents will be so disappointed.**
   A) should B) had better not

7. **The weather ---- warm up by June, but I doubt it will.**
   A) was to B) is supposed to

8. **I haven't seen Peter for a while. He ---- again.**
A) must be travelling
B) must travel

9. **---- I please be excused for a minute?**
A) Must
B) May

10. **Calvin's life ---- boring and meaningless without his wife and kids.**
A) would be
B) has to be

11. **I ---- you ---- me ---- gossip behind my back.**
A) would rather / asking / rather than
B) would rather / asked / than

12. **---- you drive a pick-up truck?**
A) May
B) Can

13. **You ---- to work as your office is within walking distance from your house.**
A) needn't drive
B) couldn't drive

14. **---- speak German when you were a kid?**
A) Can you
B) Were you able to

15. **Have you seen my cat? It ---- around the neighbourhood.**
A) might have been wandering
B) may not wander

16. **I ---- a nanny do everything for me, as I had one before.**
A) am accustomed to having
B) could have

17. **---- leaving my house right now before I call the police?**
A) Let's
B) How about

18. **Brad ---- the competition but he decided to let his opponent win.**
A) shouldn't have won
B) could have won

19. **---- you do my laundry for me?**
A) Would
B) Should

20. **Our flight to Detroit ---- by now but due to some technical difficulties, we are still on the ground.**
A) is supposed to take off
B) was supposed to have taken off

MODALS

TEST 1

1. **---- to the park for the barbecue? I think it can be the perfect place for it.**

A) What about going
B) Let's not go
C) How dare you go
D) Must you go
E) Do you need to go

2. **Harry ---- make dinner tonight but he watched football instead.**

A) used to
B) grew used to
C) was supposed to
D) would
E) is accustomed to

3. **You ---- your homework before as you don't have time now and there will be detention if you don't.**

A) used to have done
B) ought to be doing
C) are supposed to do
D) had better have done
E) could be doing

4. **I ---- motorcycles to cars for my commute to work because I don't like getting stuck in traffic.**

A) prefer
B) would rather
C) used to
D) had to
E) would sooner

5. **Suzette : Ben, what are you doing this weekend?**
Ben : I ---- a barbecue with my family in-law. It is not certain.

A) must be having
B) had better be having
C) was supposed to have
D) dare to have
E) might be having

6. **If I had entered the competition, I ---- the big prize, but I didn't.**

A) would win
B) might have won
C) used to win
D) couldn't have won
E) will have won

7. **You ---- dinner when you were so tired. We ---- from the restaurant.**

A) had to cook / need to order
B) shouldn't have cooked / need to order
C) needn't have cooked / could have ordered
D) might have cooked / can order
E) used to cook / should order

8. **When I was 7 years old, my older brother ---- much faster than me.**

A) could run
B) can run
C) must have run
D) ought to have run
E) can't run

9. **Do you think Helen ---- me finish my science project? She is an expert in chemistry.**

A) can't help
B) had to help
C) used to help
D) needn't help
E) would help

10. **I would prefer ---- on a hike every day of the week instead of ---- behind a desk all day.**

A) went / sat
B) to go / sitting
C) go / sitting
D) to go / to sit
E) have gone / sat

11. You ---- your project immediately; you have a week to finish it. Do it later if you wish.

A) used to do
B) have to do
C) got used to do
D) don't have to do
E) shouldn't do

12. I wish that Mary ---- talking in class, it is really hard to concentrate.

A) should stop
B) must stop
C) ought to stop
D) used to stop
E) would stop

13. Susan ---- difficult maths problems in her head; she is very smart.

A) is able to solve
B) should solve
C) must solve
D) needs to solve
E) mustn't solve

14. Caroline is accustomed to ---- in charge at the office, no one ---- her what to do.

A) being / could tell
B) be / needs to tell
C) be / has to tell
D) being / had better tell
E) is / is to tell

15. For me, skydiving is the best activity you can do; you ---- it sometime.

A) don't have to try
B) are to try
C) dare to try
D) ought to try
E) had to try

16. ---- to go to Paris this summer, you ---- some French phrases.

A) Must you decide / must learn
B) Dare you decide / ought to learn
C) Should you decide / ought to learn
D) Did you use to decide / can learn
E) Let's not decide / don't have to be learning

17. ---- we ---- to the cinema tonight to see that new action movie? I am bored.

A) Let's / go
B) Ought to / go
C) Daren't / go
D) Shall / go
E) Were / to go

18. Peter ---- for the football team since he is the best striker we have, but he wasn't.

A) must be chosen
B) ought to have chosen
C) should have been chosen
D) dare to be chosen
E) mustn't have been chosen

19. Christopher agreed with me, but he ---- say so for fear of being punished.

A) dare
B) daren't
C) must
D) ought to
E) was supposed to

20. The semi-final ---- lost if our team had played better.

A) might have been
B) should have been
C) ought to have been
D) would rather not be
E) might not have been

MODALS

TEST 2

1. **You ---- all those bags by yourself even if you wanted to, so I am glad you asked me and I got to help.**

A) can carry
B) mustn't carry
C) should carry
D) could not have carried
E) can't carry

2. **I don't know if Jenny is back in town. She ---- yesterday but I recommend you call her first to see if she has.**

A) might have come
B) needn't have come
C) can't have come
D) would like to come
E) must come

3. **Ludwig knows we are supposed to set off in half an hour, so he ---- here by now. If he doesn't show up in ten minutes, we will go without him.**

A) may be
B) can't be
C) would be
D) should have been
E) could have been

4. **My dream home is small but very efficient and I am planning to build it rather than buy a very expensive one. ---- you help me build it?**

A) Shall
B) Can
C) Should
D) Must
E) Might

5. **Sheila couldn't read or write when she was ten, and was far behind her peers, but with her ambition and hard work, by the time she was eleven, she ---- do both with ease.**

A) wouldn't
B) was able to
C) should
D) didn't need to
E) had to

6. **I have lost my phone. ---- you ---- your bag? You might have put it there by mistake.**

A) Should / check
B) Must / check
C) Would / mind checking
D) Do / have to check
E) Could / have checked

7. **Maria ---- marry that guy. I have heard him tell his friends that he is marrying her for her money and her social status. It would be a disaster for her.**

A) has to
B) should
C) had better not
D) ought to
E) couldn't

8. **Eric learnt he had an incurable disease the other day and it destroyed his family. It ---- more scary and depressing for Eric when the doctor told him about his illness.**

A) must have been
B) can't have been
C) shouldn't have been
D) ought to have been
E) needn't have been

9. **Alice never suspects her boyfriend but I have seen him take money out of her wallet. I think I ---- her as I believe she has the right to know.**

A) can't tell
B) could have told
C) should tell
D) must have told
E) don't need to tell

10. **The editor in the publishing company ---- that the assistant they hired for him was useless; otherwise, he would have never made the mistake of trusting her with his daily chores.**

A) can't have understood
B) must have understood
C) should understand
D) could understand
E) shouldn't have understood

11. ---- you ---- at your place tomorrow? Can you please ask your wife too and get back to me? I need a place for tomorrow.

A) Would / like staying
B) Would / mind if I stayed
C) Should / stay
D) Do / have to stay
E) Would / mind staying

12. All doctors ---- a uniform within the hospital if they are supposed to work, so tell Sally that she ---- her uniform at once if she wants to work here.

A) would wear / shouldn't put on
B) had better wear / doesn't need to put on
C) must wear / can put on
D) have to wear / needs to put on
E) can wear / has to put on

13. The union informed the workers that they ---- their jobs back in a few days. You ---- there to see their excitement. The expression on their face was an unforgettable memory for me.

A) should have got / would have been
B) had better get / can be
C) must get / need to be
D) should get / can't have been
E) would get / should have been

14. Mariam ---- in her annual plan this morning but she didn't and she hasn't answered any of my calls. I wonder what has happened to her.

A) is to hand
B) will hand
C) should hand
D) was supposed to hand
E) could have handed

15. Tatia ---- deported this afternoon because her visa expired and she didn't leave the country. She will be put on the next flight to Moscow by the police.

A) was supposed to be
B) is to be
C) had to be
D) can't be
E) has been able to be

16. ---- we go out and play snowball altogether? It's lovely, and I promise you, it will be fun.

A) Would
B) Must
C) Shall
D) Dare
E) May

17. How ---- you come into my room without knocking first? Get out and leave me alone!

A) dare
B) shall
C) should
D) must
E) had better

18. I ---- you ---- the ball for me as I am too lazy to get it myself. We can stop playing if you prefer.

A) would prefer / fetched
B) would rather / fetched
C) would mind / fetching
D) would like / fetch
E) wouldn't dare / fetching

19. After the terrorist attacks on London Bridge, passengers ---- on the bridge for a week due to security concerns. The police put barriers at the entrances on both sides.

A) are to walk
B) weren't allowed to walk
C) would mind walking
D) wouldn't mind walking
E) were supposed to walk

20. Lionel ---- at the crime scene, as I remember Luke telling me he was with him at the time. Also, I think I would have seen him if he had been anywhere around there.

A) shouldn't have been
B) should have been
C) must have been
D) could have been
E) can't have been

PASSIVE & CAUSATIVE

4 PASSIVE & CAUSATIVE

A PASSIVE

Edilgen yapı (Passive), 'to be' fiili ve 'V_3'nin birlikte kullanılmasıyla oluşturulur. 'To be' fiili, kullanılan zamanın ana fiiline göre çekimlenir.

Simple Tenses	present (am / is / are)	'be' fiilinin zamanlara göre çekimlenmesi
	past (was / were)	
Continuous Tenses	being	
Future Tenses / Simple Modals	be	
Perfect Tenses / Perfect Modals	been	

Forming Passive (Edilgen Yapıların Oluşturulması - Be + V_3)

	Active (Etken)	Passive (Edilgen)
The Simple Present Tense	play / plays	am / is / are played
The Present Continuous Tense	am / is / are playing	am / is / are being played
The Simple Past Tense	played	was / were played
The Past Continuous Tense	was / were playing	was / were being played
The Simple Future Tense (Be Going To)	am / is / are going to play	am / is / are going to be played
The Simple Future Tense (Will)	will play	will be played
Future in the Past	was / were going to play	was / were going to be played
The Future Continuous Tense	will be playing	will be being played
The Present Perfect Tense	have / has played	have / has been played
The Past Perfect Tense	had played	had been played
The Future Perfect Tense	will have played	will have been played
Simple Modals	must / should play	must / should be played
Perfect Modals	must / should have played	must / should have been played

⚠ *Not*

The Present Perfect Continuous Tense	*Bu üç zaman 'passive' (edilgen) yapılarla kullanılmaz.*
The Past Perfect Continuous Tense	
The Future Perfect Continuous Tense	

Hangi Durumlarda 'Passive' Yapı Kullanırız?

- Eylemi gerçekleştiren özne belli değilse,
- Eylemi yapan kişi biliniyorsa veya kolaylıkla anlaşılıyorsa,
- Eylemi kimin yaptığı değil de eylemin kendisi veya nesne önemli ise 'passive' yapı kullanılır.

Bir Cümle Nasıl 'Passive' Yapılır?

'Active' cümlenin nesnesi 'passive' cümlenin öznesi haline gelir. Diğer bir deyişle 'active' cümlenin nesnesi, 'passive' cümlenin en başına gelmelidir. 'Active' cümlede kullanılan zaman veya 'modal'ın zaman boyutu değiştirilmez; bunun yerine fiil, kullanıldığı 'tense'e göre '(yardımcı fiil) + be + V_3' şeklinde kullanılır. Eylemi yapan kişi (agent), cümlede belirtilmek isteniyorsa, 'passive' cümlenin sonuna 'by + agent' şeklinde yazılır.

Active : Ancient Romans built the Colosseum. *(inşa etti)*
özne **fiil** **nesne**

Passive : The Colosseum was built by Ancient Romans. *(inşa edildi)*
özne **fiil** **işi yapan kişi / şey**

Active : They grow tea in Rize. *(yetiştirirler)*
özne **fiil** **nesne**

Passive : Tea is grown (by them) in Rize. *(yetiştirilir)*
özne **fiil** **işi yapan kişi / şey**

(Bu cümlede 'by them' kullanılmak zorunda değildir; çünkü 'they' öznesi bir öneme sahip değildir. Ayrıca eylemin insanlar tarafından yapıldığı da bellidir.)

Edilgen cümlelerde kullanılabilen / kullanılamayan fiiller:

'Active' bir cümlenin 'passive' yapılabilmesi için cümlede nesne bulunmalıdır. Kendisinden sonra nesne alabilen fiillere 'transitive verbs' (geçişli fiiller) denir.

- The new politician in the cabinet said he admired **his people.**
  - *Örnekte görüldüğü gibi 'admire' fiili kendisinden sonra nesne alabilmektedir. Bu sayede 'passive' yapıda kullanılabilir.*
  - → *The Mona Lisa* by Leonardo Da Vinci has been admired by all art lovers throughout history.
- Our new teacher bought **six dozens of pencils** in case we forget ours at home.
  - → All these toys and books have been bought by a wealthy man.

Geçişli fiillerin iki özelliği vardır:

1. Bir eylem bildirirler.
   - I **picked up** all these flowers to make you happy.

2. Direk nesne ile birlikte kullanılırlar.
   - I picked up **all these flowers** to make you happy.

Bazı fiillerse 'passive' yapıda kullanılamazlar, bu fiillere 'intransitive verbs', (geçişsiz fiiller) denilir ve bu tür fiiller cümle içinde nesne almazlar. Cümlede sadece özne ve fiil vardır. Bu nedenle, cümle 'passive' yapılamaz.

- The baby **has just sneezed**. *(Bebek az önce hapşırdı.)*
  - *Bu cümlede sadece özne (the baby) ve fiil (has just sneezed) vardır ve cümlenin 'passive' yapılabilmesi mümkün değildir.*
- They **have gone** out to get some fresh air.

Kimi fiiller hem geçişli hem de geçişsiz olabilir. Fakat bu durumda genellikle anlamlarında değişiklik olur. Bu şekilde yaygın olarak kullanılan fiiller:

VERB	TRANSITIVE	INTRANSITIVE
change	Alicia went into the room and **changed** her clothes quickly. *(değiştirmek)*	The tulip **changed** in colour and became darker. *(değişmek)*
close	She never **closes** the door properly hence wastes a great amount of heat. *(kapatmak)*	Even the grocery shops **close** on Sundays in Germany. *(kapanmak)*
do	Meg hasn't **done** her duty well and put the lives of the patients at risk. *(yapmak)*	The patient has been **doing** well and he is no more attached to the machine. *(olmak)*
leave	She **left** Joe on Valentine's Day, which devastated him. *(bir yeri / kişiyi terk etmek)*	Most staff members **leave** early on Fridays. *(bir yerden ayrılmak)*
live	He has been **living** a life of luxury ever since he married the rich woman. *(yaşamak)*	Queen Victoria **lived** and reigned more than any other queen in the history of England. *(hayatını sürdürmek)*
move	Can you **move** your hand, please? I need to get my book. *(hareket ettirmek)*	The roses **moved** gently in the breeze but they had no scent. *(hareket etmek)*
open	**Open** the cupboard; the butter is there! *(açmak)*	The shops **will open** once the security guard comes and unlocks the main door. *(açılmak)*
run	Michael wants to **run** a restaurant in a coastal area. *(işletmek)*	The boy **ran** over to his mother with great excitement. *(koşmak)*

set	Kim **set** the table, lit some candles and started waiting for her husband. *(kurmak)*	The sun **set** with a breathtaking view. *(batmak)*
sing	Katy Perry **sang** her songs and entertained the crowd. *(şarkı söylemek)*	Peter **sings** but he can't play any instruments. *(şarkı söylemek)*
start	Teresa **started** the fire, took out the trash and went to the kitchen to cook dinner. *(başlatmak)*	The match will never be able to **start** if the crowd doesn't calm down. *(başlamak)*
stop	Greg **stopped** Melinda from jumping off the rock and saved her life. *(durdurmak)*	The journalist **stopped**, listened to the conversation for a while but didn't understand what it was about. *(durmak)*
wash	Have you **washed** the carpets? Please, don't. I will call a cleaner. *(yıkamak)*	Jack **washed**, got dressed but then changed his mind and stayed at home. *(yıkanmak)*
write	I will **write** your name here so that I can remember it later. *(yazmak)*	My mother can't read or **write**. *(yazabilmek)*

Bazı fiillerse nesne almalarına rağmen anlam bakımından asla 'passive' yapılamazlar. Bunlar genellikle 'stative verbs' (like, love, belong, involve, owe, etc.) ya da 'non-progressive verbs' (durum bildiren) fiillerdir. (Bu konuya Tenses bölümünde değinmiştik.)

- The baby **resembled** his father clearly from the day he was born.
  → ~~His father was resembled by the baby clearly from the day he was born~~. (✗)
- Her dress **fit** Jane unbelievably well.
  → ~~Jane was fit by her dress unbelievably well~~. (✗)
- The food **lacked** enough salt so it was less delicious than expected.
  → ~~Enough salt was lacked by the food so it was less delicious than expected~~. (✗)

⚠ **Not** *Durum bildiren bazı fiiller (measure, weigh, smell, etc.) '-ing' ile kullanıldıklarında anlamları değişmekte ve bu şekilde, 'passive' cümlelerde de kullanılabilmektedir.*

- *The sack **weighes** 50 kilos, don't move it. (Its weight is fifty kilos.) (Active sentence; cannot be made passive.)*
- *I **have weighed** the sack before and I know it is fifty kilos. (I have measured its weight.) (Active sentence; can be made passive.)*
- *The sack was **weighed** before, so they knew it was over the allowed limit. (Passive sentence)*

İngilizcede 'Tense'lerin 'Passive' Yapılışı

1 **The Simple Present Tense** (am, is, are + V_3) ($V_3 \rightarrow$ Past Participle)

- **Active** : Julia takes me to school on weekdays.
  Passive : I **am taken** to school by Julia on weekdays.
- **Active** : They open the supermarket at 10 every day.
  Passive : The supermarket **is opened** at 10 every day.
- **Active** : My mother waters the flowers twice a week.
  Passive : The flowers **are watered** by my mother twice a week.
- **Active** : The people in Peru and Bolivia speak Quechua.
  Passive : Quechua **is spoken** (by the people) in Peru and Bolivia.
- **Active** : He cleans his room every weekend.
  Passive : His room **is cleaned** (by him) every weekend.

2 **The Present Continuous Tense** (am, is, are + being + V_3) ($V_3 \rightarrow$ Past Participle)

- **Active** : The gardener is mowing the grass for the time being.
  Passive : The grass **is being mown** by the gardener for the time being.
- **Active** : The government is lowering tax-levels so that people can set up new factories.
  Passive : The tax-levels **are being lowered** so that people can set up new factories.
- **Active** : The famous writer is writing a new book now.
  Passive : A new book **is being written** by the famous writer now.
- **Active** : The whole country is celebrating the festival these days.
  Passive : The festival **is being celebrated** by the whole country these days.
- **Active** : My mother is making pies now.
  Passive : Pies **are being made** by my mother now.

⚠ **Not** *Çoktan seçmeli sorularda seçeneklerde bir fiil varsa, ilk yapılması gereken şey o fiilin etken (active) ya da edilgen (passive) olup olmadığını tespit etmektir. Örneğin;*

- ***The flowers --A--.***
  **A) blossom B) are blossomed*
- ***The flowers --P--.***
  *A) water *B) are watered*

Yukarıdaki cümlelerde özneler aynıdır fakat fiiller farklıdır. İlk cümlede yapmamız gereken şey "Çiçek kendi kendine açar mı?" sorusunu sormaktır. Çiçek bu eylemi gerçekleştirebildiği için cümlenin etken olması gerekir. Fiilin bu şekilde etken olduğunu anladıktan sonra seçeneklerdeki edilgen yapıları elememiz gerekir. İkinci cümlede ise, sorulması gereken soru "Çiçek kendini sulayabilir mi?" olmalıdır. Çiçek kendi kendini sulayamaz; bu durumda eylemin başkası tarafından yapıldığı bellidir. Çiçek, sulama eyleminden etkilenir. Bu durumda eylemin edilgen olması gerekir ve bu yüzden seçeneklerdeki etken cevaplar elenmelidir.

- ***Despite clear notices, litter ---- around the campsite.*** *(Açık uyarılara rağmen kamp alanına çöp ----.)*
  *A) is leaving (A) B) left (A) * C) is left (P) D) leaves (A)*

Anlam olarak bakıldığında çöp kendi kendini bırakamayacağından çöpün bırakılma eyleminin bir başkası tarafından yapıldığı anlaşılmaktadır. Dolayısıyla, eylemin edilgen olması gerekir.

3 The Simple Past Tense (was, were + V_3) ($V_3 \rightarrow$ Past Participle)

- **Active** : The judge sentenced the murderers to life imprisonment.
  Passive : The murderers **were sentenced** to life imprisonment.
- **Active** : The archaeologist found a new monument last year and he thinks the Chinese built it about 2,000 years ago.
  Passive : A new monument **was found** by the archaeologist last year and he thinks it **was built** by the Chinese about 2,000 years ago.
- **Active** : Vincent van Gogh painted *The Starry Night* in 1889.
  Passive : *The Starry Night* **was painted** by Vincent van Gogh in 1889.
- **Active** : The police surrounded the building because someone reported the suspect.
  Passive : The building **was surrounded** by the police because the suspect **was reported**.
- **Active** : The translator translated the speech of the President in the conference simultaneously.
  Passive : The speech of the President **was translated** by the translator in the conference simultaneously.

4 The Past Continuous Tense (was, were + being + V_3)

- **Active** : They were towing the damaged ship when the towline broke.
  Passive : The damaged ship **was being towed** when the towline broke.
- **Active** : They were recording the conversations between the suspects.
  Passive : The conversations between the suspects **were being recorded**.
- **Active** : The teacher was giving the lecture when I entered the classroom.
  Passive : The lecture **was being given** by the teacher when I entered the classroom.
- **Active** : His computer broke down while he was downloading a file.
  Passive : His computer broke down while a file **was being downloaded** by him.
- **Active** : She was preparing the meal and her husband was making the salad.
  Passive : The meal **was being prepared** by her and the salad **was being made** by her husband.

5 The Simple Future Tense (Be Going To) (am, is, are going to + be + V_3)

- **Active** : They are going to take her to the hospital in the afternoon.
  Passive : She **is going to be taken** to the hospital in the afternoon.
- **Active** : When we go on holiday, our neighbour is going to feed our dog.
  Passive : When we go on holiday, our dog **is going to be fed** by our neighbour.
- **Active** : The government is going to demolish all of the old buildings.
  Passive : All of the old buildings **are going to be demolished** by the government.
- **Active** : The teacher is going to announce the exam results on Wednesday.
  Passive : The exam results **are going to be announced** by the teacher on Wednesday.
- **Active** : According to the schedule, they are going to complete the new metro line in June.
  Passive : According to the schedule, the new metro line **is going to be completed** in June.

6 The Simple Future Tense (Will) (will + be + V_3)

- **Active** : When the boss has overcome the crisis, he will open a new factory.
  Passive : When the boss has overcome the crisis, a new factory **will be opened** by him.
- **Active** : The catering firm will prepare the food for the event.
  Passive : The food **will be prepared** by the catering firm for the event.
- **Active** : They will close the supermarket during the feast.
  Passive : The supermarket **will be closed** during the feast.
- **Active** : From now on, we will forbid the casual clothes and the employees will wear the work uniforms.
  Passive : From now on, the casual clothes **will be forbidden** and the work uniforms **will be worn**.
- **Active** : They will inform us when the bus is about to leave.
  Passive : We **will be informed** when the bus is about to leave.

7 Future in the Past (was, were going to + be + V_3)

- **Active** : Our teacher was going to give a video presentation but she didn't come to school.
  Passive : A video presentation **was going to be given** by our teacher but she didn't come to school.
- **Active** : I was going to do the laundry but I couldn't manage my time.
  Passive : The laundry **was going to be done** by me but I couldn't manage my time.
- **Active** : Sarah was going to pay for the drinks but she realized that she had spent all of her money.
  Passive : The drinks **were going to be paid** by Sarah but she realized that she had spent all of her money.
- **Active** : My pen friend was going to send me a postcard from Brazil but he misaddressed.
  Passive : A postcard **was going to be sent** to me from Brazil by my pen friend but he misaddressed.
- **Active** : We were going to finish the project by the deadline but we had a misfortune.
  Passive : The project **was going to be finished** by the deadline but we had a misfortune.

8 The Future Continuous Tense (will be + being + V_3)

- **Active** : This time next week, they will be holding an important meeting.
  Passive : This time next week, an important meeting **will be being held**.
- **Active** : Only after a couple of days, they will be broadcasting my favourite series.
  Passive : Only after a couple of days, my favourite series **will be being broadcasted**.
- **Active** : Tomorrow, I will be giving a speech in front of a crowded group and I am already stressed.
  Passive : Tomorrow, a speech **will be being given** by me in front of a crowded group and I am already stressed.
- **Active** : We will be recording all the changes to finish the work as soon as possible.
  Passive : All the changes **will be being recorded** to finish the work as soon as possible.
- **Active** : My father will be driving the car to Marmaris because he is the only one who knows how to drive in our family.
  Passive : The car **will be being driven** to Marmaris by my father because he is the only one who knows how to drive in our family.

9 The Present Perfect Tense (has, have + been + V_3)

- **Active** : The President has announced the date of the meeting.
  Passive : The date of the meeting **has been announced** by the President.
- **Active** : People have used rivers for navigation for thousands of years.
  Passive : Rivers **have been used** for navigation for thousands of years.
- **Active** : Almost one million people have watched the film up to now.
  Passive : The film **has been watched** by almost one million people up to now.
- **Active** : Somebody has stolen my money during the party.
  Passive : My money **has been stolen** during the party.
- **Active** : My father has reserved a table for our family dinner.
  Passive : A table **has been reserved** by my father for our family dinner.

10 The Past Perfect Tense (had + been + V_3)

- **Active** : When I arrived at the factory, there were police officers at the front door and someone had obviously broken into the office rooms.
  Passive : When I arrived at the factory, there were police officers at the front door and the office rooms **had** obviously **been broken into**.
- **Active** : Rachel had solved the question by the time I finished writing it.
  Passive : The question **had been solved** by Rachel by the time I finished writing it.
- **Active** : By the time the police found the suspect, he had robbed many shops.
  Passive : By the time the police found the suspect, many shops **had been robbed** by him.
- **Active** : I couldn't attend the training because I had broken my leg last week.
  Passive : I couldn't attend the training because my leg **had been broken** last week.
- **Active** : The fire had damaged the house by the time the firefighters arrived in the scene.
  Passive : The house **had been damaged** by the fire by the time the firefighters arrived in the scene.

11 The Future Perfect Tense (will have + been + V_3)

- **Active** : People hope that by 2030, medical scientists will have improved new techniques to fight against illnesses.
  Passive : People hope that by 2030, new techniques **will have been improved** (by medical scientists) to fight against illnesses.
- **Active** : If we don't go faster, we will have lost our seats.
  Passive : If we don't go faster, our seats **will have been lost**.
- **Active** : According to the municipality, they will have completed the metro line until 2024.
  Passive : According to the municipality, the metro line **will have been completed** until 2024.
- **Active** : By 2030, Germany will have banned petrol-powered cars.
  Passive : By 2030, petrol-powered cars **will have been banned** by Germany.
- **Active** : They will have closed the shopping mall by the time we arrive there.
  Passive : The shopping mall **will have been closed** by the time we arrive there.

Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyelim:

- The colour blue **was chosen** for the walls and furniture of this bedroom as it is my brother's favourite colour.
- Photos of our vacation in Norway **are being downloaded** onto my computer as we speak.
- Jack **was called** to the principal's office for detention because he was running around in the hallway during lessons.
- The majestic Pyramids of Giza **were built** by the Egyptians some three thousand years ago and **are being visited** by tens of thousands of tourists annually.
- The recent national tennis tournament **was won** by the youngest tennis player the country had ever had.
- This movie **has been taken down** from the cinemas as it contains bloody battle scenes.
- Peter looked everywhere for his car this morning but it **had been towed** to the nearest police station due to parking violation.
- The farm **has been managed** by the Holloway Family for decades; really fresh and delicious cheese and milk **are still being produced** on this farm.
- This construction project **was completed** slightly later than promised due to the unexpected flash floods in this region.
- I was really shocked that Susan's necklace **had been stolen** by her best friend when she was out of town.

12 Simple Modals (modal + be + V_3)

- **Active** : You had better read the manual carefully before attempting to operate the new washing machine.
  Passive : The manual **had better be read** carefully before attempting to operate the new washing machine.
- **Active** : Due to global warming, the increasing temperatures could affect the lives of millions of animal species severely.
  Passive : Due to global warming, the lives of millions of animal species **could be affected** severely by the increasing temperatures.
- **Active** : Before entering the building, one must take out metal wares.
  Passive : Before entering the building, metal wares **must be taken out**.
- **Active** : If you want to lose weight quickly, you should consume low-calorie drinks and burn calories that you take in.
  Passive : If you want to lose weight quickly, low-calorie drinks **should be consumed** and calories that you take in **be burned**.
- **Active** : The students can borrow only two books at a time from the library.
  Passive : Only two books at a time **can be borrowed** from the library by the students.

13 Perfect Modals (modal + have + been + V_3)

- **Active** : It's no use crying now. They should have considered the consequences before leaving home.
  Passive : It's no use crying now. The consequences **should have been considered** before leaving home.
- **Active** : The plumber can't have fixed the pipes properly as they are still leaking.
  Passive : The pipes **can't have been fixed** properly as they are still leaking.
- **Active** : You could have finished your homework.
  Passive : Your homework **could have been finished**.
- **Active** : Your cat must have torn my T-shirt; I saw her hair on it.
  Passive : My T-shirt **must have been torn** by your cat; I saw her hair on it.
- **Active** : He should have paid the bills in time, now he also has to pay a fine.
  Passive : The bills **should have been paid** by him in time, now he also has to pay a fine.
- **Active** : One of his flatmates might have killed him, they have been arguing often lately.
  Passive : He **might have been killed** by one of his flatmates, they have been arguing often lately.

Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyelim:

- The argument between Mary and Molly **cannot be solved** unless they are willing to sit down and talk it out.
- Books and stationery items **can** now **be bought** online since the launch of our e-commerce sites.
- Muffins **might** quite possibly **have been** invented by the English.
- They **should be warned** that there is a clown in the area that is causing havoc amongst the children.
- The steak **must be cooked** for at least 15 minutes on the grill before it **can be considered** to be well-done.
- A surprise exam **may be given** to students, who do not behave themselves during the lessons, after school.
- The bank **might have been broken into** by the notorious gang who has been committing a series of crimes in this neighbourhood.
- Brad **should have been invited** to the Smiths' wedding, considering that he has been friends with the groom since they were five years old.
- These crops **could not have been harvested** in time without the help of the farmers from the nearby town.

Not

1. ***Luckily, I ---- about the weather canditions before I ---- to Scotland.***

A) am warned / went *B) had warned / go*
C) was warned / would go **D) had been warned / went*

Soru kökünde iki cümle var ve bu iki cümle bir zaman bağlacıyla bağlı. Dolayısıyla boşluklardaki fiillerin arasında zaman uyumu olmalı. A ve B seçeneklerindeki fiiller arasında zaman uyumu olmadığı için bu seçenekleri elememiz gerekir. C seçeneğinde ikinci tarafta 'would go' fiili kullanılmış. Zaman bağlacı cümlenin ikinci tarafında olduğu için C seçeneğinin de elenmesi gerekir; çünkü zaman bağlaçlı cümlelerin içinde 'would', 'will' ya da 'be going to' yapılarını kullanamayız. Bu durumda D seçeneği doğrudur.

"Neyse ki İskoçya'ya gitmeden önce hava durumu hakkında uyarılmıştım."

2. ***After the accident, someone ---- the police and the drunk driver ----.***

A) called / had been arrested *B) would call / had arrested*
**C) called / was arrested* *D) was called / was arrested*

Cümlenin birinci bölümü göz önüne alındığında birisi polis tarafından ihbar için telefon ile aranmayacağından 'active' bir yapı; ikinci bölümde sarhoş sürücü kendi kendini yakalamayacağı için 'passive' bir yapı aramalıyız. Buna göre B ve D seçenekleri elenir. A seçeneğinde zaman uyumu olmasına rağmen, eylem sıralamasında mantıken ilk önce polis aranıp sonra suçlu yakalanacağından bu seçenek de elenir. Doğru cevap C'dir.

1

EXERCISE:
Change the following active sentences into passive ones.

1. He stole ten apples from the neighbour's garden.

2. The jargon in the instructions confused Leon, and the cake he was baking subsequently burnt.

3. Before she passed away, my great-grandmother gave me this antique necklace that means a lot to me.

4. Gary will inform me about the location of our upcoming fishing trip.

5. Both my neighbour and I planted the strawberry tree in the garden.

6. The teacher told us that we must submit our group assignment by the end of today.

7. You could have rented the apartment if you had contacted the landlord earlier.

8. Many people are visiting the new restaurant downtown and they seem to be happy with the food and service.

9. I was feeding the cat when the bell rang.

10. You must mix the dough well if the cake is to come out soft and fluffy.

2 EXERCISE:

Change the following active sentences into passive ones.

1. The price increase in all dairy products will greatly affect the citizens living in this country.

2. The owner of the property could have planted trees to protect pedestrians.

3. Excessive smoking, sedentary lifestyle and an unhealthy diet might cause cardiovascular diseases.

4. Someone could have stolen your bag and phone during the fire drill yesterday.

5. My father taught me how to read when I was five.

6. My little sister was completing the Math homework when I went to pick up groceries.

7. Sarah made two dozens of pot pies for the charity bake sale in school.

8. We must finish our Physics projects by Friday.

9. The city council will introduce the new parking rule next weekend.

10. My grandmother brings us delicious pancakes and maple syrup every Sunday morning.

Not

*'**Passive**' ve '**Active**' yapıların kullanımında sıkça yapılan hatalar:*

- *The men were very ~~interesting~~ in what the announcement was.*
  → interested

- *The suspects were ~~questioning~~ by the police officer after they had been brought to the headquarters.*
  → questioned

- *Mike has put in a coma by his doctors intentionally to save his life.*
  → been

Bu hataların sebepleri,

a) 'To be' fiilinin hem 'active' hem 'passive continuous tense'lerle kullanılması

b) 'V_3'ün hem 'passive' yapılarla hem de 'perfect tense'lerle kullanılmasıdır.

Ancak bir cümlenin 'passive' olabilmesi için içinde mutlaka 'be + V_3' yapısı ile kullanılmış olması gerekir.

- *She was cheat**ed**.* → *(passive - simple past)*
- *She was cheat**ing**.* → *(active - past continuous)*
- *She was **being** cheated.* → *(passive - past continuous)*
- *She has cheat**ed**.* → *(active - present perfect)*
- *She has **been** cheated.* → *(passive - present perfect)*

Not

'Perfect Continuous Tense'lerin 'passive' kullanımı yoktur. Bunun yerine bu zamanların 'active' haliyle "impersonal pronouns" (genelleme yapan zamirler - they, one, etc.) kullanılır.

- *By next month, the gardener ~~will have been being taken care of~~ this garden for fifty years. (✗ - passive olmaz)*

  *By next month, the gardener **will have been taking care of** this garden for fifty years. (✓ - active olur)*

Not

Yaygın şekilde kullanılan 'I was born ...' ifadesi 'passive' bir cümledir. 'Born' fiili, 'bear' (doğurmak) fiilinin 'V_3' (past participle) halidir. Ancak bu cümle Türkçeye '... doğdum' şeklinde etken çatı ile çevrilmektedir.

- *I **was born** in 1980.*
- *Where **were** your parents **born**?*

⚠ Not *Eğer bir özne çok uzun bir söz öbeğinden ya da cümlecikten oluşuyorsa, uzun özne cümlenin sonuna gelsin diye cümle 'passive' yapılır; bu şekilde cümle daha doğal olur.*

- *The elephants picking up tons of metals from the ground and throwing them to a great distance* ***scared*** *her.*
  She ***was scared*** *by the elephants picking up tons of metals from the ground and throwing them to a great distance. ('Passive' olan ikinci cümle daha doğaldır.)*
- *Rainforests, their perfect nature and the unique local culture with the indeginous people's lifestyle* ***attracted*** *Liz.*
  Liz ***was attracted*** *by rainforests, their perfect nature and the unique local culture with the indeginous people's lifestyle.*
- *That the votes were declared invalid* ***shocked*** *the voters.*
  The voters ***were shocked*** *by that the votes were declared invalid.*

⚠ Not *Edilgen yapılar konuşma dilinden daha çok yazı dilinde kullanılmaktadır ve daha resmidir. Resmi olmayan (informal) ifadelerde 'impersonal pronoun'lu etken yapılar kullanılır:*

- *I called the emergency gas line and now they* ***are digging up*** *the street to find out the leak. (informal)*
- *The street* ***is being dug up*** *to find out the leak because I called the emergency gas line. (formal)*

Edilgen yapıların resmi olmaları nedeniyle kullanıldığı yerler aşağıdaki gibi sıralanabilir:

Hukuk alanında (işlenen suçların ve cezaların beyanında) kullanılır.

- He was suspected of being involved in this horrible murder hence was kept under custody.

Haber bültenlerinde kullanılır.

- The poor teacher was kidnapped by the terrorists and was found wounded in the riverbank.

Bilimsel, ticari ve endüstriyel süreçleri anlatırken kullanılır.

- The mixtures are kept in freezers and then they are sent to processors.
- The sales figures are presented to the manager at the end of every month.

Duyurularda kullanılır.

- The train to Paris is delayed by two hours due to adverse weather conditions.

Kanun ve kurallarda kullanılır.

- Buying alcohol after ten p.m. has been banned in this country.

Uyarı levhalarında bir şeyi kibarca isterken veya kural belirtirken kullanılır.

- Visitors are requested not to feed the animals in the cages.

Resmi (formal) durumlarda kullanılır.

- The exam papers will be assessed by the professors and the results will be declared next week.

  ('The professors will assess your exam papers and they will declare the results next week.' *cümlesinden daha resmidir.*)

⚠ **Not**

Birleşik cümlelerde eylemi yapan kişi aynıysa ya da aynı olduğu biliniyorsa (eylemler farklı, özneler aynı) özne tekrarlanmaz; bunun yerine fiiller 'passive' yapıda verilir.

- *The bicycles **are tied** to the car with a special equipment, (the bicycles are) **covered** by a white sheet and (they are) **marked** visibly to warn the drivers to be careful.*
- *The treaty **has been prepared** and (it has been) **forwarded** to responsible ministers.*

⚠ **Not**

Özellikle yazı dilinde edilgen çatıyla kullanılan 'verb + preposition' yapısında anlam kazanan söz öbekleri vardır. Bunlar:

be aimed at	*amaçlanmak*	***be based on***	*dayandırılmak*
be applied to	*uygulanmak*	***be considered as***	*... gibi düşünülmek*
be found in	*-da bulunmak*	***be related to***	*... ile ilişkili olmak*
be regarded as	*... gibi düşünülmek*	***be known as***	*... olarak bilinmek*
be used as	*... olarak kullanılmak*	***be thought of (as)***	*... (gibi) düşünülmek*
be referred to (as)	*-e atfedilmek, (olarak) anılmak*		
(can / could) be seen as	*... olarak görül(ebil)mek*		

- *Applying this hair product over an extended period **is known as** a useless procedure now.*
- *The new law **will be applied** directly **to** all employees right after it is published on the national newspaper.*
- *The new travel bans **are aimed at** stopping the guilty people from running out of the country.*
- *Her predictions **are based on** research, but still, they are doubtful.*

14 'Get' ile Kurulan Edilgen Yapılar

'Get + V_3' yapısıyla da edilgen yapılar oluşturulabilir. Bu kullanım resmi dilde değil, günlük konuşma dilinde daha yaygındır. Kontrol dışı, kazara, beklenmedik, olumsuz ve olağandışı bir şekilde gelişen eylemleri anlatırken kullanılmaktadır.

- Peter **should get punished** (= should be punished) badly for stealing candy from the corner store.
- If you use your phone while riding your bicycle, you **might get run over** (= might be run over) by a car.
- She **got demoted** (= was demoted) for pulling out of a million-dollar deal which could save the company.

'Simple Past Tense' veya 'Simple Present Tense' ile kullanılırsa soru cümleleri ve olumsuz cümlelerde, bu zamanların normal fiillerle çekimi ile birlikte 'do' ve 'did' ile kullanılır.

- The cashiers **don't get supervised** (= aren't supervised) properly, so they have started to steal some of the money.
- The dinner table **will get damaged** (= will be damaged) if you put hot pots onto it like that.
- **Didn't** the marathon runner **get punished** (= Wasn't the marathon runner punished) for taking illegal drugs?

'Get' ile oluşturulan edilgen yapılar durum anlatırken kullanılmaz. Diğer bir deyişle 'non-progressive' ('continuous tense'lerle kullanılmayan) fiillerin olduğu cümlelerde bulunmazlar.

- That house ~~gets owned~~ by my uncle. (✗)
  That house **is owned** by my uncle. (✓)

Not *'Get + V_3' yapısı her zaman edilgen anlam vermeyebilir. Bazı durumlarda 'V_3', 'adjective' (sıfat) olarak da kullanılabilir. Bu yapılardan bazıları:*

get dressed (in)	*giyinmek*
get washed	*yıkanmak*
get engaged / married / divorced	*nişanlanmak / evlenmek / boşanmak*
get started	*başlamak*
get lost	*kaybolmak*
get prepared	*hazırlanmak*
get hurt	*incinmek*
get acquainted (with)	*tanışmak*
get bored (with)	*sıkılmak*
get worried (about)	*endişelenmek*

- *When Henry **got lost** while hiking in the mountains, he had to wait to be rescued.*
- *Elizabeth **has got engaged** to a very vulgar but rich man with whom she could never be happy.*
- *You should definitely come to the party to **get acquainted with** your new boss. It will be nice to break the ice before starting to work there.*
- *That it takes girls more to **get prepared** for anything is a superficial belief.*

15 'By' Edatının Kullanımı

'By' edatı edilgen cümlelerde iki şey için kullanılır:

1. Eylemi gerçekleştiren kişiyi ya da nesneyi belirtmek
2. Eylemin hangi metot veya yöntem ile gerçekleştirildiğini belirtmek

- The elevator brake, which greatly improved the safety of elevators, **was invented** by Elisha Graves Otis. (eylemi yapan kişi) *(... Elisha Graves Otis tarafından icat edildi.)*
- The Lego toy company **was founded** by Ole Kirk Christiansen of Denmark in 1932. (eylemi yapan kişi) *(... Danimarkalı Ole Kirk Christiansen tarafından kuruldu.)*
- Schizotypal personality disorder **is characterized** by oddities in appearance, perception and behaviour. (ile) *(... algı ve davranışta gariplikler ile nitelenmektedir.)*
- Her illness **was diagnosed** by blood tests performed during her routine check. (ile) *(... kan testleri ile teşhis edildi.)*

16 'By' & 'With'

by → eylemi gerçekleştiren kişi; eylem gerçekleştirilirken faydalanılan yöntem
(by my parents; by blood test)
with → eylem gerçekleştirilirken kullanılan alet (with a spoon)

- The famous painting *Mona Lisa* **was painted** by an Italian artist, Leonardo Da Vinci, during the Italian Renaissance.
- Tonight's delicious three-course meal **is prepared** by my lovely grandmother.
- We **were forced** to leave the shopping mall by the noisy and rowdy crowd.
- The football players **were made** to run around the field under the sun by their coach.
- The expensive bungalow down the street **was bought** by a businessman with lots of money.
- The lawn **was mowed** with the lawnmower that they bought yesterday.

'By + nesne' → eylemin kazara gerçekleştiği ve kasıtsız durumları
'With + nesne' → söz konusu nesnenin bir amaç için kasıtlı olarak kullanıldığı durumları anlatırken kullanılır

- Dave was run over **by a car** and killed. *(kaza; kasıtsız)*

  Dave was run over **with a car** and killed. *(Birisi Dave'i öldürmek için çarpmış.)*
- All the cows were hit **by the lightning** and they all died. *(kaza)*

  The cows were hit **with a sharp metal**. *(kasten)*
- The climbers were injured **by a falling rock**. *(kaza)*

  The climbers were injured **with a falling rock**. *(kasten)*

Not *'Who', 'whom' ve 'which' ile sorulan edilgen yapılı sorularda 'by' kullanılması gerekmektedir.*

- *By **whom** were the students taught French?*
- ***Who** were the kids picked up by?*
- ***Which** of these puppies are being adopted by Helen?*

Not *'Kalemle' ya da 'mürekkeple' derken 'with' değil 'in' edatını kullanmamız gerekir. (in pencil - in ink)*

- *The drawings must be done in black pencil, not in ink or coloured pencils.*

'Doluluk, kalabalık' ve 'sıkışıklık' anlamı veren fiiller kendilerinden sonra 'with' alır:

*be filled **with***	*be packed **with***	*be crowded **with***	*be stuffed **with***	*be crammed **with***

- *The room **was stuffed with** old carpets and they all needed to be thrown out.*
- *The concert hall **is crowded with** people eager to hear the star's hit songs.*

'Örtmek, kaplamak, süslemek' anlamlarına gelen fiiller 'by' ile birlikte de kullanılabilir ama 'by' çok nadiren kullanılır; bunun yerine daha çok 'with' tercih edilir.

be covered with / in*	*be decorated* with
be surrounded with / by*	*be adorned* with
be furnished with	*be wrapped* with
be embellished with	*be embroidered* with

* *'Cover' fiili için 'with'; 'surround' fiili içinse 'by' daha çok tercih edilir.*

- *The car **was covered** with mud and it took me two hours to clean it.*
- *The border **was surrounded** by enemy soldiers, leaving the custom officers in fear.*
- *The garden **was surrounded** by trees so that nobody could see in.*
- *The book **was covered** with a gift wrap and shiny decorations.*
- *The cooking pot was **wrapped** with plastic to protect it.*

'Align' (uyuşmak, hizalamak, birlik olmak) ve 'associate' (bağdaştırmak) fiilleri de 'passive' cümlelerde 'with' ile kullanılırlar.

- This new government **is** closely **aligned** with the opposition parties, promising to work collaboratively.
- Jane's situation **is associated** with her depression.

17 **Stative Passive** (Durum Bildiren Edilgen Yapı)

Anlamca uygun olan 'past participle'lar sıfat gibi kullanılabilir. Diğer bir deyişle, karşımıza her çıkan 'V_3' edilgen bir fiil değildir.

broken	*kırık*	**lost**	*kayıp*
closed	*kapalı*	**married**	*evli*
insured	*sigortalı*	**burnt**	*yanık*
located	*yerleşik*	**qualified**	*nitelikli*
locked	*kilitli*	**surrounded**	*çevrili*

- The gate **is locked** every evening by the chief himself to prevent any invasion at night. *(passive)*
- If you don't want to have any troubles later, you must make sure your car **is insured**. *(adjective)*
- People in India **are** still **married** against their will by their parents. *(passive)*
- Are you sure you **are qualified** for this job? *(adjective)*

Bazı fiil köklerine '-ing' ya da '-ed' ekleyerek anlamları farklı olan sıfatlar elde edebiliriz. Bu eklerden '-ing' etken bir anlama sahipken, '-ed' edilgen bir anlama sahiptir ve '-ed' eklendiği durumlarda genellikle 'by' yerine başka edatlar kullanılır.

- Helen was shocked **at** / **by** the news of the death of her favourite aunt, Irene.
- I was highly unsatisfied **with** the service of this company and decided to file a formal complaint against their employees.

Bare Infinitive (V_1)	Present Participle (V_{ing})	Past Participle (V_3)
bore (sıkmak)	**boring** (sıkıcı)	**bored** (sıkılmış)
amaze (şaşırtmak)	**amazing** (şaşırtıcı)	**amazed** (şaşkın, şaşırmış)
petrify (korkutmak)	**petrifying** (korkutucu)	**petrified** (korkmuş)
interest (ilgilendirmek)	**interesting** (ilgi çekici)	**interested** (ilgili)
annoy (sinirlendirmek)	**annoying** (sinir bozucu)	**annoyed** (sinirli, sinir olmuş)

- Watching horror films **frightens** me but my girlfriend loves them. *(verb)*
  Watching horror films is **frightening** but my girlfriend loves them. *(adjective)*
  I **am frightened** by watching horror films but my girlfriend loves them. *(adjective)*

- The new law only **interested** the people who were waiting for it for a long time. *(verb)*
  The new law was only **interesting** for the people who were waiting for it for a long time. *(adjective)*
  The people who were waiting for it for a long time **were interested** in the new law. *(adjective)*

- The teacher was **annoyed** that the students could not understand her instructions after repeating it for five times.
- Seeing the Northern Lights for the first time, Sarah was so **amazed** that she was lost for words.
- John got so **bored** reading the repetitive book that he gave up completely.
- Thomas was **terrified** when he heard a bear grunting as he was hiking alone in the Alps and had no one to turn to.
- Tom was **encouraged** to complete and win the marathon when Susan smiled at him before it started.
- My brother was very **confused** when I told him the Earth is round and not flat.
- The **amazing** weather made our holiday a lot more fun.
- There is a **breathtaking** view up on that mountain, so you must see it.
- The **annoying** noise kept me up all night and destroyed my first day at work.

18 **Verbs with Two Objects** (Çift Nesneli Fiiller)

İngilizcede bazı fiiller (give, bring, buy, show, etc.) iki nesne ('direct object' ve 'indirect object') alabilir. Bu şekilde sıkça kullanılan fiiller aşağıdaki gibidir:

bring	buy	cost	get
give	leave	lend	make
offer	owe	pass	pay
play	promise	read	sell
send	show	sing	take
teach	tell	wish	write

Bu fiillerin iki nesnesi olduğu için iki farklı şekilde etken ya da edilgen cümle oluşturulabilir. Etken cümlenin vurgulanmak istenen nesnesi, edilgen cümlenin öznesi olur. Yani cümlenin en başında kullanılır.

Etken Cümleler:

	Subject	Verb	Indirect Object	Direct Object
1	My grandfather	handed	me	the family treasure.
	Katie	will submit	the professor	the final assignment.
	Jack	should give	Jill	his old car.

	Subject	Verb	Direct Object	Preposition*	Indirect Object
2	My grandfather	handed	the family treasure	to	me.
	Katie	will submit	the final assignment	to	the professor.
	Jack	should give	his old car	to	Jill.

* 'Direct object' önce kullanılınca 'indirect object' ile arasına bir edat gelmelidir.

Edilgen Cümleler:

	Indirect Object as the Subject	Verb	Direct Object	(By + Agent)
1	I	was handed	the family treasure	(by my grandfather).
	The professor	will be submitted	the final assignment	(by Katie).
	Jill	should be given	his old car	(by Jack).

	Direct Object as the Subject	Verb	Preposition*	Indirect Object	(By + Agent)
2	The family treasure	was handed	to	me	(by my grandfather).
	The final assignment	will be submitted	to	the professor	(by Katie).
	His old car	should be given	to	Jill	(by Jack).

* 'Direct object', edilgen cümlenin öznesi olarak kullanıldığında 'indirect object'ten önce bir edat kullanılması gerekir.

Not *Tablolarda da belirtildiği gibi 'direct object', 'indirect object'ten önce kullanıldıysa bir edat kullanımı gerekmektedir. Bu edat kullanılan fiile göre 'to' ya da 'for' olabilir.*

To + indirect object:

award	*hand*	*give*
lend	*offer*	*owe*
pass	*show*	*teach*

- *It's customary for some nations to **offer** your seat **to** older people.*
- *Do I have to **pass** the salt **to** everyone? Get it yourself!*

For + indirect object:

book	*build*	*buy*	*save*
catch	*choose*	*cook*	*order*
fetch	*find*	*make*	

- *I have always wanted to **make** a cake **for** my family.*
- *The dog **fetched** the stick **for** me.*

For / To + indirect object:

bring	*leave*	*pay*	*wish*	*write*
play	*post*	*read*	*take*	*sing*

- *David **bought** a present **for** his host.*
- *The editor in chief **posted** the latest job advertisement **to** the website.*

19 ‘Gerund (V_{ing})’ ve ‘Infinitive (To V_1)’ Yapılarının Edilgen Kullanımı

Gerund (V_{ing})

Bazı fiilleri isimleştirmek (isim-fiil yapmak) için sonuna ‘-ing’ eklememiz gerekir. Fiilin bu haline ‘gerund’ denilmektedir. Bu yapı cümlede farklı görevler üstlenebilir:

a) bir cümlenin öznesi
- **Eating** out every night is costly.

b) bir cümlenin nesnesi
- Do you really want to see **fighting** in action?

c) bir edatın nesnesi
- I am really looking forward to **driving** my new car.

d) relative clause reduction (sıfat-fiil kısaltması)
- The boy **running around** made everyone angry.

‘Gerund’ yapılar aşağıdaki şekilde kullanılabilir:

ACTIVE	PASSIVE
V_{ing} (doing)	**being V_3 (being done)**
Bu yapıda zaman farkı yoktur ve eylemi yapan kişi başkası değil, öznenin bizzat kendisidir. - Nobody **has started running** because the gun hasn’t been fired yet. *(Kimse koşmaya başlamadı çünkü silah henüz ateşlenmedi.)* - He **can’t stand seeing** his ex-girlfriend with someone else. *(Eski kız arkadaşını başka biri ile görmeye dayanamıyor.)*	Bu yapıda zaman farkı yoktur fakat yapıda bahsedilen eylemi yapan öznenin kendisi değildir. Eylem başkası tarafından gerçekleştirilmekte, özneyse bu eylemden etkilenmektedir. - Every puppy loves **being petted** by its owner. *(Her köpek yavrusu sahibi tarafından okşanmayı sever.)* - Everybody enjoys **being spoiled** by their significant other. *(Herkes önem verdiği kişi tarafından şımartılmayı sever.)*
having V_3 (having done)	**having been V_3 (having been done)**
Bu yapıda geçmişe gönderme vardır ve eylemi yapan kişi başkası değil öznenin bizzat kendisidir. - All the eyewitnesses denied **having seen** his wife push him down the stairs despite the camera recordings. *(Kamera kayıtlarına rağmen tüm tanıklar karısının onu merdivenlerden ittiğini gördüklerini reddetti.)* - All of us remembered **having thrown** stones in the pool after swimming there. *(Hepimiz, orda yüzdükten sonra göle taş attığımızı hatırladık.)*	Bu yapıda geçmişe gönderme vardır fakat yapıda bahsedilen eylemi yapan öznenin kendisi değildir. Eylem başkası tarafından gerçekleştirilmekte, özneyse bu eylemden etkilenmektedir. - All the eyewitnesses denied his wife **having been seen** pushing her husband down the stairs. *(Bütün görgü tanıkları karısının kocasını merdivenlerden iterken görüldüğünü reddetti.)* - All of us remembered the stones **having been thrown** in the pool after swimming there. *(Hepimiz, orada yüzdükten sonra taşların göle atıldığını hatırladık.)*

20 Infinitive (to V_1)

Bazı fiilleri isimleştirmek (isim-fiil yapmak) için kendilerinden önce 'to' getirmemiz gerekir. Fiilin bu haline 'to infinitive' denilmektedir. Bu yapı cümlede farklı görevler üstlenebilir:

a) bir cümlenin öznesi
   - **To be** worth the effort made on me is my only wish.

b) bir cümlenin nesnesi
   - All she ever wanted was **to be** the chairperson of the company.

c) relative clause reduction (sıfat-fiil kısaltması)
   - Jamie is the first person **to try** the latest model of Opel in Germany.

'In order to' ve 'so as to' (-mak / -mek için) bağlaçlarının kısaltılmış hali.

- She will come with us **to make** sure everything is well-organized.

'Infinitive' yapıları, aşağıdaki gibi kullanılabilir:

ACTIVE	PASSIVE
to V_1 (to do)	**to be V_3 (to be done)**
Bu yapıda zaman farkı yoktur ve yapıdaki eylemi yapan kişi başkası değil, öznenin bizzat kendisidir. ▸ That girl **needs to do** more sports if she **wants to lose** weight. *(O kız kilo vermek istiyorsa daha fazla spor yapması gerekiyor.)* ▸ Josh **decided not to leave** the city as he had fallen in love with a local girl. *(Yerli bir kıza aşık olduğu için, Josh şehirden ayrılmamaya karar verdi.)*	Bu yapıda zaman farkı yoktur, fakat yapıdaki eylemi yapan öznenin kendisi değildir. Eylem başkası tarafından gerçekleştirilmekte, özneyse bu eylemden etkilenmektedir. ▸ Every artist would like **to be recognized** for his or her work. *(Her ressam çalışmalarıyla tanınmak ister.)* ▸ When I have saved enough money, I would love **to be served** by a butler. *(Yeteri kadar para biriktirdiğimde, bir uşak tarafından bana hizmet edilmesini istiyorum.)*
to have V_3 (to have done)	**to have been V_3 (to have been done)**
Bu yapıda geçmişe gönderme vardır ve yapıdaki eylemi yapan kişi başkası değil, öznenin bizzat kendisidir. ▸ It is better **not to have seen** her in that helpless situation. *(Onu o çaresiz halde görmemiş olmak daha iyi.)* ▸ Renaissance is believed **to have affected** not only Europe but the whole world. *(Rönesansın sadece Avrupayı değil, tüm dünyayı etkilemiş olduğuna inanılıyor.)*	Bu yapıda geçmişe gönderme vardır fakat yapıdaki eylemi yapan öznenin kendisi değildir. Eylem başkası tarafından gerçekleştirilmekte, özneyse bu eylemden etkilenmektedir. ▸ I would like **to have been shortlisted** for the upcoming debate competition. *(Önümüzdeki münazara için finale çıkartılmış olmayı isterdim.)* ▸ The lines are expected **to have been drawn** by tomorrow to open the road to the traffic. *(Yolu trafiğe açmak için çizgilerin yarına kadar çizilmiş olması bekleniyor.)*

Yukarıdaki 'to infinitive' yapılarının haricinde aşağıdaki etken yapılar da mevcuttur:

To be V_{ing} (to be doing)

Bu yapıda şimdiki zaman vurgusu (-yor olmak) vardır ve eylemi yapan kişi başkası değil, öznenin bizzat kendisidir.

- Mr Nelson would prefer **to be swimming** now.
  (Bay Nelson şu anda yüzüyor olmayı tercih ederdi.)

To have been V_{ing} (to have been doing)

Bu yapıda şimdiki zaman vurgusunun yanı sıra geçmişe gönderme vardır ve eylemi yapan kişi başkası değil, öznenin bizzat kendisidir.

- The new accountant was suspected **to have been stealing** money from the company but all accusations were dismissed when his bank records were investigated.
  (Yeni muhasebecinin şirketten para çalıyor olduğundan şüpheleniliyordu, fakat banka kayıtları incelenince tüm suçlamalar düşürüldü.)

Be V_3 (be done)

Bu yapı genellikle 'should'un kısaltması olan 'subjunctive' konusunda kullanılır. 'Subjunctive' yapısı isim cümleciklerinin anlatıldığı 'Noun Clauses' ünitesinde ayrıntılı olarak ele alınacaktır.

- Researchers suggest we **be trained** about how to handle the stress of modern life.
  (= should be trained)
- The members of the board recommend that you **be admitted** to the council.
  (= should be admitted)
- My father demanded that I **be allowed** to take part in the race, even though my entry was late.
  (= should be allowed)
- It is very important and crucial to your safety that you **be seated** when the plane takes off.
  (= should be seated)

21 Hearsay Reporting (Dolaylı Bildirim)

'Hearsay Reporting' insanların dedikleri, söyledikleri, inandıkları, düşündükleri, varsaydıkları veya bildikleri şeyleri anlatırken kullanılır. Haber bültenlerinde ve gazetelerde sık sık kullanılan bir yapıdır. Bu tür cümlelerde 'reporting verbs' denilen fiiller kullanılır. Bu fiiller genelde düşünce, konuşma, yeni bir şey keşfetme anlamları taşımaktadır. Sıklıkla kullanılan fiiller aşağıdaki listede verilmiştir.

Reporting Verbs

accept*	agree	allege	announce*	argue*	assume
believe	calculate*	claim	consider	decide*	demonstrate
discover	establish	estimate	expect	feel	find
guarantee	hope	intend	know	mention*	plan

presume
propose*
prove
recommend*
regard
report
reveal
rumour
say
show
suggest*
suppose
think
understand

* Bu fiiller 'that' ile kurulan cümlelerde kullanılırken, 'infinitive' ile kurulan cümlelerde kullanılmazlar.

Dolaylı bildirim yapılan cümleler iki şekilde kurulabilir:

It + Passive Reporting Verb + (that) + Clause
Subject + Passive Reporting Verb + 'to infinitive'

It + Passive Reporting Verb + (that) + Clause

- It **is known** that tiramisu is my favourite dessert.
- It **is believed** that Mary drinks coffee every morning.
- It **is assumed** by James that the committee will cancel the meeting.
- It **is accepted** that Amy is the new netball team captain.
- It **is thought** that Indian Gate is the best restaurant in town.

Subject + Passive Reporting Verb + 'to infinitive'

Bu kullanımda bir fiil, bir de fiilimsi (to infinitive) vardır. Aşağıdaki kullanımları inceleyelim:

a **Present verb - Present reference** : 'Reporting verb' şimdiki zamanda, fiilimsi ise 'to + V_1' şeklinde kullanılır. Zaman farkı yoktur; şimdiki zamanda gerçekleşen bir eylem yine şimdiki zamanda bildirilmektedir.

- Tiramisu is known **to be** my favourite dessert.
  present passive present infinitive
- Mary is believed **to drink** coffee every morning.
- The committee is assumed by James **to cancel** the meeting.
- Amy is accepted **to be** the new netball team captain.
- Indian Gate is thought **to be** the best restaurant in town.

b **Present verb - Past reference** : 'Reporting verb' şimdiki zamanda, fiilimsi ise 'to + have V_3' şeklinde kullanılır. Zaman farkı vardır; geçmişte gerçekleşmiş bir olay şimdi bildirilmektedir.

- Liam is thought by Mary **to have** recently **quit** his job to travel round the world.
  present passive perfect infinitive
- Gary is understood **to have come** to work late this morning.
- Peter is expected **to have bought** a new house in the suburbs.
- Nine thousand Syrians are believed **to have stayed** in their country after they went back for the Eid.
- Laura is known **to have taken** the driver's test five times before she could pass it.

c **Past verb - Past reference:** 'Reporting verb' geçmiş zamanda, fiilimsi ise 'to + V_1' şeklinde kullanılır. Zaman farkı yoktur; geçmiş zamanda gerçekleşmiş bir eylem yine geçmiş zamanda bildirilmektedir.

- The dog was claimed by my brother **to run away** by itself.
  past passive present infinitive
- Carbonate was known **to make** teeth white and **hold** them in place in the gums.
- Ghosts were imagined **to wander** around the houses where their beloved ones lived.
- Israel was thought **to be** a part of Palestine until the local Jews declared the land as Israel.
- My mother was expected **to retire** seven years ago but she still goes to work every day.

d **Past verb - Past Perfect reference :** 'Reporting verb' geçmiş zamanda; fiilimsi ise 'to + have V_3' şeklinde kullanılır. Zaman farkı vardır. Geçmiş zamanda daha önce gerçekleşmiş bir eylem yine geçmiş zamanda bildirilmektedir.

- Rick was believed **to have stolen** the pencil from the classroom.
  past passive perfect infinitive
- Mr Brown was believed **to have caused** the car accident and the camera records proved it right.
- The police officer was reported **to have pulled out** his gun and **shot** an innocent black man.
- The Minister was discovered **to have been** a former secret service agent of France.
- The Queen was assumed **to have left** her crown to her son but she never did.

e **Continuous Infinitive Forms :** Bu cümle yapısının fiilimsi bölümünde, devam etmekte olan ya da belli bir zaman devam etmiş olan uzun süreli eylemleri anlatmak için 'to infinitive'in 'progressive' hallerini kullanabiliriz.

- **Present Continuous Infinitive (to be V_{ing}):**
  - My grandmother is thought **to be cooking** dinner now.
  - Colin is said **to be planning** to buy a new car.
  - Bobby was claimed **to be thinking** of moving to Australia.
  - Jack was believed **to be trying** hard to finish his homework.
  - Randy is accepted **to be leaving** work early today.

- **Perfect Continuous Infinitive (to have been V_{ing}):**
  - Secret societies were known **to have been operating** for centuries.
  - The convict is known **to have been stealing** goods from different stores.
  - Mr Snowden was believed **to have been sneaking** secret government files and **serving** them to Russia.
  - Nancy is believed **to have been using** addictive drugs but nobody knows how she got them.
  - Penguins are thought **to have been inhabiting** Antarctica since their evolution from regular birds.

f **Passive Infinitive Forms:** 'To infinitive'in edilgen hallerini kullanmamız da mümkündür. Bu kullanımda özne işi yapan değil, işten etkilenen kişidir / şeydir.

- **Present Passive Infinitive (to be V_3):**
  - The meeting this afternoon is assumed by James **to be cancelled**.
  - Many of their works are expected **to be accepted** by the committee.
  - Cathy is hoped **to be appointed** as the new general secretary of the UN.
  - The depression of my brother is known **to be initiated** by his failure in the exam.
  - The pythons are believed **to be eaten** by the indeginous tribes of the forest.

- **Perfect Passive Infinitive (to have been V_3):**
  - A hole next to a grave in a Gloucester Cemetery is believed **to have been dug** by thieves.
  - The men are said **to have been saved** by the coast guard while they were just doing their usual patrol.
  - Poetry is claimed **to have been started** before the invention of writing.
  - The first films were thought **to have been shot** via a small camera when it was first invented.
  - Remote control is known **to have been invented** out of laziness as the inventor didn't want to go back and forth to change the channel.

⚠ **Not**

'Tell' fiili 'infinitive' ile birlikte kullanılabilir. Fakat bu şekilde 'söylemek' anlamında değil 'emretmek' anlamına kullanılmaktadır. 'Söylemek' anlamında bu şekilde kullanılamaz.

- *I **was told** (= ordered) to sign the papers and give away my money or else I would be killed. (✓)*

⚠ **Not**

'There' bu yapıda özne olarak kullanılabilir

- ***There** was said to be a massive financial crisis at the time of war.*
- ***There** were said to be cars parked outside the building with people sitting in them trying to see inside.*
- ***There** are thought to be illegal immigrants in the village but they can't be found.*
- ***There** is thought to be one person in the burning building but the firefighters can't go into to check.*

3

EXERCISE:

Rephrase the sentences to make them more formal.

Example: People think he was one of the most important musicians.
It is *thought (that) he was one of the most important musicians.*
He *is thought to have been one of the most important musicians.*

1. We know that driving without the seatbelt on can be fatal.
It is ______________________________.
Driving without the seatbelt on ______________________________.

2. They often say that flights are very expensive from this city.
It is ______________________________.
Flights ______________________________.

3. We think that going to the beach on a cloudy day is a good idea as it is not too hot.
It is ______________________________.
Going to the beach on a cloudy day ______________________________.

4. We believe that George is an extremely wealthy man even though he isn't.
It is ______________________________.
George is ______________________________.

5. Everyone knows that Lewis and his wife are expecting a baby boy.
It is ______________________________.
Lewis and his wife ______________________________.

6. We believed that Nathan was telling the truth when he was, in fact, lying.
It was ______________________________.
Nathan ______________________________.

7. She assumes that Anna is an extremely unfriendly and rude lady.
It is ______________________________.
Anna ______________________________.

8. We know that the manager is angry because we did not finish the project on time.
It is ______________________________.
The manager ______________________________.

9. Arthur said that he is not interested in going to the fishing trip this evening.
It is ______________________________.
Arthur ______________________________.

10. People in antiquity believed that the Earth was flat.
It was ______________________________.
The Earth ______________________________.

4 EXERCISE:

Rephrase the sentences to make them more formal.

Example: People think that Joseph is a bad driver.
Joseph *is thought to be a bad driver.*

1. People think that Francis is an extremely good cook.
Francis ____.

2. Everyone knows that eating too much sugar might cause diabetes.
It ____.

3. She says that the convicted murderer will be released next month.
____.

4. We assume that Jack and Jill are childhood friends.
Jack and Jill ____.

5. Robert believes that Rosie is his soulmate.
____.

6. Humans understand that oxygen is essential for survival.
It ____.

7. Molly claims that she knows nothing about her husband's crimes.
It ____.

8. The newspapers reported that blackouts are happening tonight.
Blackouts ____.

5 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the suitable forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. Mary is known ____________________ (**play**) in all the Broadway shows in New York back in 1980s.

2. Jerry is thought ____________________(**be**) the best player in his cricket team when he was at school.

3. The corrupted mayor was believed ____________________ (**steal**) millions of dollars from the taxpayers.

4. Amelia Earhart is known ____________________ (**be**) the first female pilot to fly solo across the Atlantic Ocean.

5. Calvin is thought ____________________ (**lose**) when his grandfather's private jet exploded.

6. We were told ____________________ (**wait**) for the bus at the foot of the hill, but it never showed up.

7. Jack is suspected ____________________ (**kill**) his neighbour's dog as he hates any kinds of noisy animals.

8. This motivational book is believed ____________________ (**help**) Catherine through the hardest times of her life.

9. Thomas was expected ____________________ (**bring**) two dozens of doughnuts and cupcakes to the party.

10. This mixture is said ____________________ (**cure**) all known ailments resulting from exposure to the sun.

Not *Bazı fiillerden sonra gelen nesne (object), kendisinin ardından nesne tümleci (object complement) alabilir.*

- *My mother considered me **a superwoman**. (me - object; a superwoman - object complement)*
- *They chose Alex **the new secretary of State**. (Alex - object; the new secretary of **State** - object complement)*
- *We see Mel Gibson as **racist**. (Mel Gibson - object; racist - object complement)*
- *Most people thought Michelango's David as **the perfect man**. (Michelango's David - object; the perfect man - object complement)*
- *The producers called the actor **stupid** for falling down in the set. (the actor - object; stupid - object complement)*
- *You have painted the house **blue**? Really? (the house - object; blue - object complement))*

Uyarı *'Regard' ve 'see' fiillerinden sonra 'object' ve 'object complement' arasında 'as' kullanıldığına dikkat ediniz.*

- *James was regarded as **the class clown** back in high school.*

Bu fiiller edilgen cümlelerde kullanıldıklarında etken cümlenin nesnesi özne, nesne tümleci ise fiilden sonra kullanılarak nesne haline gelir.

- *I was considered **a superwoman** by my mother.*
- *Alex was chosen **the new secretary of State** by them.*
- *Mel Gibson is seen as **racist** by us.*
- *Michelango's 'David' was thought to be **the perfect man**.*
- *The actor was called **stupid** by the producers for falling down in the set.*
- *The house has been painted **blue**? Really?*

B CAUSATIVE

'Causative' (ettirgen yapı) bir şeyi başkasına yaptırdığımız durumlarda; soru cümlelerinde, olumlu ve olumsuz cümlelerde kullanılır. Herhangi bir 'tense' ya da 'modal' ile kullanılabilirler. Çekimi yapılacak olan fiiller 'causative' yapılarında kullanılan 'have', 'get', 'make' ve 'let' fiilleridir. Bu fiillerle oluşturulan ettirgen yapıların anlamlarında farklılıklar olabilir.

- I **got** him to bring me a few books.
- They **will make** the soldiers march all day.
- My sister never **lets** me read her letters.
- My father **made** me clean the attic.

1 **Have + Object + Past Participle (= Have Something Done)**
Get + Object + Past Participle (= Get Something Done)

Bu iki yapı daha çok 'bir hizmet (araç yıkama, ev boyama, diş çektirme vb.) almak, bir şeyi para ödeyerek yaptırmak' anlamında kullanılır. Önemli olmadığı sürece eylemi kimin gerçekleştirdiği söylenmez; ama kişi önemliyse ve belirtilmesi gerekiyorsa cümlenin sonuna 'by + agent' şeklinde eklenebilir. 'Get' ile oluşturulan cümleler 'have' ile oluşturulanlardan daha az resmidir ve genellikle günlük konuşma dilinde kullanılır.

- They **had** their visas **extended**. (by a visa officer) *(eylemi yapan kişi önemli değil)*
- They **had** their visas **extended** by the famous visa agency. *(eylemi yapan kişi önemli)*
- Harry is busy preparing for the new project at work, so he paid his neighbour to **have** the lawn **mown**.
- I am planning to **have** my passport **renewed** as it is expiring in a week's time.
- Gabriel **got** his Chemistry assignment **done** by dinner so that he could watch television after dinner.

Bu yapıları birine 'bir şey yaptırmak' anlamının dışında; kişinin başına gelen talihsiz olayları (kaza, yangın, hırsızlık vb.) anlatırken de kullanabiliriz. Bu kullanımda 'have something done' yapısı daha çok tercih edilir.

- David **got** his clothes **bleached** as he kept them in the tumble dryer longer than needed.
- Darryl hit a regular supermarket cashier for no reason and ended up **getting** himself **arrested**.
- Janice **had** her salary **cut** following the failure of the two immensely important projects.
- She **had** her pet **taken** to an animal shelter after she became apprehensive of her ability to take care of it.

Daha önce belirtilen anlamlarının dışında 'get something done' yapısı, 'zor bir işin üstesinden gelme (manage to do something), başarma' anlamında da kullanılabilir.

- Has Michelle **got** the project **done** despite her illness?
- The manager **got** the report **handed in** two days before the deadline with his extreme pressure methods but that was really wrong of him.

2 Have + Person + Base Form of Verb (= Have Somebody Do Something)

Bu yapı 'birisine görevini yaptırmak' ya da 'sorumluluk vermek' anlamında kullanılmaktadır.

- Susan's mother **has had** her **make** her own bed since she was 10 years old.
- Mandy **had** the plumber **unclog** the sink this morning and she can now use it with ease.
- George **had** his secretary **make** him coffee and take his car to the car wash.
- Our teacher **had** James **carry** her heavy books and bag all the way from the car park to the third floor of the school.
- Coco and Damien are **having** the architect **redecorate** their entire house for their son's sweet sixteen party.

3 Get + Person + To Infinitive (= Get Somebody to Do Something)

Bu yapı 'birisine ikna yoluyla bir şey yaptırmak' anlamında kullanılmaktadır.

- Stuart was really upset that he lost his teddy bear and **got** all the people in the hotel **to look for** his favourite toy.
- The school **got** a professional actor **to help** the students with their drama performances.
- During our last football practice, the coach **got** everybody **to carry** him around the football field.
- If I pass my final year examinations, I will **get** my parents **to buy** me a new smartphone.
- If you ever go on holiday to that small town, **get** the waiters **to give** your money back after you have paid the bill because they don't give it back unless you ask.

⚠ **Not**

'Have somebody do something' ve *'get somebody to do something'* yapıları *esasen farklı anlamlara sahip olsalar da bu fark gözetilmeden birbirlerinin yerine kullanılabilirler.*

- *I **had** my brother **do** the ironing.*
  *(= I **got** my brother **to do** the ironing.)*
- *I couldn't **get** my father **to buy** me a new cell phone.*
  *(= I couldn't **have** my father **buy** me a new cell phone.)*

4

Have Somebody / Something Doing = Get Somebody / Something Doing

Bu iki yapı ‘birisinin ya da bir şeyin belirli bir eylemi yapmaya başlamasını sağlamak’ anlamında kullanılır. ‘Get / Have something done’ yapısı eylemin biteceği ya da tamamlanacağı anlamını verirken, ‘get / have somebody / something doing’ yapısı tercih edildiğinde; eylemin başlamak üzere olduğu ya da başladıktan sonra belli bir süre devam edeceği anlamı vurgulanmaktadır.

- I have been trying to **get** this machine **started**. Don’t you know how to **get** it **going**?
- The TV had broken down and there was no image on the screen but I managed to **get** it **working** again.
- I know you don’t want to pay that much money to **have** your car **running** but you need to pay to get a good deal.

5

Make + Person + Base Form of Verb (= Make Somebody Do Something)

Bu yapı ‘birine bir şeyi zorla yaptırmak’ anlamında kullanılır. ‘Force somebody to do something’ kalıbıyla eş anlamlıdır.

- After Martin accidentally broke the lamp, Rick **made** him **pay** for it.
- I lost a bet to my best friend and he **made** me **do** his laundry for an entire week.
- The undercooked chicken that we had at the new restaurant **made** us **take** a trip to the hospital.
- The boss of the construction company **made** the workers **work** non-stop for twelve hours every day.
- The subway system was running twenty-four hours which **made** the residents **get** free transportation every minute of the day for two days.

‘Birine zorla bir şey yaptırmak’ anlamı dışında ‘birinin bir şey yapmasına sebep olmak’ anlamında da kullanılabilir. (= enable / cause somebody to do something)

- You shouldn’t **make** your children **watch** TV because it is harmful to their development.
- Any man who **makes** me **laugh** gets my attention quickly.

⚠ **Not** *‘Make’ fiili ‘... etmek’ anlamında sıfatlarla birlikte de kullanılabilir.*

- *My boyfriend **made** me **so happy** by surprising me with an all-inclusive trip to Paris.*

6

Be Made to Do

‘Make’ fiili etken bir cümlenin yüklemi olduğunda kendisinden sonra yalın bir fiil kullanılır. Ancak edilgen bir cümlenin fiili olarak kullanıldığında kendisinden sonra ‘to infinitive’ gelir.

- Our parents **made** us wash our own dishes after dinner every night.
  We **were made** to wash our own dishes after dinner every night by our parents.

- They **made** the passengers on the flight evacuate due to a bomb threat at the airport.
  The passengers on the flight **were made** to evacuate due to a bomb threat at the airport.
- The maid **was made** to clean the house, dust the shelves, wash the car, do the dishes and make the bed every morning and night.
- Robert and I **were made** to stay at home to babysit our little sister while our parents went out for a movie.
- Kim **is made** not to leave the hospital until her fever has completely subsided.
- The bank tellers **were made** to hand the robbers all the money they had in their drawers.

7 Let + Person + Base Form of Verb (= Let Somebody Do)

'Birisine bir şey yapması için izin vermek' anlamında kullanılan yapıdır. 'Allow somebody to do something' kalıbıyla eş anlamlıdır.

- The government **let** her **keep** her apartment on condition that she pays her loan by next month.
- My father **let** me **see** my friends after eight only when I started college.
- I can't **let** my dog **stay out** all day long as the neighbours complain.
- The new plane of Boeing **lets** the airline companies **carry** as many as five hundred people.

8 Get / Have Somebody Done

Hem 'causative' hem de 'passive' olan yapıları anlatmak için kulanılır.

- The teacher **had** the students **clean** the class.
  (= Have somebody do something)
  (Öğrencilere temizletti.) (İşi yapan öğrenciler)
  (Sadece 'causative')
- The father **had** his son **operated** by a famous doctor.
  (= Have / Get somebody done)
  (Oğlunu ünlü bir doktora ameliyat ettirdi.) (İşi yapan oğlu değil, ameliyat oğluna yapılıyor.)
  (Hem 'causative' hem de 'passive')
- The vet **had** his assistant **examine** the little bird.
  (= Have somebody do something)
  (Sadece 'causative')
- Peter **got** his baby daughter **vaccinated** against tuberculosis as he was worried that she might get infected.
  (= Have / Get somebody done)
  (Hem 'causative' hem de 'passive')
- My mother took my sister to hospital and she **had** her **examined** thoroughly.
  (= Have / Get somebody done)
  (Hem 'causative' hem de 'passive')

6 **EXERCISE:**
Write the suitable forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. The students were made ____________________ (**make**) their own beds in boarding school.
2. The teacher didn't allow her students ____________________ (**scream**) or run in class.
3. I can get my mother ____________________ (**buy**) me a kitten for my upcoming birthday if I behave well.
4. The doctor had Mr and Mrs Smith ____________________ (**cry**) by telling them the bad news about their son passing away in the car accident.
5. Anna is thinking of getting her wedding dress ____________________ (**handsew**) as she can't find one that she likes.
6. The principal should have the books ____________________ (**deliver**) to the kindergarten this evening.
7. My brother could have me ____________________ (**wash**) his car because he taught me how to complete my math assignment.
8. Despite driving a car daily, many people don't have their car ____________________ (**service**) regularly.
9. My neighbour got the mailman ____________________ (**walk**) up to his doorstep to deliver the mail.
10. Mary might have her hair ____________________ (**straighten**) for tomorrow's charity dinner.
11. You should get your teeth ____________________ (**whiten**) as they look quite dirty.
12. The famous couple got their best friend a well-known stylist ____________________ (**design**) their wedding outfits.
13. While waiting for his wife at the grocery store, Sean didn't let his car ____________________ (**run**) as it wastes petrol.
14. Evan got his brother ____________________ (**drive**) to the nearest bakery as he was craving for chocolate cake.
15. Gary was made ____________________ (**finish**) painting the house before he could go home.

1 REVISION :

Fill in the blanks with either the active or the passive forms of the verbs in the parentheses.

1. The naughty boys __________________ (**warn**) by the principal not to try to skip school again, otherwise they would face serious consequences.
2. Lewis __________________ (**prepare**) the delicious dinner for us yesterday evening.
3. Mary __________________ (**disappoint**) to find out that she __________________ (**not / choose**) for the main role in the drama.
4. Peter __________________ (**detain**) for his crimes; instead, the judge decided to let him go free.
5. Ten million dollars' worth of cash __________________ (**steal**) in the recent bank robbery.
6. Who __________________ (**teach**) you how to change a flat tyre?
7. Our old toys __________________ (**donate**) to the orphanage down the street as we outgrew them.
8. Harry __________________ (**inform**) us about the time and location of the meeting this afternoon.
9. The Great Wall of China __________________ (**build**) in 220-206 BC to defend the country from invaders.
10. This book __________________ (**consider**) to be the oldest book ever written by mankind.

2 REVISION :

Fill in the blanks with either the active or the passive forms of the verbs in the parentheses.

1. By whom __________________ you __________________ (**drive**) home yesterday?
2. The photos in this exhibition __________________ (**take**) by a very well-known American photographer during his service in Iraq.
3. This chicken __________________ (**cook**) for twenty minutes longer in order for it to be tender and juicy: it is not well-cooked.
4. Mary __________________ (**break**) the phone when she was arguing with her boyfriend.
5. Our teacher often __________________ (**praise**) us for finishing up our assignments in time.
6. Belinda __________________ (**lecture**) by her mother for sneaking out of the house to go partying now.
7. My sister __________________ (**claim**) that she was not at home when the courier came by to deliver my parcel.
8. Penny's hair __________________ (**dye**) red for her sister's wedding.
9. I __________________ (**finish**) two whole pizzas after I came back from my evening run.
10. The famous Blue Mosque in İstanbul __________________ (**build**) by Sedefkar Mehmed Agha.

3 REVISION :

Fill in the blanks with causatives.

1. Please get your table __________________ (**reserve**) before you go to that restaurant.
2. Nancy had the house __________________ (**remodel**) for the fifth time this year because she is unsatisfied with the way the kitchen looks.
3. I would like to have my new suit __________________ (**fit**) by a professional tailor.
4. Matthew got his brother __________________ (**fetch**) him some water while he was busy talking to the salesman over the phone.
5. I had my flights for this summer vacation __________________ (**book**) in case the prices increase.
6. Maria got her sister __________________ (**finish**) her homework assignment.
7. Peter needs to have his car __________________ (**service**) before he goes on his road trip.
8. Last weekend, Harry got his butler __________________ (**clean**) the whole mansion.
9. When Ronald started his new school, he got his father __________________ (**buy**) him a new bike.
10. Every six months, you should get a dentist __________________ (**check**) your teeth for cavities.
11. You should always have all your documents __________________ (**verify**) before you go on a trip abroad.
12. Peter got his assistant __________________ (**call**) the lawyer's office to confirm his appointment.
13. After losing the football match, our coach made us __________________ two hundred push-ups.
14. Jane had her phone __________________ (**repair**) by the manufacturer's technician.
15. My piano teacher made me __________________ (**practise**) the song over and over again for the performance this weekend.

4

REVISION :
Choose the correct option.

1. ***The Persistence of Memory* ---- by Salvador Dali in 1931.**

A) was painted
B) is painted

2. **I remember that when I was a kid, my parents ---- me for not brushing my teeth before bedtime.**

A) would punish
B) would be punished

3. **The Harry Potter series ---- into more than 68 languages.**

A) has translated
B) has been translated

4. **You have to speak more than three languages ---- for the job.**

A) considered
B) to be considered

5. **Henry ---- his left wisdom tooth ---- as it was giving him toothaches in the middle of the night.**

A) had / removed
B) had / remove

6. **I ---- by my little brother who understands my 12th grade Math question that I cannot solve.**

A) am impressed
B) am impressing

7. **My warm and fuzzy winter scarf and mittens ---- by my grandmother and ---- to me as a birthday gift.**

A) knitted / giving
B) were knitted / given

8. **Which of these books ---- you ----?**

A) have / read
B) had / read

9. **John was ---- to ---- the dishes for a week after he failed some of his lessons.**

A) made / wash
B) make / washed

10. **The project team leader ---- that we ---- for the competition, based on our efforts.**

A) says / will consider
B) said / would be considered

11. **My friends and I ---- extremely ---- after listening to the three-hour long lecture about quantum physics.**

A) were / bored
B) were / boring

12. **Gary ---- the weed in his garden---- every fortnight to keep his garden neat and clean.**

A) has / pulled out
B) has / pull out

13. **The famous jeweller ---- into by the notorious East End Band of Robbers.**

A) had been broken
B) was breaking

14. **The mailbox ---- by the strong wind during last week's hurricane.**

A) was blowing away
B) was blown away

15. **The crew ---- his most valuable possession when he was at sea.**

A) had been lost
B) had lost

16. **Every ten year old child loves ---- to a trip to the amusement park.**

A) being treated
B) being treating

17. **Kevin ---- for breaking into his neighbour's shed last night.**

A) could be arresting
B) might be arrested

18. **I would like to request my son ---- for the exam next week as he has a doctor's appointment.**

A) to be exempted
B) to exempt

19. **Harry is ---- for the position of class president after his exemplary performance during the last semester.**

A) to be considering
B) being considered

20. **Peter ---- from the final year play because he ---- during classes.**

A) will be excluded / has misbehaved
B) will exclude / was misbehaved

PASSIVE & CAUSATIVE

TEST 1

1. **Robert ---- that his house ---- green as it is his favourite colour.**

A) is insisted / is painted
B) is insisting / is painted
C) insisted / be painted
D) was insisted / was painted
E) was insisting / was painted

2. **Dolphins ---- to be one of the most intelligent animals in the world. It ---- a few years ago that they have a language of their own to communicate among themselves.**

A) are believed / was discovered
B) were believed / has discovered
C) have been believed / is discovered
D) aren't believed / discovered
E) believed / was discovered

3. **John ---- the pizza with a generous serving of pineapples, olives, tomatoes and pepperoni and it ---- by his children in the blink of an eye.**

A) has made / is eaten
B) made / was eaten
C) is made / ate
D) was made / will be eaten
E) had made / would have been eaten

4. **Sean and Dylan were ---- the cinema by the security guard as they were chatting loudly on their phones while watching the movie.**

A) make to leaving
B) made to left
C) made to leaving
D) made to leave
E) make to leave

5. **Belinda is ---- to ---- her sister get over a mild depression. She would never be able to recover by herself.**

A) being thought / have helped
B) thought / have been helped
C) thinking / haven't helped
D) thinking / have helped
E) thought / have helped

6. **Who ---- that book you were reading ---- by? I have been trying to figure it out since the morning but I can't.**

A) was / written
B) did / write
C) was / be written
D) is / writing
E) does / write

7. **Peter was ---- to ---- the poison to save his beloved wife by the enemy forces, which was cruel even for them.**

A) made / drank
B) make / drink
C) made / drink
D) making / drinking
E) make / drank

8. **It is important to ---- your white shirt ---- for tomorrow's meeting with the board of directors. Everyone knows that the first impression has a lot to do with the clothes you are wearing.**

A) get / to iron
B) have / to iron
C) have / to have ironed
D) make / iron
E) have / ironed

9. **My line of thought ---- the crying and screaming kids across the street and it became hard to focus.**

A) was interrupting with
B) was interrupted by
C) was being interrupting
D) was interrupted
E) interrupted

10. **Amy is ---- to ---- thirty million dollars from her grandfather. She still denies it, though.**

A) rumoured / have inherited
B) rumoured / have been inherited
C) rumouring / have inherited
D) being rumoured / to be inherited
E) rumouring / have been inherited

11. I am experiencing dreadful headaches and I ---- the doctor to ---- a thorough body check up to ensure that I am healthy.

A) get / doing
B) have / do
C) will get / do
D) will have / be done
E) got / doing

12. Liam ---- by the principal for handing in the money he found on the floor instead of putting it in his pocket in the conference hall at the moment.

A) has been rewarded
B) has been rewarding
C) was being rewarded
D) will have been rewarded
E) is being rewarded

13. The new operating system ---- in the company's website starting tonight and it ---- to be a great advancement for the company.

A) will be installing / was supposed
B) will be installed / is supposed
C) has been installed / will suppose
D) will be being installed / suppose
E) is installing / is supposed

14. Felicia ---- her dog ---- as it has been suffering from diabetes for over two years now.

A) might have / put down
B) shouldn't have / put down
C) should make / putting down
D) can't have / putting down
E) should be letting / putting down

15. My brothers and I ---- to ---- our meals by our grandmother before we could have dessert.

A) made / finished
B) made / finished
C) were made / finish
D) have made / finishing
E) were making / are finishing

16. Katie, the smartest kid in Orange class, would very much like ---- as the class monitor. But her over-confidence is just annoying, so she is not fit for that.

A) to choose
B) to being chosen
C) to have chosen
D) to chosen
E) to be chosen

17. My teacher ---- us that we are to read the book before the end of this semester.

A) will warn
B) warned
C) is being warned
D) has warned
E) has been warned

18. Ruby is ---- to ---- the highest mark in Chemistry in the entire school but it is not certain yet.

A) said / have scored
B) saying / score
C) said / scoring
D) to say / have scored
E) said / have been scored

19. My new car was stolen ---- the punks ---- nothing better to do.

A) with / by
B) with / and
C) and / by
D) by / and
E) by / with

20. The snowstorm is ---- to ---- the province by 10 p.m. today, so the warnings are coming from the local channels.

A) reported / hitting
B) reported / be hitting
C) reporting / hit
D) reporting / have hit
E) reported / be hit

PASSIVE & CAUSATIVE

TEST 2

1. **Computers ---- because the electricity was coming and going. The manager didn't want any of them to be damaged or get burnt.**

A) were turned off
B) have turned off
C) are being turned off
D) are turned off
E) are turning off

2. **Volkswagen is a German car brand but all their cars ---- in China by the Chinese.**

A) had produced
B) were produced
C) have produced
D) are produced
E) produced

3. **The church ---- by the Greeks but the government decided to take it down due to security concerns.**

A) had built
B) was built
C) has been built
D) built
E) is being built

4. **My neighbours ---- their car in front of my house and blocked the entire entrance and now we can't get out of our own house.**

A) have been parked
B) were parked
C) are parked
D) had parked
E) have parked

5. **The girl ---- her shoelaces slowly and stood up to see a strange man standing right in front of her and looking at her as if he wanted to ask something which ---- at all.**

A) tied / shouldn't be asked
B) is tying / can't ask
C) had tied / can't be asked
D) tied / asked
E) was tying / should be asked

6. **In the manor, the windows ---- so tightly that a single blow of air couldn't go into even through the old wooden frames.**

A) are being shut
B) aren't shut
C) had shut
D) were shut
E) shut

7. **The children in the school ---- right now as we speak by the state health team. They have been carrying out this vaccination practise for years now.**

A) will be vaccinated
B) are vaccinated
C) are being vaccinated
D) are vaccinating
E) will vaccinate

8. **The truck driver ---- what he was supposed to do as he was in a panic mood, so he left the wounded man in the middle of nowhere and drove away.**

A) is known
B) was known
C) didn't know
D) knows
E) hasn't known

9. **In order to maintain a moustache, one needs to groom it daily and make sure that it ---- thoroughly. Otherwise, there is a potential of getting lice in there.**

A) is washed
B) has washed
C) washes
D) is washing
E) will wash

10. **The family has two dogs and they ---- for them immensely. They, as a result, feel loved and as a part of the family.**

A) are cared
B) care
C) are caring
D) were cared
E) will care

11. My friend has been trying to lose weight for ages now. She ---- by her dietician that she can't because of her health problems very recently.

A) is being told
B) is told
C) told
D) has told
E) has been told

12. Margaret put on all her clothes one after another and burst into tears when she noticed how much weight she ---- right before her wedding.

A) had been gained
B) was gained
C) had gained
D) has been gained
E) has gained

13. The ferry ---- today, too, as it doesn't seem the storm will calm down and the sea surface will get smooth. I think it will be stormy for a few days more.

A) will have cancelled
B) doesn't have to be cancelled
C) should cancel
D) will have to be cancelled
E) must cancel

14. My father ---- easily even in a huge crowd because of his height. He is almost two metres tall and he is well-built.

A) can be recognised
B) can't recognise
C) shouldn't be recognised
D) has to be recognised
E) should recognise

15. All of us ---- in mud and dirt but that was the purpose of the festival. Everyone ---- in the dirt and having fun with it.

A) are covered / should be
B) cover / was to be
C) were covered / was supposed to be
D) have been covered / should be
E) will be covered / can't be

16. Conjunctivitis is a mild infection which ---- in the eye. When it happens, your eye turns pink and that's why it ---- a pink eye rather than the medical term.

A) is occurred / is called
B) occurs / was called
C) can occur / calls
D) has occurred / has been called
E) occurs / is called

17. Frida sat at the table while her husband was busy finishing a business deal. It was obvious that she wasn't happy. She ---- by her husband as she grew up as a child of constant attention.

A) needed to be spoiled
B) can't have been spoiled
C) was to spoil
D) mustn't be spoiled
E) had been spoiled

18. Melanie ---- her luggage ---- to her room by the personnel as it was too heavy for her.

A) has / carry
B) made / carry
C) makes / carried
D) gets / carry
E) had / carried

19. The flowers ---- according to their colour and species. I think that is going to be a marvellous look for our wedding ceremony.

A) were arranged
B) will be arranged
C) had to be arranged
D) will arrange
E) have arranged

20. I will ---- my cat ---- against some diseases because they can be transferred to me from him easily.

A) have / vaccinate
B) get / to vaccinate
C) make / vaccinated
D) get / vaccinated
E) make / vaccinate

CONJUNCTIONS

5 CONJUNCTIONS

Bağlaçlar taşıdıkları yapısal özellikler açısından aşağıdaki şekilde gruplandırılabilir:

A. EXPRESSING REASON AND RESULT (Neden ve Sonuç Belirtme)

1. because : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle
2. as
    - a) **as + clause** : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle
    - b) **as + clause** : -iken
    - c) **as + clause** : -dığı gibi
    - d) **as + noun** : ... olarak
3. since
    - a) **since + clause** : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle
    - b) **since + clause / noun** : -den beri
4. inasmuch as (= insofar as) : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle
5. seeing (that) (= seeing as) : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle, ... bakımından
6. for : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle
7. now (that) : madem ki, -e göre, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle, ... bakımından
8. in that : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle, ... bakımından
9. because of : -den dolayı, ... yüzünden, -den ötürü, ... sebebiyle
10. due to : -den dolayı, ... yüzünden, -den ötürü, ... sebebiyle
11. owing to : -den dolayı, ... yüzünden, -den ötürü, ... sebebiyle
12. on account of : -den dolayı, ... yüzünden, -den ötürü, ... sebebiyle
13. thanks to : -ın / -in sayesinde / yüzünden, -dan / -den dolayı, ... nedeniyle
14. on the grounds (of / that) : -e dayanarak, ... nedeniyle, ... sebebiyle
15. as a result (of) : sonuç olarak, sonuç itibarıyla; ... neticesinde, ... sonucunda
16. so : bu nedenle, bu yüzden, bu bakımdan
17. therefore : bu nedenle, bu yüzden, bu bakımdan
18. consequently : bu nedenle, bu yüzden, bu bakımdan, sonuç olarak, dolayısıyla
19. that's why : bu nedenle, bu sebeple, bu yüzden
20. hence : bundan dolayı, bu yüzden
21. thus : böylece, bu nedenle, bunun için
22. as a consequence (of) : sonuç olarak, bu nedenle; -nın sonucu olarak
23. for this reason : bundan dolayı, bu yüzden, bu nedenle
24. accordingly : bu nedenle, bu yüzden, bu bakımdan, buna uygun olarak
25. thereby : böylece, bu yüzden, bu nedenle
26. in view (of / that) : ... yüzünden, -dan / -den dolayı
27. so / such ... (that ...) : o kadar ... ki ...

B. EXPRESSING CONDITION (Koşul Belirtme)

28.	if	: eğer, -sa, -se
29.	only if (= only when)	: ancak ve ancak, eğer, şayet, sadece
30.	providing (that) = provided (that)	: eğer, -mak / -mek şartıyla, koşuluyla
31.	on condition that	: ... şartıyla, ... koşuluyla
32.	as long as (= so long as)	: -mak / -mek şartıyla, -dığı / -diği sürece
33.	unless	: -madıkça / -medikçe, eğer, olmazsa
34.	in the event of / that	: ... olursa / olduğunda; ... durumunda, olduğu takdirde

C. EXPRESSING UNEXPECTED RESULTS AND CONTRASTING STATEMENTS (Beklenmeyen Sonuçlar ve Çelişen İfadeleri Belirtme)

35.	although	: -e / -a rağmen
36.	though	: -e / -a rağmen
37.	even though	: -e / -a rağmen
38.	much as	: -e / -a rağmen
39.	even if	: -sa bile, -se bile
40.	while	: -dığı halde, -e karşın, -iken, rağmen
41.	whereas	: -dığı halde, -e karşın, -iken, oysa, halbuki
42.	when	: -dığı halde, -e karşın, -iken
43.	despite	: -e / -a rağmen
44.	in spite of	: -e / -a rağmen
45.	but	: ama, fakat
46.	yet	: ama, fakat
47.	however	: ancak, ama, fakat
48.	nevertheless (= nonetheless)	: yine de, buna rağmen, ama, fakat
49.	still	: ama, bununla birlikte, yine de, fakat
50.	even so	: buna rağmen, yine de, öyle olsa bile
51.	(on the one hand) ... on the other hand	: (bir yandan ...,) öte yandan ..., diğer yandan
52.	adjective + as (= adjective + though)	: -e / -a rağmen
53.	on the contrary	: tam tersine, aksine, bilakis
54.	in contrast	: bunun aksine
55.	notwithstanding	: -a / -e karşın, -a / -e rağmen, yine de
56.	contrary to	: -ın tersine, -ın aksine
57.	as opposed to	: -ın tersine, -ın aksine
58.	for all	: -e / -a rağmen, her şeye karşın, her şeye rağmen

D. EXPRESSING PARALLEL AND CORRESPONDING STATEMENTS (Aynı Doğrultuda Olan ve Birbirine Uygun Düşen İfadeleri Belirtme)

59. moreover : üstelik, ayrıca, dahası
60. besides : bundan başka, bununla birlikte, yanı sıra
61. furthermore : üstelik, ayrıca, dahası
62. in addition : ilave olarak, ayrıca
63. in addition to : -a / -e ilave olarak, -ın yanı sıra
64. also : de, da, dahi, hem de, ayrıca
65. as well as : -ın yanı sıra, ... ile birlikte
66. indeed : aslında, doğrusu, doğrusunu söylemek gerekirse

E. EXPRESSING PURPOSE (Amaç Belirtme)

67. in order to (= to) : -mak / -mek için
68. so as to (= to) : -mak / -mek için
69. so that : -sin diye, -mesi için, diye
70. in order that : -sin diye, -mesi için, diye
71. lest : -masın / -mesin diye, korkusuyla

F. PAIRED CONJUNCTIONS (İkili Bağlaçlar)

72. neither ... nor ... : ne ... ne ..., ne ... ne de ...
73. either ... or ... : ya ... ya da ...
74. not only ... but also (as well) ... : sadece ... değil, aynı zamanda ...
75. both ... and ... : hem ... hem ..., hem ... hem de ...
76. whether ... or ... : -ıp / -ip -mediğini / -meyeceğini, ister ... ister ...
77. no sooner ... than ... : -ar / -er, -maz / -mez
78. hardly ... when ... : -ar / -er, -maz / -mez
scarcely ... when ... : -ar / -er, -maz / -mez
barely ... when ... : -ar / -er, -maz / -mez

G. GIVING EXAMPLES AND CLARIFYING (Örnek Verme ve Açıklama)

79. for instance / for example : örneğin
80. in other words : diğer bir deyişle, başka bir deyişle
81. that is to say : yani, yani demek oluyor ki, bu da demektir ki
82. that is : yani, yani demek oluyor ki, bu da demektir ki

H. OTHER EXPRESSIONS (Diğer İfadeler)

83.	as for	-a / -e gelince, söz konusu … olunca
84.	as to	-a / -e gelince, … hakkında
85.	as regards	-a / -e gelince, … ile ilgili olarak, … bakımından, açısından
86.	as of (= as from)	-den itibaren
87.	as if (= as though)	-mış / -miş gibi, sanki
88.	in case	... ihtimaline karşı, -sı halinde, diye, olabilir diye
89.	in case of	... halinde, ... durumunda
90.	otherwise	yoksa, aksi takdirde
91.	or (else)	yoksa, aksi takdirde
92.	but for	... olmasa(ydı)
93.	except for	… hariç, dışında
94.	for fear of / that	... korkusuyla, diye
95.	like	… gibi
96.	unlike	-den farklı olarak, -ın aksine
97.	meanwhile (= in the meantime)	bu sırada, bu esnada
98.	regardless of (= irrespective of)	-a / -e bakmadan, aldırmaksızın, -ı / -i göz önünde bulundurmaksızın
99.	apart from (= aside from)	-den hariç, -e ek olarak
100.	likewise (= similarly)	benzer şekilde
101.	such as	… gibi
102.	rather than	... yerine, -maktansa / -mektense, -den ziyade
103.	nor	ne de
104.	on the whole (= generally)	genel olarak, genellikle, bütünüyle
105.	in fact (= as a matter of fact)	aslında
106.	in particular (= especially)	özellikle
107.	after all	buna rağmen, yine de, her şeye rağmen
108.	instead (of)	bunun yerine; -ın / -in yerine
109.	to sum up, to summarise, in conclusion, briefly, in short	kısaca, kısaca söylemek gerekirse, özetlemek gerekirse
110.	supposing (= assuming that)	... farz edersek, diyelim ki ..., varsayalım
111.	with a view to / with the aim of	diye, için, amacıyla

BAĞLAÇLARIN KULLANIM ŞEKİLLERİ

1. Bir cümlenin başına gelerek söz konusu cümleyle anlamlı bir bütün oluşturabilen bağlaçlar:

- I don't go there very often **though it is a very cosy place**.
  - Bağlaçlar iki veya daha fazla cümleyi birleştirip tek bir birleşik cümle yapmak için kullanılırlar. Yukarıdaki cümleyi altı çizili bölüm 1., koyu renkli bölüm 2. cümlecik olacak şekilde ele alabiliriz. Bağlaç olan 'though' 2. cümleciğin başında olmasına rağmen hiçbir anlam değişikliği olmadan 1. ve 2. bölümler yer değiştirebilir ve cümle dilbilgisi açısından doğru olur.

- **Though it is a very cosy place**, I don't go there very often.
  - Bu şekilde kullanılabilen yapılar ilerleyen bölümlerde '+ clause' ifadesi ile belirtilmiştir. Bu tür kullanımlarda bağlaç cümle ortasında ise arkasından gelen cümle ile bir bütün oluşturmayacak şekilde de Türkçeye çevrilebilmesi mümkündür:

- I go there very often **because** it is a very cosy place. *(Oraya çok sık giderim çünkü orası çok sıcak bir mekân. VEYA Orası çok sıcak bir mekân olduğu için oraya çok sık giderim.)*

2. Bir ismin veya isim görevi gören bir yapının başına gelerek o yapıyla anlamlı bir bütün oluşturabilen bağlaçlar:

- I don't go there very often **despite its cosiness**.
  - Bu cümlede koyu renkli bölüm bir bütün olarak görülebilir ve herhangi bir anlam değişikliğine yol açmadan cümle başında da kullanılabilir.

- **Despite its cosiness**, I don't go there very often.
  - Bu şekilde kullanılabilen yapılar ilerleyen bölümlerde '+ noun' ifadesi ile belirtilmiştir. Bir ismin veya isim görevi gören bir yapının başına gelerek o yapıyla anlamlı bir bütün oluşturabilen bağlaçlar çoğunlukla aşağıdaki yapılarla kullanılırlar.

1) + noun:
   - **Because of our workload**, we couldn't go on a vacation.
2) + pronoun:
   - **Because of this**, we couldn't go on a vacation.
3) + gerund:
   - **Because of working hard**, we couldn't go on a vacation.
4) + the fact that ...(clause)...:
   - **Because of the fact that we were working hard**, we couldn't go on a vacation.

3. Bir fiilin yalın halinden (bare infinitive) önce gelen bağlaçlar:

- I studied really hard **so as to pass** my exams.
  - Bu cümlede 'so as to' yapısından sonra fiil hiçbir ek almadan yalın haliyle kullanılmıştır. Bu şekilde kullanılabilen yapılar ilerleyen bölümlerde '+ verb' ifadesi ile belirtilmiştir.

4. Yukarıdaki sınıflandırmaların dışında kalan bağlaçlar:

Bu tür bağlaçlar için herhangi bir kullanım kuralı verilmemiştir. Bu yapılar çoğunlukla 'therefore' veya 'nevertheless' gibi tek bir kelime olarak çevrilen ve cümlenin herhangi bir kısmıyla bütünleşmeden de kendi başına anlamları olan bağlaçlardır.

- The tablet is very light and **therefore** very suitable to take wherever you go.
  - Bu cümlede 'therefore' yapısı 'bu yüzden' olarak cümleden bağımsız bir şekilde çevrilebilir.

A EXPRESSING REASON AND RESULT (Neden ve Sonuç Belirtme)

1 because : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle

YAPI :

because + clause (cümlecik)

'Because' yapısı ana cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirten yan cümlelerde kullanılır.

- Yesterday I had to go to work on the bus **because my car broke down.**

Ana cümle
(Yapılan eylem)

Yan cümlecik
(Yapılan eylemin nedeni)

- I am not going to be able to go out for dinner tonight **because I have to finish this assignment.**
- It's dangerous to put all of your money into one single stock **because that company might fail.**
- We were not able to get much done at work today **because we couldn't access the Internet.**
- I didn't pass my chemistry exam **because I hated the class and didn't study much.**

2 as : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle / -iken / -dığı gibi / ... olarak

YAPI :

a as + clause (cümlecik): çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle

'As' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirten bir yan cümlede kullanılır.

- We had to take the road that goes through the hills **as the coastal road was closed.**

Ana cümle
(Yapılan eylem)

Yan cümlecik
(Yapılan eylemin nedeni)

- I decided not to go to the workshop **as I thought that it would probably be a waste of time.**
- Matt took a day off work to go and see the football match **as he is a huge football fan.**
- The girl did not tell her family that she had got into a fight **as she did not want to worry them.**
- I need to save up a lot of money the next few months **as I am going to Chile on vacation at the end of the year.**

b as + clause (cümlecik) : -iken

'As' temel cümledeki eylemle eş zamanlı olan başka bir eylemi anlatan bir yan cümlede de kullanılır. Bu anlamdaki 'as' zaman belirten 'while' ile aynıdır.

- **As I was running down the road**, I tripped on a tiny stone and fell.

Yan cümlecik
(Eş zamanlı yapılan eylem)

Ana cümle
(Yapılan eylem)

- **As Jamie was waiting for Max**, he was doing some of the work on his laptop at the train station.
- **As the neighbour's dog was barking,** a cat was running quickly probably thinking that the dog would come after it.
- I am working like crazy **as my boyfriend is travelling through Europe with his mates now**.
- **As the new immigration law is coming into effect**, probably less and less people are moving to this country.

c as + clause (cümlecik) : -dığı gibi

'As' benzetme yaparken kullanılır.

- **As we were told by the tour guide**, the museum was crowded with hundreds of people.

Yan cümlecik
(Benzetme yapılan eylem)

Ana cümle
(Yapılan eylem)

- **As it was claimed by the sign**, the road was very slippery and dangerous after it had rained.
- My brother failed his Algebra test, **as I knew that he would.**
- **As it was mentioned by the waiter**, the ice-cream sundae dessert was extremely delicious.

d as + noun (isim) : ... olarak

'As' bir kişinin veya şeyin ne olduğunu, ne olarak kullanıldığını da anlatabilir.

- **As the alfa male of the group**, the lion king kills the lion cubs from a previous father as soon as he takes over the clan.
- I called my old friend, Bill, and asked him if he would help out at the competition **as a judge**.
- Tom reconsidered his position in the company **as the sales manager** before he quit.
- **As the leader of the group**, Jane thought that she should set a good example and work really hard.
- The Burj Khalifa, **as the tallest building in Dubai,** has a great view of the city from its top.

3 **since :** çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle / -den beri

YAPI :

a since + clause (cümlecik) : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle

'Since' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirten yan cümlelerde kullanılır.

- **Since I did not know anyone in the class,** I decided to sit at the back by myself.
- I had to work really hard over the weekend, **since I was busy during the week and wasn't able to finish my assignment.**
- **Since we are almost at the end of the year**, I have started to become lazy at work.
- I am not sure if we are going to go out tonight **since it looks like it will be raining.**
- **Since her children were shouting and being rude**, their mother didn't buy them any ice-cream.

b since + clause / noun : -den beri

'Since' temel cümledeki eylemin ne zamandan beri yapılmakta olduğunu belirtmek için de kullanılır.

- This is the third time that there has been a major protest in the city centre **since the elections.**
- John has been late to work twice **since he started having problems with his car.**
- I have gone shopping with my husband just four times **since January.**
- My mother has had to go to hospital at least once a week **since she was diagnosed with cancer.**
- This is the best thing that has happened to me **since I got a promotion at work last month.**

4 **inasmuch as (= insofar as) :** çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle

YAPI :

inasmuch as + clause (cümlecik)

'Inasmuch as' temel cümledeki eylemin nedenini belirten yan cümlelerde kullanılır.

- I prefer driving to work, **inasmuch as I hate walking**, especially when it is hot.
- The announcement our boss made today seems promising, **insofar as I think it means we won't have to come to work next Friday.**
- My new computer seems to be better than my old one, **inasmuch as it doesn't freeze or crash.**
- My parents seem to be less worried about me now, **inasmuch as they only call once a week rather than every day**.

5 seeing (that) (= seeing as) : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle, ... bakımından

YAPI :

seeing that + clause (cümlecik)

'Seeing that' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirtmek için kullanılır.

- **Seeing that we are going to have to wait at home for the phone call**, we may as well watch a movie.
- I think we should try to finish the assignment today, **seeing that tomorrow we will be busy with other things.**
- I'm not sure that I can trust you to look after my dog, **seeing as the last time I left him here, you almost lost him.**
- **Seeing as there are going to be at least ten people coming over tonight**, maybe we should order food instead of cooking.

6 for : çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle

YAPI :

for + clause (cümlecik)

'For' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirten yan cümlelerde kullanılır.

- You should try to exercise at least twice a week, **for it has proven to increase your lifespan by years.**
- James was surprised when he lost the race, **for he always overestimates his own abilities.**
- Try not to drive if you are too tired, **for if you do, you are much more likely to have an accident.**
- We do not have to go to the same restaurant tonight, **for there are many others that we could try**.

Uyarı *'For' yapısı kendisinden sonra cümle gelip 'because' ile eş anlamlı olarak kullanıldığında cümle başında kullanılmaz; sadece cümlenin ortasında kullanılabilir. Fakat amaç belirtirse ve kendisinden sonra 'V_{ing}' alırsa, o zaman cümle başında kullanılabilir.*

- ***For being a qualified teacher**, you should follow the new approaches in education.*
  (Nitelikli bir öğretmen olmak için... = In order to be a qualified teacher...)
- ***For giving her a gift**, I called her to my house.*

7 **now (that) :** mademki, -e göre, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle, ... bakımından

YAPI :

now that + clause (cümlecik)

'Now that' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirten bir yan cümlecik oluştururken kullanılır.

- There are many changes that I plan to make at work, **now that I have been promoted to manager.**
- **Now that I have my own apartment**, I don't have to worry about cleaning up after my flatmates.
- I am going to try to find a job this month, **now that I have graduated from university.**
- **Now that I have my own car**, I plan to go away on lots of trips during the weekends.
- **Now that I am working from home**, I can go to bed and wake up whenever I want to.

8 **in that :** çünkü, -dığı için, ... sebebiyle, ... bakımından

YAPI :

in that + clause (cümlecik)

'In that' temel cümlede anlatılan durumun sebebini anlatan yan cümlede kullanılır.

- Getting a university degree is more important today **in that you need one in order to get a good job.**
- Having a personal trainer can be useful **in that they can motivate you to work harder at the gym.**
- Meditating once a day can be a very positive thing for you **in that it lowers your stress levels and helps you relax.**
- This psychology textbook is very interesting **in that it offers some insight into the mind.**

9 **because of :** -den dolayı, ... yüzünden, -den ötürü, ... sebebiyle

YAPI :

because of + noun (isim)
because of + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'Because of' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirtmek için kullanılır.

- There is a lot of traffic on the bridge today **because of the lane that they had to close for repairs.**
- We are not going to go on vacation to that country any more **because of the recent political problems there.**
- The barbecue event in the park on Sunday was cancelled **because of the freezing weather.**
- I won't be doing anything fun this weekend **because of the fact that I have to do a large amount of homework.**

10 due to : -den dolayı, ... yüzünden, -den ötürü, ... sebebiyle

YAPI :

due to + noun (isim)
due to + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'Due to' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirtmek için kullanılır.

- My flight to Mexico was delayed by two hours **due to weather conditions**.
- We were late to the meeting unfortunately, **due to the traffic jam on the highway.**
- **Due to his lazy attitude**, Randy wasn't promoted to manager, even though he had been working there the longest.
- I don't think that I am going to go on the hike tomorrow, **due to the fact that I have just picked up a cold.**

11 owing to : -den dolayı, ... yüzünden, -den ötürü, ... sebebiyle

YAPI :

owing to + noun (isim)
owing to + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'Owing to' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirtmek için kullanılır.

- They were kicked out of their apartment today, **owing to the fact that they hadn't paid the rent for three months**.
- My car was towed today, **owing to my parking it in front of a fire hydrant.**
- I am thinking about quitting my Spanish lessons, **owing to my lack of progress in the past few months.**
- **Owing to the budget cuts this year**, the airline company is no longer giving out free magazines.

12 on account of : -den dolayı, ... yüzünden, -den ötürü, ... sebebiyle

YAPI :

on account of + noun (isim)
on account of + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'On account of' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirtmek için kullanılır.

- I decided not to drive to work today, **on account of the long traffic delays in the city this week.**
- There are lots of police around the airport today, **on account of the terrorist threat.**
- I am finding it hard to get to sleep at the moment, **on account of all the dogs barking outside.**
- My co-worker was fired today, **on account of all the times that he had been late to work.**
- The experiment was halted **on account of the fact that the funding was withdrawn**.

13 **thanks to** : -ın / -in sayesinde / yüzünden, -dan / -den dolayı, ... nedeniyle

YAPI :

thanks to + noun (isim)
thanks to + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'Thanks to' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılışının / oluşunun kimin ya da neyin sayesinde gerçekleştiğini belirtmek için kullanılır.

- The politician is becoming much more popular, **thanks to all the positive news coverage she is getting.**
- Communication is a lot faster today than it was 100 years ago, **thanks to the Internet.**
- My performance at work was a lot better this month, **thanks to the support of my boss.**
- The Internet is really slow at the moment, **thanks to my roommate who is downloading a new game.**

14 **on the grounds (of / that)** : -e dayanarak, ... nedeniyle, ... sebebiyle

YAPI :

on the grounds of + noun (isim)
on the grounds of + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)
on the grounds that + clause (cümlecik)

'On the grounds (of / that)' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirtmek için kullanılır.

- The advert was removed from television **on the grounds of offending some people.**
- He decided to run for the position of treasurer **on the grounds of knowing more about managing money than anyone else in the group**.
- Ethan was fired **on the grounds that he had cost the company thousands of dollars.**
- I was hired in advance **on the grounds that the company would need more employees before I came to work.**

15 **as a result (of)** : sonuç olarak, sonuç itibarıyla; ... neticesinde, ... sonucunda

YAPI :

as a result
as a result of + noun (isim)
as a result of + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'As a result' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. 'As a result of' temel cümlede belirtilen sonuca neden olan eylem ya da durum anlatılırken kullanılır. Sebep ve sonuç belirten cümlecikle, temel cümle anlam kaybı olmadan yer değiştirebilir.

- My sister has lived in Brazil for a long time, and **as a result she speaks Portuguese rather fluently**.
- Many people in the western world are now overweight, **as a result of too much fast food and not enough exercise**.
- I finally got the grades I wanted this semester, **as a result of all the nights I spent studying**.
- The politician did not get re-elected this year, **as a result of his failure to keep his promises**.
- Alice had a deadly illness, **as a result everyone in the family were sad for her**.

16

so : bu nedenle, bu yüzden, bu bakımdan

'So' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. Sonuç belirten cümle ile beraber kullanılır ve cümleler yer değiştiremez. Sonuç bildiren cümle 'so'dan sonra gelmelidir.

- There were no umbrellas that we could find, **so we had to run through the rain**.
- I forgot to buy toilet paper for the house, **so I had to go back to the supermarket**.
- I got into a bit of trouble for coming late to class all the time, **so I have started to leave the house earlier**.

17

therefore : bu nedenle, bu yüzden, bu bakımdan

'Therefore' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. Arkasından sonuç cümlesi gelir.

- I have decided that I am going to quit my job and move to another country; **therefore, I am selling my car**.
- I have spent more money than I budgeted for already; **therefore, I am not going to buy anything else this week**.
- The product had not been selling very well for the whole year; **therefore, the company decided not to sell it any more**.
- Our boss told us that we can go home if we have finished all our work; **therefore, I'm leaving**.

18

consequently : bu nedenle, bu yüzden, bu bakımdan, sonuç olarak, dolayısıyla

'Consequently' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. Ana cümledeki eylemin sonucunu belirtmek için kullanılır.

- The man kept taking phone calls during the play and was **consequently asked to leave the theatre**.
- John talks constantly in class instead of paying attention and has **consequently failed his test**.
- My parents keep changing the design of the house they are building and have **consequently gone over their budget**.

19

that's why : bu nedenle, bu sebeple, bu yüzden

'That's why' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. Ana cümledeki eylemin sonucunda olanı / yapılan eylemi belirtmek için kullanılır.

- My wife is always complaining that I don't get her perfect gifts; **that's why I have bought her something really special for her birthday this year.**
- We are having our kitchen remodelled this weekend; **that's why we are going to stay in a hotel**.
- The last backpack I bought only lasted me for one year and **that's why this time I'm going to buy a better quality one**.

20 **hence** : bundan dolayı, bu yüzden

'Hence' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. Ana cümledeki eylemin sonucunu belirtmek için kullanılır.

- Samantha has been rude to everyone in the class, **hence she has no friends now**.
- Troy's car broke down yesterday, **hence he has to walk to school for the rest of the week**.
- Jill spends too much money on eating out at restaurants; **hence she is always broke at the end of the month**.

Not *'Hence' bağlaç olarak daha çok resmi yerlerde kullanılır. Bir şeyin sebebini anlatacağımız zaman 'hence'ten sonra isim getiririz.*

- *I have been waiting for this moment, **hence my extreme enthusiasm**.*

21 **thus** : böylece, bu nedenle, bunun için

'Thus' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. Ana cümledeki eylemin sonucunu belirtmek için kullanılır.

- The boss said he isn't happy with our presentation; **thus**, **we need to work on a new one today.**
- Our babysitter called to say she couldn't come tonight to look after the kids, **thus we are staying at home**.
- I accepted the job offer and **thus became the newest employee at the company**.

Uyarı *'Hence' ve 'thus' yapılarını takip eden bölüm her zaman bir 'clause' olmayabilir.*

- *I thought that the interview went well, **hence my disappointment when they never called me back**.*
- *They increased the salary on the job offer and were **thus able to attract some very skilled candidates**.*
- *Everyone was trying to phone the call centre today, **hence the wait for two hours before someone answered my call**.*
- *We have developed a new technology that no other company has, **thus allowing us to do better than our competitors**.*

22 **as a consequence (of)** : sonuç olarak, bu nedenle; -nın sonucu olarak

YAPI:

as a consequence + clause (cümlecik)
as a consequence of + noun (isim)
as a consequence of + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'As a consequence' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. Ana cümledeki eylemin sonucunu belirtmek için kullanılır.

- Countries around the world have not done enough to stop global warming. **As a consequence**, temperatures continue to rise worldwide.

- **As a consequence of spending too much time with her friends and not enough time studying**, Jane's grades have started to drop.
- Finn thought that nobody would notice if he stole a few things from work. **As a consequence of his actions**, he no longer has a job.
- **As a consequence of fighting in school**, Henry and Thomas are now suspended for three days.

23 for this reason : bundan dolayı, bu yüzden, bu nedenle

'For this reason' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. Ana cümledeki eylemin sonucunu belirtmek için kullanılır.

- My mother has been in a bad mood all morning, and **for this reason, I have been staying in my room out of her way.**
- I have not slept well at all this week, **for this reason, I have been too tired to exercise**.
- I just found out that I had been accepted into my dream university, **for this reason, I decided to go out and celebrate**.

24 accordingly : bu nedenle, bu yüzden, bu bakımdan, buna uygun olarak

'Accordingly' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. Ana cümledeki eylemin sonucunu belirtmek için kullanılır.

- The dinner we are going to tonight is going to be formal; **accordingly, I will be wearing a suit**.
- My father is an expert on cars; **accordingly, I took him with me when I went to buy a car**.
- Pure gold is too soft to be made into jewellery; **accordingly, it is usually mixed with another metal like copper**.

⚠ **Uyarı** *'Accordingly' 'uygun bir şekilde, buna göre' anlamında da kullanılabilir. Ancak bu kullanımıyla bir bağlaç değil zarftır.*

- *When my son started crying at the supermarket, I told him he was no longer a child and should act* ***accordingly****.*
- *It is going to rain today and it will probably be very cold, so make sure that you dress* ***accordingly****.*

25 thereby : böylece, bu yüzden, bu nedenle

YAPI:

thereby + clause (cümlecik)

thereby + V_{ing}

'Thereby' iki cümle arasında neden-sonuç ilişkisi kurar. Ana cümledeki eylemin sonucunu belirtmek için kullanılır. Kendisinden sonra bir cümle gelerek kullanılabilmesine rağmen en yaygın kullanımı, ardından 'V_{ing}' gelmiş halidir.

- The criminal eventually confessed his crime to the police; **thereby he is now in jail.**
- The new engineer was able to find a way to use less power at our factory, **thereby decreasing our costs by 3%.**
- Tyler did not go to the meeting at the end of the day, **thereby avoiding any more discussion about his poor work.**
- Our company ran a very successful marketing campaign this month, **thereby increasing our profits by at least 10%.**

26 in view (of / that) : ... yüzünden, -dan / -den dolayı

YAPI:

in view of + noun (isim)

in view of + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

in view that + clause (cümlecik)

'In view of / that' temel cümledeki eylemin yapılış / oluş nedenini belirtmek için kullanılır.

- I decided not to take the motorway to work **in view of the new toll that you have to pay to use.**
- Randy didn't want to stay at the hotel, **in view of their policy that guests had to be out of the hotel by 10 a.m. the next day.**
- I'm going to my grandma's house tonight, **in view that she has offered to cook me my favourite dinner.**
- I have decided not to go back to the political meetings, **in view of the fact that they think of starting a revolution.**

27 so / such ... (that ...) : o kadar ... ki ...

YAPI:

so + **adjective** / **adverb** (that ...)

such + **(adjective)** noun (that ...)

a 'So / such ... that ...' yapıları niteledikleri kelimenin yol açtığı sonucu anlatan bir cümle ile devam edebilir.

- He is **so lazy that** he doesn't even get out of bed until 3 p.m. at weekends.
- The young man was driving **so fast that** he nearly hit the boy when he ran onto the road.
- The music was **so loud that** my ears were starting to hurt.
- He is **such a good listener that** I always call him when something is stressing me out.
- It was **such a long flight that** I slept for more than eight hours.
- She is **such a generous person that** she always pays for dinner when we go out with her.
- It was **such an incredible experience that** I don't think I will ever be able to forget it.

b Eğer ismin başına 'many, much, few' veya 'little' yapılarından biri getirilmişse 'such' değil, 'so' kullanılır.

- ... so **many** friends that ...
  ... so **much** money that ...
  ... so **few** friends that ...
  ... so **little** money that ...
- I have made **so much money that** I could quit my job right now if I wanted to without any worries.

c 'Such'tan sonra 'a lot of, a few, a little' getirirsek arkasından 'isim + that' gelir.

- I heard **such a lot of noise** from our neighbour's flat **that** I thought someone was being murdered.
- He makes **such a little money that** he could never feed a family of five.
- He made **such a few cookies that** all the guests had to leave hungry.

d 'So' cümleye vurgulu bir anlam vermek için cümlenin en başında kullanılabilir. Bu durumda, 'so' ve 'that' arasında yer alan cümlenin devrik olması gerekmektedir.

- **So heavy** is the bag **that** none of you can carry it.
  (The bag is **so heavy that** none of you can carry it.)
- **So quickly** did he speak **that** I couldn't catch what he was saying.
  (He spoke **so quickly that** I couldn't catch what he was saying.)

1 EXERCISE :

Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction that expresses 'reason' or 'result'. More than one answer can be correct.

1. We have decided to just go to the mall for the day __________________ everyone in our family loves the mall.
2. I think that I will just finish my work tonight __________________ I am getting near the end of the assignment.
3. There are some delays in the subway this morning __________________ the huge amount of people taking the subway to the football match.
4. Meditation is a healthy practice, __________________ it has been scientifically proven to reduce stress levels.
5. The computers are having problems at the airport today. __________________, the queues are longer than usual.
6. __________________ his knee injury, the famous football player will not be playing this season.
7. We threatened to tell the media of our extremely low salaries; __________________, we all got a pay rise.
8. George's father is the boss's son, __________________ he can come to work late all the time and not get fired.

9. I don't trust my daughter to be ready in time ________________ all the times she has been late in the past.
10. Johnny did not have to go to the swimming pool with the rest of the class, ________________ he was allergic to the chlorine in the water.

2 **EXERCISE :**

Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction that expresses 'reason' or 'result'. More than one answer can be correct.

1. He looked a little bit like a pirate, ________________ he was wearing an eye patch and leather boots.
2. It was a beautiful day outside, ________________ I decided not to watch a movie and go walk my dog instead.
3. We should probably just go to this party tonight, ________________ we have already told everyone that we are coming.
4. This project is already far over its budget; ________________, my advice is that we should abandon it now.
5. The new equipment is of much higher quality than the old stuff, and ________________ is more expensive.
6. I decided not to go for dinner with my friends ________________ I felt too tired to bother getting ready.
7. Jane has gained five kilograms this year, ________________ all the chips and chocolate she has been eating.
8. There are many websites on the Internet that you can get a virus from, ________________, it is important to have good anti-virus software.
9. The man ran to the boy and pushed him out of the way of the bus, ________________ saving his life.
10. I think that my manager should be fired, ________________ he has made nothing but bad decisions since he was promoted.
11. My company is trying to advertise more ________________ gaining more customers.
12. The interview I watched was very useful, ________________ I learned some tips on how to invest successfully.
13. Skin cancer is more common in people with whiter skin, ________________ it is important for them to wear sunscreen.
14. ________________ we have to wake up so early in the morning tomorrow, we are going to go to bed at 8 o'clock.
15. Doctor James is the best oncologist in the country; ________________, we are hiring him to treat you.

B EXPRESSING CONDITION (Koşul Belirtme)

28 **if** : eğer, -sa, -se

YAPI:

if + clause (cümlecik)

'If' ana cümlede anlatılan eylemin gerçekleşmesi için yerine getirilmesi gereken koşulu / şartı ifade eden yan cümlecik ile kullanılır.

- He would not have got such a great job **if his parents hadn't told him to apply to as many companies as possible.**
- **If global temperatures continue to increase**, lots of coastal areas will be flooded.
- She would not bother leaving the house **if she were not fine.**

⚠ Not *'If' ile ilgili detaylı bilgi 9. konu olan 'If & Wish Clauses' bölümünde verilecektir.*

29 **only if (= only when)** : ancak ve ancak, eğer, sadece, şayet

YAPI:

only if + clause (cümlecik)

'Only if' ana cümlede anlatılan eylemin gerçekleşmesi için yerine getirilmesi gereken tek koşulu ifade eden yan cümlecik ile kullanılır.

- I decided that I would stay at my job next year, **only if they offered me a larger salary.**
- It can be a good idea to study at home, **only if you do not get distracted easily.**
- **Only if my friend Rachel gives me a real apology**, will I forgive her for what she did.
- Rock climbing is a lot of fun and it is safe, **only if you have proper training.**
- **Only if they offer a well-balanced program and have good teachers,** should you send your child to that school.

⚠ Uyarı *'Only if / Only when' yapıları cümle başında kullanıldığında ardından gelen cümle devrik yapıda (inversion) olur.*

- ***Only if*** *we book in advance, will we get a table.*
- ***Only when*** *you impress them, will they hire you.*
- ***Only if*** *you're old enough, will we let you in.*

30

providing (that) = provided (that) : eğer, -mak / -mek şartıyla, koşuluyla

YAPI:

providing / provided (that) + clause (cümlecik)

'Providing / Provided (that)' cümlede anlatılan eylemin gerçekleşmesi için yerine getirilmesi gereken koşulu / şartı açıklayan bir yan cümlecik oluşturmak için kullanılır. İki yapı arasında bir anlam farkı yoktur.

- **Providing that you have brought enough water with you**, you will be able to hike to the top of the mountain.
- You can attend the concert, **provided that you have some form of ID to show you are old enough.**
- **Providing that you have kept up to date with your studies**, you should have no problem passing the exam.

31

on condition that : ... şartıyla, ... koşuluyla

YAPI:

on condition that + clause (cümlecik)

'On condition that' cümlede anlatılan eylemin gerçekleşmesi için yerine getirilmesi gereken koşulu / şartı açıklayan bir yan cümlecik oluşturmak için kullanılır.

- I have been accepted into the university of my choice, **on condition that my grades do not fall.**
- I would love to travel to Mars one day, **on condition that other people have gone first and proven that it is safe.**
- Any person can become an expert at almost anything, **on condition that they spend a considerable amount of time studying it.**

32

as long as (= so long as) : -mak / -mek şartıyla, -dığı / -diği sürece

YAPI:

as long as + clause (cümlecik)

so long as + clause (cümlecik)

'As long as' cümlede anlatılan eylemin gerçekleşmesi için yerine getirilmesi gereken koşulu / şartı açıklayan bir yan cümlecik oluşturur.

- I think that I won't be stressed out much this year, **as long as I don't have any money problems.**
- I told my friend, Jim, that he could come over to my house to watch a movie, **as long as I could choose it.**
- **So long as you don't talk much and just listen,** you can come to the meeting.

33 unless : -madıkça / -medikçe, eğer, olmazsa

YAPI:

unless + clause (cümlecik)

'Unless' cümlede anlatılan eylemin gerçekleşmesi için yerine getirilmesi gereken koşulu / şartı anlatan bir yan cümlecik oluşturur. Koşul belirten 'if' yapısının olumsuz halidir. 'If... not...' anlamına gelmektedir.

- Most high school students in Australia leave school when they are 18, **unless they choose to leave at 16 to work**.
- The cats and dogs on the street will be very cold this winter, **unless we can find people to adopt them.**
- My parents told me that I am not allowed to go out at weekends **unless I improve my grades at school.**
- I don't believe any of the wild stories that Paul tells me, **unless someone else confirms that they are true.**

⚠ **Uyarı** *'Unless' olumsuz bir yapıdır ve bu yüzden arkasından olumsuz bir cümle kullanılmaz.*

34 in the event of / that : ... olursa / olduğunda; ... durumunda, olduğu takdirde

YAPI:

in the event of + noun (isim)

in the event of + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

in the event that + clause (cümlecik)

'In the event of / that' belli bir olay veya durum olursa, yapılacak veya olacak şeyleri anlatmak için kullanılır.

- We are supposed to walk outside and stand on the grass, **in the event of a fire.**
- I always make sure that my house is fully locked up at night, **in the event of someone trying to break in.**
- You should call the airlines immediately, **in the event that your bags get lost while you are travelling.**
- **In the event that there is an earthquake,** you should drop to the ground and take cover under a solid structure.

3 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction that expresses 'condition'. More than one answer can be correct.

1. Rafting is a good activity to try, ________________ you know someone experienced who can do it with you.
2. I told the children that they could all come on the trip, ________________ they got permission from their parents first.
3. ________________ we don't stay too long at dinner, we could stop at our favourite dessert place for ice cream.
4. I don't like to eat Asian food, ________________ it is sushi, which I love.
5. ________________ nobody is coming to work, I am going to stay at home.
6. ________________ you want to pay for the room for tomorrow as well, I suggest you should start packing now.
7. ________________ a hurricane, make sure to lock all your windows and doors.
8. The lecture is incredibly interesting, ________________ you know the basics about economics.
9. I don't like to go to any sort of live music events, ________________ it is rock music.
10. I will lend you my laptop for the weekend, ________________ you promise to take good care of it.
11. ________________ we do not come home tonight, can you please let the dog out?
12. I told my wife that I would go shopping with her, ________________ it would not be for more than two hours.
13. We won't get lost in this forest, ________________ we stay on the path.
14. He decided that he wouldn't taste the strange drink, ________________ all his friends tried it too.
15. ________________ you are fit and healthy, you should easily be able to climb to the top of the tower.

C EXPRESSING UNEXPECTED RESULTS AND CONTRASTING STATEMENTS
(Beklenmeyen Sonuçlar ve Çelişen İfadeleri Belirtme)

35 although : -e / -a rağmen

YAPI:

although + clause (cümlecik)

'Although' temel cümlede anlatılan eylem ile çelişen bir durumu ifade eden yan cümlecik oluşturur. Zıtlık belirtir.

- I think Jenny is the one who has been stealing money from the cash register, **although it could also be Brian.**
- The car mechanic told me that he would have to replace my tires, **although they seemed fine to me.**
- My co-worker told me he had finished all the work, **although last time he said that he had missed some.**
- The politician said he would fix all the country's problems, **although he gave no details as to how he might actually do this.**

36 though : -e / -a rağmen

YAPI:
though + clause (cümlecik)

'Though' temel cümlede anlatılan eylem ile çelişen bir durumu ifade eden bir yan cümlecik oluşturur. Zıtlık belirtir.

- My wife is excited and wants to invest all our money in a new house, **though I don't think it's a good idea.**
- My friends act like there is only one good restaurant that we can go to, **though there are many other good ones around.**
- Johnny has gone outside to play in the rain again, **though his mother has told him many times not to.**
- **Though she knows it's bad for her health**, Jane has started to smoke cigarettes again.

⚠ **Uyarı** *'Though' yapısını 'but' anlamında cümle sonunda da kullanabiliriz.*

- *She is a really intelligent person who reads a lot of books. She is socially awkward, **though**.*
- *The job offer seems excellent as it is a good company and the salary is very good. The working hours are long, **though**.*

⚠ **Uyarı** *'Sıfat, zarf + though' şeklinde de kullanılır. Bu şekilde kullanımı 'sıfat, zarf + as' yapısı ile eş anlamlıdır. Her ikisinde de '-e rağmen' anlamındadır. (Detaylı bilgi için 52. maddeye bakınız.)*

- ***Odd though it seemed**, the captain went on to shut down the engines and stop in the middle of the ocean.*
- ***Hard as it was**, the students said goodbye to their beloved teacher.*

37 even though : -e / -a rağmen

YAPI:
even though + clause (cümlecik)

'Even though' temel cümlede anlatılan eylem ile çelişen bir durumu ifade eden bir yan cümlecik oluşturur.

- **Even though I have only tried it a few times**, I think sushi is now my favourite food.
- Somehow Jim was able to fall asleep on the couch, **even though people were talking all around him.**
- **Even though I could take the bus to work**, I still walk as I like to get a little exercise in the morning.

38

much as : -e / -a rağmen

YAPI:

much as + clause (cümlecik)

'Much as' temel cümlede anlatılan eylem ile çelişen bir durumu ifade eden bir yan cümlecik oluşturur. Zıtlık belirtir.

- **Much as I enjoyed the food,** it was too expensive for me to eat there again.
- **Much as we loved the view from the top,** the hike was a bit too difficult.
- **Much as I had a good time in Spain**, it was nice to be back home.

39

even if : -sa bile, -se bile

YAPI :

even if + clause (cümle)

'Even if' yerine getirilse bile temel cümlede anlatılan eylemin gerçekleşmesini engellemeyecek bir koşulu anlatan bir yan cümlecik oluşturur.

- We are going to try to go to the beach this weekend, **even if the weather isn't very nice.**
- **Even if we don't get an official invitation to the party**, we will go there anyway.
- You should try to learn as much as you can at school, **even if you don't think that it will be useful to you.**

40

while : -dığı halde, -e karşın, -iken, rağmen

YAPI:

while + clause (cümlecik)

a 'While' temel cümlede anlatılan eylem ile çelişen bir durumu ifade eder.

- **While my brother and I both have many similar interests,** we have never liked each other much.
- Children who have educated parents usually perform better at school, **while children from less educated families perform worse.**
- The weather in the eastern part of the country tends to be windier, **while in the western part it tends to rain a lot.**
- **While I have always thought it is important to give to charity**, my friend Tom always argues that it is a waste of money.

b 'While' zaman belirten bir yan cümlecik ile kullanılır.

- I can't think of work **while I am on holiday**.
- She can't manage to control her anger **while she is in an argument**.
- She broke her arm **while she was playing tennis with her boyfriend**.

Detaylı bilgi için 2. konu ('Tense'ler) içeriğindeki 'Time Clauses' başlığını inceleyiniz.

41 **whereas :** -dığı halde, -e karşın, -iken, oysa, halbuki

YAPI:

whereas + clause (cümlecik)

'Whereas' temel cümlede anlatılan eylem ile çelişen bir durumu veya daha farklı bir bilgiyi ifade eden bir yan cümlecik oluşturur.

- In the UK, the most common age for men to die is 86, **whereas for women it is 89.**
- Some university students prefer to stay with their families, **whereas others like to move out as soon as possible.**
- Most ocean animals breathe by taking oxygen out of the water with their gills, **whereas animals like dolphins have to go to the surface to breathe.**
- In some cultures it is polite to finish all of your food, **whereas in other cultures you should leave a little on your plate.**

⚠ **Uyarı** *'Whereas' arkasından gelen cümleye bağlı olmadan 'oysa, halbuki' olarak da Türkçeye çevrilebilir.*

42 **when :** -dığı halde, -e karşın, -iken

YAPI:

when + clause (cümlecik)

'When' temel cümlede anlatılan eylem ile çelişen bir durumu ifade eden bir yan cümlecik oluşturur. Bu kullanımda 'when' zıtlık belirtir.

- I didn't think it was fair that some students got to go on the trip, **when others had to stay at school.**
- Some of the people got straight through airport security without trouble, **when others were searched carefully.**
- Some businesses try to make products that are better quality, **when others try to make cheaper ones**.

43 **despite :** -e / -a rağmen

YAPI:

despite + noun (isim)
despite + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'Despite' temel cümlede anlatılan eylem ile çelişen bir durumu ifade eden bir yan cümlecik oluşturur. Zıtlık belirtmek için kullanılır.

- **Despite the huge accident at midday**, the tunnel is already open again for traffic.
- **Despite all the criticism our leader has been getting**, he still seems confident and happy.
- George passed all of his classes easily, **despite his parents' warnings that he was going to fail.**
- Sandra was hired to be the head of the department, **despite the fact that she didn't have any real experience.**

44 in spite of : -e / -a rağmen

YAPI:

in spite of + noun (isim)

in spite of + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'In spite of' temel cümlede anlatılan eylem ile çelişen bir durumu ifade eden bir yan cümlecik oluşturur. Zıtlık belirtmek için kullanılır.

- **In spite of all the problems we have been having at the factory,** we still managed to make enough products this month.
- **In spite of all the time I have spent studying Chinese**, I don't seem to be improving much.
- Mark's business finally started to make a profit, **in spite of everyone telling him that it would never be a success.**
- Jane walked across the frozen lake without any problems, **in spite of the warning signs.**

45 but : ama, fakat

'But' anlatılan iki eylem arasında zıtlık veya çelişki olduğunu ifade eder.

- I thought that it would only take a few hours for me to finish, **but it is taking a lot longer than I expected**.
- I was missing a few ingredients for the meal I was cooking, **but it still tasted good**.
- Jasmine didn't want to go to the summer camp, **but in the end she really enjoyed it**.

⚠ **Uyarı** *'But' bazen cümlenin ilk bölümde verilen bilgiyi tamamlayan bir yapı oluşturur. Bu kullanımıyla 'sadece, tek' anlamına gelir.*

- *I told my employees that I want nothing **but their hard work today**.*
- *Nothing **but heights really frighten me**; I hate to stand on balconies and cliffs.*
- *I want nothing **but respect from the students in my class**.*

46 yet : ama, fakat

'Yet' anlatılan iki eylem arasında zıtlık veya çelişki olduğunu ifade eder.

- I have been studying harder this semester than I did last semester, **yet my grades have not improved**.
- The salesman promised that my jacket was totally waterproof, **yet my shirt underneath is getting wet**.
- My wife said that she would be ready in five minutes, **yet fifteen minutes have passed and she is still not ready**.

⚠ **Uyarı** *Cümleye 'yet' ile başlanmaz.*

47 however : ancak, ama, fakat

a 'However' anlatılan iki eylem arasında zıtlık veya çelişki olduğunu gösterir.

- There are many different courses you may choose to take at university; **however**, **some will be more useful than others for finding a job**.
- I have always believed in saving money; **however**, **sometimes it is nice to spend a lot to have some fun**.
- This is one of the safest cities in the country; **however**, **some parts can still be dangerous at night**.
- Airplanes are one of the safest ways to travel; **however**, **occasionally planes do crash**.

b 'However' (+ adjective / adverb) : ne kadar ... olursa olsun
'No matter' (+question word) : ne kadar ... olursa olsun

- **No matter how much I study**, my grades don't seem to improve.
  However much I study, my grades don't seem to improve.
- **No matter how much I travel**, I always want to travel some more.
  However how much I travel, I always want to travel some more.
- **However hard it is**, we have to finish it in time.

c However + clause (cümlecik) : her nasıl

- You may do it **however you like.**
- You can cook this meat **however you like**, it will taste good anyway because it's super fresh.
- I can't understand **however they are planning to finish this project**. That's why I can't make the next move.

48 nevertheless (= nonetheless) : yine de, buna rağmen, ama, fakat

'Nevertheless' anlatılan iki eylem arasında zıtlık veya çelişki olduğunu gösterir.

- It doesn't look like there will be a civil war; **nevertheless, we should probably leave the country to be safe**.
- Many economists predicted that the economy would get worse; **nevertheless**, **it seems to be getting stronger this year**.
- I have heard this song a thousand times before; **nevertheless**, **I still enjoy hearing it**.

⚠ **Uyarı** *'Nevertheless', 'nonetheless', 'however' ve 'although' yapılarının değişik kullanımları mümkündür.*

- *The house was lovely, it was so small, **however**.*
- *He is really handsome, but I dislike him **nevertheless / nonetheless**.*
- *He drives carefully **although** a bit slowly.*

49 **still :** ama, bununla birlikte, yine de, fakat

'Still' anlatılan iki eylem arasında zıtlık veya çelişki olduğunu gösterir.

- Everyone is telling me how great the new movie is; **still I haven't gone to see it yet**.
- Jane hasn't been working very hard for months; **still I think she will get the promotion she wants**.
- It is supposed to rain later today. **Still we will go on our biking trip**.

50 **even so :** buna rağmen, yine de, öyle olsa bile

'Even so' anlatılan iki eylem arasında zıtlık veya çelişki olduğunu gösterir.

- It doesn't seem like it's going to be very sunny today; **even so, I think we'd better take some sunscreen with us**.
- Wendy had already studied the next chapter section of the book; **even so, she decided to help her friend review it**.
- My mother told me that she is fine. **Even so, I think I will go around to her place and check on her**.

51 **(on the one hand) ... on the other hand :** (bir yandan ...,) öte yandan ..., diğer yandan

'On the other hand' bir olayın çelişen iki yönünü anlatmak için veya söylenmiş bir söze yeni ve başka bir noktayı eklerken kullanılır.

- Globalisation is thought to improve each country's economy. **On the other hand,** it can also lead to destruction of the environment.
- **On the one hand** I want to go out with my friends tonight and have fun. **On the other hand**, I'm broke, so I should probably save my money.
- **On the one hand**, I have always wanted to study English literature; **on the other hand**, it probably won't help me get a good job when I graduate.

52 **adjective + as :** -e / -a rağmen
adjective + though : -e / -a rağmen

'Adjective + as' ve 'Adjective + though' yapıları temel cümlede anlatılan eylem ile çelişen bir durumu ifade eden bir yan cümlecik oluşturur.

- **Steep as** the hill was, I still managed to ride my bike all the way to the top.
- **Enjoyable as** the movie was, I still found myself falling asleep halfway through.
- **Long though** the exam was, by the end of it, I was feeling satisfied that I had done a good job.
- **Cold though** the food was, it still tasted delicious.

53 on the contrary : tam tersine, aksine, bilakis

'On the contrary' yapısı temel cümlede verilen bilginin yanlış olduğunu vurgulayarak doğru bilginin verildiği ikinci cümleye geçişi sağlar. Temel cümledeki bilginin tam tersini belirtmek için kullanılır.

- Many of my co-workers think that I am a shy person. **On the contrary, I just don't like to talk much at work**.
- Some people think that it is easy to be a teacher. **On the contrary**, **it can be quite challenging**.
- My boss seems to have the opinion that I work very hard. **On the contrary, I am very lazy and don't do much at work**.

54 in contrast : bunun aksine

'In contrast' iki cümlede verilen bilgiler arasında zıtlık veya farklılık olduğunu ifade eder.

- My husband thought that I wanted to see the romance movie; **in contrast, I actually wanted to see the new horror movie**.
- My father always complains about my line of work because he thinks I don't make much money; **in contrast**, **I actually make more than him**.
- Everyone always says that Jane is such a sweet girl; **in contrast, she actually is quite nasty behind their backs**.

55 notwithstanding : -a / -e karşın, -a / -e rağmen, yine de

YAPI:

Notwithstanding + noun (isim)

'Notwithstanding' cümlede verilen bilgiler arasında zıtlık veya çelişki olduğunu ifade ederken 'nevertheless', 'despite' veya 'although' ile aynı şekilde kullanılabilir.

- She decided to go out and have a good time, **notwithstanding her doctor's instructions to stay home and rest**.
- **Notwithstanding my own desire to get promoted**, I supported my friend for the position.
- Everyone has been quite calm in my city, **notwithstanding the politician's efforts to get people to start a protest**.

56 contrary to : -ın tersine, -ın aksine

YAPI:

contrary to + noun (isim)

'Contrary to' cümlede verilen bilgiler arasında zıtlık veya farklılık olduğunu ifade eder.

- **Contrary to popular belief**, taking vitamin C supplements probably won't help to stop you from getting a cold.
- **Contrary to the claims made by the company**, the product usually only lasted about a year.
- **Contrary to what she always tells people**, Mary is actually very intelligent.

57 as opposed to : -ın tersine, -ın aksine

YAPI:

as opposed to + noun (isim)

'As opposed to' cümlede verilen bilgiler arasında zıtlık veya farklılık olduğunu ifade eder.

- There are sixty students who have taken French this year, **as opposed to only twelve students who have taken Spanish.**
- My father is a very calm and rational person, **as opposed to my mother who is very emotional.**
- There were just three of us at dinner, **as opposed to last weekend when the whole group came**.

58 for all : -e / -a rağmen, her şeye karşın, her şeye rağmen

YAPI:

for all + noun (isim)

'For all' genelde 'in spite of' ile aynı şekilde kullanılır.

- **For all that you might prepare for a performance**, you never know when something might go wrong.
- **For all that you think you are healthy**, it is still a good idea to get a check-up every now and then.
- **For all your efforts to prepare**, I still do not think that you are ready for the task.

4 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction that expresses an 'unexpected result' or 'contrast'. More than one answer can be correct.

1. __________________ they could have hired a professional to plan the event, Jane decided to do it herself.
2. __________________ she wanted to go out, she knew that she should probably stay home and rest.
3. I was very impressed by Jenny's presentation; __________________, I thought she probably should have practised a few more times.
4. We were not completely sure if we would be able to put the cupboard together ourselves; __________________, we decided to try.
5. James went back to the casino to try and win some money, __________________ he knew it was probably a bad idea.
6. __________________ all the dog's owners' calls for her to come back, she ran off into the forest.
7. __________________ all the problems we had at work today, we were still able to get a lot done.
8. __________________ we don't have any more customers today, we will still have made a lot of money.
9. They announced that their computer systems collapsed; __________________, some people decided to wait to see if they would start working again.
10. __________________, we could order some pizza for dinner. On the other hand, we could cook some of the meat we have in the fridge.

5

EXERCISE:
Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction that expresses an 'unexpected result' or 'contrast'. More than one answer can be correct.

1. __________________ I don't know anyone there, I have decided to move to Colombia and live there for a few years.
2. Many people think that only old people live in this area. __________________, there are many young people living here.
3. Jill had actually made $60 dollars in tips that day, __________________ the $40 that she told her boss she had made.
4. It wasn't the best concert that I had ever been to, __________________ it was a fun night overall.
5. __________________ the complaining you have been doing about your co-workers, you don't seem to have done much work yourself.
6. Going hot air ballooning can be a lot of fun; __________________, make sure to go with a reliable company.
7. __________________ what all the investors expected, the company did quite well and made a good profit this year.
8. There are many things that I loved about our vacation, __________________ the flight back was not one of them.
9. We are supposed to see two different presentations at the conference today, __________________ they haven't given us the schedule yet, so I don't know when.
10. __________________ we try to think of everything that might go wrong, we could still miss something small.
11. __________________ his publisher's worries that he would never finish the book, the author finally wrote the last chapter.
12. __________________ the new law banning cars which cause too much pollution, many people are still driving them.
13. On the one hand, going to the beach could be fun. __________________, we could just hang out at the park.
14. __________________ he had a great time on vacation, Tim was happy to be back home with his dog.
15. Hard __________________ his new exercise routine was, James made sure to complete it every morning.

D EXPRESSING PARALLEL AND CORRESPONDING STATEMENTS
(Aynı Doğrultuda Olan ve Birbirine Uygun Düşen İfadeleri Belirtme)

59 **moreover** : üstelik, ayrıca, dahası

YAPI:

moreover + clause (cümlecik)

'Moreover' iki cümlecikten oluşan cümlede anlatılanları destekleyen, aynı yönde yorumlar veya bilgiler içeren ikinci cümleciğe geçiş yapar.

- I think that John should take over the company when Bill retires because he has the most experience; **moreover, he is the most liked member of our team.**
- To lead a more healthy life, you should probably exercise at least four times a week; **moreover, you should get at least eight hours of sleep per night.**
- My advice for your company is that you should fire your extra workers to boost profits; **moreover, you should try to use less energy.**

60 **besides** : bundan başka, bununla birlikte, yanı sıra

YAPI:

besides + clause (cümlecik)
besides + noun (isim)

'Besides' iki cümlecikten oluşan cümlede anlatılanları destekleyen, aynı yönde yorumlar veya bilgiler içeren ikinci cümleciğe geçiş yapar.

- I don't want to go on a vacation. **Besides, I haven't got enough money to do so.**
- You can't leave me alone now. **Besides, I promised them we would come.**
- **Besides all the books I have been reading on economics**, I have also been watching some interviews.
- **Besides the money I get from my main salary**, I also get some money from fixing people's computers at weekends.
- **Besides all the dirty dishes in the kitchen**, my roommate also left some trash in the living room.

61 **furthermore** : üstelik, ayrıca, dahası

YAPI:

furthermore + clause (cümlecik)

'Furthermore' iki cümlecikten oluşan cümlede anlatılanları destekleyen, aynı yönde yorumlar veya bilgiler içeren ikinci cümleciğe geçiş yapar.

- I find that the students don't pay attention in class like they should. **Furthermore, they often don't finish their homework.**
- Members of the team seem to be getting along well, and **furthermore, they are getting lots of good work done.**
- My new apartment is very close to my job, so I can easily go to work. **Furthermore, there is a security guard in the lobby,** so it should be very safe.

62 **in addition :** ilave olarak, ayrıca

YAPI:

in addition + clause (cümlecik)

'In addition' iki cümlecikten oluşan cümlede anlatılanları destekleyen, aynı yönde yorumlar veya bilgiler içeren ikinci cümleciğe geçiş yapar.

- I hope to go away this weekend and stay in a hotel next to the beach. **In addition, I would like to go to a fancy restaurant for dinner on Saturday night**.
- Jake bought a large tent so that he could go camping with his whole family. **In addition, he bought a small outdoor barbecue**.
- I don't have a very good opinion of my co-worker because he always arrives late. **In addition**, **he doesn't actually do much work**.

63 **in addition to :** -a / -e ilave olarak, -ın yanı sıra

YAPI:

in addition to + noun (isim)

in addition to + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'In addition to' cümlede anlatılanları destekleyen, aynı yönde yorumlar veya bilgiler içeren bir yapıdır. Arkasından isim gelir.

- **In addition to taking her medication,** the doctor told her to stay at home and rest for the next few days.
- **In addition to buying a new computer,** Jane also bought a new mouse and a new keyboard.
- **In addition to making several new friends,** my daughter also had a great time at the event.
- **In addition to the fact that Jake is in love with Veronica**, he is planning to propose to her this weekend.

64 **also :** de, da, dahi, hem de, ayrıca

'Also' ilk cümlede anlatılanları destekleyen, aynı yönde yorumlar veya bilgiler içeren ikinci cümleye geçiş yapar.

- We hope to see all the sights while we are on holiday in Paris. **Also, we want to eat lots of French food**.
- I will start eating salads for lunch and lots of vegetables for dinner. **Also, I will stop drinking sugary drinks**.

65 **as well as :** -ın yanı sıra, ... ile birlikte

YAPI:

as well as + noun (isim)

'As well as' cümlede anlatılanları destekleyen, aynı yönde yorumlar veya bilgiler içeren bir yapıdır.

- We are making lots of profit from our sales department, **as well as our repairs department.**
- The crowd was full of people who were protesting against the government, **as well as people who were just trying to get through.**
- We are going to set up a bakery stand to sell cookies and cakes, **as well as a lemonade stand to sell drinks.**

66 **indeed :** aslında, doğrusu, doğrusunu söylemek gerekirse

YAPI:

indeed + clause (cümlecik)

'Indeed' ilk cümlede anlatılanları destekleyen, doğru olduğunu gösteren yeni bir cümleye geçiş yapar.

- I think that we have gone completely in the wrong direction for this assignment. **Indeed, I think that we should probably start the whole thing from the start.**
- There are many intelligent people who I work with. **Indeed, Stephen, who sits next to me, is probably the smartest person I have ever met.**

6 **EXERCISE:**

Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction that expresses 'parallel and corresponding statements'. More than one answer can be correct.

1. ________________ all the extra work I have to do, now I have to help the new intern.
2. Smoking cigarettes can cause you to have breathing problems. ________________, it can make your teeth yellow.
3. ________________ never getting off the phone, my sister likes to annoy us all by taking ages in the shower.
4. The detective noticed that the man had red stains on his hands; ________________, his hair was a total mess.
5. I don't think that we should spend any more money on the project. ________________, I have always thought it was a bad idea from the start.
6. There are many dangerous animals in these waters such as sharks and sea snakes, ________________ jellyfish and eels.
7. ________________ the four new T-shirts that I just bought, I bought a new pair of jeans.
8. ________________ the two books he has published on economics, he has written a fantasy novel.
9. They told me that if I accepted the promotion I would get a higher salary. ________________, I would be given a company car to use.
10. I am going to take three engineering classes this semester. ________________, I will take a French literature class.

7

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction that expresses 'parallel and corresponding statements'. More than one answer can be correct.

1. My family and I are going on a road trip this weekend. ____________________, our dog is going to come too.
2. Larry and Page are going to renovate their kitchen this month. ____________________, they are going to build a pond in their backyard.
3. Jane is always speaking loudly on the phone and annoying everyone. ____________________, she is one of the loudest people I have ever met.
4. ____________________ the two assignments I have to finish this week, I also have all my normal homework.
5. Our football stadium is the biggest one in this country. ____________________, it was built to be environmentally friendly.
6. We are going to go to an expensive steakhouse for dinner tonight. ____________________, we will go to see some live music in the park afterwards.
7. You should try to exercise more and eat healthier foods to improve your health, ____________________ making sure you get at least six hours' sleep every night.
8. ____________________ improving his football skills and fitness, Tyler made many new friends at the sports camp.
9. I am getting really tired and we still have a long way to go to the next resting point. ____________________, I think we will need to stop early.
10. I prefer to buy the more expensive types of computers because they are more reliable. ____________________, they tend to last longer.

E EXPRESSING PURPOSE (Amaç Belirtme)

67

in order to (= to) : -mak / -mek için

YAPI:

in order to + verb (fiil)

'In order to' ile başlayan bölüm; cümlede anlatılan eylemin yapılma amacını anlatır. 'Neden' sorusuna cevap verir.

- **In order to finish** all of my homework, I had to stay up until after midnight working on it.
- We need to start buying groceries more and cooking at home **in order to save** money.
- The media needs to stop covering everything in such a negative way **in order to make** people less afraid and angry.
- Nick will go to Russia this summer **to see** his girlfriend who is doing her master's there.

Not

Olumsuz hali 'in order not to' yapısıdır.

- ***In order not to disturb** the baby sleeping in the other room, I tiptoed along the corridor and sat in the living room for an hour.*

68 so as to (= to) : -mak / -mek için

YAPI:

so as to + verb (fiil)

'So as to' ile başlayan bölüm cümlede anlatılan eylemin yapılma amacını anlatır. 'Neden' sorusuna cevap verir.

- Jonathan made sure that he spoke very calmly when he told the boss his mistake, **so as to keep** him from getting angry.
- I am going to sign up to a gym for a full year, **so as to motivate** myself to go.
- We are going to strap the patient's arms down, **so as to stop** her from hurting herself.

> **Not** *Olumsuz hali 'so as not to' şeklinde yapılır.*
>
> - *My mother locked all the cupboard doors* ***so as not to encourage*** *the unhealthy eating habits of my brother.*

69 so that : -sin diye, -mesi için, diye

YAPI:

so that + clause (cümlecik)

'So that' ile başlayan bölüm cümlede anlatılan eylemin yapılma amacını anlatır. 'Neden' sorusuna cevap verir.

- We are going to close the building for three weeks **so that we can build some new rooms.**
- I ducked down behind some bushes when my brother walked past **so that he couldn't see me.**
- I set my alarm to wake me up at 5 a.m. **so that I could go for a run before I went to school.**
- We are packing our surfboards into the car **so that we can go surfing when we get to the beach.**
- I finished all of my homework while I was still at school **so that I could play video games all evening.**

70 in order that : -sin diye, -mesi için, diye

YAPI:

in order that + clause (cümlecik)

'In order that' ile başlayan bölüm cümlede anlatılan eylemin yapılma amacını ifade eder. 'So that' ile aynı anlamda kullanılır. 'Neden' sorusuna cevap verir.

- People need to know what the rules actually are **in order that they should follow them.**
- The builders should be paid in advance, **in order that they will show up to work on Monday.**
- You need to fill up its gas tank first **in order that the car can start.**

Uyarı *'So that' ve 'in order that' bağlaçları zaman uyumu gerektiren bağlaçlardır.*

Simple Present / Future + in order that / so that + can / may / will / shall
Simple Past + in order that / so that + could / might / would / should

- *We **will send** you an e-mail in order that / so that you **can see** the details of your order.*
- *We **sent** you an e-mail in order that / so that you **could see** the details of your order.*

71 lest : -masın / -mesin diye, korkusuyla

YAPI:

lest + clause (cümlecik) (should)

Arkasından cümle gelir. 'Lest' ile başlayan bölüm cümlede anlatılan eylemin yapılma amacını anlatır. 'Lest' olumsuzluk ifade eder, bu yüzden olumsuz bir cümle içerisinde bulunamaz. 'Lest' ile başlayan cümlenin yükleminde genellikle 'should' modal'ı kullanılır.

- I told her that she should get her arm treated right away **lest the cut got infected.**
- My friend advised me that I should hire a lawyer immediately **lest my neighbours should try to sue me for the incident.**
- I have told my sister to remind me to put out some food for the cat in the morning **lest I should forget.**
- We put some apples into my backpack before we started the hike **lest we got hungry while we were walking.**
- The government passed a law that every new building had to be earthquake-proof **lest there was another earthquake as big as the previous one.**

8 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction that expresses 'purpose'. More than one answer can be correct.

1. I invited my best friends over ________________ we could play video games together all night.
2. The boss gave us a day off, ________________ give us some rest before the conference that would last all weekend.
3. We all wore our suits to work, ________________ impress the CEO who was visiting our office that day.
4. I always make sure to write down any important dates on my calendar, ________________ I should forget them.
5. I keep an extra shirt at work, ________________ I spill something on me and I need to change it.
6. ________________ find out who has been stealing at school, they are taking the fingerprints of all the students.

7. I decided to stop for a rest at the bottom of the hill, _________________ give my running partner a chance to catch up.
8. _________________ improve the economy, we should probably try to stop spending money on wars.
9. We put away all the knives and sharp things in the kitchen _________________ the kids wouldn't accidentally hurt themselves.
10. You need to put oil on your bike's chain every now and then, _________________ it doesn't start to rust.
11. I keep some emergency presents in my cupboard, _________________ I forget someone's birthday and need a gift in a hurry.
12. _________________ save money, I have started riding my bus to work instead of driving.
13. I always make sure to buy my parents gifts for their birthdays _________________ they know I am grateful for all the things they have done for me.
14. Our boss paid everyone for their extra hours _________________ nobody complained about working overtime.
15. I am saving all of my money at the moment _________________ I can afford to go away on holiday next month.

F PAIRED CONJUNCTIONS (İkili Bağlaçlar)

72 **neither ... nor ...** : ne ... ne ..., ne ... ne de ...

'Neither ... nor ...' olumsuz bir yapıdır ve iki olumsuz seçenekten bahsederken kullanılır. Kendi içinde olumsuzluk barındırdığı için sadece yapı bakımından olumlu cümleler içerisinde kullanılır. Cümlede genellikle tekil fiil bulunur.

- **Neither** my friends **nor** I will be voting in the next elections because there aren't any candidates that we like.
- **Neither** my cat **nor** my dog likes sleeping outside, so we let them sleep in the living room.
- **Neither** my car **nor** my motorbike is in very good condition any more.

⚠ **Not** *Konuşma dilinde bu yapı yerine 'and ... not ... either' kalıbını kullanmak da mümkündür.*

- *I couldn't attend the meeting last week **and** Jane could**n't either**.*

73 **either ... or ...** : ya ... ya da ...

'Either ... or ...' yapısı iki muhtemel seçenekten bahsederken kullanılır. Cümledeki fiil genellikle tekil olur. Olumlu cümlelerde 'ya ... ya da' anlamına gelirken, olumsuz cümlelerde 'ne ... ne de' anlamına gelir.

- I'll **either** go to Ireland for Christmas **or** I might go to Scotland.
- We decided to have **either** pizza **or** some hamburgers for dinner.
- They could not choose if they wanted to watch **either** an action **or** a comedy movie.

74 **not only ... but also ...** : sadece ... değil, aynı zamanda ...

Bu yapı aşağıdaki gibi farklı şekillerde kullanılabilir:

not only ... but also ...
not only .... but ... also ...
not only ... but ...
not only ... but ... as well...

'Not only ... but also / as well ...' yapısı bir şeyin doğru olmasına rağmen, başka bir noktanın da doğru ve önemli olduğunu ifade etmek için kullanılır.

- Electric cars are **not only** much better for the environment **but also** they can be cheaper to run than normal cars.
- My mother **not only** raised us by herself when I was growing up **but also** managed to have a very successful career.
- Apparently the announcement about taking a day off was **not only** for management **but** for all other employees **as well**.

⚠ **Not** *Cümleye daha vurgulu bir anlam katmak için 'not only' cümle başında kullanılabilir. Bu kullanımda 'not only'nin bulunduğu cümle devrik olur.*

- ***Not only** **is** this one of the dirtiest hotels that I have ever stayed at, it is **also** too expensive.*
- ***Not only** **did** I win the first place in the long jump competition, I **also** won the third place in the running event.*

75 **both ... and ...** : hem ... hem ..., hem ... hem de ...

'Both ... and ...' yapısı iki nesne arasındaki bağlantıyı vurgulamak için kullanılır. Sadece 'and'in kullanılmasından daha kuvvetli ve vurgulu bir anlam katar. Cümledeki fiil her zaman çoğul olur.

- **Both** my mother **and** my father have told me that they don't want me to move away from home.
- **Both** my boss **and** my co-workers have commented on how hard I am working this year.
- **Both** my stocks in Google **and** Apple have increased in value this week.

76 **whether ... or ...** : -ıp / -ip, -mediğini / -meyeceğini, ister ... ister ...

'Whether ... or ...' yapısı iki ya da daha fazla olasılığı belirtmek için kullanılır.

- We are trying to decide **whether** we will go to the beach for the afternoon **or** go walking in the hills.
- The detectives questioned the suspect to find out **whether** she was involved in the crime **or** she was innocent.
- I decided to go to the outdoor concert to see **whether** it was any good **or** it was just a waste of time.

Not *'Whether ... or not ...' yapısı sözü edilen eylemin her iki olasılıktan da etkilenmeyeceğini gösterir.*

- *You should suppress your anger while talking to a top executive, **whether you like it or not**. (sevsen de sevmesen de)*

77 no sooner ... than ... : -ar / -er, -maz / -mez

'No sooner ... than ...' bir şey olduktan hemen sonra (hemen arkasından) başka bir şeyin daha olduğunu ifade eder.

- I had **no sooner** eaten the fish **than** I started feeling sick.
- She had **no sooner** finished her studies **than** she started another course.
- I had **no sooner** received my package **than** I ordered the next.

Not *Cümleye daha vurgulu bir anlam katmak için 'no sooner' cümle başında kullanılabilir. Bu kullanımda 'no sooner'ın bulunduğu cümle devrik olur.*

- ***No sooner had I bought** the ticket **than** they went on sale.*
- ***No sooner had I arrived** in Amsterdam **than** it started to rain.*

78 hardly ... when ... : -ar / -er, -maz / -mez
scarcely ... when ... : -ar / -er, -maz / -mez
barely ... when ... : -ar / -er, -maz / -mez

'Hardly ... when ...', 'scarcely ... when ...', 'barely ... when ...' bir şey olduktan hemen sonra (hemen arkasından) başka bir şeyin daha olduğunu ifade eder.

- I had **hardly** sat down **when** the bell rang.
- The show had **hardly** started **when** it went to commercials.
- I had **hardly** used my new phone **when** it broke.
- I had **scarcely** entered the building **when** the lights went off, leaving me in total darkness.
- Jane had **scarcely** made a move to get out of the car **when** another car crashed into hers.
- Matt had **barely** opened his book **when** the teacher said she was going to give them an exam that day.
- They had **barely** ended their picnic **when** it started pouring.

Uyarı *Cümleye daha vurgulu bir anlam katmak için 'hardly, scarcely, barely' cümle başında kullanılabilir. Bu kullanımda 'hardly, scarcely, barely'nin bulunduğu cümle devrik olur.*

- ***Hardly had we arrived** in London **when** we bought fish and chips.*
- ***Hardly had the match started when** the goalkeeper got injured.*
- ***Scarcely had I got out of** the exit **when** the two security guards grabbed my arms and asked me to use the regular door.*
- ***Scarcely had Nicole come** home **when** she noticed she had forgotten to do her weekly grocery shopping.*
- ***Barely had James entered** the game **when** the referee blew his whistle and ended the game.*

9

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with one of the 'paired conjunctions'. More than one answer may be correct.

1. __________________ Peter __________________ his brother likes water sports. They both prefer land sports like cricket and golf.
2. Ben only has half a day left in London and was wondering __________________ he should spend it trying all the best fish and chips restaurants __________________ visiting an old friend.
3. __________________ does Mary like baking cakes, she __________________ enjoys decorating cookies.
4. James and Jane had __________________ moved into their new apartment __________________ things went horribly wrong. First, the pipes started leaking. Then, the window broke.
5. There are limited choices for universities that offer the course that you want. You can __________________ go to Washington University __________________ Midwestern University.
6. Mr and Mrs Rowe had __________________ sat down in the principal's office __________________ she broke the bad news about their kid getting suspended for bad behaviour.
7. __________________ had *the Lord of The Rings* première started to be seen in the cinemas __________________ the tickets sold out.
8. __________________ is leaving the tap running a waste of money, it is __________________ very environmentally damaging.
9. __________________ my cat __________________ my dog enjoy begging for food at the table, which is a bad habit I am trying to train them to get rid of.
10. You do not have much savings left in your bank account. You could __________________ invest it in the new mutual fund and hope it makes money __________________ find a better paying job.
11. Henry is still having troubles deciding on __________________ he should buy a new car __________________ spend the money going on a 12-day cruise to the Bahamas.
12. __________________ my brother __________________ I would admit to breaking the window because we are afraid of being scolded by our parents.
13. __________________ had Gary proposed to her girlfriend __________________ they got married.
14. __________________ did she graduate with a double degree, __________________ managed to be on the top of both.
15. __________________ my mother __________________ father were born and raised in Glasgow.

G GIVING EXAMPLES AND CLARIFYING (Örnek Verme ve Açıklama)

79 **for instance / for example :** örneğin

'For instance / For Example' yapısı bir cümlede söylenmek istenilen ve kastedilen şeyin bir örneğini vermek için kullanılır.

- Exercising often is good for your health, **for example**, your blood flow will improve if you run five miles a day.
- A lot of old people have problems with their hips, like my grandfather, **for instance**.

80 **in other words :** diğer bir deyişle, başka bir deyişle

'In other words' cümlenin ilk bölümünde anlatılanların daha iyi anlaşılması için, söylenilenleri farklı bir şekilde açıklayan yeni bir bölüme geçişi sağlar.

- The universe is millions of miles across and travelling between the planets might take more than a lifetime; **in other words, I will never get to visit Jupiter**.
- I have saved up enough money to go on holiday or to pay the deposit on a new car; **in other words, I have to decide which is more important to me**.
- He has done that course more than five times and he is still not close to passing it; **in other words, he will be in university for a few more years**.

81 **that is to say :** yani, yani demek oluyor ki, bu da demektir ki

'That's to say' cümlenin ilk bölümünde anlatılanların daha iyi anlaşılması için, söylenilenleri farklı bir şekilde açıklayan yeni bir bölüme geçişi sağlar.

- Peter knows the answer to almost anything you ask him; **that is to say, he's like a walking encyclopaedia**.
- He started learning English two years ago; **that is to say, when he was 23 years old**.
- I started working for my family's company after my graduation; **that is to say, I work for my father**.

82 **that is :** yani, yani demek oluyor ki, bu da demektir ki

'That is' cümlenin ilk bölümünde anlatılanların daha iyi anlaşılması için, söylenilenleri farklı bir şekilde açıklayan yeni bir bölüme geçişi sağlar.

- There is more to using a language than just knowing the grammar rules; **that is, you must also know the phrases and slang they use**.
- Building a house must be done by professionals; **that is, you must hire a contractor to do it**.

10

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction that 'gives examples' or 'clarifies a statement'. More than one answer can be correct.

1. Jack is extremely talented in music and can play a number of musical instruments, __________________ the piano, guitar and cello.
2. Kelly started doing ballet professionally; __________________, she will earn money from it.
3. You should not make noise nor should you speak loudly in the library. __________________, if you would like to talk, you should whisper.
4. We are going on our summer holidays in thirteen days, __________________ June 8th.
5. Peter enjoys spending his weekends watching crime series. __________________, he spent last Sunday sitting on the couch watching *Criminal Minds*.
6. Harry moved to the UK with his parents five years ago; __________________, when he started high school.
7. Mary and Tommy were on the burning train. The family had to suffer the loss of their children; __________________, they both died.
8. Our two week holiday in the Maldives consisted of a series of unlucky events. We missed our flight, lost our passports, got stranded at the embassy and had our wallets stolen. __________________, the trip was a disaster.
9. We are all humans; __________________, we all have weaknesses and we all make mistakes.
10. As a student, you are obligated to follow school rules and regulations when you are in school. __________________, you should never come late to school unless you have a good explanation.

H OTHER EXPRESSIONS (Diğer İfadeler)

83

as for : -a / -e gelince, söz konusu … olunca

YAPI:

as for + noun (isim)

'As for' yapısı daha önce bahsedilen bir şeyle alakalı bir konuyu ortaya koymak için kullanılır.

- Fred, please present your project to the class. **As for the rest of you**, you will not speak during his presentation!
- This table is still in a good condition. **As for that one**, you can only throw it away.
- I will pay for your dinner, Sam. **As for the wine you ordered**, you will have to pay for that.

84

as to : -a / -e gelince, … hakkında

YAPI:

as to + noun (isim)

'As to' yapısı 'about' ile eş anlamlı bir yapıdır.

- My sister loves horses, but I have no idea **as to her favourite breed**.

- **As to what happened to the window in your classroom**, we will have to investigate.
- You will have to make a decision **as to whether you will stay here or immigrate to Australia.**

85 **as regards :** -a / -e gelince, … ile ilgili olarak, … bakımından, açısından

YAPI:

as regards + noun (isim)

'As regards' yapısı, üzerinde konuşulacak ya da bilgi verilecek yeni bir konuya giriş yapmak için kullanılır.

- **As regards the elections**, we will have to see how many voters show up.
- **As regards football**, Paris FC lost their match against London FC.
- **As regards availability**, we have no vacancies for about a week.

86 **as of (= as from) :** -den itibaren

YAPI:

as of + noun (isim)

'As of / As from' yapısı bir eylemin belirli bir saat veya tarihten itibaren yapılmaya başlanacağını ifade eder.

- **As of the 1st of June 2015**, all owners had to contribute to the building maintenance fund.
- **As of now**, no late submissions will be accepted.
- We, **as from today**, still have not found the remaining treasure from the Titanic.

87 **as if (= as though) :** -mış / -miş gibi, sanki

YAPI:

as if + clause (cümlecik)

as though + clause (cümlecik)

'As if / As though' yapısı hayali bir durum ya da gerçek olamayacak ancak muhtemel ya da mümkün olan bir durumdan bahsetmek için kullanılır.

- Don't ask Mike, it is not **as if he will know what Susan is doing**.
- When I looked at Mary, it looked **as if she was smiling**.
- I feel **as if it will start raining at any moment.**
- How is Peter doing? When I last spoke to him, it sounded **as if he had a cold**.
- I just saw Margaret; it looked **as though she has a new boyfriend**.
- Peter and I had not seen each other for years, but when we met up again, it was **as though no time had passed at all.**
- It looked **as though the car would turn**, but it didn't and crashed into the pole.
- After eating a tub of ice cream, I feel **as though I can run a marathon**.

88 **in case :** ... ihtimaline karşı, -sı halinde, diye, olabilir diye

YAPI:

in case + clause (cümlecik)

'In case' yapısı gelecekte yaşanması muhtemel durumlara hazırlıklı olmak için yapmamız gereken şeyleri ifade etmek için kullanılır.

- I have written a manual for you **in case you have no idea what to do when there is a blackout.**
- Joe's mum bought him a torch **in case he gets lost during his camping trip this weekend.**
- Betty always carries a bottle of water with her **in case she feels dehydrated in this summer heat.**
- You should always carry an umbrella with you during winter **in case it rains.**
- **In case you have forgotten**, my house is the one on the left.

⚠ **Not** *'In case' ve 'so that' yapılarının karşılaştırıldığı örnekleri inceleyiniz.*

- *I turned off my cell phone* ***in case it might ring during the meeting.***
  (Toplantı esnasında çalabilir diye ...)
- *I turned off my cell phone* ***so that it wouldn't ring during the meeting.***
  (Toplantı esnasında çalmasın diye ...)

89 **in case of :** ... halinde, ... durumunda

YAPI:

in case of + noun (isim)

'In case of' kullanıldığında; 'in case of' ile birlikte bir durum verilir ve ikinci cümlecikte bu durumda bahsedilen olayın gerçekleşmesi durumunda yapılması gereken şey ya da yapılan / yapılacak ön hazırlık ifade edilir.

- **In case of an emergency**, always use the stairs and not the elevators.
- You should always lock the doors of your car when you park **in case of theft.**
- Everybody should wear their seat belts **in case of an accident.**

90 **otherwise :** yoksa, aksi takdirde

'Otherwise' bir emir veya öneri sonrasında, söz konusu emir veya öneriyi takip etmemeniz durumunda sonuçların ne olacağını anlatmak için kullanılır.

- You should finish your homework after dinner; **otherwise, you might have to go to bed late.**
- We must go back to class quickly, **otherwise we will be late.**
- Sit still, **otherwise you will get yourself injured.**

91 or (else) : yoksa, aksi takdirde

'Or (else)' ifade edilen bir koşulun gerçekleşmemesi durumunda ne olacağını söylemek için kullanılır.

- You have to ensure that the windows are closed when you leave the house, **or else the cat might escape and get lost**.
- John had better start paying attention to his Psychology classes, **or else he will not graduate from university**.
- I have to go to bed by 9 p.m. every night, **or else I will struggle to get out of bed the next day**.

92 but for : ... olmasa(ydı)

YAPI:

but for + noun (isim)

but for + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'But for' bir şeyin / şeylerin var olmaması / gerçekleşmemesi durumunda olacakları ifade etmek için kullanılır.

- **But for oxygen**, all living things will cease to exist.
- **But for the loan approved by the bank**, Peter could have been bankrupt by now.
- **But for his advice**, Amy might not have survived her financial hardships.
- Benito Mussolini would have been more well-known **but for the fact that he was the contemporary of Hitler**. He killed millions and stole the dictator scene from Mussolini.

93 except for : ... hariç, dışında

YAPI:

except for + noun (isim)

except for + the fact that + clause (cümlecik)

'Except for' ana cümlede belirtilen duruma dahil olmayan kişi, şey veya durumu belirmek için kullanılır.

- Every item in this shop is on sale, **except for the dresses**.
- Citizens above 21 years old who live in this country are allowed to vote in the upcoming presidential elections, **except for those who haven't registered yet**.
- Sarah's passport enables her to enter all the countries in South America without a visa, **except for Bolivia**.

⚠ **Not**

'Except for the fact that' yapısı 'but for the fact that' yapısına benzer bir anlamda kullanılabilir.

- *They wouldn't have been successful* ***except for the fact that they had a feasible plan****.*

94

for fear of / that : ... korkusuyla, diye

YAPI:

for fear of + noun (isim)

for fear that + clause (cümlecik)

'For fear of / that' ile başlayan bölüm temel cümlede anlatılan eylemin yapılma amacını ifade eder.

- Ted did not testify against his friend in court **for fear of ruining their friendship**.
- Isaac was nervous to tell the truth **for fear of hurting Jane's feelings**.
- Anna decided not to go to Canada to pursue her studies **for fear that the weather would be too cold**.

95

like : ... gibi

YAPI:

like + noun (isim)

'Like' cümlede önceden bahsedilen bir şeyi örneklendirmek için kullanılır.

- You need ingredients **like flour**, **butter**, **vanilla extract and sugar** to bake a delicious cake.
- Any items that might be used as a weapon **like knives**, **screwdrivers and forks** are not allowed in the hand baggage.
- For the upcoming camping trip, we need to bring survival tools **like tents**, **blankets and matches**.

96

unlike : -den farklı olarak, -ın aksine

YAPI:

unlike + noun (isim)

'Unlike' cümlede bahsedilen şeyin başka birisinden veya başka bir şeyden farklı olduğunu ifade etmek için kullanılır.

- **Unlike normal dogs**, Corgis are bred to have ridiculously short legs.
- Emily prefers having long and straight hair, **unlike her twin who likes it short and curly**.
- **Unlike most countries**, Norway embraces gender equality and celebrates women in high positions.

97

meanwhile (= in the meantime) : bu sırada, bu esnada

YAPI:

meanwhile + clause (cümlecik)

'Meanwhile / In the meantime' beklenen bir şey olana kadar veya başka bir şey meydana gelene kadar gerçekleşecek / gerçekleşmiş olan başka bir eylemden bahsederken kullanılır.

- Andy was waiting for his coffee to brew, **meanwhile he read the newspaper**.

- Kimberley spent three years working at the bank. **Meanwhile**, **she completed her degree in Finance**.
- Dad will set the table; **in the meantime**, **I will roast the turkey for tonight's Christmas dinner**.
- I will go to the grocery store and **in the meantime**, **my brother will go to the laundrette down the street**.

98

regardless of (= irrespective of) : -a / -e bakmadan, bakmaksızın, -ı / -i göz önünde bulundurmaksızın, aldırmaksızın

YAPI:

regardless of / irrespective of + noun (isim)

'Regardless of / Irrespective of' bir eylemin herhangi bir olay veya koşuldan etkilenmeden gerçekleştiğini / gerçekleşeceğini anlatmak için kullanılır.

- I will go to the bank today, **regardless of my manager's approval**.
- **Regardless of the weather**, you should still go to the park.
- Penelope has decided to sit for the test **irrespective of how sick she might feel**.
- **Irrespective of what her advice is**, you should always follow your heart when making a decision.

99

apart from (= aside from) : -den hariç, -e ek olarak

YAPI:

apart from / aside from + noun (isim)

'Apart from / Aside from' yapıları iki anlamda kullanılabilmektedir:
Birisi veya bir şey hariç **(= except for)**
Birine veya bir şeye ek olarak **(= in addition to)**

- I enjoy watching all kinds of competitive sports, **apart from football**. *(except for)*
- **Apart from the carrot cake**, the Thanksgiving meal was absolutely delicious. *(except for)*
- Switzerland is a great country to work, live and retire, **aside from being one of the happiest countries to live in**. *(in addition to)*

100

likewise (= similarly) : benzer şekilde

'Likewise / Similarly' iki şeyi veya durumu karşılaştırırken ve benzer olduklarını söylerken kullanılır.

- My father loves sports cars, and I, **likewise**, love fast cars.
- I was hoping that my new kitten will watch my older cat and behave **likewise**.
- The population of fish on the south coast has seen a significant increase, and **likewise**, so has the amount of fishing boats.

101 **such as** : ... gibi

YAPI:

such as + noun (isim)

'Such as' yapısı; ifade edilen durumu örneklendirmek için kullanılır.

- Rainbows are made out of many colours, **such as red, blue and green**.
- Food with high sugar content **such as ice cream and chocolate bars** can cause diabetes.
- London has a variety of beautiful places to visit, **such as the Tower Bridge, St. Paul's Cathedral, and the Big Ben**.
- The new travel advisory warns passengers on flights from Turkey to the UK against bringing items **such as laptops and tablets** in their cabin baggage.

⚠ **Not** *'Such ... as ...' yapısı karşılaştırma yaparken kullanılabilir.*

- *I have never seen **such** a cute cat **as** the Scottish Fold.*
- *She has never travelled to **such** a dangerous country **as** Mexico.*
- *In his entire teaching career, Dave has never taught **such** a naughty class **as** this one.*

102 **rather than** : ... yerine, -maktansa / -mektense, -den ziyade

YAPI:

rather than + noun (isim)

'Rather than' bahsedilen iki şeyden birinin diğerine göre daha geçerli olduğunu ifade etmek için kullanılır.

- Peter prefers walking to work every day **rather than taking** the train.
- **Rather than telling** the truth, Mandy decided to lie to her teacher about not doing her homework.
- You should get a part-time job while waiting for your results, **rather than wasting** your time sitting at home.

103 **nor** : ne de

'Nor' olumsuz bir yapıdan sonra gelen seçeneklerin önünde kullanılır.

- Blue cheese is something I have never liked **nor enjoyed**.
- Mary did not have the interest to buy the house, **nor did she have the money to do so**.

104

on the whole (= generally) : genel olarak, genellikle, bütünüyle

'On the whole' bir konu hakkındaki genel durumdan bahsetmek için kullanılır.

- The characters in the movie were interesting but **on the whole, I found it extremely disappointing**.
- I think the trip **on the whole was enjoyable despite the flight delays we experienced on the first day**.

105

in fact (= as a matter of fact) : aslında

'In fact' söylenen bir şeye güç katacak bir bilgi verirken kullanılır.

- It never snows in winter here. **As a matter of fact**, **the temperature rarely drops below 0°C**.
- You might think it is easy to complete a Liberal Arts course when **in fact**, **it is harder than most of the courses in this university**.

⚠ **Not** *'In fact' söylenen bir söze karşı bir fikir söylerken de kullanılabilir.*

- *Most people tend to think that eating less is the key to a leaner and healthier body.* ***In fact, that's not necessarily true.***

106

in particular (= especially) : özellikle

'In particular' söylenen şeyin özellikle bir kişiyle / şeyle ilişkilendirilebileceğini belirtmek için kullanılır.

- Mother wanted the kids, my brother and I **in particular**, to wash the dishes after dinner.
- Someone broke the window in the classroom but nobody knew who the teacher was referring to, as she did not name anyone **in particular**.
- We must avoid certain foods to be healthy, the ones high in carbohydrate **in particular**.

107

after all : buna rağmen, yine de, her şeye rağmen

'After all' önceden söylenmiş olan bir şeyin doğru olduğunu gösteren bilgileri eklemek için ya da bir olayın beklentilerin aksine gerçekleşmiş olduğunu ifade ederken kullanılır.

- The plane took off two hours late but landed on time **after all**.
- You should stop fighting with Matt; **after all** he is your one and only brother.
- Mary might have struggled to understand the teacher, but she passed the exam **after all**.

108 instead (of) : bunun yerine; -ın / -in yerine

YAPI:

instead + clause (cümlecik)
instead of + noun (isim)

'Instead (of)' bir kişi, şey veya olayın bir başkasının yerini aldığını ya da alabileceğini ifade eder.

- If you are trying to lose weight, do not use the lift. **Instead**, **take the stairs**.
- **Instead of getting angry and blaming everyone**, you are better off calming down and thinking of a solution for the problem.
- **Instead of saving for the shoes she really wanted**, Jane spent all her money partying last night.
- Louise decided to take the bus **instead of walking to school this morning** because she was running late.

⚠ **Not** *'Instead' cümle sonunda kullanılabilir.*

- *Reduce the use of food colouring while cooking, try using natural food dyes* ***instead****.*

109 to sum up, to summarise, in conclusion, briefly, in short : kısaca, kısaca söylemek gerekirse, özetlemek gerekirse

'To sum up, to summarise, in conclusion, briefly, in short' yapıları o ana kadar anlatılmış şeyleri özetlemek için kullanılır.

- **To sum up** our day, it was exhausting yet fruitful.
- **To summarise**, the new method is a holistic approach that can help us overcome our fears.
- **In conclusion**, it is advisable to use public transport as it is more environment-friendly compared to driving one's own vehicle.
- **In short**, I do not think jumping into the lake is a good idea as you do not know whether it is clean.

110 supposing (= assuming that) : ... farz edersek, diyelim ki ..., varsayalım

YAPI:

supposing + clause (cümlecik)

'Supposing' yapısının koşul cümlecikleri gibi bir anlamı vardır ve bir durumla ilgili varsayımda bulunma söz konusudur. Konuşmacı cümlenin muhatabından belli bir durumu hayal etmesini istemektedir. Birinci, ikinci veya üçüncü tip koşul cümlelerinde kullanılabilir.

- **Supposing** I don't sit the exam, will I have another chance to take it?
- **Supposing** you lost your identity card, you would have to inform the authorities about that, wouldn't you?
- **Supposing** they hadn't invited you to the party, would you have gone there after all?

111 **with a view to :** diye, için, amacıyla
with the aim of : diye, için, amacıyla

YAPI:

with a view to + V_{ing}
with the aim of + V_{ing}

- Elizabeth and I went on a hunting trip **with the aim of shooting** a few wild birds.
- John travelled all the way from London to İstanbul **with the aim of getting** his dream job.
- Zach invited me to his birthday party obviously **with a view to asking** me out on a date. There was nobody there but me.

11 **EXERCISE:**
Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction. More than one answer can be correct.

1. I have never been to ________________ a romantic and beautiful city ________________ Paris.
2. My childhood friend, Pete, left for Melbourne when we turned 15 and we caught up when he recently came back to Sydney and it was ________________ he had never left.
3. Research has shown that prolonged exposure to sun rays can cause extreme sunburn which leads to skin cancer. Therefore, it is important to always bring sunscreen with you when you go to the beach ________________ you won't get sunburn.
4. The adult human body needs at least eight hours of sleep a day. ________________, the cells in the body might not be able to renew and the brain might not get enough time to refresh and store long term memory.
5. Honesty is the best policy. ________________ the consequences, kids should always be taught to tell the truth from a young age.
6. During the road trip, the car broke down unexpectedly. ________________ trying to fix the car or finding a viable solution, Alice got really angry and refused to help at all.
7. Mary often comes in early to the office and leaves late. Most people assume that she is a hardworking employee. ________________, she is very lazy and is just trying to get more hours to earn more money at the end of the month.
8. Dieticians often urge their patients to reduce the intake of food high in sugar and salt content, ________________ cakes, chocolate, fries and sodas.
9. John should never have stolen the keys to his father's car ________________ should he have driven it to his girlfriend's house.
10. We watched the weather forecast and decided to bring an umbrella and raincoat on our trip to Ireland, but it didn't rain ________________.

12 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable conjunction. More than one answer can be correct.

1. Born to a Mexican mother, Joseph is a huge fan of Latin culture. ________________ Ecuador, he has travelled to and lived in all of the South American countries.
2. Stephen put a password on his phone ________________ his girlfriend reading his text messages.
3. William is such a naughty boy who enjoys breaking all the rules, ________________ his older sister who is extremely polite and well-behaved.
4. Helen was walking in the mall and she started feeling uncomfortable, ________________ someone was watching her. When she turned around, she realized that the security guard was following her because she forgot to pay her parking fee.
5. You should always listen to your parents' advice and follow their house rules, like not sneaking out after bedtime, ________________ you might risk being grounded at weekends.
6. We went camping last weekend. Fred and I were setting up the tents, ________________, Harry and Ronald went looking for wood to start a camp-fire.
7. I would say that ________________, it was the best decision we could have made to travel to Brazil instead of Zimbabwe.
8. ________________ waiting for your sister to make food for you and complaining about how hungry you are, you should just learn how to cook.
9. The entire class was allowed to go on the field trip ________________ Ryan because he did not finish his homework.
10. I don't send photos on the Internet. ________________, I find it suspicious when someone sends me one.

1 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the following conjunctions : because of, hence, seeing as, accordingly, so, since, therefore, inasmuch as, as a consequence.

1. ________________ I am allergic to bees and wasps, I am always careful to avoid them when I am outside.
2. My co-worker Brian was fired today ________________ all of the complaints that customers have made about his attitude.
3. Something is wrong with all of the city's traffic lights today. ________________, there are traffic jams everywhere.
4. All my friends tell me that the Greek islands are a great place to go on holiday; ________________ my decision to go there next month.
5. I guess I should just keep working on my essay until I finish it, ________________ I have nothing else to do tonight.
6. My boss told me that he wants me to hire interns. ________________, I have started to advertise that we are looking to hire some.
7. I told my group members that I had a lot of knowledge about the subject of our assignment; ________________, I should be in charge of the group.
8. Timmy has lost some weight and is in much better shape, ________________ his improved diet.
9. The workshop is very long and requires a lot of concentration, ________________ you should make sure to get a good night's sleep the night before.
10. I decided to let Brian go into the dark cave first, ________________ he always talks about how brave he is.

2 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the following conjunctions : only if, providing that, unless, on condition that, in the event of, as long as, if.

1. __________________ me locking myself out of the house, I have left a spare set of keys with the neighbours.
2. I decided that I would reward myself with some pizza for dinner, __________________ I worked all day and finished my homework.
3. I don't really like going swimming anywhere outdoors, __________________ it is in rivers, which I find fun.
4. __________________ you don't come home too late today, we can go and see a movie together.
5. __________________ you have brought the right tools, you should be able to cut down this tree.
6. __________________ my boss doesn't ask me to do any work at the last minute, I should be able to leave by 4 p.m. today.
7. Hiking can be a fun activity to try with your friends, __________________ the weather is nice and it is not raining.
8. __________________ a fire, you should leave your apartment by taking the stairs.
9. I should be able to finish all the work I have to do today, __________________ I work hard and don't take many breaks.
10. I agreed to take my kids out for dinner, __________________ we at least would eat something reasonably healthy.

3 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the following conjunctions : even though, much as, however, though, in spite of, despite, on the one hand, still, as opposed to, for all.

1. Peter started to eat a third bag of chips, __________________ he knew that it wasn't a good idea.
2. __________________ I want to go away this holiday, I don't have much money so I will have to stay at home.
3. I knew that we were probably too late to get tickets; __________________, I went online to see if I could find one.
4. I thought that the architect had done a really good job; __________________, I didn't like his design for the kitchen.
5. The team decided it would be a better idea to start again, __________________ George's plan to fix all of the mistakes.
6. James and Kelly climbed over the fence and walked along the cliffs, __________________ all the warning signs.
7. __________________ your talk about healthy eating, you don't seem to actually be losing any weight.
8. __________________ his parents' telling him not to, Tobias ran away from home and joined the army.
9. __________________ plenty of people had offered to help her, Sally decided to do everything by herself.
10. __________________, if I buy a bike, I can ride it to work. On the other hand, I could just walk.

4 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the following conjunctions : in addition to, furthermore, moreover, indeed, in addition, besides, also, as well as.

1. A lack of sleep can weaken your immune system; __________________, it can change your appetite.
2. __________________ doing extra math homework, Harry also has a tutor who comes and helps him on Sundays.
3. I think I will hire a tutor to help teach me German. __________________, I will start to watch German movies.
4. __________________ making lots of useful connections at the networking event, Tom also had a lot of fun.
5. We are going to visit Paris and London this Christmas. __________________, we are going to go to Spain next April.
6. Tyler noticed that several of his video games were missing. __________________, the money from his desk drawer was gone as well.
7. Jane is a really helpful person. __________________, she is one of the nicest people I have ever met.
8. __________________ the hotel's main restaurant, it also has an Italian and a Thai restaurant.
9. Larry cleaned up all the dirty dishes in the kitchen, __________________ taking out the garbage and sweeping the floor.
10. __________________ the salary that he gets from his main job, Randal also makes money from doing some freelance work.

5 REVISION:

Choose the correct option.

1. **---- yesterday, the building has been officially closed due to hazardous materials found on its roof.**

   A) As if B) As of

2. **---- an emergency, everyone should gather at this main station instead of running around.**

   A) In case of B) Instead of

3. **I do not dislike anyone ---- at work, I just do not share any interests with my colleagues.**

   A) likewise B) in particular

4. **Penny chose to spend the night partying instead of studying, ---- she failed her exam.**

   A) because B) thus

5. **Mother says we can play in the park ---- it does not rain.**

A) unless B) as long as

6. **You will not be able to board the plane ---- you have your boarding pass.**

A) unless B) unlike

7. **---- Mary was sick, she managed to get out of bed and attended her important meeting yesterday.**

A) Meanwhile B) Although

8. **Before leaving work, please make sure that you have switched off all the lights ---- you do not waste electricity.**

A) in order to B) so that

9. **It is extremely dangerous to text ---- driving as it is proven to have caused numerous fatal car accidents.**

A) while B) since

10. **Liam faced a lot of difficulties when travelling in Spain ---- he does not speak Spanish.**

A) because B) however

11. **The flight to Paris was delayed ---- adverse weather conditions.**

A) due to B) whether

12. **If you want to get rich in life, you should learn how to work hard ---- being smart.**

A) as if B) as well as

13. **Your dog would not have been lost ---- you had locked the door before you went out.**

A) if B) because

14. **---- being overpriced, the new restaurant on Water Street is actually quite decent.**

A) Despite B) Nevertheless

15. **In order to have a healthy diet, you should include more fibre ---- vegetables and fruits in your daily meals.**

A) instead of B) such as

16. **---- other politicians in this country, she is actually quite honest and responsible.**

A) For instance B) Unlike

17. **---- it snows, I will still go to the première of *Harry Potter and the Cursed Child* because I absolutely love the series.**

A) As if B) Even if

18. **I have read all the books written by Enid Blyton ----** *the Famous Five.*

A) except for B) moreover

19. **Henry has been driving for twenty years, ---- he is still struggling with changing gears.**

A) yet B) as if

20. **---- this exercise, you will have to complete it with red colour pencils.**

A) As for B) As if

CONJUNCTIONS

TEST 1

1. I have managed to lose weight and get in better shape ---- all the biking I am doing.

A) in order to
B) as a result of
C) consequently
D) likewise
E) whether

2. The politician told the nation that he was going to lower taxes; ----, he was going to reduce the unemployment rate.

A) unless
B) in the event of
C) thanks to
D) also
E) now that

3. James wants us to help him paint the new fence he built today; ----, he would like us to help him with the garden.

A) indeed
B) in order
C) such that
D) in addition
E) unless

4. All the movies that they are playing at the cinema today look good, ---- the action movie, which looks silly.

A) except for
B) even if
C) while
D) when
E) only if

5. ---- my friends ---- I plan to stay in the city this weekend, we are all going to go to the countryside.

A) Neither / nor
B) Either / or
C) Not only / but
D) Both / and
E) No sooner / than

6. ---- we were enjoying the dinner party, it was getting late, so we were tired and we wanted to leave.

A) One the one hand
B) In addition
C) As though
D) On condition that
E) Much as

7. Jane was not careful about locking her house when she went out. ----, she has been robbed.

A) Due to
B) In case
C) Except for
D) As a consequence
E) Lest

8. ---- our office is already totally full, there are two new people who are going to start working here next week.

A) In order to
B) Even though
C) In the event that
D) Such as
E) However

9. We are going to start a charity that will help homeless people find jobs, ---- giving them somewhere to sleep at night.

A) furthermore
B) not only
C) yet
D) that's why
E) as well as

10. I would never have normally read this kind of a book ---- you had not told me how good it was.

A) if
B) on the contrary
C) nevertheless
D) owing to
E) rather than

11. We don't have to go to school today ---- all the snow and ice on the roads.

A) even so
B) unless
C) because of
D) but for
E) after all

12. I don't think that I will buy any travel insurance, ---- my current insurance should still be valid overseas.

A) for this reason
B) as
C) in order to
D) but for
E) otherwise

13. There are many different things that you can do in Rome as a tourist; ----, visiting the Colosseum.

A) accordingly
B) instead of
C) in spite of
D) for instance
E) thereby

14. ---- all the bad reviews of this restaurant, the food was really delicious and the service was fine.

A) Contrary to
B) Not only
C) Providing that
D) Even so
E) Not withstanding

15. Jean is the hardest working person on our team and ---- she has been promoted to manager.

A) so as to
B) consequently
C) in order to
D) as opposed to
E) seeing that

16. Sam decided to stay at home that day, ---- the rumours that there was going to be a terrorist attack in the city.

A) due to
B) yet
C) because
D) now that
E) only if

17. My shares in technology companies have increased in value, ---- my shares in oil companies, which have gone down.

A) providing that
B) in case
C) except for
D) as opposed to
E) not only

18. ---- encourage my employees to be friends with each other, I took them all out to dinner.

A) While
B) In order to
C) Consequently
D) In view of
E) For this reason

19. My wife wants me to make a good impression tonight with her friends; ----, I will be as polite and friendly as possible.

A) unless
B) whether
C) otherwise
D) except for
E) accordingly

20. ---- all the times that Jill was too lazy to study, she has failed her history exam.

A) As a consequence of
B) As opposed to
C) In order to
D) Thereby
E) That's why

CONJUNCTIONS

TEST 2

1. **You will have to learn another UN language ---- English if you want to get a good career option at one of the UN headquarters.**

A) however
B) but
C) besides
D) as well
E) because of

2. **I didn't know what to say to Jessie, so I kept quiet while she was boasting; ----, I didn't know what to say against such stupid words.**

A) however
B) so that
C) moreover
D) yet
E) meanwhile

3. **Jim didn't say anything about ---- he would introduce his girlfriend to us tonight even when I asked if he would, so I didn't expect to see her here.**

A) whether
B) now that
C) as much as
D) as if
E) provided that

4. **I won't call Alex ---- he calls me himself. He has broken my heart badly and there is no way I could forgive him without an apology.**

A) as though
B) when
C) accordingly
D) whether
E) until

5. **Michael literally skipped a heartbeat out of excitement ---- the doctor told him he would be a dad in eight months.**

A) while
B) meanwhile
C) when
D) in order to
E) lest

6. **My mother has always been scared to sit on the sand on the beach ---- she would be bitten by a crab or some other creatures.**

A) although
B) for fear that
C) whenever
D) since
E) despite the fact that

7. **---- the nurses did what they could till the doctor came into the room, it was too late and the patient had passed away.**

A) When
B) Unless
C) Now that
D) Even though
E) In spite of

8. **---- I know why Sam left his girlfriend, I don't blame him any more. I would leave someone who cheated on me.**

A) Only if
B) Even if
C) In spite of
D) Though
E) Now that

9. **The tourists left their hotel ---- their luggage would be sent to their bus by the crew but the hotel had no such services.**

A) assuming that
B) provided that
C) until
D) in case
E) although

10. **---- Turkish ---- Japanese are difficult languages and it is said that if one speaks both, he could learn any language.**

A) Neither / nor
B) Either / or
C) Rather / than
D) Hardly / when
E) Both / and

11. **---- had the bartender started serving alcohol ---- one of his customers fell on the floor, because he was allergic to the drink he had.**

A) Hardly / when
B) If / then
C) Not only / but also
D) As / as
E) Rather / than

12. **I am going to put the food in the fridge ---- you don't want to eat any more. It will go sour if it stays out in this heat.**

A) when
B) while
C) if
D) whether
E) unless

13. **---- Nancy comes with us, I will not go on that trip as I don't trust anyone in the group but her.**

A) However
B) If
C) Unless
D) Since
E) Even if

14. **The patient couldn't be healed by any medication ---- he insisted on having a pessimistic view on life and strongly believing that he would die in a short time.**

A) as soon as
B) even though
C) before
D) as long as
E) by the time

15. **The singer had his concert ---- the number of the people who bought tickets. He said it was unfair to the people who wanted to come.**

A) as much as
B) assuming that
C) as though
D) regardless of
E) as a result

16. **Many people immigrated to European countries ---- the war in Syria but the politicians don't seem to care much for them.**

A) as a result of
B) for fear that
C) regardless of
D) besides
E) as much as

17. **Salt, flour and sugar are considered the deadly whites ---- they directly cause or trigger diabetes.**

A) because of
B) due to
C) despite the fact that
D) due to the fact that
E) consequently

18. **The bus will leave in ten minutes; ----, you either leave and run to the station now or you spend one more day here and catch the next one.**

A) though
B) yet
C) because
D) since
E) therefore

19. **David Cameron was the Prime Minister of the UK; ----, he was forced to quit after the Brexit when he lost the elections.**

A) since
B) likewise
C) however
D) due to
E) also

20. **---- her fear of heights, Jasmine continued her training as a pilot and became the first female pilot of her country and won universal recognition for it.**

A) Despite
B) Although
C) Yet
D) Because of
E) Lest

ADJECTIVE CLAUSES

6 ADJECTIVE CLAUSES (Relative Clauses)

1 Sıfat cümlecikleri bir ismi niteleyen ve o isim hakkında bilgi veren cümleciklerdir. Tek başına kullanılamayan bu cümlecikler, ana cümle içinde tanımlamakta oldukları isimden sonra kullanılırlar.

- Kate **who is always late** for school never wears her uniform.
  (Okula sürekli geç kalan Kate asla okul üniformasını giymez.)
- Nathan and Jack **who are amazingly good at basketball** have been selected to the school basketball team.
  (Basketbolda inanılmaz iyi olan Nathan ve Jack okul basketbol takımına seçildiler.)

2 İki basit cümleyi birleştirmek için kullanılan sıfat cümleciklerinde, bu birleştirme yapılırken nitelenen isim için uygun olan sıfat cümleciği zamiri (relative pronoun) kullanılır.

- Jason has a dog. He never takes it out for a walk.
  Jason **who has a dog** never takes it out for a walk.
  (Köpeği olan Jason, asla onu yürüyüşe çıkarmaz.)

3 Sıfat cümleciği zamirlerinin mantığını iyi kavrayabilmek için soru kelimeleri (question words) konusunda fikir sahibi olmamız gerekir. Çünkü aşağıdaki tabloda da görüldüğü üzere 'wh-questions' adı verilen yapılar hem soru kelimesi hem de sıfat cümleciklerindeki zamirler olarak karşımıza çıkmaktadır. Bu zamirlere değinmeden önce soru kelimelerini hatırlamak faydalı olacaktır.

Question Word	Usage	Sample
Who (kim / kimi)	Hem özne hem de nesne konumunda bulunan kişileri sorarken kullanılır.	Alex : **Who** is the chairperson of your company? *(Özne)* Benny : Mr Kaplan is the chairperson. Alex : **Who** did you see at the party? *(Nesne)* Benny : I saw Joanna.
Which (hangi)	Nesneleri sorarken kullanılır.	Alex : **Which** pencil is your sister's? Benny : The blue one.
Whom (kimi)	Nesne konumunda bulunan kişileri sorarken kullanılır. (Özne konumundakiler için sadece 'who' kullanılabilir.)	Alex : **Whom** did they invite to the party? *(Nesne)* Benny : They invited Mike.

Whose (kimin)	Bir şeyin kime ait olduğunu sorarken kullanılır.	Alex : **Whose** bike is this? Benny : It is mine.
Where (nerede)	Yer sorarken kullanılır.	Alex : **Where** should I wait for you? Benny : At the train station.
When (ne zaman)	Zaman sorarken kullanılır.	Alex : **When** are we going to start? Benny : Tomorrow.
Why (neden)	Bir şeyin sebebini sorarken kullanılır.	Alex : **Why** weren't you at school yesterday? Benny : Because I was ill.

4 Bu soru kelimelerinin zamir olarak kullanımının kısaca özetlenmiş şekli için aşağıdaki tabloyu inceleyiniz.

Adjective Clause	Usage	What Could Be Used Instead
Who	İnsanları nitelerken kullanılır. (Not: Karakter yüklemek isteniyorsa, hayvanları nitelerken de kullanılır.)	**that** **whom**
Which	Nesneleri, kavramları ve hayvanları nitelerken kullanılır.	**that**
Whom	'Who'nun daha resmi halidir. Sadece nesne konumundaki isimleri nitelerken ya da bir edattan sonra kullanılır.	**who**
Whose	'Who' ve 'which' zamirlerinin iyelik için kullanılan halidir. Edatlardan sonra da kullanılabilir.	**... of whom** **... of which**
Where	Yer belirten bir ismi nitelemek için kullanılır.	**on which** **under which** **behind which, etc.**
When	Zaman belirten bir ismi nitelemek için kullanılır.	**in which** **on which** **before which** **until which, etc.**

Why	Genellikle 'reason' kelimesinin ardından bir şeyin sebebini açıklamak için kullanılır.	**for which** **(that)**
That	'Who', 'which' ve 'why' zamirlerinin resmi olmayan halidir.	**who** **which** **why**

A RELATIVE PRONOUNS

1 Who

Bu zamir insanları nitelerken ya da hayvanlara karakter yüklemek istenildiği zaman kullanılır. Nitelenen bu isim hem özne hem de nesne konumunda bulunabilir.

Yerine 'that' zamiri de kullanılabilir.

- Today, I met **a famous mountaineer**. **He** has climbed mountains like Everest.
  Today, I met a famous mountaineer **who has climbed mountains like Everest**.
- Albert Einstein, **who was a famous physicist**, came up with the Theory of Relativity.
- Neil Armstrong was the first person **who** / **that walked on the Moon**.
- My French teacher, **who was from Paris**, taught us a lot about French culture.
- The members of the group **who** / **that did not help with the assignment** will not get any credit for the work.
- Michael Phelps, **who has won 28 Olympic medals**, is considered to be one of the greatest swimmers of all times.

2 Which

a Bu zamir cansız nesneleri, bitkileri ve kavramları nitelerken ya da hayvanlar için kullanılır. Ayrıca edatlardan (prepositions) sonra da kullanılabilir.

Eğer 'which' bir edattan sonra gelmiyorsa, yerine 'that' zamiri de kullanılabilir.

- Kiwis, **which are unique to New Zealand**, are medium sized birds that cannot fly.
- The restaurant **which I will go to for lunch today** is not far.
- The food **which** / **that is left over after dinner** will go to the homeless.
- *Thriller*, **which was made by Michael Jackson in 1982**, was a very popular album.
- Tom knew that the medals, **which his grandfather had won in World War Two**, were very valuable.
- The beach **which** / **~~that~~ I wanted to go to** is closed because there was an accident.

b Tüm cümleyi niteleyen 'which' yapısının kullanımı:

Sıfat cümleciği bir cümlenin tamamını nitelediği zaman yalnızca 'which' kullanılır ve öncesinde her zaman bir virgül bulunur.

- The actor slipped and fell off the edge of the stage, **which** was quite funny.
- The runner who nobody knew about came first, **which** was amazing.
- Steven passed all his exams even though he thought he had failed, **which** was a great surprise to him.
- Even though the tennis player lost in the last minute, he congratulated the other player, **which** I thought showed good sportsmanship.
- Unemployment started to increase in the country, **which** was a sign that the economy was getting worse.
- The little girl was able to read the whole text aloud to the class, **which** showed that she wasn't as shy as she used to be.

Not *Sıfat cümleciği bir cümlede özne veya nesne konumunda olabilir. Kullanıldığı konum sıfat cümleciğinin yapısını etkilemez.*

- *I always think that people* ***who always stand up on their feet*** *are admirable.*
- *My father is the one* ***who always helped me with my homework.***
- *The movie* ***that we watched last night*** *was a horror movie that came out recently.*
- *This is the part of the city* ***which you probably shouldn't go once it gets dark.***
- *James,* ***who is Steven's younger brother,*** *just got kicked out of school.*
- *The next boy* ***that came in*** *was obviously quite the character.*

1 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with 'who' or 'which'.

1. The person ____________________ took my food out of the refrigerator at work is still a mystery today.
2. There are many great classes on offer at my university for the next semester, ____________________ relieves me a lot as I will have more options.
3. My parents just bought a second car, ____________________ seems to be a bit of a waste of money to me.
4. There is a new student in my class today, ____________________ seems very quiet and shy.
5. Many drugs ____________________ are illegal today were first invented by doctors, ____________________ used them as medicines.
6. I found an old metal box on the beach today ____________________ I am sure must be at least 100 years old.
7. There is a new mayor in our town ____________________ can finally solve some of the problems we have been having.

8. The park was full of beautiful trees ____________________ all turned orange and yellow in the autumn.
9. My parents are always trying to introduce me to people ____________________ they think can help me find a job.
10. There are several houses on my street ____________________ are very old and look like they are going to fall down.
11. The language ____________________ I will learn should be either French or Chinese.
12. There are many people in the world ____________________ believe in things which are illogical and have no scientific basis.
13. There are many countries ____________________ I hope to visit in the next few years, if I have enough time.
14. I asked my friend if he knew anything about our new boss ____________________ had just replaced the old one.
15. I have always thought that it is a good idea to try different meals ____________________ you have not tried before.

3 Whom

Bu zamir insanları nitelerken ya da hayvanlara karakter yüklemek isteniyorsa kullanılır. Ancak nitelenen ismin nesne konumunda olması gerekir. İsim özne konumundaysa sadece 'who' kullanılabilir. Ayrıca edatlardan (prepositions) sonra da 'whom' kullanılması gerekir.

- I received a gift in the mail from a young man **whom I had helped** get accepted into my university.
- The person **whom my mother has just hired** is both a driver and a security guard.
- It is much nicer to work with co-workers **whom you get on well with rather than just put up with**.
- My two best friends, **neither of whom likes the other**, are always arguing.
- I was surprised when I saw a picture of the criminals, **none of whom looked threatening or violent at all**.
- The person **to whom I am trying to speak** seems to never answer the phone.

4 Whose

İsmi niteleyen sıfat cümleciğinde bir sahiplik (iyelik) durumu varsa 'whose' kullanılır. İyelik sıfatlarının yerine kullanıldığı için arkasından isim gelir. Yerine 'that' kullanılmaz.

- The landlord **whose house** burnt down wasn't able to get any insurance money.
- The director **whose movie** is playing in the film festival this weekend is very talented.
- The novel, **whose main character** is an orphan, was written almost 100 years ago.
- My brother works with someone **whose husband** is a famous movie star.
- The woman **whose car** was stolen is talking to the police now.
- My friend **whose grandfather** owns his own business has helped me get a job there.

⚠ Not *'Whose' yapısından önce miktar belirleyen bir kelime (quantifier) veya edat (preposition) gelebilir.*

- *Jenny, **in whose** house I broke a vase, has not talked to me for a while.*
- *Today, I saw the teacher **in whose** class I used to fall asleep.*
- *The group of mothers, **all of whose** children attend the same school, go walking together every morning.*
- *Hernia, **all of whose** classes are cancelled today, decided to go to the park.*

⚠ Not *İyelik bir insana değil de bir nesneye aitse 'whose' yerine genellikle '... of which' yapısı kullanılır.*

- ***The town** should be fixed up. **Its streets** need to be repaired and **its parks** need to be cleaned.*
  *The town, **the streets of which** need to be repaired and **the parks of which** need to be cleaned, should be fixed up.*
- ***The business** should be closed. **Its employees** are useless and **its products** are bad.*
  *The business, **the employees of which** are useless and **the products of which** are bad, should be closed.*

⚠ Not *Tanımlanan ismi nitelerken 'superlative' sıfatlar kullanılıyorsa; nesneler için 'the ... of which', insanlar için de 'the ... of whom' yapıları kullanılır.*

- *There are many different neighbourhoods to visit in Rome, **the most interesting of which** have many old, historical buildings.*
- *I have to take many subjects this semester, **the hardest of which** is the mathematics class.*
- *I have several co-workers who are helping me work on this project, **the most useful of whom** is Sandy, who has done something like this before.*
- *We have four members in our quiz team, **the smartest of whom is Steven**, who knows as much as the rest of us put together.*

5 Where

Sıfat cümleciğinin nitelediği isim bir yer belirtiyorsa 'where' kullanmamız gerekir. 'Where' yerine nitelenen isme uygun bir edat ile 'which' de kullanılabilir. (in which, on which, at which, etc.)

- I walked through the neighbourhood **where I wanted to live one day.**
  (= I walked through the neighbourhood **in which I wanted to live one day**.)
- Unfortunately, the restaurant **where I wanted to go for lunch** is closed today.
- I travelled to the part of the country **where there are many forests and rivers.**
- Yesterday I was at the beach, **where I found a phone** that someone must have dropped.
- The government sent in riot police to the parts of the city **where people were protesting.**
- Last month, I was in Italy, **where I saw many historical buildings and art museums.**

Not *Cümlede eylemin nerede gerçekleştiğini belirten herhangi bir edat varsa (in, on, at, etc.) 'where' kullanılmaz.*

- *The university* ***where she studies*** *is one of the best in the UK.*
  The university ***~~where she studies at~~*** *is one of the best in the UK.*
  The university ***at which she studies*** *is one of the best in the UK.*
  The university ***that she studies at*** *is one of the best in the UK.*
  The university ***which she studies at*** *is one of the best in the UK.*
- *The hotel* ***where I stayed last year*** *is not available any more.*
  The hotel ***I stayed at last year*** *is not available any more.*
  The hotel ***~~where I stayed at last year~~*** *is not available any more.*
  The hotel ***which I stayed at*** *last year is not available any more.*
- *The street* ***where I used to live*** *is a lot smaller than I remember.*
  The street ***I used to live on*** *is a lot smaller than I remember.*
  The street ***that I used to live on*** *is a lot smaller than I remember.*
  The street ***which I used to live on*** *is a lot smaller than I remember.*

Not *Yer ifadeleri cümledeki anlamlarına göre farklı şekillerde kullanılırlar. 'Where' kullanılabilmesi için birleştirilen basit cümlede 'there' veya yer belirten bir edat olmalıdır.*

- *Here is the old palace. It was restored ten years ago.*
  Here is the old palace ***that / which / ~~where~~*** *was restored ten years ago.*
  ('the old palace' ifadesi bu cümlede yer belirtmediği için herhangi bir nesne ismi gibidir ve bu yüzden onu nitelemek için 'where' kullanılmaz.)
- *This is the school. I completed high school there / in it.*
  This is the school ***where / in which*** *I completed high school.*
- *I'm living on a new street. It is very close to the mall.*
  I'm living on a street ***which / that*** *is very close to the mall.*
- *The new street* ***on which / where*** *I'm living right now is very quiet.*

2 **EXERCISE:**

Fill in the blanks with 'which', 'where', 'who' or 'whom'.

1. I have always enjoyed playing chess, ____________________ is a game that requires strategy and patience.
2. A great way to improve your intelligence is to have debates with someone ____________________ you can respect.
3. There is a bowling alley near the place ____________________ I live which I would love to go to and try out.
4. I have always dreamed of going on hiking trips to places ____________________ no person has ever gone before.
5. Richard Feynman is one of the physicists ____________________ worked on developing the first nuclear bombs.
6. I wanted to open the letter but I wasn't sure to ____________________ it had been sent to.
7. The place ____________________ I grew up is a small village out in the countryside.

8. In *Romeo and Juliet,* ____________________ is a play written by William Shakespeare, many of the characters die.
9. You should not use any words ____________________ meanings you don't know well.
10. When we got back to the parking lot ____________________ we had parked the car, we couldn't find it anywhere.
11. My father is a man ____________________ has always thought that success means being happy.
12. The man was wearing a baggy yellow T-shirt ____________________ was covered in pictures of people eating bananas.
13. Sally always found that she studied best in places like the library, ____________________ there were other people also working around her.
14. There are many countries ____________________ you can go for the beach and hot weather, such as Thailand or Australia.
15. John with ____________________ I will go to my cousin's wedding, will meet my parents there.

6 When

Sıfat cümleciğinin nitelediği isim zaman belirtiyorsa 'when' kullanmamız gerekir. 'When' yerine nitelenen isme uygun bir edat ile 'which' de kullanılabilir. (in which, on which, during which, etc.)

- It was the year 1980 **when war broke out between Iran and Iraq**.
  (= It was the year 1980 **in which war broke out between Iran and Iraq**.)
- I don't like to go shopping at weekends **when everyone else is out** as it's often too busy.
- It is usually almost midnight **when I finally decide to stop working and go to bed**.
- We usually go to our summer house in July **when the weather is nice and hot**.
- 3000 BC was the year **when the Egyptian Empire finished building the Great Pyramid**.
- World War Two ended in Europe in 1945 **when the German forces surrendered**.

Not *Cümlede eylemin ne zaman gerçekleştiğini belirten herhangi bir edat varsa (in, on, during, etc.) 'when' kullanılmaz.*

- *Last year is the year **in which** I started exercising regularly and losing weight.*
- *Apparently Friday is the last day this week **on which** I can submit my job application.*
- *Saturday night was a party night **at which** I met my close friend, Paul.*
- *2012 was the year **in which** I moved to a different country and left my old life behind.*
- *My day of the year is the day **on which** all my family members come together and have a party.*
- *It was my old high school years **during which** I realised that my dream was to be an engineer.*

7 **Why** (for which)

'Reason' (sebep) sözcüğünü niteleyen sıfat cümleciklerinde 'why' kullanılır. 'Why' yerine 'for which' kullanılması da mümkündür.

- Our boss decided to cancel the meeting. Nobody knew why.
  Nobody knew the reason **why our boss cancelled the meeting**.
- The reason **why I never see my old friends any more** is that I feel they are too immature.
- I heard on the news that the reason **for which the airport closed today** was because of a terrorist threat.
- I'm not sure of the exact reason **for which my sister has to play loud music at 1 a.m. in the morning**.

⚠ Not *'Reason' sözcüğünden sonra 'for' edatı getirilmişse 'why' kullanılmaz; 'for + which' kullanılır.*

- *There are a hundred reasons for* ***which*** *I love my mother and father.*

3 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with 'where', 'when' or 'why'.

1. This summer, my family and I are planning to go to a place ____________________ there won't be many other people.
2. While working at this job, there have been times ____________________ I felt like I should just quit and go home.
3. I met my best friend a few years ago ____________________ we were both backpacking around Europe.
4. The bank has not given me any reason ____________________ they charged me an extra $25 this month.
5. During a fire, we are all supposed to go out to the field, ____________________ they will count us and make sure nobody is missing.
6. My sister left very early this morning without giving anyone an explanation ____________________ she was doing so.
7. Do you remember the day ____________________ we were driving to Antalya.
8. The reason ____________________ men usually die at a younger age than women is they are less healthy and more involved in violence.
9. There is a new park that has been laid out near our house ____________________ I take my dogs for a walk.
10. In the year 1914, ____________________ World War One started, Europe had just gone through the Industrial Revolution.

4 **EXERCISE:**
Fill in the blanks with 'where', 'when' or 'why'.

1. Everyone seems to be happier during the summer ____________________ the sun is out and the weather is nice.
2. I wish I could go back and live in my old town ____________________ I spent my childhood playing and going to school.
3. John hoped that his boss wouldn't ask him for an explanation ____________________ he had to leave early.
4. I don't know the reason ____________________ we have to come to work so early before customers are even awake.
5. We all go through points in our life ____________________ we feel like we don't know what we are doing.
6. My favourite café in the city is a little place that not many people know about ____________________ I can sit and do my work in peace.
7. Macedonia is one of those lucky countries in the world ____________________ there are major underground resources.
8. Jeannie tried to come up with a reason ____________________ she had been out all night but she couldn't.
9. This is the type of restaurant ____________________ you can order different types of food from all over the world.
10. The moment ____________________ I learned that I had been accepted into the university I wanted was one of the happiest moments of my life.

8

Using Quantifiers With Relative Pronouns
(Sıfat Cümleciği Zamirlerinin Miktar Belirleyicilerle Kullanımı)

Nitelenen isimle ilgili olarak sayı veya miktar belirten bir kelime kullanıldığında, '... of which', '... of whom', '... of whose + noun' yapıları kullanılır.

- I have two uncles from my father's side, **one of whom** is a lawyer.
- There are around twenty people applying for jobs here, **half of whom** will probably not get one.
- The counsellor took two students out of class, **one of whose friends** had run away from home.
- There are several types of mountain bikes that you can buy, **each of which** has different strengths and weaknesses.
- There were three options for lunch, **none of which** looked very good to me.
- The shop was filled with hundreds of leather shoes, **most of which** were very expensive.
- There are around 600 new students at this university this year, **many of whom** will have graduated by next year.
- I know of at least five good restaurants in this area, **a few of which** are probably open now.

5 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with 'of which' or 'of whom'.

1. There are always cats in my backyard, one ____________________ I know belongs to my neighbour but I don't know where the rest come from.
2. My husband has told me the names of three movies that are on at the moment, none ____________________ I actually want to watch.
3. We have around 100 computers in this library, most ____________________ work fine but some are slow.
4. I have three really smart students in my class, at least one ____________________ I hope will go to Harvard or Oxford.
5. There are many different diets that you can try to lose weight, each ____________________ work differently for different people.
6. My company employs around 100 people, half ____________________ work in the office.
7. I have been put into a group with three other people, none ____________________ have any idea of what we are supposed to do.
8. I have made many investments this year, some ____________________ I hope will be worth it.
9. I have read many self-help books in the past year, about half ____________________ have been useful and the other half a waste of time.
10. There are 17 people in total in my family, many ____________________ are living in different countries around the world.

B DEFINING & NON-DEFINING ADJECTIVE CLAUSES

Defining Adjective Clauses	Non-defining Adjective Clauses
Nitelenen ismin ne ya da kim olduğunu tam olarak anlayabilmemiz için bu sıfat cümleciklerinin verdiği bilgiye ihtiyacımız vardır. Bu tarz cümlecikler atıldığında cümleyi tam olarak anlamamız mümkün değildir.	Nitelenen isim hakkında fazladan bilgi veren sıfat cümlecikleridir. Dolayısıyla bu tarz cümlecikler cümleden atıldığında herhangi bir anlam karmaşası olmaz.
▸ I read the book which you were telling me about last year. ▸ The manager talked on the phone to the women who had been complaining. ▸ I went to the park where there are lots of swans. ▸ The hotel which I stayed in last year is not available any more.	▸ Isaac Newton, **who is famous for his Law of Gravity**, is one of the most influential scientists of all times. ▸ Our art room, **which is filled with paintings and sculptures**, is the most interesting one in the school. ▸ I want to read the novel *Catcher in the Rye*, **which is a famous book written by J.D. Salinger in 1951**.

'Who' ve 'which' yerine daha az resmi bir sıfat cümleciği zamiri olan 'that' kullanılabilir. ▸ The woman **who / that owns that café** is our neighbour.	Hiçbir zaman 'who' ya da 'which' yerine 'that' kullanılamaz. ▸ Ms Mars, **who / ~~that~~ owns that café**, is our neighbour.
Virgül kullanılmaz. ▸ I talked to the student **who is always late for class**.	Virgül kullanılması zorunludur. ▸ Leonardo da Vinci, **who painted the famous *Mona Lisa***, was an inventor and a mathematician as well as an artist.
'When', 'where' ve 'why' zamirleri cümleden çıkartılabilir. ▸ She can never forget the day **(when) she got married to her dream husband**. ▸ We decided to have breakfast at the place **(where) we had gone last weekend**.	'When', 'where' zamirleri cümleden asla çıkartılamaz ve 'why' da hiçbir zaman kullanılamaz. ▸ Paris, **where I studied Economics**, is located in Central Europe.
Bu sıfat cümleciği türünde 'whom' ya da 'which'ten önce sayı ya da miktar belirten herhangi bir kelime kullanılamaz.	Bu sıfat cümleciği türünde 'whom' ya da 'which'ten önce sayı ya da miktar belirten bir kelime kullanılabilir. ▸ There are three interns at my company, **all of whom were recently hired**.

C REDUCTION OF ADJECTIVE CLAUSES (Sıfat Cümleciklerinin Kısaltılması)

Bir sıfat cümleciğini kısaltmanın değişik yolları vardır. Nasıl bir yöntem izleneceğine sıfat cümleciğinin fiiline göre karar verilmesi gerekir.

1 **'Reduction of the Verb 'Be''**: Sıfat cümleciğinin fiillerinde 'be' fiili varsa; 'be' ve sıfat cümleciğinin zamiri atılarak kısaltma yapılır. (be + adj, be + prepositional phrase, present continuous, past continuous, passive sentences)

- The man **who is angry with** the students might be our new headmaster. *(be + adj)*
  The man **angry with** the students might be our new headmaster.
- A chef's knife is usually the largest knife **that is in the kitchen**. *(be + prepositional phrase)*
  A chef's knife is usually the largest knife **in the kitchen**.
- The bad weather **that is bothering** us doesn't seem to clear up. *(present continuous)*
  The bad weather **bothering** us doesn't seem to clear up.
- Everyone **who was working** here for at least a year has received a Christmas bonus. *(past continuous)*
  Everyone **working** here for at least a year has received a Christmas bonus.
- All of the work **that was done** in the past week has been a waste of time. *(passive sentence)*
  All the work **done** in the past week has been a waste of time.
- A good amount of the money **that is raised** by charities goes to paying charity workers' wages. *(passive sentence)*
  A good amount of the money **raised** by charities goes to paying charity workers' wages.

2 **'Reduction of Active Sentences (V_{ing})'**: Bir sıfat cümleciğinin fiili 'Simple Present' ya da 'Simple Past' ise ve etken çatıda ise, fiile '-ing' eklenmeli ve sıfat cümleciğinin zamiri atılmalıdır.

- An umbrella can intercept the direct radiation **that comes** from the Sun.
  An umbrella can intercept the direct radiation **coming** from the Sun.
- In Brazil, a speeding vehicle caused a concrete pole to collapse and created a barrier **which blocked** the road.
  In Brazil, a speeding vehicle caused a concrete pole to collapse and created a barrier **blocking** the road.
- Psychology is a science **that involves** the study of behaviour and the mind.
  Psychology is a science **involving** the study of behaviour and the mind.
- Customers **who wanted** to use more renewable energy were limited to installing their own solar panels.
  Customers **wanting** to use more renewable energy were limited to installing their own solar panels.

3 **'Reduction of Perfect Tenses (Having V_3)'**: Bir sıfat cümleciğinin fiili 'Present Perfect (Continuous)' ya da 'Past Perfect (Continuous)' ise ve etken çatıdaysa, fiil ve sıfat cümleciği zamiri cümleden atılır. Ardından 'have', 'has' ve 'had' yardımcı fiilleri de 'having'e dönüştürülür ve fiil 'past participle' (V_3) haldedir. Eğer bu 'perfect tense'ler edilgen ise 'having'den sonra 'been' getirilir ve fiil yine 'past participle' (V_3) haldedir.

- The sun, **which has started** to sink over the horizon, is almost out of sight.
  The sun, **having started** to sink over the horizon, is almost out of sight.
- The food, **which has sat** in the sun all day, is starting to rot.
  The food, **having sat** in the sun all day, is starting to rot.
- The parents, **who have watched** their children win so many medals, are feeling proud.
  The parents, **having watched** their children win so many medals, are feeling proud.
- Bulgaria, **which has been influenced** by the Ottoman Empire, has some cultural similarities to modern Turkey.
  Bulgaria, **having been influenced** by the Ottoman Empire, has some cultural similarities to modern Turkey.
- The game, **which has been going on** for a few hours now, is starting to get boring.
  The game, **having been going on** for a few hours now, is starting to get boring.
- The woman, **who had been singing** for three hours, was starting to get tired.
  The woman, **having been singing** for three hours, was starting to get tired.
- The criminal, **who has been arrested**, will likely spend the rest of his life in jail.
  The criminal, **having been arrested**, will likely spend the rest of his life in jail.
- The school, **which had been closed** down because of snow, couldn't be opened for a while.
  The school, **having been closed** down because of snow, couldn't be opened for a while.
- The bank robber, **who has almost been caught**, has decided it is time to retire.
  The bank robber, **having almost been caught**, has decided it is time to retire.
- The boy, **who has been beaten up** several times for insulting people, finally learned to keep his mouth shut.
  The boy, **having been beaten up** several times for insulting people, finally learned to keep his mouth shut.

4 **'Reduction of Superlatives and Ordinal Numbers' (To V_1)**: 'The first', 'the last', 'the next', 'the only', 'the best', 'the worst' (+ isim) yapılarını niteleyen sıfat cümleciklerinin zamirleri atıldıktan hemen sonraki fiil 'to + V_1'a (to infinitive) dönüştürülmelidir.

- Neil Armstrong was **the first man who walked** on the Moon.
  Neil Armstrong was **the first man to walk** on the Moon.
- Tobias was **the only one of my three brothers who obeyed** my parents.
  Tobias was **the only one of my three brothers to obey** my parents.
- James is always **the first person who puts** his hand up in class.
  James is always **the first person to put** his hand up in class.

- My friend, Scott, was always **the last who volunteered** for anything.
  My friend, Scott, was always **the last to volunteer** for anything.
- Sally was **the next person in line who will take over** the company.
  Sally was **the next person in line to take over** the company.
- We are all excited to see who **the first person who will finish** the race will be.
  We are all excited to see who **the first person to finish** the race will be.
- The Hugo Theatre is **the only theatre in the city which has put on** a new production this month.
  The Hugo Theatre is **the only theatre in the city to have put on** a new production this month.
- The fifth question is **the hardest question which has come up** on my exam so far.
  The fifth question is **the hardest question to have come up** on my exam so far.
- Our house is **the only one in the block which has been painted** recently.
  Our house is **the only one in the block to have been painted** recently.

⚠ **Uyarı** *Tüm cümleyi niteleyen 'which' kısaltma yapmak amacıyla cümleden atılamaz.*

6 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. That women ____________________ (**talk**) to my friend there is the Dean of this faculty.

2. My friend, Ben, ____________________ (**aim**) at exploring the whole country, has rented a campervan to drive around in.

3. People ____________________ (**want**) to get into the restaurant for dinner should call a few days ahead and book a table.

4. My friend, James, ____________________ (**demote**) because he is always late, is thinking about quitting his job.

5. There are many travel agencies ____________________ (**offer**) cheap flights to Europe and to Asia.

6. Escape velocity is a physics term ____________________ (**use**) to explain how fast something needs to be going to escape Earth's atmosphere.

7. The first woman ____________________ (**climb**) the summit of Mount Everest twice in a week is Chhurim Sherpa.

8. *The Matrix*, ____________________ (**write**) and ____________________ (**direct**) by The Wachowiskis, was very popular when it first came out in 1999.

9. My teacher thinks that anyone ____________________ (**shout**) loudly in class should immediately be kicked out of class.

10. There are many different cruise ships ____________________ (**offer**) journeys around the world.

11. The Burj Khalifa, ____________________ (**know**) as the Burj Dubai before its name change, is the tallest building in the world.

12. A pasta salad is the easiest salad ____________________ (**make**) ahead for picnics, barbecues and family meals.

7

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. There are many refugees from Syria ____________________ (**live**) throughout the city at the moment because of the war.
2. Most people ____________________ (**eat**) less fast food have got to improve their health immensely.
3. My father, ____________________ (**promote**) to a management position because of his hard work, is much happier now.
4. Microsoft, ____________________ (**found**) by Bill Gates and Paul Allen in 1975, continues to sell computer programmes today.
5. You can always find someone ____________________ (**sell**) second hand goods that are cheaper than new ones.
6. Jason wasn't the only person ____________________ (**speak out**) against the ongoing bribery and corruption among gavernment officials.
7. Dogs ____________________ (**live**) in apartments are not as happy as those who are in houses with gardens.
8. *Of Mice and Men,* ____________________ (**write**) by John Steinbeck in 1937, is a classic book in Western literature.
9. People ____________________ (**need**) to make an appointment should wait until 9 a.m. when the office opens.
10. Google, a search engine ____________________ (**create**) by Larry Page and Sergey Brinn in 1998, is the most popular one today.
11. The hardest question ____________________ (**answer**) seem to be the one that you already know the answer but can't spill it out.
12. My parents believe that any of their children not ____________________ (**get**) good grades should have to stay home during the weekend.

1 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable 'relative pronoun'.

1. My neighbour, ____________________ dogs are always coming into my yard, has built a large fence on the edge of her property.

2. There are many different activities offered by our hotel ____________________ include swimming, kayaking, hiking and biking.

3. Harry Potter series, ____________________ is one of the most popular young adult book series of all times, is about a boy who can do magic.

4. I have not asked my daughter the reason ____________________ she has started dressing all in black clothes.

5. I am not sure with ____________________ I am supposed to be meeting at the conference tomorrow.

6. Dubai International Airport, ____________________ our plane landed, is the biggest airport I have ever seen.

7. I did not ask my boss the reason ____________________ we were allowed to leave work so early, I just left straight away.

8. The Empire State Building, ____________________ was built in the 1930s, is a popular tourist attraction in New York.

9. The forest ____________________ I spent so much time playing as a kid has been cut down for timber.

10. I am not sure about the reason ____________________ my flatmates thought it would be a good idea to have a big party the night before my exam.

11. My professor, ____________________ students are always texting him, has decided to only communicate through emails.

12. China, ____________________ has the biggest population of any country in the world, has gone through a lot of economic growth in the past twenty years.

13. The woman with ____________________ I am trying to have a conversation keeps taking phone calls.

14. The fisherman, ____________________ dog always comes out with him on the boat, caught 15 fish today.

15. My old favourite café, ____________________ I used to study for my tests, has been turned into a restaurant.

2 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable 'relative pronoun' or 'preposition + relative pronoun' combination.

1. My two brothers, neither ____________________ has jobs, are always asking me to lend them some money.

2. There are many different types of books you can find to read on the Internet, some ____________________ are even free!

3. I have always wanted to go back to that island ____________________ my family and I went on vacation to in 2004.

4. My favourite time is right at the start of summer, ____________________ it is hot but not yet too hot.
5. I am not sure of the person ____________________ left the door to our house open last night but I hope they don't do it again.
6. The hotel room ____________________ I have been staying for the past few years is a bit small and dirty.
7. There are ten movies coming out in the film festival this year, half ____________________ will probably be documentaries.
8. My mother, ____________________ always tries to help me whenever she can, is a very giving person.
9. Sydney, ____________________ is one of the biggest cities in Australia, is famous for the Sydney Opera House.
10. My son and my two daughters each have their own scooters ____________________ were given to them by their grandpa.

3 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with a suitable 'relative pronoun' or 'preposition + relative pronoun' combination.

1. There are many different majors offered at my university, none ____________________ is the one I want to take though.
2. The picnic table in the park ____________________ we sometimes eat lunch has been repainted recently.
3. I have always tried to avoid going on vacation to places ____________________ have lots of other tourists visiting.
4. There are many foreign employees at my office, some ____________________ speak more than three languages!
5. I am signing up to a course for next month that is for anyone ____________________ wants to learn how to cook Italian food.
6. Typing very quickly on the keyboard is something ____________________ can be learned over time with a lot of practice.
7. The author was a guy ____________________ most people would not have heard about.
8. Turtles are cold-blooded animals, ____________________ is why they will sometimes lie in the sun to try to warm up.
9. There are so many places ____________________ I want to go to and things ____________________ I want to see in my life.
10. It was last August ____________________ I started to work on this project that I still have not finished today.

4

REVISION:

Choose the correct option.

1. **There are many plants and herbs ---- could be found in the forest and ---- can be used for natural medicines.**

A) that / which B) that / where

2. **The reason ---- I am going to deactivate my Facebook account is that it is taking up too much of my time.**

A) when B) why

3. **Tsunamis, also known as tidal waves, are huge waves ---- are usually caused by earthquakes.**

A) for which B) which

4. **There was a letter under my door today with no name on it, so I am not sure for ---- it is for.**

A) whom B) who

5. **Che Guevara was a revolutionary ---- ideas continue to have an impact on people even today.**

A) whose B) whom

6. **From the first week ---- I started at my new job, I have been extremely busy.**

A) where B) when

7. **One of the most important things ---- makes an entrepreneur successful is being able to put together a good team.**

A) that B) who

8. **There are many people at my university ---- only seem to be there to party and have fun.**

A) who B) which

9. **One of my best memories is the time ---- all my friends and I rented a house together by the lake for the summer.**

A) which B) in which

10. **There are many different reasons ---- someone might decide to move to another country.**

A) for whom B) why

11. **My father, ---- career ended last year when he retired, has been travelling around the world.**

A) whose B) who

12. **There have been many days ---- I wanted to quit my job, but I haven't yet.**

A) where B) when

13. **Last weekend, we went shopping for a new painting for the living room, but we couldn't find any ---- we liked.**

A) who B) which

14. **I love going to Asian countries like Thailand ---- you can buy delicious food from stalls on the street.**

A) where B) when

15. **The pair of shoes ---- I bought today didn't actually fit my feet properly.**

A) that B) whose

16. **Ireland, ---- is thought to be a very green and beautiful country, has a population of slightly less than seven million people.**

A) that B) which

17. **Last night, I met a woman, ---- name I cannot remember right now, told me she was an astronaut.**

A) whose B) whom

18. **I remember the good old days ---- people were very happy and healthy.**

A) which B) when

19. **The extent ---- parents believe what their young children tell them is sometimes a little bit foolish.**

A) to which B) to where

20. **For our third year anniversary, I took my wife back to the restaurant ---- we first met.**

A) where B) when

ADJECTIVE CLAUSES

TEST 1

1. **The periodic table was created by Dmitri Mendeleev, ---- he was awarded the Nobel Prize in Chemistry in 1906.**

A) who
B) for which
C) whom
D) at which
E) that

2. **I will ask my father, ---- opinion I highly value, which bank he thinks is the best one for me to open an account at.**

A) who
B) whose
C) whom
D) which
E) of whose

3. **During the mid-year festival ---- took place just last week in the middle of the city, I lost my wallet.**

A) which
B) in which
C) who
D) for whose
E) in whom

4. **One of my closest friends, ---- mother is a doctor, says that medical school is extremely difficult and takes a lot of work.**

A) by whom
B) who
C) whose
D) for whom
E) which

5. **I remember a day a long time ago ---- I went to a chocolate factory and ate so much chocolate that I threw up.**

A) which
B) where
C) when
D) whose
E) on which

6. **When Europeans came to North America, they caused the deaths of millions of natives, ---- died from diseases.**

A) none of which
B) most of whom
C) any of whose
D) a great deal of which
E) all of whose

7. **The cave paintings, ---- are thought to be as much as five thousand years old, can only be seen by crawling through a long cave.**

A) whose
B) with whom
C) whom
D) where
E) which

8. **Stocks are financial instruments ---- value depends on the value of the company ---- they are based.**

A) that / where
B) which / that
C) whom / which
D) whose / on which
E) whose / which

9. **The man ---- I met outside my house last week has just called today to sell me life insurance.**

A) where
B) whose
C) of whom
D) which
E) whom

10. **Students ---- are forced to go to university by their parents will usually not work as hard as those who go there willingly.**

A) who
B) whose
C) which
D) of whom
E) to whom

11. When I was visiting Thailand, I made sure to go to the secret beach ---- my cousin had told me.

A) whose
B) for which
C) that
D) about which
E) which

12. I composed around ten songs this month, about half ---- weren't very good but I think at least one or two were excellent.

A) whose
B) of that
C) of which
D) for which
E) that

13. Summer holidays, ---- we usually go on vacation to tropical parts of the world, are my favourite time of year.

A) along which
B) to which
C) during which
D) at whose
E) by which

14. Desalination is the process ---- salt is removed from seawater so that it can be used for drinking.

A) for which
B) with which
C) which
D) that
E) for whom

15. Sunlight, the nearly unlimited natural resource ---- almost all life on Earth is based on, comes from fusion reactions in the Sun.

A) which
B) of whom
C) on which
D) for which
E) whose

16. James finished his homework but he forgot to bring it to school the next day, ---- was foolish of him.

A) of which
B) that
C) where
D) in which
E) which

17. I was given two new phones for my birthday, ---- are really nice but I will have to give one of them back.

A) both of which
B) either of whom
C) neither of whom
D) none of whose
E) all of whom

18. We were looking for a special type of jewel, the colour ---- is a deep purple, but we weren't able to find it.

A) for whose
B) by whom
C) whose
D) of whom
E) of which

19. It is often an author's own experiences and memories ---- he creates new stories and characters.

A) by whose
B) that
C) which
D) from which
E) in whom

20. The local school ---- at the end of this year will mean that hundreds of students will have to find new schools further away.

A) to close
B) has closed
C) is closing
D) closing
E) was closing

ADJECTIVE CLAUSES

TEST 2

1. **I was wondering ---- bicycle it was in front of my door, but then they told me that it belonged to the disabled boy upstairs and he left it there because he couldn't carry it.**

A) who
B) which
C) whose
D) why
E) when

2. **Can you please give me a reason ---- I shouldn't call the police now? You are in my house in the middle of the night.**

A) who
B) that
C) which
D) why
E) when

3. **I can't remember ---- I have left my cardigan and now all of a sudden it is freezing cold and my cardigan is nowhere to be found.**

A) where
B) that
C) which
D) when
E) why

4 **Can you please tell me again the name of the person ---- I am supposed to deliver all these packages? I can't remember.**

A) whose B) who
C) to whom D) to which
E) of whose

5. **The young handsome boy knows the effect he has on girls, so wherever he goes, he chooses a girl ---- he aims to attract and usually the girls fall for him in the end.**

A) whose B) when
C) where D) which
E) who

6. **The young couple decided on a date ---- they would have their engagement ceremony and invited all their relatives.**

A) why
B) which
C) when
D) that
E) whom

7. **The USA is a country ---- the taxpayers are so tired of the heavy taxes that they are beginning to carry their businesses to China one after another.**

A) where
B) when
C) on which
D) which
E) from which

8. **The boy looked around but he couldn't figure out ---- he was supposed to hand the letter as almost everyone in the room matched the definition he was given.**

A) who
B) that
C) whose
D) to whom
E) to which

9. **All hair products have common ingredients ---- would make your hair glow. This doesn't mean all of them are good for you, though.**

A) that B) why
C) who D) whose
E) with which

10. **England ---- is one of the four countries in the UK is not a huge country by itself. The UK is not big even when you involve Wales, Scotland, Northern Ireland and England.**

A) whose B) to which
C) which D) in whom
E) in which

11. **Sarah, ---- is a famous singer in her country, finds it extremely comfortable to be roaming around the streets in a foreign land where nobody recognizes her.**

A) whom
B) who
C) whose
D) that
E) where

12. **The Arctic, ---- a variety of animals survive even in the coldest months, is just amazing to me.**

A) when
B) that
C) why
D) whose
E) where

13. **White shirts ---- even one single spot or stain can easily be visible are still the most preferred top in the world.**

A) to which
B) where
C) on which
D) whose
E) with which

14. **My childhood, ---- I was the happiest, is always on my mind and I recall all my memories from that time.**

A) why
B) where
C) on which
D) during which
E) that

15. **Jane had long curly blonde hair ---- could be noticed from two miles away with the naked eye because of its shine.**

A) whose
B) whom
C) that
D) where
E) with which

16. **Spanish, ---- is the second most spoken language in the world, has become enormously popular recently due to its worldwide use.**

A) that
B) which
C) where
D) in which
E) whose

17. **It is proven scientifically that people ---- eyes are blue are attracted to people with blue eyes because their children would have blue eyes only when both parents have them.**

A) to whom
B) whom
C) who
D) that
E) whose

18. **Historical studies have revealed the reason ---- ancient people sacrificed their children is no longer a mystery. They all believed the gods needed a sacrifice to give them abundant food supplies.**

A) with which
B) to whose
C) whose
D) why
E) whom

19. **Three bodies have been discovered on the Andes ---- they were frozen by the extreme colds and kept as good as they were alive.**

A) where
B) when
C) in which
D) which
E) that

20. **Isabel knew ---- she wanted to go dancing but she was too shy to ask him, so she asked her friend to ask for her.**

A) by whom
B) with whom
C) that
D) whom
E) whose

GERUND
&
INFINITIVE
&
PARTICIPLE

7 GERUND & INFINITIVE & PARTICIPLE

Fiiller her dilde olduğu gibi İngilizcede de dilin temel araçlarından biridir. Fiiller zamanlarla ve 'modal'larla, zamanın ve kullanımın gerektirdiği şekillerde; ek alarak ya da yalın halde kullanılabilirler. Bunun yanısıra fiiller, ek alarak ya da 'to' ile kullanılarak fiilimsi yapılabilir ve bu kullanımıyla bir cümlenin öznesi ya da nesnesi olabilirler. 'Gerunds' fiile '-ing' eki eklenerek fiilimsi yapılmasına, 'Infinitive' ise fiilin başında 'to' kullanılarak fiilimsi yapılmasına verilen isimdir. Bunun yanı sıra fiil yalın halde (ek almadan) da kullanılabilir. Bu kullanıma 'Bare Infinitive' denir.

Bazı fiiller sadece 'Gerund', bazı fiiller sadece 'Infinitive' yapıda kullanılır. Çoğu durumda bu iki yapı birbirinin yerine ya da aynı fiillerle kullanılmaz. Yine de bazen bu iki yapıyı birbirinin yerine kullanıp aynı anlamı elde edebiliriz. Bazen de aynı fiille kullanıldıklarında farklı anlamlar elde edebiliriz. Maalesef bu kafa karıştırıcı durumda kullanımları ezberlemek ya da otantik dile maruz kalmak dışında yapabileceğimiz bir şey yoktur.

Ayrıca yukarıda bahsedilen yapıların olumsuz kullanımları mevcuttur ve her birinin başına 'not' eklenerek oluşturulur.

	Gerund	Bare Infinitive	Infinitive
Simple	doing	do	to do
Continuous	-	be doing	to be doing
Perfect	having done	have done	to have done
Perfect Continuous	-	have been doing	to have been doing
Passive	being done	be done	to be done
Perfect Passive	having been done	have been done	to have been done

Şimdi her bir konu başlığını ve kullanımlarını detaylı bir şekilde inceleyelim.

A GERUNDS

'Gerund', fiil köküne '-ing' ekinin eklenmesiyle oluşturulur. Bu ek Türkçede isim-fiil yapan ekler olan '-me' ve '-ma' ile aynı görevi yerine getirmektedir. 'Gerund'lar cümlede bir ismin kullanıldığı her yerde kullanılabilirler. Yani **özne** veya **nesne** konumunda bulunabilirler.

swim → swimming
play → playing
walk → walking
read → reading
sleep → sleeping
talk → talking

- **Reading** the news every day keeps me up to date with what is happening in the world. *(özne)*
- **Watching** television series is a lot of fun. *(özne)*
- A fun activity for teenagers nowadays is **playing** with fidget spinners all day long. *(nesne)*

'Gerund' yapısı 'continuous tense'lerde kullanılan ve '-ing' takısı eklenerek oluşturulan ana fiillerle karıştırılmamalıdır.

- **Jogging** is a very good exercise if you want to lose some weight.*(gerund)*
- The dog **is chasing** the children down the street. *(continuous tense)*

'Gerund' yapısı aşağıdaki şekillerde kullanılabilir.

1 Bir cümlenin öznesi olarak kullanılan 'gerund'lar:

a 'Gerund', bir cümlenin öznesi olarak kullanılabilir. Bu özne tek bir sözcükten veya bir söz öbeğinden oluşabilir.

- **Reading** is one of my favourite activities. *(Simple gerund)*
- **Saving** is important if you want to buy a house. *(Simple gerund)*
- **Cooking** can help you relax when you are stressed. *(Simple gerund)*
- **Watching horror movies** is a good way to lose sleep at night. *(Gerund phrase)*
- **Playing memory games** can help you remember things. *(Gerund phrase)*
- **Finding the right answer on the Internet** can be a very frustrating process. *(Gerund phrase)*

b 'Gerund' yapılarının olumsuz yapılabilmesi için başına 'not' getirilmesi gerektiğini belirtmiştik. Yapı olumsuz olduğunda da cümle içindeki kullanımında bir değişiklik olmaz.

- **Not exercising** is worse for your health than eating out every day. *(Negative simple gerund)*
- **Not having a degree** can make it very difficult for you to find a good job. *(Negative gerund phrase)*

2 Bir edatın (preposition) nesnesi olarak kullanılan 'gerund'lar:

a Edatların (prepositions) ardından bir fiil geldiğinde bu fiil mutlaka 'gerund' haliyle kullanılmalıdır.

- Susan always takes a shower before **leaving** her house.
- The journalist got the answers by **asking** the right questions.
- This school has rules against **bullying**.

b Bir önceki kural, sonları her zaman bir edatla (preposition) biten deyimsel fiiller (phrasal verbs) (look into, put up with, look forward to, etc.) için de geçerlidir. Bir 'phrasal verb'den sonra kullanılacak olan fiillerin mutlaka 'gerund' olması gerekir.

- Deborah looked forward to **getting** her own apartment.
- I gave up **smoking** a few months ago.
- When do you plan on **buying** that new car?

c Bazı fiil, sıfat ve isimler kendilerinden sonra bir edat (preposition) geldikten sonra nesne alırlar. Bu durumda da yine bu edatlardan (prepositions) sonra 'gerund' kullanılmalıdır.

Noun + Preposition + Gerund:

advantage of	alternative of	anxiety about	belief in
benefit of	chance of	choice between	credit for
danger of	delay in	disadvantage of	doubt about
excuse for	fear of	fondness for	habit of
hope of	idea of	interest in	knowledge of
love of	memory of	method of	need for
opportunity of	place for	pleasure in	possibility of
preference for	process of	reason for	regret for
reputation for	responsibility for	story about	talent for
technique for	way of		

- Samantha took advantage of **working** with an experienced team and has become more successful than ever expected.
- One of the disadvantages of **having** a car is definitely the traffic you have to endure every day.
- He has a reputation for **not listening** to what people say.
- We are in the process of **upgrading** our computer systems.
- You should not make a habit of **eating** an entire chocolate cake every day.
- Giving you flowers is Mark's way of **saying** he's sorry.

Adjective + Preposition + Gerund:

afraid of	angry about / at / with	anxious about	appropriate for
ashamed of	aware of	bad at	bored of / with
capable of	certain about	concerned about / for	content with
crazy about / for	critical of	delighted at	different from
disappointed about / at	discouraged from	enthusiastic about	essential for / to
excellent at / in	excited about	familiar with	famous for
fed up with	fond of	frightened of	generous about / in
glad about	good at	guilty about / for / of	happy about / of
infamous for	interested in	involved in	jealous of
keen on	known for	lazy about	nervous about
notorious for	perfect for	proud of / about	qualified for
quick at	ready for	responsible for	sad about
satisfied with	scared of	sick of	similar to
sorry about	successful in	suitable for	sure about / of
surprised at	terrified of	tired from*	tired of*
tolerant of	upset about	useful for	worried about

* **tired from**: bir şeyden dolayı yorgun düşmek / yorgun olmak
tired of: bıkmak, usanmak

- ▶ Henry was sick of **eating** fish and chips for lunch every day.
- ▶ My younger sister was really excited about **going** to Disneyland.
- ▶ Deborah's restaurant is known for **having** the best sushi in town.
- ▶ I am really keen on **staying** in Australia for another year.
- ▶ Peter is terrified of **flying**, he won't even go to the airport to say goodbye to anyone.
- ▶ Who's responsible for **breaking** the window in the lounge?

Verb + Preposition + Gerund:

abstain from	accuse of	admit to	agree with
aim at	apologise for	approve of	argue about / against
ask about	believe in	benefit from	blame for
boast about	care about / for	comment on	complain about

concentrate on
consist of
count on
decide against / on
depend on / upon
die of
disagree with
disapprove of
discourage from
dream about / of
escape from
forget about
forgive for
help with
inquire about
insist on
interfere with
laugh at
participate in
pay for
persist in
plan on
prepare for
profit from
prohibit from
protect from
refer to
rely on
resort to
specialize in
succeed in
suffer from
take part in
talk about / of
think about / of
vote for
warn about
worry about

- In the end, we resorted to **giving** everybody a free ticket.
- I believe in **giving** everybody a fair chance.
- Isn't Michael planning on **buying** a new house?
- I think you should complain about **not getting** what you ordered.
- Jerry can forget about **passing** his exams if he doesn't start studying now.
- You should concentrate on **finding** a job instead of playing games.

3

Bazı fiillerde fiil ve edat arasına nesne gelebilir. Bu fiiller aşağıdaki gibidir:

Verb + Object + Preposition + Gerund:

accuse somebody of something
arrest somebody for something
blame somebody for something
charge somebody with something
criticise somebody for something
devote oneself to something
dissuade somebody from something
involve somebody in something
penalize somebody for something
protect somebody from something
remind somebody of something
suspect somebody of something
warn somebody about / against / off something

apologise to somebody for something
ban somebody from something
complain to somebody about something
congratulate somebody on something
deter somebody from something
discourage somebody from something
forgive somebody for something
keep somebody from something
prevent somebody from something
punish somebody for something
stop somebody from something
thank somebody for something

- Did you hear that Margaret **accused** Mark **of stealing** her gold necklace.
- I had hoped to discourage you **from taking** that awful job but I didn't expect you to be this unhappy.
- The police **charged** me **with breaking into** Mary's house and stealing her belongings.
- My boss will never **forgive** me **for breaking** the printer because he cannot afford a new one.
- Charles completely **devoted** himself **to finding** a solution to his problem.

4 'Gerund'ların niteleyici sözcüklerle ve zamirlerle kullanımı:

a Niteleyici sözcükler (Determiners - the, a, etc.)
İşaret sıfatları (Demonstrative adjectives - this, those, etc)
İyelik belirten isimler (Possessives - Peter's)
İyelik sıfatları (Possessive adjectives - his, her, etc.)
Nesne zamirleri (Object pronouns - him, her, etc.) 'gerund' yapılarından önce kullanılabilir.
Nesne zamirlerinin kullanımı daha çok gündelik konuşmada yaygındır.

- All of Mary's **screaming** led to a sore throat, but on the brighter side now she knows she should avoid it.
- In the Middle East, the **weaving** of carpets is usually done by women.
- Mary resents your **being** more popular than she is. *(formal)*
  Mary resents you **being** more popular than she is. *(informal)*

b 'The + -ing' yapısı sıkça kullanılan bir yapıdır. Bu yapıyı kullandığımızda ve bu yapıyı bir nesneyle bağlamak istediğimizde 'of' da kullanmamız gerekir.

- ~~**The handing over** certificates will commence after the break~~. (X)
  The handing over of certificates will commence after the break. (✓)

5 'Gerund'ların 'to' ile kullanımı:

'To' yapısından sonra 'infinitive' kullanılarak fiillerin isim-fiil (fiilimsi) yapılmasını bir sonraki başlıkta inceleyeceğiz. Bu maddede bahsedilen 'to' yapı haline gelmiş bazı deyimsel fiiller (phrasal verbs) ve yapılarda var olan 'to' yapısıdır ve kendisinden sonra 'gerund' kullanılması gerekir. Bunun sebebi, yapıların sonunda bulunan 'to'nun 'infinitive' yapının bir parçası değil, edat olan 'to' olmasıdır. Bu yapılardan bazıları ve kullanımları aşağıdaki gibidir:

Look forward to	▶ I am looking forward to **travelling** through Europe next summer.
Prefer something to doing something	▶ Mark prefers **riding** a motorcycle to **driving** a car.
Be accustomed to	▶ Rich is accustomed to **having** Jason go on adventures with him.

Be opposed to	I am opposed to **cutting** down the forest to build a road.
Be used to	I don't think Harry is used to **living** in the city yet.
Be addicted to	I think I might be addicted to **eating** sushi.
Addiction to	Jerry's addiction to **drinking** cola has caused him serious health issues.
Be committed to	The new mayor is committed to **making** the city a safer place.
Be dedicated to	The institute is dedicated to **helping** teenagers learn English.
Dedication to	The teacher's dedication to **maintaining** good discipline in the school is worth praising.
Be devoted to	Medical scientists are devoted to **finding** a cure for cancer.
Devotion to	Their great devotion to **stopping** global warming has changed the world.
Object to	I object to **not having** ice cream for dessert.
Objection to	We have received no objections to **building** the new road.
Reaction to	You should have seen Beth's reaction to **getting** a puppy for her birthday.

5 'Gerund'ların belirli yapılardan sonra kullanımı:

Bazı yapılardan sonra bir fiil kullanılacaksa, bu fiilin gerund olması gerekir. Söz konusu yapılar aşağıdaki gibidir:

a waste of time / money / energy + V_{ing} (zaman / para / enerji kaybı)

- It is **a waste of money buying** things you don't need.

busy V_{ing} something (… yapmakla meşgul olmak)

- I am **busy doing** my homework. Please don't disturb me.

catch / find somebody + V_{ing} something (birini … yaparken yakalamak / bulmak)

- Beth **caught Tony eating** the cake she'd made for Rick's birthday.

mind + V_{ing} (-ı / -i umursamak, sorun etmek, sakıncası olmak)

- I **don't mind helping** you carry your bags since they look heavy.

feel awful / terrible / bad / good / guilty + V_{ing} (… yapmaktan dolayı kötü / berbat / iyi / suçlu hissetmek)

- I **feel guilty using** your car without your permission. Please forgive me.

feel like + V_{ing} (canı -mek / -mak istemek)

- Do you **feel like going** to the beach this afternoon?

go + V_{ing} (-a /-e gitmek)

- I want to **go diving** in the Bahamas next summer.

have (some) problems + V_{ing} (… yaparken (bazı) sorunlar yaşamak)

- Patrick **had some problems getting** to work yesterday because of the traffic.

have (no) difficulty + V_{ing} (… yaparken sorun yaşa(ma)mak)

- You will **have no difficulty finding** our house; it is painted orange.

have a / no problem + V_{ing} (problem yaşa(ma)mak)

- We **had no problem delivering** your package; you should receive it today.

have a(n) difficult / hard / good / easy time + V_{ing} (zor / iyi / rahat zamanlar geçirmek)

- You will **have an easy time passing** your exam; you studied very hard.

have fun + V_{ing} (… yaparken eğlenmek)

- Did you **have fun visiting** your grandparents?

lie / sit / stand + somewhere + V_{ing} (bir yerde … yaparken uzanmak / oturmak / durmak)

- The cat **stood at the corner waiting** to be fed.

spend / waste one's time + V_{ing} (… yaparken vaktini geçirmek / boşa harcamak)

- Stop **wasting your time playing** video games and do something productive.

(not) worth + V_{ing} (yapmaya değer / değmez)

- Do you think it's **worth going** to the new amusement park?

It's no use / good + V_{ing} (-nın bir yararı yok)

- **It's no good planting** flowers when spring is over.

There is no point in + V_{ing} (-nın bir anlamı yok)

- **There is no point in giving** teenagers advice; they do not listen.

6 **Passive Gerunds (being V_3):**

'Passive Gerund' yapısı; öznenin başına gelen bir şeyi, maruz kaldığı bir olayı ya da bir eylemden etkilendiğini ifade etmek için kullanılır. Fakat bu durumda eylemi yapan öznenin kendisi değildir. Özne sadece bu eylemden etkilenen kişidir; yani eylemi gerçekleştiren kişi bir başkasıdır. Bu tür cümlelerde ana fiil (verb) etkendir ve isim-fiil (gerund) edilgendir.

- I **don't like being called** to meetings suddenly.
  (Aniden toplantılara çağrılmaktan hoşlanmıyorum.)
  (Ana fiil (don't like) etken; isim-fiil (being told) edilgendir.
- No one **likes being told** what to do by other people.
- Sheila won't **tolerate being treated** this way. You must apologise to her.
- David doesn't **admit being bullied** by his friends at school, but I'm sure there is something wrong.
- Old people **appreciate being treated** with respect.
- I was **ashamed of being scolded** by my mother in front of our guests.

7 **Perfect Gerunds (having V_3):**

'Perfect Gerund' ana fiil (verb) ve isim-fiilin (gerund) arasında zaman farkı olduğu durumlarda kullanılmaktadır. Bu yapının kullanılabilmesi için isim-fiilin ana fiilden daha önce gerçekleşmiş olması gerekir. 'Perfect Gerund'ı 'past' veya 'perfect' zamanların birbirleriyle ilişkisi gibi düşünebiliriz.

Not *'Perfect Gerund' kullanılan her yerde 'Simple Gerund' da kullanılabilir; fakat seçeneklerde her ikisi de varsa zaman farkı olup olmadığına bakılması gerekir. Eğer zaman farkı var ise 'perfect gerund' seçilmelidir.*

- *The thief **admitted having stolen** the treasure.*
  *(The thief **admitted stealing** the treasure.)*
  (The thief admitted that he had stolen the treasure. - Önce çalma eylemi, sonra kabul etme eylemi gerçekleşmiş.)
- *I **hated having climbed** to the top of the mountain as there was nothing to see there.*
  *(I **hated climbing** to the top of the mountain as there was nothing to see there.)*
  (I hated climbing to the mountain after I had climbed as there was nothing to see there.)
- *David **recalled having taught** his daughter how to ride a bike. (= recalled thinking)*
- *The boy **denied having fallen** from the top of the tree. (= denied falling)*
- *Rebecca **still remembers having received** her birthday present early. (= remembers receiving)*

8 **Perfect Passive Gerunds (having been V_3):**

'Perfect Passive Gerund' yapısı ana fiil (verb) ve isim-fiilin (gerund) arasında zaman farkı olduğu durumlarda ve öznenin başına gelen bir şeyi, maruz kaldığı bir olayı ya da bir eylemden etkilendiğini ifade etmek için kullanılır. Fakat bu durumda eylemi yapan öznenin kendisi değildir. Özne sadece bu eylemden etkilenen kişi / şeydir; yani eylemi gerçekleştiren kişi / şey bir başkasıdır. Bu tür cümlelerde ana fiil etkenken (verb), isim-fiil (gerund) edilgendir. Bu yapının kullanılabilmesi için isim-fiilin ana fiilden daha önce gerçekleşmiş olması gerekir. 'Perfect passive gerund'ı 'past' veya 'perfect' zamanların edilgen hali (passive) gibi düşünebiliriz.

Not

'Perfect Passive Gerund' kullanılan her yerde 'Passive Gerund' da kullanılabilir; fakat seçeneklerde her ikisi de varsa, zaman farkı olup olmadığına bakılması gerekir. Eğer zaman farkı barizse perfect olan seçilmelidir.

- *I **was accused of having been involved** in the robbery. (perfect passive gerund)*
  *(I **was accused of being involved** in the robbery.) (passive gerund)*
  *Ana fiil (**verb - accused of**) edilgendir. İsim-fiil (perfect passive gerund / passive gerund - **having been involved / being involved**) de edilgendir.*
  (Soyguna karışmış olmakla şuçlandım.)
  (I was accused of it after I had been involved in the robbery.)
- *Rebecca, **having been seen** by her co-workers at the mall yesterday, **couldn't deny** not being sick.*
  *(Rebecca, **being seen** by her co-workers at the mall yesterday, **couldn't deny** not being sick.)*
- *I feel jealous of you for **not having been given** the same opportunities as you. (= not being given)*
- *Susan denied **having been married** before when the officer asked her. (= being married)*
- *Robert rejects **having been unemployed** for nearly one year out of embarrassment. (=being unemployed)*
- *The sailors will never forget **having been lost** at sea for two weeks.(= being lost)*
- *Marcus was responsible for **having been run over** by a car as he neglected the traffic lights.(= being run over)*

9 ⯮

Verbs Followed by Gerunds:

acknowledge
admit
adore
advocate
anticipate
appreciate
avoid
carry on
commence
compare
complete
consider
contemplate
defer
delay
deny
despise
detest
discuss

dislike
dread
end up
endure
enjoy
entail
escape
evade
face
fancy
favour
finish
foresee
give up
imagine
include
involve
justify
keep

mention
mind
miss
necessitate
oppose
postpone
practise
put off
quit
recall
recollect
recommend
report
resent
resist
risk
suggest
take up
tolerate

1. Avoid
   - I **avoid going** on the highway whenever I can.
2. Finish
   - Mark **finished doing** his homework before he started playing on his computer.
3. Dislike
   - Deborah **dislikes giving** Peter a ride to school because he never thanks her.
4. Recommend
   - I would highly **recommend eating** at that new restaurant; their food is delicious.
5. Deny
   - Rick **denied taking** Mark on any adventures when the principal asked him.
6. Involves
   - This job **involves doing** a lot of repetitive tasks such as typing copies of similar works.
7. Risk
   - Will you **risk investing** all your money with a guy like Mike?
8. Fancy
   - Margaret, do you **fancy going** to the movies with me tonight?
9. Imagine
   - Theresa **imagines living** in the countryside where there is tranquility.
10. Acknowledge
    - Stephen **acknowledged receiving** the delivery last week.

B INFINITIVES

'Infinitive'ler bir fiilden önce 'to' getirerek ya da fiili hiç bir ek almadan yalın haliyle (bare infinitive) kullanarak oluşturulan isim-fiil yapılarıdır. Bu şekilde kullanılan fiiller Türkçeye sonlarında '-mek' ve '-mak' eki olan haliyle çevrilir.

speak → to speak
forget → to forget
work → to work
dream → to dream
earn → to earn
play → to play

- **To learn** English can be a lot of fun.
  *(İngilizce **öğrenmek** çok eğlenceli olabilir.)*
- **To run** a marathon requires intensive training.
- I find it very difficult **to understand** what Mark is saying.

'Infinitive' yapısı daha önce belirtildiği gibi iki yapıdan oluşmaktadır:

Full infinitive (to + fiilin yalın hali) (to run, to love, etc.)
Bare infinitive (fiilin yalın hali) (run, love, etc.)

Bu bölümde her iki yapının da ayrı kullanım yerleri ve birlikte kullanıldıkları sözcük ve söz öbekleri ayrıntılı olarak ele alınacaktır.

1 Bir cümlenin öznesi olarak kullanılan 'to infinitive':

a 'To infinitive', bir cümlenin öznesi olarak kullanılabilir. Bu özne tek bir sözcükten veya bir söz öbeğinden oluşabilir.

- **To rest** is all I want to do after exercising. *(to infinitive)*
- **To sleep** is my favourite thing in the world. *(to infinitive)*
- **To knit** is my grandmother's favourite hobby. *(to infinitive)*
- **To exercise regularly** is very healthy. *(infinitive phrase)*
- **To pass your exams** will not be easy. *(infinitive phrase)*
- **To fix a computer** requires specialized skills. *(infinitive phrase)*
- **To understand this document** you must study really hard. *(infinitive phrase)*
- **To go to the moon** is my lifelong dream. *(infinitive phrase)*

b 'To infinitive' yapılarını olumsuz yapmak için başına 'not' eki getirilir.

- **Not to come** will be an insult to my wife.
  (negative to infinitive)
- **Not to travel the world when you are young** is a big mistake.
  (negative infinitive phrase)
- **Not to drive in the big city** is one of the best decisions you have made.
  (negative infinitive phrase)

2 Bir cümlenin nesnesi olarak kullanılan 'to infinitive':

'To infinitive', bir cümlenin nesnesi olarak kullanılabilir. Bu özne tek bir sözcükten veya bir söz öbeğinden oluşabilir.

- One of my favourite hobbies is **to hunt**. *(to infinitive)*
- My biggest aim has always been **to learn English well**. *(infinitive phrase)*
- Mark's only problem is **to manage his time**. *(infinitive phrase)*

3 Sıfatlardan sonra kullanılan 'to infinitive':

a Sıfatlarla birlikte 'to infinitive' kullanılabilir. Fakat bu kullanımın belirli bir kalıbı vardır. Bu kalıp aşağıdaki gibidir:

Subject (Özne) + to be (Ana fiil) + adjective (Sıfat) + (for / of someone) + to infinitive + (rest of the sentence) (Cümlenin geri kalanı)

Subject	to be	adjective	for / of someone	to infinitive	Rest of the sentence
It	was	nice		**to meet.**	
It	was	nice	of you	**to meet**	me today.
It	is	smart		**to save**	money.
It	is	smart	of Samantha	**to save**	money.
They	were	happy		**to see**	us.
I	was	disappointed		**not to be**	selected.

b Bu yapıyla sıkça kullanılan ve kendilerinden sonra 'to infinitive' alan bazı sıfatlar aşağıdaki gibidir:

able
afraid
amazed
anxious
ashamed
astonished
awkward
bound
brave
careful
careless
certain
clever
content
crazy
curious
delighted
determined
difficult
disappointed
disgusted
due
eager
easy
eligible
extraordinary
fit
foolish
fortunate
generous
glad
happy
hard
hesitant
honest
horrified
impossible
keen
kind
liable
likely
lucky
motivated
nice
odd
pleased
pointless
polite
possible
prepared
proud
ready
relieved
reluctant
ridiculous
right
rude
sad
selfish
shocked
silly
sorry
strange
stunned
stupid
sure
surprised
thrilled
unable
unlikely
unwilling
upset
welcome
willing
wise
wrong

- Susan was **disgusted to see** the beggar being mistreated by the local people.
- It is **polite to open** doors for ladies all around the world.
- The puppy was **reluctant to follow** his new owner.
- Rick was **curious to hear** what Molly would tell her parents.
- The cyclist was **fortunate not to be run over** by the car.
- It would be **stupid (of you) to invest** your money in that company.
- You are **welcome to stay** as long as you need.
- It is **foolish (of them) to ignore** her advice when they know she is an expert on the subject.
- Our company is **unwilling to commit to** a long term contract.

4 Söz öbeklerinden sonra kullanılan 'to infinitive':

Söz öbeklerinden sonra (quantifier + adjective + noun) 'to infinitive' kullanılabilir. Bu kullanımdaki söz dizimi aşağıdaki gibidir:

Subject (Özne) + to be (Ana fiil) + noun phrase (İsim öbeği) + to infinitive

Subject	To be	Noun phrase	To infinitive
It	was	an impossible situation	**to understand.**
This	was	a careless thing	**to say.**
That	is	a generous donation	**to make.**
That	was	a sad story	**to hear.**
This	is	the best loaf of bread	**to eat.**
Juggling	is	the most useless skill	**to have.**

5 İsimlerden sonra kullanılan 'to infinitive':

a Birçok isimden sonra '**to infinitive**' kullanılır.

- We have a lot of **work to finish** before we can start on the next project.
- Michael has some **chores to do** and he is not allowed to go out before he finishes them.
- I have a lot of **phone calls to make** at work today.
- They had more **stories to tell** the children but kept them for the next night.
- The professor has three more **classes to teach** today.

b Belgisiz zamirlerden (indefinite pronouns) sonra da 'to infinitive' kullanılır.

- He doesn't know **anything to be** an expert in any field.
- We had **nothing to do** all day, so we watched films.
- Mark had **something to tell** his boss but he was genuinely intimitaded by him.
- Our company requires **everybody to have** a degree to be able work here.
- The police were chasing the criminal and he had **nowhere to hide**.
- I usually have **nothing to say** when I meet new people.

c İlk maddede kullanılan somut isimler haricinde duygu, düşünce ve eğilimleri ifade etmek için 'to infinitive'le soyut isimler de kullanılabilir. Bu soyut isimlerden en yaygın olanları aşağıdaki gibidir.

ability	advice	agreement	ambition
anxiety	appeal	arrangement	attempt
chance	choice	decision	demand
desire	determination	dream	eagerness
effort	failure	goal	incentive
inclination	intention	mistake	motivation
need	nuisance	offer	opportunity
order	permission	pity	plan
pleasure	preparation	privilege	promise
proposal	readiness	reason	recommendation
refusal	reluctance	reminder	request
requirement	right	suggestion	tendency
urge	way	willingness	wish

- Everybody listened to the mayor's **proposal to reduce** traffic in the city.
- Do you have any **advice to give** to the new guy?
- You do not have **permission to walk** here.
- Do you think our team stands a **chance to win** this match?
- Conrad has a **tendency to ignore** any advice he receives.
- Do you have **a better way to remember** all these rules?

⚠ **Not**

Yukarıdaki listede bulunan isimlerle 'to infinitive' yapısının arasına 'for + somebody' gelebilir.

- *We made **arrangements (for you) to meet** the President.*
- *It was a **privilege (for us) to work** with you.*
- *It was a **pity (for me) to hear about** your failed investments.*
- *This is an **opportunity (for you) to learn** from an expert.*

6 'Too' ve 'enough' ile kullanılan 'to infinitive':

Sıfat ve zarfların derecesini veya aşağı yukarı miktarını belirtmek için 'too' ya da 'enough' zarflarından birini kullanabiliriz. Eğer bir şey olması gerektiğinden fazlaysa 'too', olması gerektiği kadarsa 'enough' kullanılır.

a Too: aşırı derecede, çok

too + adjective / adverb + (for somebody) + to infinitive

- I was **too tired to help** with the house chores.
- It's **too far to walk**, we'll never get there in time.
- That movie is **too scary (for her) to watch**. She will get nightmares from it.
- Rebecca's attitude is **too much (for us) to handle**, so we didn't invite her.

Not *'Too' yapısı anlam bakımından olumsuzdur. Bu yüzden olumsuz cümlelerde kullanılamaz.*

- *The music was **too soft to hear**. (=The music was so soft that we couldn't hear it.)*
- *The house was **too big** for me **to live in**.*
- *Jessica's food was **too spicy** for her **to eat**.*

b Enough: yeteri kadar, yeterli

adjective + enough + (for somebody) + to infinitive

- You are **tall enough to ride** the roller coaster.
- This computer is not **fast enough to work on**.

enough + noun + to infinitive

- Mark has **enough money to buy** a Lamborghini.
- You do not have **enough experience to work** for our company.
- That shop doesn't have **enough products to be** successful.

Not *'Enough' yapısı yanında bir sıfat ya da isim olmadan kendi başına fiili niteleyen bir zarf olarak da kullanılabilir.*

- *He doesn't **know enough to be** an expert.*

7 Amaç belirten 'to infinitive':

Bir eylemin yapılış amacını belirtmek için 'to infinitive' kullanılabilir. Daha önce 'conjunctions' ünitesinde bahsedildiği gibi bu yapının daha resmi olması için 'in order' veya 'so as' yapıları 'to infinitive'in başına getirilebilir. Bu şekilde 'to infinitive', '-mak /-mek için' şeklinde Türkçeye çevrilir.

- Mark went to university **to study** engineering.
- I moved to London **to learn** English faster.
- The cat waited for the perfect time **to catch** the mouse.
- **To travel** abroad, you must have a valid passport.
- Mark watched what Rick was doing **in order to learn** how to do it himself.
- **So as to hide** her identity, Hilary wore a costume.

⚠ **Not** *Olumsuz anlam vermek için 'to infinitive'den önce 'not' kelimesinin getirilmesi gerekir.*

- ***So as not*** *to confuse Meg, Rick did everything very slowly.*
- ***In order not*** *to get detention, you must apologise to the teacher immediately.*
- *I tried everything* ***not*** *to get bored, but nothing worked.*

8 Soru kelimelerinden sonra kullanılan 'to infinitive':

Soru kelimelerinden (who, where, what, etc.) sonra 'to infinitive' kullanılır. Bu kullanımda amaç soru sormak değildir. Buradaki kullanım bir sonraki ünitede (Noun Clauses) göreceğimiz kullanım ile aynıdır ve 'can' ve 'will' yapılarının kısaltılmış hali olarak düşünülebilir.

- We couldn't figure out **where to go**.
  We couldn't figure out **where we would go**.
- Could you please tell me **who to see** about buying a house?
  Could you please tell me **who I will see** about buying a house?
- We have to decide **when to have** the party.
  We have to decide **when we will have** the party.
- I do not know **what to say** during my acceptance speech.
- Have you decided **which colour to paint** your room?
- We have read the instructions, but we still don't know **how to assemble** the table.

⚠ **Not** *'Yes / no question' gibi bir anlamı olan cümlelerde (noun clause) 'whether' soru kelimesi ve devamında iki seçenek sunmak amacıyla 'or' kelimesi kullanılır.*

- *Ted couldn't decide* ***whether*** *to move to Holland* ***or*** *not.*
- *They didn't know* ***whether*** *to leave* ***or*** *stay.*
- *Bill stopped to wait for Pam, unsure* ***whether*** *to be annoyed at her delay* ***or*** *not.*

⚠ Not

‘Why’ soru kelimesinden sonra ‘to infinitive’ değil ‘bare infinitive’ kullanmamız gerekir. Bu kullanımda bir olayın sebebini sormaktan ziyade bir teklif veya öneride bulunma söz konusudur.

- ***Why waste*** *your money on trinkets?*
- ***Why talk*** *to strangers when you don’t have to?*
- ***Why listen*** *to anything he has to say if it makes you so unhappy?*
- ***Why not dance*** *with Sara? She is beautiful.*
- ***Why not eat*** *baklava if you have the urge to eat something sweet?*
- ***Why not paint*** *your house a new colour if you find the current colour boring?*

9 ‘Relative Clause’ kısaltmasında kullanılan ‘to infinitive’:

Bir ‘relative clause’da önce ‘the last’, ‘the first’, ‘the only’, ‘the + superlative’ yapılarından biri varsa, bu ‘relative clause’u kısaltmak için ‘to infinitive’ kullanılır.

- **The first person who speaks** during the lesson will be kicked out.
  The first person **to speak** during the lesson will be kicked out.
- Samantha was **the only person who suggested** we should go on vacation.
  Samantha was the only person **to suggest** we should go on vacation.
- **The last student who made jokes about** Mr Forbes was expelled.
  The last student **to make jokes about** Mr Forbes was expelled.
- **The next train that leaves from this platform** is going to Frankfurt.
  The next train **to leave** from this platform is going to Frankfurt.

10 ‘Continuous to infinitive’ (to be + V_{ing}):

‘Continuous infinitive’ yapısı konuşma anında ya da bahsi geçen belirli bir anda devam etmekte olan eylemleri anlatırken kullanılmaktadır. ‘To infinitive’ yapısının kullanıldığı her yapıyla birlikte kullanılabilir.

- It is amazing **to be living** in İstanbul; there are so many historical buildings.
- Margaret seemed **to be going** to a meeting from the way she was dressed.
- It is really hard **not to be telling** her secret to everybody.
- They happened **to be leaving** their house when I caught them.
- The victims are reported **to be fleeing** from their country.

11 Passive to infinitive’ (to be + V_3):

‘Passive to infinitive’ yapısı öznenin başına gelen bir şeyi, maruz kaldığı bir olayı ya da bir eylemden etkilendiğini anlatırken kullanılır. Fakat bu durumda eylemi yapan öznenin kendisi değildir. Özne sadece bu eylemden etkilenen kişidir; eylemi gerçekleştiren kişi bir başkasıdır. Bu tür cümlelerde ana fiil (verb) etken, isim-fiil (to infinitive) edilgendir.

- There are projects **to be finished**.
- I expected everybody **to be done** with their work by the end of the week.
- The food is ready **to be eaten**.
- They would like **to be shown** where their rooms are.
- The boy is waiting **to be punished** for breaking the window.

12 'Perfect to infinitive' (to have + V_3):

'Perfect to infinitive' ana fiil (verb) ve isim-fiilin (to infinitive) arasında zaman farkı olduğu durumlarda kullanılmaktadır. Bu yapının kullanılabilmesi için isim-fiilin ana fiilden önce gerçekleşmiş olması gerekir. 'Perfect to infinitive'i 'past' veya 'perfect' zamanlar gibi düşünebiliriz.

⚠ **Not**

'Perfect to infinitive' kullanılan her yerde 'to infinitive' de kullanılabilir; fakat seçeneklerde her ikisi de varsa, zaman farkı olup olmadığına bakılması gerekir. Eğer zaman farkı var ise ya da 'past / perfect' zamanlara ait bir zaman zarfı varsa 'perfect' olan seçilmelidir.

- *They **are happy to have got** a second chance.*
  *(They **are happy to get** a second chance.)*
- *Samantha **hoped to have caught** the last train.*
  *(Samantha **hoped to catch** the last train.)*
- *Mark **seems to have lost** his keys again.*
- *I **pretended to have got** a tattoo, but nobody believed me.*
- *Adam **would like to have received** the prize money earlier.*
- *I **would prefer to have bought** a house before the economic crisis.*
- *Mick **was sorry to have missed** Rick's birthday party.*

13 'Perfect Continuous to infinitive' (to have been V_{ing}):

'Perfect Continuous to infinitive' ana fiil (verb) ve isim-fiilin (to infinitive) arasında zaman farkı olduğu durumlarda ve isim-fiil olan eylemin bir süredir gerçekleşmekte olduğu durumlarda kullanılmaktadır. Bu yapının kullanılabilmesi için isim-fiilin ana fiilden daha önce gerçekleşmiş olması gerekir. 'Perfect Continuous to infinitive'i 'perfect continuous' zamanlar gibi düşünebiliriz.

⚠ **Not**

'Perfect Continuous to infinitive' kullanılan her yerde 'Continuous to infinitive' de kullanılabilir; fakat seçeneklerde her ikisi de varsa zaman farkı olup olmadığına bakılması gerekir. Eğer zaman farkı var ise ya da 'past / perfect' zamanlara ait bir zaman zarfı varsa 'perfect' olan seçilmelidir.

- *The boy **is believed to have been going** to another school.*
  *(The boy **is believed to be going** to another school.)*
- *Megan **was found to have been using** Rick's cell phone to call her boyfriend.*
- *The artist **is said to have been relaxing** all weekend.*
- *The company **is claimed to have been dumping** toxic waste in the river for years.*
- *The mayor **appears to have been using** the tax money all along.*
- *Jerry **would like to have been riding** his motorbike instead of sitting in a boring meeting.*

14 'Perfect Passive to infinitive' (to have been V_3):

'Perfect Passive to infinitive' yapısı ana fiil (verb) ve isim-fiilin (to infinitive) arasında zaman farkı olduğu durumlarda ve öznenin başına gelen bir şeyi, maruz kaldığı bir olayı ya da bir eylemden etkilendiğini ifade etmek için kullanılır. Fakat bu durumda eylemi yapan öznenin kendisi değildir. Özne sadece bu eylemden etkilenen kişiyken, eylemi gerçekleştiren kişi bir başkasıdır. Bu tür cümlelerde ana fiil (verb) etkenken, isim-fiil (to infinitive) edilgendir. Bu yapının kullanılabilmesi için isim-fiilin ana fiilden daha önce gerçekleşmiş olması gerekir. 'Perfect to infinitive'i 'past' veya 'perfect' zamanlar gibi düşünebiliriz.

⚠ **Not** *'Perfect Passive to infinitive' kullanılan her yerde 'passive to infinitive' de kullanılabilir. Fakat seçeneklerde her ikisi de varsa zaman farkı olup olmadığına bakılması gerekir. Eğer zaman farkı var ise ya da 'past / perfect' zamanlara ait bir zaman zarfı varsa 'perfect' olan seçilmelidir.*

- *The painting **is believed to have been stolen** by the Dalton brothers.*
  *(The painting **is believed to be stolen** by the Dalton brothers.)*
- *The employees of Capsule Corp **are claimed to have been infected** with a horrible virus.*
- *I **would prefer to have been included** in your plans for the holiday.*
- *The journalist **felt privileged to have been given** the opportunity to speak to the President about climate change.*
- *Cod fish in the Atlantic Ocean **was found to have been fished** to extinction by Portuguese fishermen.*

15 Forms of Bare Infinitive:

a 'Bare infinitive' fiilin hiçbir ek almamış veya hiçbir şekilde çekimlenmemiş yalın halidir. Genellikle 'modal'larla birlikte kullanılır; fakat bazı özel kullanım yerleri de vardır.

Simple Bare Infinitive: V_1

- I **must finish** my work before I **can go** home.

Continuous Bare Infinitive: be V_{ing}

- Stacy **would rather be reading** a book than sitting here all by myself.

Perfect Bare Infinitive: have V_3

- You **should have done** your homework by now!

Perfect Continuous Bare Infinitive: have been V_{ing}

- I **should have been studying** when you arrived home but unfortunately I was playing online games.

Passive Bare Infinitive: be V_3

- The project **should be submitted** by the end of the lesson.

Perfect Passive Bare Infinitive: have been V_3

- They **should have been given** another chance to complete the project.

Not *Dikkat edilirse 'to infinitive' ve 'bare infinitive' formlarının ve çekimlenmelerinin neredeyse aynı olduğu görülmektedir. 'Bare infinitive' in farkı kendisinden önce 'to' kullanılmamasıdır.*

a 'Should'un kısaltması olan ve bir sonraki ünitede (Noun Clauses) incelenecek yapılardan biri olan 'subjunctive' yapısında da 'bare infinitive' kullanılır. 'Subjunctive' yapısı, 'that' ile başlayan cümleciklerle birlikte bir eylemin yapılmasının gerekli ya da tercih edilebilir olduğunu anlatmak için kullanılır. 'Should' her zaman cümleden atılmak zorunda değildir. Bu kullanımda özne 3. tekil şahıs olsa bile fiil '-s' takısı almadan kullanılır.

- It is important that the scientists **should be remembered** for their achievements.
  It is **important that the scientists be remembered** for their achievements.
  (Bilim insanlarının başarılarıyla hatırlanmaları önemlidir.)
  (Görüldüğü gibi aynı anlam 'should'un kısaltılmış hali olan 'subjunctive' yapısı ile verilebilir.)
- Mark suggested that we **(should) go** to the cinema on Friday.
  Mark **suggested that we go** to the cinema on Friday.
- It is fundamental to our plan that Elizabeth **(should) not see anybody** when she opens the door.
  It is **fundamental to our plan that Elizabeth not see** anybody when she opens the door.

16 'Verbs followed by to infinitive':

a Bazı fiiller kendilerinden sonra sadece 'to infinitive' alarak kullanılırlar. Bu fiillerden bazıları aşağıdaki gibidir:

Verb + To Infinitive:

afford
agree
aim
appear
apply
arrange
aspire
attempt
campaign
care
cease
choose
claim
come
consent
decide
demand
deserve
desire
endeavour
expect
fail
happen
hasten
hesitate
hope
hurry
intend
intervene
learn
manage
neglect
offer
omit
opt
plan
pledge
plot
prepare
presume
pretend
proceed
promise
propose
prove
refuse
rejoice
resolve
rush
seek (=try)
seem
strive
struggle
swear
tend
threaten
train
undertake
volunteer
vote
wait
want
wish
work
yearn

Afford

- Can you **afford to buy** a new house in this economy?

Aspire
- Maria **aspires to become** the world's most famous athlete.

Learn
- If you want this job, you must **learn to be** patient.

Refuse
- Susan is very stubborn; she **refuses to listen** to anybody's advice.

Propose
- The politicians **proposed to meet** the students' demand for free education.

Wait
- You must **wait to be** seated at this restaurant because it is almost always full.

Seek (= try)
- Superman **seeks to protect** the world from harm.

Claim
- Thomas **claims to understand** the meaning of life completely.

Come
- How did Alex **come to know** everything about Justin Bieber?

Expect
- When I first came to crafts class, I only **expected to learn** pottery.

b Bazı fiiller cümle içinde kullanılırken fiil ve 'to infinitive' arasına bir nesne gelmesi gerekir.

Verb + Object + To Infinitive:

advise
allow
appoint
ask
assign
authorise
beg
cause
caution
challenge
choose
command
compel
convince
defy
desire
direct
drive
employ
empower
enable
encourage
expect
forbid
force
hire
implore
influence
inspire
instruct
invite
lead
motivate
need
oblige
order
permit
persuade
pick
please
prefer
prepare
prompt
qualify
raise
recommend
recruit
remind
request
require
select
send
show
signal
stimulate
teach
tell
tempt
trust
urge
want
warn

- They **expected me to be** there by half past three.
- I **persuaded her to stay** for dessert.
- It is very important that we **teach our dogs to behave** in public.
- Rebecca **asked Michael to help** her move into her new flat.
- This change in policy will **prompt existing and new business owners to consider** the health of their employees.
- I can't believe that our boss **chose me to represent** the company at the meeting.
- The Royal British Museum will never **allow you to touch** The Rosetta Stone.
- Rick **forced Jerry to stay** at the daycare centre.
- A very helpful boy **assisted an old woman to cross** the road.
- I would **prefer Ben to stay** in the office and not go to any meetings.

17 Passive Forms of the Verbs with Objects:

Bir önceki maddenin 'b' bölümündeki fiiller edilgen cümlelerde kullanıldıklarında, edilgen cümlelerde nesne kullanılmadığı için fiil ve 'to infinitive' arasına nesne gelemez. Fiilin edilgen halinden hemen sonra 'to infinitive' kullanılır.

- The students **were instructed to line up** when the bell rang.
- I **was told to help** you complete your assignment.
- He **was obliged to listen** to all the complaints.
- They **were motivated to win** the match by any means necessary.
- Visitors **are kindly advised not to feed** the animals.
- He **was tempted to eat** the entire tub of ice cream by himself.

18 Verbs followed by an infinitive or gerund with little or no change in meaning:

a Bazı fiiller kendilerinden sonra anlamlarında herhangi bir değişiklik olmadan ya da ufak tefek anlam değişiklikleriyle hem 'gerund' hem de 'to infinitive' alabilir. Bu fiiller aşağıdaki gibidir:

bother: uğraşmak, didinmek, çaba sarf etmek

- Don't **bother to come / coming** to the party; you are not invited.

begin: başlamak

- All the buildings in the historical part of town has **begun to break / breaking** apart because of the earthquake.

can't bear / couldn't bear: tahammül edememek, dayanamamak

- I **couldn't bear to watch / watching** a bullfight when I was in Spain.

can't stand / couldn't stand: dayanamamak; nefret etmek

- Rebecca **can't stand to hear / hearing** me sing this song; it drives her crazy.

continue: devam etmek

- The children said they will **continue to play / playing** with their toy cars.

start: başlamak

- As soon as we came outside, it **started to rain / raining**.
- He **started smoking / to smoke** when he was eighteen.

Not *Eğer bu fiiller 'continuous' bir zamanda '-ing' ile kullanıldıysa kendilerinden sonra sadece 'to infinitive' yapısını kullanmak gerekir. 'Gerund' kullanılamaz.*

- *It **was just starting ~~raining~~** when I opened the door. (✗)*
- *It **was just starting to rain** when I opened the door. (✓)*

b 'Hate', 'dislike', 'like' ve 'love' fiilleri tekrar edilen eylemleri ya da alışkanlıkları anlatırken devamında 'gerund' veya 'infinitive' alabilir.

- Molly **loves going** on adventures with Donald. *(British / American English)*
  Melinda **loves to go** on adventures with Rick. *(American English)*

Fakat genel eğilim ve durumlardan bahsederken bu fiillerinden sonra 'gerund' kullanılmalıdır.

- I **dislike travelling** as part of my job.
- She **hates working** for her uncle.

Not *'Hate', 'dislike', 'like' ve 'love' fiilleri 'would' ile kullanılan yapıların bir parçasıysa; kendilerinden sonra 'to infinitive' kullanmamız gerekir.*

- *He **would hate to miss** my favourite team's football match.*
- *I **would love to see** you do it better than all other candidates.*

19 Verbs followed by an infinitive or gerund with a change in meaning:

Bazı fiiller kendilerinden sonra hem 'gerund' hem de 'to infinitive' alabilir fakat bu anlamlarında değişikliğe yol açar. Bu fiiller aşağıdaki gibidir.

	Verb + Infinitive	Verb + Gerund
Forget	*yapılması gereken bir şeyi / görevi unutmak* ▶ I **forgot to pay** my rent last month.	*geçmişteki bir olayı unutmak* ▶ He **forgot going** to Spain as a child.
Go on	*bir eylemi yapmayı bırakıp başka bir eylem yapmaya başlamak* ▶ After I graduated from university, I **went on to** get my Master's degree.	*devam etmek* ▶ I can't **go on doing** this job; it is very boring.
Mean	*... niyetinde olmak, demek istemek* ▶ What he **means to say** is that he loves you.	*anlamına gelmek; içermek* ▶ If you stay home this weekend, it will **mean feeding** the cat and **watering** the flowers.
Propose	*önermek* ▶ The mayor **proposes to use** tax money to help the homeless.	*planlamak, ... niyetinde olmak* ▶ Harry **proposed eating** at the new sushi restaurant.
Regret	*üzgün olmak ('tell, say, inform etc.' fiillerle)* ▶ I **regret to tell** you that you have missed the last bus to Ankara.	*pişman olmak* ▶ I wonder if Mark **regrets buying** his new car.
Remember	*yapılması gereken bir şeyi / görevi hatırlamak* ▶ Please **remember to buy** milk when you are at the shop.	*geçmişteki bir olayı hatırlamak* ▶ I **remember giving** Adam my telephone number but I can't remember when.
Stop	*bir şey yapmak için durmak* ▶ Allan **stopped to see** what he could eat for lunch.	*bırakmak, bir eylemi yapmayı kesmek* ▶ Have you **stopped having** bad dreams?
Try	*çabalamak, başarmaya çalışmak* ▶ He **tried** (his best) **to finish** his project on time.	*denemek* ▶ Have you ever **tried eating** chocolate cream with peanut butter?

20 The use of the verbs 'need, require' and 'want' with gerund or infinitive:

a 'Need', 'require' ve 'want' fiilleri etken anlam vermek için 'to infinitive' ile kullanılırlar.

- Peter **needs to finish** his homework before he can watch TV.
- I never **wanted to have** a pet, but now I have three cats.
- We **require** you **to send** the new drawings immediately.

b Bu fiiller kullanıldığında eğer edilgen anlam verilmesi isteniyorsa, 'passive infinitive'in (to be V_3) yanısıra bu fiillerin ardından 'gerund' (V_{ing}) yapısını da kullanmak mümkündür. Cümlenin öznesine bakarak cümlenin etken mi edilgen mi olması gerektiğini anlayabiliriz.

- You **need to finish** your project. *(Active)*
  Your project **needs to be finished**. *(Passive)*
  Your projects **needs finishing**. *(Passive)*
- Lisa **wants to pet** the parrot. *(Active)*
  The parrot **wants to be petted**. *(Passive)*
  The parrot **wants petting**. *(Passive)*
- I **need to improve** my grades. *(Active)*
  My grades **need to be improved**. *(Passive)*
  My grades **need improving**. *(Passive)*
- We **require** you **to correct** the information. *(Active)*
  The information **requires to be corrected**. *(Passive)*
  The information **requires correcting**. *(Passive)*
- I **need to wash** my hair. *(Active)*
  My hair **needs to be washed**. *(Passive)*
  My hair **needs washing**. *(Passive)*

⚠ **Not**

Need / require / want to do	*etken*
Need / require / want to be done	*edilgen*
Need / require / want doing	*edilgen*

21 Verbs of Perception:

a 'Verbs of Perception' (duyu fiilleri) kendilerinden sonra ya 'gerund' ya da 'bare infinitive' alır. Bu fiiller aşağıdaki gibidir:

catch
feel
find
hear
listen
notice
overhear
see
smell
supervise
watch
observe

- I **overheard** them **speak** about her promotion.
  I **overheard** them **speaking** about her promotion.
- Rick **saw** Jerry **steal** and **eat** one of Beth's freshly baked cookies.
  Rick **saw** Jerry **stealing** and **eating** one of Beth's freshly baked cookies.

b Bu fiillerden sonra 'gerund' ya da 'bare infinitive' kullanılması, anlamda değişikliğe neden olmaktadır. 'Gerund' yapısı kullanıldığında, eylemin bir kısmına şahit olunduğu anlamı çıkar; 'bare infinitive' kullanıldığında ise eylemin tamamının görülmüş olduğu vurgulanmaktadır.

- As I opened the door, I **could see** my daughter **hiding** behind the curtain.
  (Saklandığını görmüş ama olayın tamamına baştan sona şahit olmamış.)
  I **saw** my daughter **hide** her brother's favourite toy behind the sofa.
  (Kızının oyuncağı saklamasına, olayın tamamını görerek şahit olmuş.)
- I **smelled** something **burning** when I woke up from my nap.
  I could **smell** the barbecue fire **burn** the wood while I finished cooking our dinner.

c Duyu fiillerini edilgen cümlelerde kullanabiliriz. Ancak kendilerinden sonra 'infinitive' kullanılacaksa, edilgen yapıdan sonra 'bare infinitive' değil, 'to infinitive' kullanılması gerekir. 'Gerund' kullanımında herhangi bir değişiklik olmaz. Cümle etken de olsa, edilgen de olsa 'gerund' kullanılabilir.

- The scientists **observed** their sample **change** colour with the aid of the added chemicals. *(Active - bare infinitive)*
  The sample **was observed to change** colour by the scientists. *(Passive - to infinitive)*
- We **heard** her **complain** when she thought nobody was around. *(Active - bare infinitive)*
  She **was heard to complain** when she thought nobody was around. *(Passive - to infinitive)*
- We **saw** Peter **telling** everybody what to do. *(Active - gerund)*
  Peter **was seen telling** everybody what to do. *(Passive - gerund)*
- I **overheard** them **speaking** about a surprise party. *(Active - gerund)*
  They **were overheard speaking** about a surprise party. *(Passive - gerund)*

Not *Edilgen bir fiilden sonra 'gerund' kullanılan tek yer yukarıdaki maddelerden c'de yer alan yapıdır. Onun haricinde bir cümlenin ana fiili edilgense ardından gelen isim-fiilin mutlaka 'to infinitive' ile oluşturulmuş olması gerekir.*

- *It is perceived that police officers will help you whenever they can.*
  *Police officers **are perceived to help** you whenever they can.*
- *They consider Stephen an expert in his field.*
  *Stephen **is considered to be an** expert in his field.*

22 The use of 'make, let' and 'help' with infinitives:

a **make somebody do something (= force somebody to do something)**

- Melissa **made** me **watch** her dog when she went on vacation.
  (Melissa **forced** me **to watch** her dog when she went on vacation.)
- Be careful, he will **make** you **mow** his lawn if he catches you.
- Our new football coach **made** us **run** around the field seven times.

b 'Make' nesne olarak 'reflexive pronoun' (dönüşlü zamir) aldığında; 'make oneself V_3' şeklinde kullanılır:

- I wear bright clothing to **make** myself **seen** while I jog.
- Alica **made** herself **understood** by everyone in the audience.

c **be made to do something**

'Make' edilgen bir fiil olarak kullanılıyorsa, 'bare infinitive' değil, 'to infinitive' alır.

- Jerry **was made to regret** his decision of eating a whole tub of ice cream.
- As punishment for not doing their homework, the students **were made to write** a 2000-word essay.

d **let somebody do something (= allow / permit somebody to do something)**

- My boss **let** me **leave** the office early last Friday.
  (My boss **permitted** me **to leave** the office early last Friday.)
- That was the first time my father **let** me **drive** his car.
  (That was the first time my father **allowed** me **to drive** his new car.)
- Why don't we **let** her **decide** what she wants to do with the kittens.
- Will you **let** me **help** you finish your work?

e 'Let' sık sık 'let's' (let us) yapısıyla öneride bulunmak amacıyla kullanılır. 'Let's' yapısını hem olumlu hem de olumsuz olarak kullanabiliriz.

- **Let's go** to the cinema on Friday.
- This project is very important for the future of this company. **Let's do** our best to complete it on time.
- **Let's not forget** the importance of spending quality time with our families.

f 'Let' edilgen fiil olarak genellikle kullanılmaz, ama nadiren de olsa kullanıldığı olur. Edilgen dahi olsa, 'let'ten sonra mutlaka 'bare infinitive' kullanılması gerekir. Edilgen yapılardan sonra 'to infinitive' kullanılması kuralının bir diğer istisnası da budur.

- I **let** them **go** early last Friday. *(Active)*
  They **were let go** early last Friday. *(Passive)*
- As a result, the company **has let** their employees **make** important decisions. *(Active)*
  As a result, their employees **has been let make** important decisions. *(Passive)*

g 'Let' genellikle edilgen yapılarda tercih edilmediği için, bunun yerine yine aynı anlamı veren 'be allowed to do something' ya da 'be permitted to do something' yapıları tercih edilir.

- We **weren't allowed to enter** the museum during the renovations.
- Prisoners **should not be permitted to watch** television in prison.

h help somebody (to) do something

- I **helped Mark finish** his homework.
  (= I **helped Mark to finish** his homework.)
- How about **helping your grandmother (to) carry** her groceries?
- Martin's extra classes **helped him (to) pass** Science.
- There is software available that **helps you (to) spend** less time on data capturing.

i 'Help' edilgen bir fiil olarak kullanıldığında kendisinden sonra sadece 'to infinitive' alabilir fakat 'bare infinitive' alamaz.

- We **helped them find** the right address.
  We **helped them to find** the right address.
- They **were helped to find** the right address. *(passive - ✓)*
  They **were helped ~~find~~** the right address. *(passive - ✗)*

23 Infinitives with Causatives:

'Causative' (ettirgen) yapılar 'get', 'have' ve 'make' fiilleriyle oluşturulmaktadır. 'Get' ve 'have'den sonra gelecek olan isim-fiil araya gelecek olan nesneye göre belirlenir.

a have somebody do something (= birisine görevini yaptırmak ya da sorumluluk vermek)

- Eric **had Jerry watch** his experiment while he slept.
- Before I knew what was going on, she **had me do** her homework for her.
- I will **have my mother send** you her famous chicken recipe.
- Susan **had Adam walk** to the pharmacy at four in the morning.

b get somebody to do something (= birisine ikna yoluyla bir şey yaptırmak)

- How did you **get your dog to walk** on a leash?
- My boss **got us to work** together peacefully.
- I'll **get Ben to finish** my homework for me.
- Even after all our efforts, we couldn't **get him to sign** the contract.

c get something done
have something done
(= bir hizmet almak, bir şeyi (karşılığında para ödeyerek) yaptırmak)

- I'll **get my glasses fixed** after work.
- He's **getting his new phone delivered** today.
- Jerry **had his car serviced**; he can now drive to Ankara.
- I have lost my house keys; now I need to **have my locks changed**.

1 REVISION

Fill in the blanks with gerund, to infinitive or bare infinite forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. ____________________ **(jog)** is one of my favourite exercises. I do it at least three times a week.
2. My father let me ____________________ **(choose)** where to plant the tree, and I planted it under my balcony.
3. ____________________ **(climb)** is not as easy as it looks.
4. If you leave now, you are likely ____________________ **(make)** it there before they close.
5. Daniel seems to be really enthusiastic about ____________________ **(start)** his new job.
6. Michael has a talent for ____________________ **(remember)** people's names.
7. Peter likes ____________________ **(drive)** his car around the city.
8. Margaret's goal ____________________ **(speak)** seven languages seems unlikely.
9. Susan is in the process of ____________________ **(learn)** a new language.
10. Mark can ____________________ **(speak)** Arabic quite fluently.

2 REVISION

Fill in the blanks with gerund, to infinitive or bare infinite forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. I am afraid of ____________________ **(go)** outside in the dark.
2. Sarah admitted to ____________________ **(spend)** all of Henry's money.
3. I can't afford ____________________ **(lose)** another cell phone.
4. Richard must wash his father's car as a punishment for ____________________ **(stay)** up late.
5. Mark decided ____________________ **(stay)** with Jim in the hospital.
6. I am really interested in ____________________ **(learn)** more about this product.
7. Helen got me ____________________ **(do)** her homework again.
8. After losing the bet, Mark had to abstain from ____________________ **(eat)** meat for a month.
9. The police arrested Marshall for ____________________ **(break)** into houses.
10. I have always suspected Enrique of ____________________ **(be)** a foreigner.

3 REVISION

Fill in the blanks with gerund, to infinitive or bare infinite forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. His advice ____________________ **(invest)** in that company is based on years of experience.
2. The company manager said they looked forward to ____________________ **(meet)** me.
3. It is really hard ____________________ **(find)** good employees nowadays.
4. Peter was busy ____________________ **(write)** a letter when I came into the office.
5. Hugh never thought about ____________________ **(give up)**; he always tried to be better.
6. Susan is very proud ____________________ **(be)** the only person in her family to have gone to university.
7. When Harry finished ____________________**(clean)** his motorbike, he took it for a ride.
8. My fridge is empty, I do not have anything ____________________ **(eat)**.
9. Peter was bored and he wanted something fun ____________________ **(do)**.
11. Meggy had better have a good reason for ____________________ **(be)** late today.

4

REVISION

Fill in the blanks with gerund, to infinitive or bare infinite forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. It is too cold ____________________ **(have)** a barbecue today.
2. My mother went to the market ____________________ **(buy)** some fresh vegetables.
3. Gregory isn't tall enough ____________________ **(go)** on the roller-coaster.
4. Charles congratulated Deborah on ____________________ **(pass)** her final exam.
5. Peter was the last person ____________________ **(arrive)** at the meeting.
6. You need to score at least 80% ____________________ **(pass)** this course.
7. Eric wanted ____________________ **(reward)** for his bravery.
8. Susan was tired of ____________________ **(travel)** on the same road every day.
9. I had a choice between ____________________ **(go)** to work or ____________________ **(rest)** at home.
10. Gregory's main interest is ____________________ **(work)** with children.

5

REVISION

Fill in the blanks with gerund, to infinitive or bare infinite forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. The police officer swore ____________________ **(protect)** people from criminals.
2. My father taught me ____________________ **(tell)** the truth.
3. Students are encouraged ____________________ **(wear)** their uniforms at all times.
4. Susan forgot ____________________ **(remind)** Peter to feed the cat.
5. Stephany had Leonardo ____________________ **(design)** her wedding dress.
6. You could try ____________________ **(bake)** a cake if you have time.
7. Gregory's job requires him ____________________ **(speak)** English and French.
8. Do you regret ____________________ **(move)** to the city centre?
9. Denis' fear of ____________________ **(fly)** made it difficult for him to travel around the world.
10. Gregory decided to start ____________________ **(work)** with children in the orphanage.

6

REVISION

Fill in the blanks with gerund or to infinitive forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. You mustn't forget ____________________ (**turn**) off your stove; it is very dangerous.
2. Peter forgot____________________ (**read**) about the new bridge in the newspaper and was surprised when he saw it.
3. After leaving his old job, Mark went on ____________________ (**become**) a famous actor.
4. Percy and Lucy went on ____________________ (**talk**) about the project after the meeting had finished.
5. I meant ____________________ (**call**) you earlier, but I forgot my phone at home.
6. Mark knew that his decision to work in Spain would mean ____________________ (**leave**) his friends and family.
7. The company proposed ____________________ (**give**) everybody a few days of paid vacation.
8. Peter proposed ____________________ (**have**) lunch together, but I had already made other plans.
9. I regret ____________________ (**say**) we cannot accept your letter of application.
10. Susan regrets ____________________ (**buy**) a new cell phone.
11. Please remember____________________ (**submit**) your assignments at the end of the lesson.
12. What do you mean you don't have it? I remember____________________ (**give**) you the keys!
13. Martin stopped ____________________ (**see**) what the new shop was selling.
14. After seeing that film, I stopped ____________________ (**eat**) fried chicken.
15. Have you ever tried ____________________ (**eat**) Japanese cheesecake?
16. Rick tried ____________________ (**convince**) Jerry that the earth was flat.

C PARTICIPLES

'Participle' yan cümleciklerin kısaltılmasıdır. Yan cümlecikler ana cümleye bağımlı olan ve başında bağlaç bulunan cümlelerdir. Bu yapı konusunda dikkatli olmak gerekmektedir; çünkü 'present participle' (V_{ing}), 'perfect participle' (having V_3) ve 'perfect passive participle' (having been V_3) kolaylıkla 'gerund'larla karıştırılabilmektedir. Fakat cümleler dikkatle incelendiğinde bu yapıların cümledeki görevlerinin birbirine karıştırılamayacak kadar farklı olduğu anlaşılacaktır. Bu farkın anlaşılması için aşağıda sadece 'gerund' (V_{ing}) ve 'present participle'ın (V_{ing}) karşılaştırıldığı açıklamalar dikkatle incelenmelidir.

Gerund (V_{ing})

'Gerund' bir çeşit isimdir. Eğer ismin kullanılabileceği herhangi bir yerde '-ing' ile biten bir kelime varsa o 'gerund'dır. Örneğin;

- **Reading** is my favourite hobby.
  Bu cümledeki 'gerund' bir öznedir.

Aynı zamanda bir fiilin nesnesi de olabilir:
- I love **reading**.

Ya da bir edatın nesnesi konumunda kullanılabilir:
- Without **reading**, I wouldn't have such a big vocabulary.

Bunun haricinde bir 'gerund phrase'in başlangıcı da olabilir:
- **Reading** fantasy novels late at night is one of the best things in the world.

Present Participle (V_{ing})

- **Listening to the radio**, I heard the terrible news.

  Bu cümledeki 'listening' herhangi bir cümlenin öznesi ya da özne olan bir 'gerund phrase'in başlangıcı değildir. Görüldüğü gibi kendisinden sonra bir ana fiil gelmemektedir ve ana fiil olmadan da bir cümlenin varlığından söz etmek mümkün değildir. Dolayısıyla bu bir yan cümle kısaltmasıdır. Yani aslında 'listening' ana fiilin kendisidir.

Yukarıdaki cümlenin kısaltılmamış hali aşağıdaki gibidir:
- While I was listening to the radio, I heard the terrible news.

'Gerund' yapısında fiil isimleşir fakat 'participle' yapısında fiil, fiil olma özelliğini devam ettirir.

Beş çeşit 'participle' yapısı vardır.

1. Present Participle (V_{ing})
2. Past Participle (V_3)
3. Perfect Participle (having V_3)
4. Perfect Passive Participle (having been V_3)
5. Perfect Progressive Participle (having been V_{ing})

1 Present Participle (V_{ing})

'Present Participle' kullanımında kısaltılacak cümle etken bir fiile sahip olmalıdır ve cümlelerde bariz bir zaman farkı olmamalıdır. Eylemler genellikle art arda gerçekleşmiştir ve her iki fiilin de öznesi aynıdır.

- He spoke on his phone as he was walking down the road.
  He spoke on his phone, **walking down the road**.
- While we were watching the exhibit, we saw one of the sculptures fall over.
  Watching the exhibit, we saw one of the sculptures fall over.

Aynı özne tarafından art arda gerçekleştirilen eylemlerden önce olanı kısaltmak için kullanılır.

- He stood on the sidelines and cheered his son on.
  Standing on the sidelines, he cheered his son on.
- We listened to the radio and washed my father's car.
  Listening to the radio, we washed my father's car.

Eş zamanlı eylemleri kısaltmak için kullanılır. (as, while, etc. bağlaçların olduğu cümleler)

- I remembered my favourite childhood rhyme while I was looking at old photos.
  I remembered my favourite childhood rhyme **while looking at old photos**.
  I remembered my favourite childhood rhyme **looking at old photos**.
- As Mary was walking home late one night, she heard someone behind her.
  Walking home late one night, Mary heard someone behind her.

Art arda gerçekleşen eylemleri anlatırken 'when' ve 'as soon as' yerine kullanılabilir.

- When Jerry wanted ice cream, he walked to the shop.
  Wanting ice cream, Jerry walked to the shop.
- As soon as I got home, I saw my dog chasing the cat around the yard.
  Getting home, I saw my dog chasing the cat around the yard.

Not *Bu kullanım 'on + V_{ing}' olarak da kullanılabilir. Bu durumda 'when' veya 'as soon as' ile eş anlamlıdır.*

- *When Jerry wanted ice cream, he walked to the shop.*
  ***On wanting ice cream**, Jerry walked to the shop.*

'After' ve 'before' ile birlikte kullanılır. Fakat bu kullanım aslında 'participle' değil, 'gerund'dır.

- After Bethany got her driver's licence, she bought a new car.
  After getting her driver's licence, Bethany bought a new car.
- Before I signed the contract, I had my lawyer friend look at it.
  Before signing the contract, I had my lawyer friend look at it.

- Sebep belirten cümleleri kısaltmak için kullanılır. (as, since, because, etc. bağlaçlarının olduğu cümleler)
  - Because I heard his speech, I knew exactly what he was planning to do.
    Hearing his speech, I knew exactly what he was planning to do.
  - Since Matt got his new glasses, he has no problem reading the newspaper.
    Getting his new glasses, Matt has no problem reading the newspaper.

- Zıtlık belirten bağlaçlar 'though', 'although' ve 'even though'un bulunduğu cümleleri kısaltırken kullanılır; fakat bu bağlaçlar 'participle' yapısıyla birlikte kullanıldıklarında bağlaç cümleden atılmaz. Her ikisi de kullanılır.
  - Even though Patrick heard her call him, he was surprised when she came around the corner.
    Even though hearing her call him, Patrick was surprised when she came around the corner.
  - Although I ran as fast as I could, I didn't make it to school on time.
    Although running as fast as I could, I didn't make it to school on time.
  - Though Samantha accepted the job offer, she was unable to sign the contract.
    Though accepting the job offer, Samantha was unable to sign the contract.

- Bu yapı 'since' ve 'ever since' ile birlikte kullanılırken de bu bağlaçlar cümleden atılmaz.
  - He hasn't been able to use the Internet or send emails ever since he broke his computer.
    He hasn't been able to use the Internet or send emails **ever since breaking his computer**.
  - Since I got my new cell phone, I haven't watched any television series.
    Since getting my new cell phone, I haven't watched any television series.

- 'Relative Clause'ları kısaltmak için de kullanılır. 'Relative Clause' kısaltmalarında ana fiil ile 'relative clause' arasında zaman farkı yoksa ve kısaltma yapılacak fiil etken çatıdaysa 'present participle' kullanılır.
  - The man **who is giving a speech** is my best friend.
    The man **giving a speech** is my best friend.
  - I heard that the building **which fell down** injured seven people.
    I heard that the building **falling down** injured seven people.
  - Isn't that the girl **who sings in the national choir**?
    Isn't that the girl **singing in the national choir**?

2 Past Participle (V_3)

'Past Participle' yapısı ile kısaltılacak cümle edilgen bir fiile sahip olmalıdır ve cümlelerde zaman farkı olmamalıdır. Eylemler genellikle art arda gerçekleşmiştir ve her iki fiilin de öznesi aynıdır.

- They walked to the shop and they were seen by everybody.
  They walked to the shop, **seen by everybody**.
- I was excited, so I opened the package before my wife got home.
  Excited, I opened the package before my wife got home.

- Art arda gerçekleştirilen eylemlerden önce olanı kısaltmak için kullanılır.
  - The children were scared of their new teacher and didn't speak at all during the lesson.
    Scared by their new teacher, the children didn't speak during the lesson.
  - My tongue was burnt by the hot coffee and couldn't taste anything properly.
    Burnt by the hot coffee, my tongue couldn't taste anything properly.

- 'When' veya 'while' ile kurulan cümleleri kısaltmak için kullanılabilir.
  - When I was believed to be guilty, I had to prove my innocence.
    Believed to be guilty, I had to prove my innocence.
  - The thief hid in the shadows while he was pursued by the police.
    The thief hid in the shadows, **pursued by the police**.

- Sebep belirten cümleleri kısaltmak için kullanılır. (as, since, because, etc. bağlaçlarının olduğu cümleler)
  - Since David was issued a certificate of excellence, he showed it to everybody whom it may concern.
    Issued a certificate of excellence, David showed it to everybody whom it may concern.
  - Because I was invited by the Queen herself, I bought a new suit for the party.
    Invited by the Queen herself, I bought a new suit for the party.

- 'If clause'lu cümleleri kısaltmak için kullanılır. 'If', kısaltma yapılırken cümleden atılmayabilir. Bu kullanım, 'when' anlamına yakındır.
  - If it is practised regularly, karate can be a very useful form of self-defence.
    (If) Practised regularly, karate can be a very useful form of self-defence.
  - If it is listened carefully, this song's meaning can be heard clearly.
    (If) Listened carefully, this song's meaning can be heard clearly.

- 'Relative Clause'ları kısaltmak için kullanılır. 'Relative Clause' kısaltmalarında ana fiil ile 'relative clause' arasında zaman farkı yoksa ve kısaltma yapılacak fiil edilgense 'past participle' kullanılır.
  - Mike, **who was scolded** by his teacher, handed his project in late.
    Mike, **scolded** by his teacher, handed his project in late.
  - That must surely be the last document **that was signed** by all the founding members.
    That must surely be the last document **signed** by all the founding members.
  - The button **which is found** in the top right corner of the device will turn it off.
    The button **found** in the top right corner of the device will turn it off.

1 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct participle forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. ____________ **(speak)** to Joanne, he put on his boots.
2. This is the final chapter ____________ **(write)** by the original author.
3. Since ____________ **(go)** to Spain, Peter hasn't called any of his friends.
4. ____________ **(confuse)** by the structure of the building, he started searching for the exit sign.
5. Can you see the boy ____________ **(stand)** on the corner of the street?
6. ____________ **(be)** smart, he didn't spend too much time on his homework.
7. ____________ **(persuade)** by their argument, Sam decided to help his sons build a go-kart.
8. ____________ **(run)** down the street, Adam jumped over everything in his way.
9. ____________ **(overwhelm)** by her emotions, she fell to her knees and cried.
10. Before ____________ **(leave)** for his date, Ben combed his hair and put on some perfume.

2 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct participle forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. ____________ **(stun)** by their performance, the crowd couldn't even applaude.
2. ____________ **(come)** home, my mother heard the telephone ringing.
3. ____________ **(purr)** with delight, the cat moved closer to Dolores.
4. ____________ **(satisfy)** with his employees' performance, he gave them a raise.
5. ____________ **(service)** regularly, this car will last you a lifetime.
6. ____________ **(wait)** for Helen, I watched a movie.
7. The shark, first ____________ **(see)** by the lifeguards, caused great panic on the beach.
8. ____________ **(surprise)** by his son's high mark in the exam, Gregory decided to buy him some ice cream.
9. Peter hasn't got on a motorcycle ever since ____________ **(have)** an accident.
10. The boy, ____________ **(encourage)** by his friends, decided to ask Lucy to the prom.

3 Perfect Participle (Having V_3)

'Perfect Participle' yapısı genellikle 'perfect tense'leri kısaltmak için kullanılır. 'Perfect Participle' kullanımında kısaltılacak cümle etken bir fiile sahip olmalıdır. İki eylemden önce olanı kısaltmak için kullanılır ve her iki fiilin öznesi de aynıdır.

- He had finished his homework then he went out.
  Having finished his homework, he went out.
- Mr Smith had mended his car and then he took it out for a test drive.
  Having mended his car, he took it out for a test drive.

'When' yapısıyla kurulan cümleleri kısaltmak için kullanılır.

- When Maya has finished cleaning the house, she will go out to get some fresh air with her friends.
  Having finished cleaning the house, Maya will go out to get some fresh air with her friends.
- I bought a new car and a new house when I had got a loan from the bank.
  I bought a new car and a new house, **having got a loan from the bank**.

Not *Yukarıda görüldüğü gibi kısaltma yapılan yerde özel isim var ise özel isim ana cümleye taşınır.*

'After' ve 'before' ile farklı kullanımları vardır. Bu şekilde her zaman bağlaçlı olan cümle kısaltılmaz; her zaman önce gerçekleşen eylem kısaltılır.

- After we had eaten our dinner, we sat down to watch a movie together.
  Having eaten our dinner, we sat down to watch a movie together.
- Before Joey could do any experiments, he had attended chemistry classes at university.
  Having attended chemistry classes at university, Joey could do experiments.

Sebep belirten cümleleri kısaltmak için kullanılır. (as, since, because, etc. bağlaçların olduğu cümleler)

- They couldn't go to Rebecca's birthday party because they had gone camping for the weekend.
  They couldn't go to Rebecca's birthday party, **having gone camping for the weekend**.
- Since I had been to France before, I wasn't surprised by their good food.
  Having been to France before, I wasn't surprised by their good food.

'Relative Clause'lardaki 'perfect tense'leri kısaltmak için kullanılır. 'Relative Clause' kısaltmalarında, kısaltma yapılacak fiil etken çatıdaysa 'perfect participle' kullanılır.

- My old laptop, which had been used throughout university, saw better days.
  My old laptop, **having been used throughout university**, saw better days.
- Phillip, who has graduated at the top of his class, has got a job at Google.
  Phillip, **having graduated at the top of his class**, has got a job at Google.
- The employees who had taken part in the corporate games got a day off.
  The employees **having taken part in the corporate games** got a day off.

'Perfect' olmadığı halde önce gerçekleşen eylemi vurgulamak amacıyla 'simple tense'leri kısaltmak için kullanılır.

- I heard the song twenty times and knew the lyrics.
  Having heard the song twenty times, I knew the lyrics.
- Bubba spent some time in prison and did everything he could not to go back.
  Having spent some time in prison, Bubba did everything he could not to go back.

4 Perfect Passive Participle (Having Been V_3)

'Perfect Passive Participle' kullanımında kısaltılacak cümle edilgen bir fiile sahip olmalıdır. İki eylemden daha önce olanı kısaltmak için kullanılır. Her iki fiilin de öznesi aynıdır. Bu yapı genellikle 'perfect' yapıdaki eylemleri kısaltmak için kullanılır.

- The cat had been beaten many times, so he was scared of people.
  Having been beaten many times, the cat was scared of people.
- The tree had been burnt by the lightning, so it wasn't green any more.
  Having been burnt by the lightning, the tree wasn't green any more.

'Perfect' olmadığı halde daha önce gerçekleşen eylemi vurgulamak amacıyla 'simple' zamanları kısaltmak için de kullanılır.

- They were given a day off and they spent it at the beach.
  Having been given a day off, they spent it at the beach.
- He was sentenced to seven years in prison, so he said goodbye to his family.
  Having been sentenced to seven years in prison, he said goodbye to his family.

'When' yapısıyla kullanılan cümleleri kısaltmak için kullanılır.

- When he had been given a sentence for his crimes, he laughed at the judge.
  Having been given a sentence for his crimes, he laughed at the judge.
- When Roger has been issued a traffic fine, he will lose his temper.
  Having been issued a traffic fine, Roger will lose his temper.

'After' ve 'before' ile farklı kullanımları vardır. Bu şekilde her zaman bağlaçlı olan cümle kısaltılmaz; her zaman önce gerçekleşen eylem kısaltılır.

- After I had been hired, I started to update the new company's website.
  Having been hired, I started to update the new company's website.
- Before he could help his son, Mark had been blown over by the wind.
  Having been blown over by the wind, Mark couldn't help his son.

Sebep belirten cümleleri kısaltmak için kullanılır. (as, since, because, etc. bağlaçların olduğu cümleler)

- We understood everything the professor said because we had been given comprehensive notes on the subject.
  We understood everything the professor said, **having been given comprehensive notes on the subject.**
- Since Martin had been told to eat less salty food, he felt much healthier.
  Having been told to eat less salty food, Martin felt much healthier.

- 'Relative Clause'lardaki 'perfect tense'leri kısaltmak için kullanılır. 'Relative Clause' kısaltmalarında, kısaltma yapılacak fiil edilgen çatıdaysa 'perfect passive participle' kullanılır.
  - The store, which has been robbed, is closed now.
    The store, **having been robbed**, is closed now.
  - Alexandre Lacazette, who had been bought from Lyon FC, made his first appearance for Arsenal.
    Alexandre Lacazette, **having been bought from Lyon FC**, made his first appearance for Arsenal.
  - The robots, which had been invented by Wilfred Inc., were sold in a short time.
    The robots, **having been invented by Wilfred Inc.**, were sold in a short time.

5 Perfect Continuous Participle (Having Been V_{ing})

'Perfect Continuous Participle' kullanımında kısaltılacak cümle etken bir fiile sahip olmalıdır. İki eylemden daha önce olanı kısaltmak için kullanılır ve her iki fiilin de öznesi aynıdır. Bu yapı genellikle 'perfect continuous' eylemleri kısaltmak için kullanılır.

- Peter has been travelling in Italy for about ten years, so he is fluent in Italian.
  Having been travelling in Italy for about ten years, Peter is fluent in Italian.
- Amy knew the lyrics to every song because she had been listening to the album non-stop for two weeks.
  Having been listening to the album non-stop for two weeks, Amy knew the lyrics to every song.

Farklı Özne ile Başlayan Participle Cümlecikleri

Bazı 'participle' yapılarında özne ana cümlede bulunan özneden farklı olabilir. Bu durumda kısaltılacak olan cümlenin öznesi 'participle'ın başında kullanılır.

- **Subject + Present Participle**
  - As the exam was very difficult, it was impossible to get 100%.
    The exam being very difficult, **it** was impossible to get 100%.
  - Because it was late, we didn't leave the house.
    It being late, **we** didn't leave the house.
  - **His father being** the CEO, **he** felt confident walking into his new corner office.
  - **The day being** fine, **we** spent the whole day by the river.
  - **The car being** dirty, **I** decided to wash it.

- **Subject + Perfect Participle**
  - **The best players having injured** themselves, **the coach** had to do with a weak team.

- **Subject + Perfect Passive Participle**
  - **The thief having been caught**, **we** could open our windows again.

'Participle' yapılarının özet tablosu

V_{ing} (Present Participle) **(active)**	**Listening to the radio**, I drove 200 kilometres without getting bored.
V_3 (Past Participle) **(passive)**	**Shocked** by the news, she sat down.
Having V_3 (Perfect Participle) **(active)**	**Having gone** to the mall before, I knew where the food court was.
Having Been V_3 (Perfect Participle Passive) **(passive)**	**Having been given** an opportunity, Peter was very grateful.
Having Been V_{ing} (Perfect Continuous Participle) **(active - It is used for a continuing action.)**	**Having been living** in İstanbul for two years, Stephanie has learnt Turkish.

3 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the present participle, the past participle or the perfect participle forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. Mark had no time to finish his homework, ______________ (**spend**) too much time playing games.
2. ______________ (**complete**) all his training, Adam was ready for anything.
3. ______________ (**wake**) up to the sound of his doorbell, Craig realised he had overslept.
4. ______________ (**wait**) for William, I made some coffee.
5. ______________ (**drive**) all day, Maria decided to stop for a rest.
6. ______________ (**drive**) by a single cylinder engine, the first car was invented by a German engineer.
7. ______________ (**wait**) for takeoff, the passengers listened to the pilot's announcement.
8. ______________ (**arrive**) late, Peter sat in the back row.
9. ______________ (**dream**) of being an astronaut, the boy decided to take extra science lessons.
10. ______________ (**run**) towards the finish line, he tripped and fell.

4 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the present participle, the past participle or the perfect participle forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. ______________ (**do**) this exam before, Helen knew all the answers.
2. ______________ (**finish**) his degree, Bill's career prospects were much better.
3. Susan understood exactly what she had to do, ______________ (**read**) the job description.
4. ______________ (**know**) that Stephanie was coming, William cooked her favourite dish.
5. ______________ (**speak**) to a lawyer, Susan decided to sue her neighbour.
6. ______________ (**watch**) the film before, I left the cinema early.
7. Patrick should win the race, ______________ (**spend**) all his free time training.
8. ______________ (**live**) in Sydney for four years, Mehmet spoke English like a native speaker.
9. ______________ (**persuade**) by Rick's logic, Jerry decided to quit his job.
10. ________________ (**arrive**) in Thailand, we felt the heat immediately.

5

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the present participle, the past participle or the perfect participle forms of the verbs given in parentheses.

1. _______________ (**batter**) by constant wind and rain, the windmill fell over.
2. The child, _______________ (**lose**) his toy, was upset and crying loudly.
3. _______________ (**put**) on his coat, Megan ran out of the door to catch the bus.
4. _______________ (**find**) the lost treasure, the explorers returned home.
5. _______________ (**catch**) the thief, the police officer handcuffed him.
6. _______________ (**catch**) with her hand in the cookie jar, Delilah was grounded.
7. _______________ (**bite**) by a snake, Mark sought medical advice.
8. _______________ (**win**) the competition, she thanked everybody who helped her.
9. _______________ (**lose**) in the big city, she walked around in circles.
10. _______________ (**read**) by the editor, the article was published with a few changes in it.

7

REVISION:

Circle the correct answer.

1. I happened ---- the phone when you called. I was amazed.
A) pass B) to pass

2. The only person ---- the assignment was Gregory. He was given a pay rise.
A) to complete B) completed

3. ---- the bad news, Mark immediately called his wife, but she was busy.
A) Being heard B) Having heard

4. I keep ---- the same dream over and over again. What do you think it means?
A) have B) having

5. You are welcome ---- any of the candies before you buy them. You don't have to pay for them.
A) to try B) trying

6. ---- properly, a dog will be loyal to you for the rest of its life.
A) Raise B) Raised

7. It is nice ---- in the garden ---- to the birds sing. Come and stay with me if you are not busy.
A) to be sitting / listening B) to have sat / to listen

8. **Susan suggested ---- the scenic route on our way to the beach but we were in a hurry and preferred the other one.**

A) take B) taking

9. **We hope ---- the project by the end of the year; otherwise, we will have to pay a fine.**

A) to have finished B) having finished

10. **Angela detests ---- to the dentist as she is afraid of them.**

A) to go B) going

11. **I would like ---- to Arsenal's stadium when I visited London.**

A) to be B) to have been

12. **---- is the only thing I am interested in after a long day at work. I never watch TV or go out.**

A) To rest B) To have rest

13. **---- his garage, Gregory saw that his car was not there. He called the police immediately.**

A) Opening B) Having been opened

14. **It was very kind of Patricia ---- me with my homework. But for her help, I couldn't have finished it.**

A) help B) to help

15. **I was invited to Mark's party, but I couldn't decide whether ---- or not.**

A) to go B) going

16. **Can you hear the raindrops ---- on the roof? I would like to have some wine while I am listening to it.**

A) fall B) falling

17. **I really appreciated her promise ---- after my cat when I was on holiday.**

A) to look B) look

18. **Jerry washed the dishes, ---- merrily. He finds it relaxing.**

A) hum B) humming

19. **---- from all the work she had done all day long, she fell to the floor.**

A) Exhausted B) Exhausting

20. **My father didn't let me ---- rugby as a child. He told me that it was dangerous for me.**

A) to play B) play

GERUND & INFINITIVE & PARTICIPLE TEST 1

1. ---- all the books, John knew how the movie would end.

A) Have read
B) Having read
C) Having been read
D) Having been reading
E) Read

2. Research suggests that it's a waste of time and money ---- multi-vitamins; they have no effect.

A) take
B) to take
C) have taken
D) to have taken
E) taking

3. ---- into Harvard, Jason started boasting to all his friends.

A) Having been accepted
B) Have been accepted
C) Having been accepting
D) Having accepted
E) Being accepted

4. I am sure Diana didn't mean ---- that out loud; she would never offend you.

A) to saying
B) saying
C) to say
D) to have said
E) have said

5. ---- to summer camp, Susan couldn't attend Adele's concert.

A) Being sent
B) Have been
C) Have being sent
D) Having been sent
E) Having sent

6. Rick forgot ---- Terry with him this morning. They were planning to spend the day together.

A) take
B) to taking
C) to take
D) have taken
E) to have taken

7. It ---- a rainy day, we couldn't go for a hike as we had planned beforehand.

A) be
B) being
C) having been
D) have being
E) been

8. My new job requires me ---- a lot. I find it difficult since I am getting older.

A) to travel
B) traveling
C) to have travelled
D) to traveling
E) travel

9. When my grandmother fell from her chair, everybody rushed ---- her.

A) helping
B) for help
C) to help
D) help
E) to helping

10. My brother pretended ---- all day. Later, we learned that he failed.

A) to study
B) to have been studied
C) to studying
D) being studying
E) to have been studying

11. **They sat in the courtyard ---- about William's new girlfriend. That was very rude of them.**

A) gossip
B) to be gossipping
C) to have been gossipping
D) gossipping
E) to have gossipped

12. **Mary felt relieved ---- her cat to the vet. It hadn't eaten anything for two days.**

A) to be taken
B) having taken
C) took
D) have taken
E) having been taken

13. **Mark couldn't decide which car ----, so he asked his friends for their opinion.**

A) to buy
B) bought
C) buy
D) to have bought
E) have bought

14. **You are not old enough ---- a car yet. I will buy you one when you turn 18.**

A) drive
B) to drive
C) driving
D) to driving
E) to driven

15. **The food was too good ----, so Gregory asked to have the leftovers.**

A) to be wasting
B) waste
C) to have wasted
D) wasted
E) to be wasted

16. **Jerry had four more clients ---- that morning, which made him happy.**

A) see
B) to have seen
C) to be seen
D) to see
E) seen

17. **---- the exam before, Fred decided ---- really hard. That was his last chance.**

A) Have failed / to study
B) Failing / studying
C) Having failed / to study
D) To have failed / to study
E) Failed / studying

18. **The company contemplated ---- their latest business venture.**

A) abandoning
B) abandon
C) to abandoning
D) to have abandon
E) to abandon

19. **Margaret regrets ---- her sandwich with David. She still feels hungry.**

A) having shared
B) to have share
C) having sharing
D) shared
E) to share

20. **Tony can't stand ---- told how ----. He thinks he is old enough to know that.**

A) be / to behave
B) being / behaved
C) being / to behave
D) to be / behaving
E) being / behaving

GERUND & INFINITIVE & PARTICIPLE TEST 2

1. **I know that my poor dog misses me and he is looking forward to ---- long walks with me when I go back.**

A) taking
B) take
C) to take
D) having taken
E) took

2. **---- sick from the long drive on the curvy road, the little girl asked her parents to take a break and let her take a walk.**

A) To feel
B) Having been felt
C) Feel
D) Feeling
E) Felt

3. **Jessica felt extremely comfortable in the area, with the people and the culture. ---- in town for a long time before going to USA for her master's made it easier for her.**

A) Lived
B) Have lived
C) Having lived
D) Living
E) To have lived

4. **The *Economist* has a reputation for ---- the general international rules for some countries. They once reported false news on Nigeria, ---- the country to bankruptcy.**

A) violate / leading
B) violating / to lead
C) to violate / having led
D) violating / leading
E) to have violated / leading

5. **I would love ---- skiing but I don't have skis of my own, so I am afraid I can't join you.**

A) to have gone
B) having gone
C) going
D) go
E) to go

6. **I am sorry ---- you that your father has passed away twenty minutes ago. ---- there for the last part, I can say he didn't suffer.**

A) informing / Having been
B) to inform / Been
C) to inform / Having been
D) to have informed / Being
E) informing / To have been

7. **The ---- judgement of the jury was the reason why the poor man was sent to jail for nothing and when he was released, they showed no regret for ---- him there.**

A) biased / having sent
B) biasing / to have sent
C) bias / sending
D) biased / to send
E) biasing / sent

8. **Carolyn has never been appreciated for ---- alone without a man present. Instead, she has been blamed of ---- controversy in the family.**

A) living / to cause
B) to living / causing
C) to live / to cause
D) living / causing
E) to live / having caused

9. **---- this experiment and coming up with actual results will take ten years minimum but it's completely worth ---- for.**

A) Completing / to wait
B) To complete / waiting
C) Completing / having waited
D) To have been completed / waiting
E) Having complete / waiting

10. **He didn't respond to my calls for hours and made me ---- there eternally and I got sunburnt.**

A) to have waited
B) to be waiting
C) waiting
D) to wait
E) wait

11. **In order to get the maximum benefits from a medicine, one needs ---- away from alcohol at least during the intake period of it.**

A) to have stayed
B) staying
C) stay
D) to stay
E) having stayed

12. **They have done everything in their power ---- a better and more luxurious life but they don't have the intelligence or the resources ---- rich.**

A) to live / to be
B) living / to be
C) living / be
D) having lived / to be
E) live / being

13. **The old woman left the room ---- to death as they gave her five dollars ---- that she was a beggar when actually she was one of the donators.**

A) embarrassed / having been though
B) embarrassing / to think
C) embarrassed / thinking
D) embarrassing / to think
E) having been embarrassing / thinking

14. **---- to the aquarium from the deep ocean, the fish felt ---- and died within days.**

A) Brought / isolating
B) Having been brought / isolated
C) Bringing / having been isolated
D) To be brought / isolated
E) Bring / to be isolated

15. **---- for his kindness and generosity, the good-hearted man had many visitors when he was hospitalized.**

A) Knowing
B) To know
C) Having known
D) To have known
E) Known

16. **Of course I remember ---- our very first love letter under a rose tree. I still like ---- that the good fortune of that tree keeps our love alive.**

A) burying / to think
B) bury / think
C) buried / thought
D) to bury / to think
E) burying / think

17. **I regret ---- you that you have failed the test and we only give each candidate one chance alone.**

A) inform
B) informing
C) to informing
D) to inform
E) to have informed

18. **I saw my sister ---- out of her window for half an hour with no expression on her face. That's odd because she has never mentioned ---- over something.**

A) looking / being depressed
B) look / to be depressed
C) to look / having been depressed
D) looking / be depressed
E) having been looked / being depressed

19. **Aida was always the first ---- and start ---- her chores in the morning.**

A) to get up / do
B) get up / to do
C) to get up / doing
D) getting up / doing
E) having got up / to do

20. **---- from its original place with carelessness, the Zeugma statue has suffered some damage.**

A) Removing
B) Removed
C) To removed
D) Having removed
E) To have removed

NOUN CLAUSES

8 NOUN CLAUSES

Noun Clauses **(isim cümlecikleri), cümlede isimlerin kullanıldığı yerlerde kullanılır ve kullanım yerleri aşağıdaki gibidir:**

a) Özne olarak ('if' ile başlayan isim cümlecikleri hariç)
b) Nesne olarak
c) 'Be' fiilinden sonra
d) Edatlardan sonra ('if' ve 'that' ile başlayan isim cümlecikleri hariç)
e) Belirli sıfatlardan sonra (sadece 'that' ile kurulan isim cümlecikleri)
f) Belirli isimlerden sonra (sadece 'that' ile kurulan isim cümlecikleri)

Bu yapının özellikle zor metinlerin anlaşılmasında çok önemli bir yeri vardır.

A TYPES OF NOUN CLAUSES (İsim Cümleciği Türleri)

Üç çeşit isim cümleciği vardır:

1. **Soru kelimeleri (when, why, how, etc.) ile oluşturulan isim cümlecikleri**
2. **'Whether / If' ile oluşturulan isim cümlecikleri**
3. **'That' ile oluşturulan isim cümlecikleri**

1 Soru Kelimeleri İle Oluşturulan İsim Cümlecikleri

İsim cümleciği oluşturmak için, soru kelimeleri kullanılarak kurulan cümleciklerde, soru kelimesiyle başlayan cümleyi soru yapısından çıkartıp düz cümle haline getirmemiz gerekir. Diğer bir deyişle önce soru kelimesi, sonra özne, ardından yardımcı fiil veya ana fiil getirilir. Ana fiilden sonra gerekliyse nesne veya zarf da kullanılabilir.

What are they doing? *(Question)*

What they are doing is none of your business. *(Noun clause)*

- **How you treat your family and friends** gives clues about your personality.
  (Ailene ve arkadaşlarına nasıl davrandığın…)
- Do you know **what you will do** after you graduate from university?
  (… ne yapacağını / yapacağın şeyi …)

- Noah never tells people **how much money he has**.
  (… ne kadar parası olduğunu …)
- Everybody was looking for the treasure but nobody knew exactly **where it was**.
  (… nerede olduğunu …)
- **What I couldn't see in her personality** was that she was extremely stingy.
  (Onun karakterinde anlayamadığım şey …)
- **How the dinosaurs went extinct** is still a mystery.
  (Dinozorların nasıl yok olduğu …)
- I'm going abroad to study and I don't know **how often I will be able to visit** my parents in these four years.
  (… ne sıklıkla ziyaret edebileceğimi …)
- Harry decided to move to a different country and be an English teacher but he hasn't decided **which country he could live in.**
  (… hangi ülkede yaşayabileceğine …)
- Harrison has always been confused about **how he feels about his colleagues** and this has resulted in aggressive behaviour from his side.
  (… çalışma arkadaşlarıyla ilgili nasıl hissettiği …)
- Max and Alex are twins and they can feel **what the other twin feels**. If you hurt Max, Alex will feel the same amount of pain.
  (… diğer ikizin ne hissettiğini / diğer ikizin hissettiği şeyi …)
- Can you tell me **why you act like a little child**? You are twenty years old.
  (… neden küçük bir çocuk gibi davrandığını …)
- **How often I go out** has nothing to do with my family's income. I earn my own money.
- Nobody in the friend group could tell **why Jackson stopped seeing them all of a sudden**.
- The priests accept to lead a limited life and do **what it takes** when they decide to become a religious figure.
- **What food animals eat** and **how they hunt to get that food** is directly related to their evolution over the years.

⚠ Not *Özneyi soran sorular isim cümlesi olarak kullanıldıklarında söz dizimi aynı kalır.*

- ***Who** is in the garden? (Question)*
  *I don't know **who is in the garden**. (Noun clause)*
- ***Who** takes care of all these chores here?*
  *Do you have any idea **who takes care of all these chores here**?*

1

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct question word.

1. You will be shocked when you hear __________________ they will go for their honeymoon.

2. __________________ I wanted to know was if I had passed the exam.

3. When we couldn't understand __________________ bag it was, we immediately called the police for fear of a bomb.

4. He hasn't reserved any table because __________________ guests will come is still uncertain.

5. __________________ disappointed me most was that I had arranged my whole schedule in accordance with his.

6. Since they didn't act responsibly and inform us about __________________ the tour would start exactly, we decided to claim the fares.

7. If Kathy weren't so emotional, she could understand __________________ they really needed to take a break from each other.

8. After a few trials, he was able to comprehend __________________ his new phone could be turned on.

9. While one is on a diet, __________________ they eat and __________________ they sleep are always important.

10. If you really want to be accepted to this program, you should explain __________________ you are so enthusiastic.

⚠ **Not**

Soru kelimeleri kullanılarak kurulan isim cümleciklerinde, daha vurgulu bir anlatım için soru kelimelerinin sonuna '-ever' eklenebilir.

- ***Whoever (= anyone who) lives here** is not your concern but mine since I own the house.*
- ***Wherever (= any place where) you want** can be your home temporarily but you will miss yours eventually.*
- *You can call me **whatever (= anything what) you like;** I will not be offended as I have known you for years.*
- ***Whichever (= anything which) dress Heidi chooses** may alter her looks and charisma.*
- *I cannot manage to solve this puzzle **however (= in any way how) hard I try** but if I succeed, it will make me feel better about myself.*
- ***Whenever (= anytime when) Alisha came near the lake** was a feast to my eyes.*
- ***However much sun you are exposed to** is the reason of a darker or lighter skin colour.*
- ***Whichever path you take** will affect your future immensely.*
- *We will stop at **wherever there is a restaurant** as we are starving.*
- *How can I know **whoever called you this morning**? I wasn't even here.*

2 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with '-ever' words. (whatever, however, whenever, wherever, whichever, whoever, whomever)

1. ________________ comes next will get the prize for our one millionth customer.
2. Wendy took off her apron and walked out of her boring job regardless of ________________ they would think about her.
3. Can you please not criticize me for a second? Give me the peace I need and not say ________________ you are going to say.
4. They called me this morning and complained to me about ________________ they needed you, you were gone.
5. Shalom is so careless while working that ________________ tool he uses, he manages to lose it.
6. ________________ a mole digs a hole is under the risk of collapsing since it burrows multiple exits for itself.
7. They have not yet announced ________________ they would finish this project and left it all ambiguous for us.
8. My brother visited me last week and left without telling me ________________ he was going. I am terribly worried about his well-being now.
9. In Germany, university students are supposed to know ________________ they are to be in their classes as class times are set prior to lesson programs.
10. The professor ran through the corridor hysterically, not seeing ________________ he was bumping into.

3 EXERCISE:

Choose the correct option.

1. **'---- your reason is, put it behind and come see your father, he is very sick.' said my mother in a very sad tone.**

   A) Whatever B) Wherever C) Whomever D) Whichever E) However

2. **The teacher told the students that ---- hard they tried to succeed in this exam could change their future for good.**

   A) whatever B) whoever C) whichever D) wherever E) however

3. **Can you recall ---- it was that fell down from the roof on that rainy day? I remember he got two broken ribs.**

   A) whichever B) whoever C) whatever D) whenever E) wherever

4. **Lynda embraced her body eventually and tried to be happy with ---- she got, and I was happy not to hear her complain about it any more.**

A) however B) whichever C) whatever D) wherever E) whomever

5. **---- this painting was stolen from is not known yet but scholars think that it is a museum in Florence, Italy.**

A) Whatever B) Wherever C) Whichever D) Whomever E) Whenever

6. **The baker on the corner of our street seems to have run out of the cookies I like ---- I go there to get some.**

A) wherever B) whatever C) whenever D) whoever E) whichever

7. **---- there is going to be an earthquake is uncertain under any circumstance, so we must always be prepared for it.**

A) Wherever B) However C) Whoever D) Whatever E) Whichever

8. **The restaurant only accepts regular customers, so they already have a list of ---- their customers might like their omelette.**

A) whenever B) whichever C) whoever D) whatever E) however

9. **After my parents passed away, I wasn't aware of what was going on around me, so I would not be able to remember ---- they said or did.**

A) wherever B) whoever C) whatever D) however E) whichever

10. **Lucia hasn't still made up her mind about ---- she is going to go to learn French. She has a limited budget, so Paris seems too expensive.**

A) whatever B) whichever C) however D) wherever E) whoever

11. **She knew ---- she needed his help, Albert would disappear, so she made sure she never needed him.**

A) whenever B) whatever C) however D) wherever E) whichever

12. **The waiter recommended us the calamari saying that they could cook it ---- we liked and it was their specialty.**

A) whenever B) however C) whomever D) wherever E) whoever

13. **---- has seen the accident should come forward and tell the police what he has seen, otherwise we will never learn whose mistake it was.**

A) Wherever B) Whenever C) Whoever D) However E) Whatever

14. **According to Freud, all people go through certain stages in their childhood and their futures are shaped by ---- behaviour patterns they are exposed to during them.**

A) however B) whoever C) wherever D) whenever E) whichever

15. **---- car this is, he needs to get here and move his car or I will call the police. He is blocking my way and has parked in the disabled parking space.**

A) Whatever B) Whenever C) Whoever D) Whosever E) However

16. **Wendy is the first person to arrive ---- there is a party even when she is not invited.**

A) whenever B) whatever C) however D) whoever E) whichever

17. **I don't seem to be getting any better ---- much medication I take. I think I need further medical investigation.**

A) whichever B) whenever C) whoever D) however E) whomever

18. **I myself told my sister she can borrow ---- of my shirts she wants to.**

A) whenever B) however C) whichever D) whomever E) wherever

19. **'---- sees this note will know I have been here', said Columbus, not knowing all future generations would know his name as a main character in world history.**

A) Whosever B) Wherever C) Whichever D) Whatever E) Whoever

20. **The rules can change depending on the state in America and so do they in ---- there is a state system.**

A) wherever B) whoever C) whatever D) whomever E) whichever

2 ‘Whether / If’ İle Oluşturulan İsim Cümlecikleri

‘Yes / No Questions’ olarak adlandırılan, başında herhangi bir soru kelimesi bulunmayan ve sadece yardımcı fiillerle oluşturulan soru cümlelerini isim cümleciği yapmak için en başa ‘whether’ veya ‘if’ getirilmesi gerekir. Ardından soru cümlesi bir düz cümle gibi sıralanır. Bir önceki cümlecik tipinde olduğu gibi önce özne, daha sonra yardımcı fiil veya ana fiil kullanılır. Ana fiilden sonra gerekliyse nesne veya zarf da kullanılabilir. ‘Whether’ veya ‘if’ ile başlayan cümleciklerin sonuna ‘or not’ eklenebilir.

Is he at the office? *(Question)*
Whether he is at the office isn’t important now. *(Noun clause)*

- My father asked his friend to give me a job without asking me **whether I want that kind of a job (or not)**. *(... isteyip istemediğimi ...)*
- Arthur and his wife couldn’t make up their minds on **whether they really wanted children**.
- **Whether you like working in teams (or not)** may indicate some of your personality traits.
- The DLR test is designed to determine **if you are fit to become a pilot**.
- Your looks may not always play a part in **whether a girl likes you or not**.
- The research is prepared to show **whether this system works**. If not, we will try a new method.
- **Whether Nelson works with us or not** may change the result of this study.
- My uncle asked me **if I really didn’t know where my brother was**, even though I had said ‘no’ before.
- Tell the staff you want more food when they come to ask you **if you need anything else**.
- The police force is expanding their investigation to find out **whether the little girl was kidnapped or murdered**.
- Everybody was doubtful **whether Neil was telling the truth** when he said he would graduate this year.
- It is hard to know **if one decision you make will change your life or not**.
- **Whether you eat healthy or fast food** will impact your weight a great deal.
- Even late in the 20th century, people were discussing **whether women should have the right to vote or not**.
- Toby didn’t know **whether to laugh or cry of happiness** when he passed all his classes.

‘Yes / No Questions’ ile kurulan bir isim cümleciği özne konumunda kullanıldığında; ‘if’ ile kullanılamaz, sadece ‘whether’ ile kullanılabilir. Nesne konumunda ise bir sınırlama yoktur.

- **~~If~~ / Whether he is someone I fancy or not** doesn’t affect my judgement of him.
- You can set up your tent here **whether / if it is private property or not**. You need a shelter.
- **Whether Jennifer approves of my decision or not** is irrelevant because I will make my own choice.
- The team confirmed that they are willing to compete **whether / if it rains or not.**
- He asked me **if / whether I preferred working in teams or solo**.
- **Whether I left a good first impression** was vague, so I lost my self-confidence and panicked.

'Or not' isim cümleciklerinde iki farklı şekilde kullanılabilir. Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyiniz.

- Jesse won't be able to change my mind **whether** / **if** she plays her cards right **or not**.
  Jesse won't be able to change my mind **whether or not** she plays her cards right.
- Jealousy can determine **whether** / **if** you lead a healthy relationship with the people around you **or not**.
  Jealousy can determine **whether or not** you lead a healthy relationship with the people around you.
- The train will leave right on time **whether** / **if** the passengers make it **or not**.
  The train will leave right on time **whether or not** the passengers make it.
- **Whether** they wear sunglasses **or not** doesn't really strike the vision of the African people.
- **Whether** it produces the simplest garment **or not** cannot harm the Armani brand name.
- **Whether or not** the teachers will be sent to another seminar is beyond the principal's control.

Not *'Whether or not' doğru bir kullanım olmasına rağmen, 'if or not' dilbilgisi açısından yanlıştır. 'If' ile kurulan isim cümleciklerine 'or not' getirilmek isteniyorsa, tüm cümlecik bittikten sonra eklenmesi gerekir.*

- *I can easily tell **if** someone can cook well **or not**.*

Bir edattan sonra kullanılan isim cümlelerinde 'if' kullanılamaz; sadece 'whether' kullanılabilir.

- The data in the end will lead to a valid result about **whether** or not you can carry out this mission.
- The kindergarten teacher will decide on **whether** to let the children out depending on the weather.
- Nelson Mandela had to choose between **whether** to go to jail for what he defended or escape.
- The discipline committee applied to the high court about **whether** a punishment was necessary.
- After my investigation, I will go back to **whether** there was a mistake or just a misunderstanding.

İsim cümleciklerindeki kullanılan 'when' ve 'if', bağlaç olanlardan farklı kullanım özelliklerine sahiptir. Zaman belirten bir bağlaç olan 'when'i ve 'if clause'u kullanırken zaman uyumuna dikkat edilmesi gerekir; fakat isim cümleciklerinde zaman uyumu gerekli değildir.

Ayrıca, 'if' ve 'when' bağlaçlarının olduğu koşul cümlelerinde de geçerli olan fiilin 'will', 'would' ya da 'be going to' olamaması kuralı isim cümleciklerinde geçerli değildir. Çoktan seçmeli soruların çözümünde; cümlelerde geçen 'when' veya 'if'in bağlaç olup olmadığından emin olduktan sonra buna göre seçenekleri elemeye başlayabilirsiniz.

- **When Malik comes back to London**, we will go trekking on the Jurassic coast. *(Conjunction)*

- Everybody knows **when their contract will be over** but they are refusing to evacuate the building anyway. *(Noun clause)*
- I am sure they will call you **if you are a successful candidate for the job.** *(Conjunction)*
- The new lawyer wants to see **if the judge will decide in her favour,** so she has been sending her petition letters. *(Noun clause)*
- My brother-in-law asks me constantly **if I will be able to take care of his baby on Wednesday** even though I said 'yes' before. *(Noun clause)*
- **When you will see these documents** affects my schedule greatly, if soon, I will have to get to work now. *(Noun clause)*

'Where, what, how, when, who, whom, which, whose' ve 'whether' ile oluşturulan isim cümleciklerindeki 'should, must, can' gibi modal'ların anlamları, 'to infinitive' ile de verilebilir. Bu tür bir kısaltma 'if' ile başlayan isim cümleciklerinde yapılamaz.

- Eleanor hesitated to give us feedback about **what we should do next.**
  Eleanor hesitated to give us feedback about **what to do next**.
- Everyone seems to have an idea on **how people should live.**
  Everyone seems to have an idea on **how to live**.
- The ferry crew put some signboards showing **what you mustn't feed the seagulls** to keep the seas clean.
  The ferry crew put some signboards showing **what not to feed the seagulls** to keep the seas clean.
- My neighbours are completely uninformed about **whether they should change the pipeline in the apartment building**.
  My neighbours are completely uninformed about **whether to change the pipeline in the apartment building**.
- Her mother told Janice **how much to cut from her dress** to be able to walk safely.
- Applicants must know **who to hand in their application**. It is their responsibility.
- My co-worker confused me about **whether to continue here or quit and find a new job**.
- Nobody is responsible for telling you **what not to do**, but you yourself.

3 'That' İle Oluşturulan İsim Cümlecikleri

Tam bir cümleyi (full sentence) isim cümleciği haline getirmek için cümlenin başına 'that' getirilmelidir. Bu şekilde başka bir cümle içinde isim gibi kullanılabilir.

I'm a hard worker. *(Full sentence)*

That I'm a hard worker makes me a reliable employee. *(Noun clause)*

- **That alcohol kills the liver** is a well-known fact.
- It is suspicious **that Melinda never wants to talk about her husband's murder**.
- The Johnson family believe **that their children will be as successful as they are one day**.
- **That Germany rebuilt itself in such a short time after the World War II** is unbelievable.
- It is said **that the Indians wanted to share their land with the British** but the idea was refused by them.

- **That the Evolution Theory is denied by some people** is just shocking to me with all the available evidence.
- **That cocaine was first thought to be good for health** is really interesting.
- It should be known by the employers **that the workers perform less efficiently under stress**.
- I have been warned by my girlfriend **that I have started to eat too much.**
- **That he lied to the judge during his trial** was the reason why he was sent to prison.
- It has been announced by NASA **that the universe is expanding faster than ever.**
- **That she ignored my call** was a wake-up-call for me. I knew for sure she didn't like me.
- Ted and Amy informed everyone in their housewarming party **that they were expecting their first baby**.

B HOW TO USE 'THAT' CLAUSE WITH VERBS, ADJECTIVES AND NOUNS
('That Clause'un Fiiller, Sıfatlar ve İsimler ile Kullanımı)

1 Verbs (Fiiller)

a Bazı fiiller kendilerinden sonra 'that' ile başlayan isim cümlecikleri alırlar. Bu fiiller genel olarak iki gruba ayrılabilir:

1. **Zihinsel süreç belirten fiiller**: believe, guess, hope, know, reckon, think, etc.
2. **Aktarım fiilleri**: admit, promise, say, tell, warn, etc.

Bazı fiillerden sonra kullanılan isim cümlesindeki 'that' kullanılmayabilir. Bu kullanım 'zero-that' şeklinde adlandırılır. 'That'in genellikle kullanılmadığı fiiller 'guess, think, hope' ve 'reckon' fiilleridir.

b Kendisinden sonra 'that clause' alan fiiller kullanımlarına göre üçe ayrılır:

verb + that clause

accept	admit	agree	announce	assume	believe
check	claim	comment	complain	confirm	consider
decide	declare	deny	discover	doubt	expect
explain	feel	find (out)	forget	guess	hear
hope	imagine	insist	know	mean	mention
notice	pretend	promise	prove	realise	reckon
remark	remember	repeat	reply	say	see
show	state	suggest	suppose	think	understand

- Do you **think** (that) students should wear school uniforms?
- UN officials **said** that millions of people are faced with starvation and famine in Africa and the Arabian Peninsula.
- The research has **indicated** that refugees have had a negative impact on tax-payers.

verb + indirect object + that clause

advise
annoy
assure
bother
convince
inform
persuade
promise
remind
show
teach
tell
warn

- It **bothers me** that my boyfriend always stays out till 3 a.m. with his friends.
- The lawyer has tried hard to **persuade the jury** that his client is innocent.
- My best friend **promised me** that she would take me to my doctor's appointment.

Not *'Annoy' ve 'bother' fiilleri hariç listedeki diğer fiiller 'zero-that' şeklinde kullanılabilir.*

verb (+ prepositional phrase) + that clause

'To' ile kullanılanlar:

admit
announce
complain
confess
explain
indicate
mention
point out
propose
prove
recommend
report
say
state
suggest

- I want to **point out (to everyone)** that this class is a group of people who all aspire to become better photographers.

'With' ile kullanılanlar:

agree
argue
check
disagree
joke

- They **agreed (with the committee)** that the proposal was a very good one.

'Of' ile kullanılanlar:

ask
demand
require

- The state **demanded (of citizens)** that they pay taxes with gold and silver, which was in short supply.

2 Adjectives (Sıfatlar)

Fiillerin yanı sıra, fikir ve duygu belirtmek için sıfatlardan sonra da ‘that’ ile başlayan isim cümlecikleri kullanılabilir. Bu şekilde yaygın olarak kullanılan sıfatlar aşağıdaki listedeki gibidir:

afraid
alarmed
amazed
angry
annoyed
anxious
ashamed
astonished
aware
certain
concerned
confident
delighted
disappointed
excited
frightened
glad
happy
obvious
pleased
positive
proud
right
sad
shocked
sorry
sure
surprised
thrilled
unhappy
upset
worried

Bu sıfatlardan sonra kullanılan isim cümlesinde ‘that’ kullanılmadan da isim cümleciği oluşturulabilir.

- My wife is **worried** (that) our son is getting too attached to my mother.
- Governors are **pleased** (that) the Commission has highlighted such an important issue.
- If we hadn’t had the proof, I’m **sure** (that) they would have thought we were making this all up.

3 Nouns (İsimler)

İsim cümlecikleri, isimlerin yerine kullanılmalarına rağmen bazı isimlerden sonra ‘that clause’ kullanılması mümkündür. Bu kullanımda isim ve isim cümleciği birlikte kullanılır, fakat isim cümleciği ismin yerini almaz. ‘That clause’ bu şekilde daha çok fikir, duygu, belirsizlik ve ihtimal belirten kelimelerle kullanılır. Bu kelimeler aşağıdaki gibidir:

advantage
advice
argument
assumption
belief
chance
claim
comment
difficulty
doubt
effect
evidence
fact
feeling
guess
hope
idea
notion
opinion
possibility
problem
promise
report
rumour
statement
suggestion
suspicion
view

- The **statement** that the German language is better at expressing feelings is not really based on study but rather on general belief.
- The **view** that my sister plays the piano better than me puts me down every time I hear it as I try with my full potential.
- Sam’s **opinion** that I can never be as good a dancer as him is beyond ridiculous. I am already better than him.
- Nancy and her mother’s **doubt** that Michael wouldn’t make a good husband has been proven wrong and Nancy is happy with the result.

- The superstitious **belief** that if you break a mirror, you would have seven years of bad luck is actually praised by some people.
- The class **rumour** that Simon has asked Melinda out and that she rejected is denied by both of them.
- The **claims** that the President has been cheating on his wife have been validated by online news channels by photos.
- The **assumption** that one would have a peaceful life in a village may not always be the case and it can be hectic there, too.
- My **argument** that we should hire more salespeople for our company to expand our market has not been approved yet.
- Their **idea** that they should save at least five thousand dollars a month to buy a house in New York is actually true.

Not

'That clause' yapısının isimlerle kullanımı, sıfat cümleciklerinin (adjective clauses) kullanımıyla karıştırılmamalıdır. Aşağıdaki örnekleri inceleyiniz.

- ***The claim that he has stolen the money** has been proven wrong.*
  (That clause) (... parayı çaldığı iddiası ...) (Neyi? - iddiası)

  ***The claim that was rejected by the President** had caused chaos.*
  (Adjective clause) (Başkan tarafından reddedilen iddia ...) (Ne? - iddia)
- ***The belief that he was kidnapped** caused dismay in the family.*
  (That clause) (... kaçırıldığı inancı ...) (Neyi? - inancı)

  ***The belief that many people has accepted** is still controversial for others.*
  (Adjective clause) (... birçok insanın kabul ettiği inanç ...) (Ne? - inanç)
- *During the United Nation's congress many delegates objected to **the idea that military action should be taken**.*
  (That clause) (... askeri harekat yapılması gerektiği fikri ...) (Neyi? - fikri)

4

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with 'which' or 'that'. For some questions, both options are correct.

1. The idea ____________________ was mentioned at the board meeting was accepted by the majority but has not been put into action yet.
2. The assumption ____________________ Mozart is the best composer ever is doubtful when you look at the symphonies by Beethoven.
3. The coat ____________________ is hung at the entrance belongs to my father, and I know because it was me who bought it.
4. The stupid rumour ____________________ Nina has had an affair and left her husband may ruin her marriage, so stop spreading it.
5. The argument ____________________ states that all African people would starve if it weren't for the developed nations is simply stupid as it was them who stole all their resources at the first place.
6. Climate change ____________________ can be seen openly when you look at the temperature rise alone may eradicate all life from earth.

7. The public opinion ________________ the government has done the best for its people has been harmed by the inaccurate statements of the ministers.
8. Bolivia, ________________ is a country in South America, is declared a dangerous destination to travel alone because of human trafficking in the country.
9. The claim ________________ Mason is going to run for the Presidency has been made public by his advisor Jon Brain.
10. Journalism, ________________ is a demanding job, may lead to a single life because it requires a lot of travelling.

5 EXERCISE:

Choose the correct option. For some questions, both options are correct.

1. **The fact ---- Nelson Mandela fought for his country against white people led to his twenty-seven years of imprisonment.**

A) that B) which

2. **The opinion, ---- was supported by all party members, will be presented to the parliament on Monday.**

A) which B) that

3. **The doubt ---- could be seen on the faces of the students made the teacher question himself and re-evaluate his statement.**

A) which B) why

4. **Expressionism, ---- is an art form supporting modernism in painting, came out in the 20th century.**

A) that B) which

5. **The belief ---- only deaf people should learn the sign language is nonsense. How are we going to communicate with the deaf?**

A) which B) that

6. **The view ---- men are superior to women is out of date by all means, but it is still a valid concept in some parts of the world.**

A) that B) which

7. **Amsterdam, London and Paris, ---- are in Europe, are the most visited cities in the whole world.**

A) which B) that

8. **The opinion ---- my siblings and I get along well with each other all the time is a lie. Of course we snap and fight sometimes.**

A) which B) that

9. **Gunter's assumption ---- he could fly with a parachute without any official training is the reason why he injured himself.**

A) that B) which

10. **The comic book, ---- was released last week, is the last copy of the highly read comic series; they will not publish a new issue.**

A) that B) which

That & The fact that

'That' ile kurulan isim cümleciklerinde 'that' yerine 'the fact that' de kullanılabilir. Ancak bir edattan (preposition) sonra gelen isim cümleciklerinde 'that' kullanılamaz; mutlaka 'the fact that' kullanılması gerekmektedir.

- **The fact that** / **That** I was a little child when my father passed away made me feel lonely all my life.
- **That** / **The fact that** there are hundreds of earthquakes in Japan every year doesn't stop Japanese engineers from building sky-scrapers.
- Einstein, the German physicist, discovered **that** / **the fact that** if you travelled at the speed of light, you would never age.
- **That** / **The fact that** John left his job to travel around the world has amazed all of us.
- BBC, the national TV channel of the UK, has announced on the news **that** / **the fact that** the new law has been passed by the Parliament.
- The scientist was almost sure about **the fact that** his findings would change the future of the experiment.
- I left my job two months ago due to **the fact that** I was feeling undervalued in that company.
- Carmen is ashamed of **the fact that** her parents were involved in the genocide against the Bosnian people, so she never tells anyone who her parents are.
- I can't live with **the fact that** I have a better chance of realising my dreams but I am too lazy to do anything, so I will start searching for a new job.
- Jeremy and Carla are proud of **the fact that** their daughter is the CEO of the World Bank.

Bir cümlenin öznesi olan isim cümleciği isim görevi üstlenir. İsimler de zamanlardan etkilenmez. Bu yüzden isim cümleciği ile ana fiil arasında zaman farkı olabilir.

- I learnt throughout my journey **that life is pretty dramatic and gives you all kinds of drama**, from extreme love to death.
- I used to believe **whatever my parents tell me** but I have realised that they can lie, too.
- **That you visited the village of your mother on your holiday** has made her very emotional and she says she will go with you the next time.
- **What I have experienced in the workplace over the years** would have helped me a lot professionally if I had known before.
- **Whether Jeremy died during the war or not** hasn't been verified yet and some people still believe he will come back one day.
- She can't explain **why she murdered that poor child** and the news says she will be sentenced to life imprisonment for it.

Bir isim cümlesi özne olarak kullanıldığında ardından gelen fiilin tekil olması gerekir. Çünkü isim cümlecikleri tek bir durumu isim (özne, nesne) haline getirmek için kullanılan yapılardır.

- What you told me about hair care **doesn't** really interest me.
- That the dogs would die if they ate chocolate **is** indeed interesting and **has been proven** scientifically.
- Whether I had done any acting before **was** in fact what could give me the opportunity.
- The fact that my mum never cries in front of people **has** made her a stronger person.
- Where I put my purse **is** still a mystery and unfortunately I need it to pay the bill now.
- That I care about my cat so much **surprises** some of my friends.

6 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with a 'question word', 'that' or 'whether / if'.

1. Every society has a different idea of __________________ the ideal marriage age is.
2. The relatives of the patient were announced to be told __________________ they should be expecting bad news any time soon.
3. The actress asked the fashion designer __________________ she had something simpler to offer her.
4. The manager still hasn't decided __________________ she should have the company's party.
5. In India, the families of the boy and the girl choose __________________ they marry, which is called an arranged marriage.
6. __________________ he blocks me from his life doesn't change the way I feel about Joe; I still love him.
7. __________________ Logan doesn't care about his hygiene is a major problem in his relationship with his wife.
8. The winner of this competition will get __________________ prize he wants from the Formula 1 Company with no budget limit.
9. It was inevitable __________________ she would stand out in the crowd as she is extremely tall and pretty.
10. __________________ cars an average American has can explain the greed of the nation.

7

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with a 'question word', 'that' or 'whether / if'.

1. You can't really expect to know _________________ you will fall in love with. It is fate after all.
2. Blake teases his close friend, Emilia, on how slow she walks and _________________ she is a couch potato.
3. Nathan searched every corridor of the hospital to see _________________ he could find a seat to sit on.
4. _________________ you live and _________________ you are brought up shapes your whole life.
5. Berlin Film Festival is a pioneer in the film industry and can affect _________________ prestige a movie will have.
6. It is believed _________________ the publishing houses will be replaced by the Internet based publishers soon.
7. *WhatsApp* has no standards of _________________ texts, videos or documents you can send in a day.
8. I would really like to live long enough to see _________________ Amelia ever stops whining.
9. My brother, who bought his own house recently, is devoted to paying off _________________ is left of his loan.
10. _________________ you increase your income is important from a moral perspective as I believe it should be ethical.

8

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with a 'question word', 'that' or 'whether / if'.

1. I will never tell my family _________________ I was crying the other day or they will be mad at my husband.
2. Henry questioned _________________ his friends really enjoyed his company after the unfortunate incident last week.
3. It is said _________________ the accused lawyer is determined to be a judge soon to take his revenge.
4. It is highly controversial among the board members _________________ they should get on with the new project.
5. _________________ Martin can't dare to propose to April is because she constantly says she isn't ready for marriage.
6. There are quite a few options to choose from when it comes to _________________ transportation you can take in Istanbul.
7. _________________ Lea marries that man or not is her own decision, so leave her alone and let her decide.
8. There is a suspicion _________________ the trucks may be carrying illegal substances or weapons.
9. He has taken some decisions to do some things different from _________________ he has been doing.
10. The rumour _________________ the baby had died right after the birth was spread by the mainstream media but it wasn't true.

9

EXERCISE:

Choose the correct option.

1. **Hugo roamed around the city not knowing ---- he should do to save himself from this situation.**

   A) what B) if C) that

2. **---- times she went to the toilet attracted the doctor's attention and he started to think she was having kidney problems.**

   A) Whether B) How many C) That

3. **The airline companies are allowed to sell more tickets than their seat numbers, as they can never be sure ---- all customers will show up for the flight.**

   A) how many B) why C) whether

4. **My grandmother couldn't remember ---- I was due to her Alzheimer's and kept looking at my face curiously.**

   A) that B) who C) if

5. **The American election system gives citizens two options and they just have to choose ---- to vote for the Republicans or the Democrats.**

   A) that B) why C) whether

6. **It is speculated among teachers ---- the school will be shut down soon and they will be made abundant.**

   A) that B) if C) why

7. **Some nations are so highly assimilated that they don't even know ---- language was spoken by their ancestors.**

   A) that B) which C) if

8. **---- it was Jack who drank all the champagne in the kitchen or someone else has still not been verified, so there is no point in blaming him for now.**

   A) That B) Whether C) If

9. **Is there any reason you need to tell me ---- I should stay? Are you afraid of sleeping alone?**

A) if B) that C) why

10. **---- she was the love of my life hit me the moment I saw her and I have not been able to think about anything else but her.**

A) That B) How C) Whether

11. **My sister burst into tears right in front of me and I didn't know ---- it was out of pain, happiness or anger.**

A) whether B) whichever C) whenever

12. **Nobody knows exactly ---- he went to Greece. He claims it was in June, 2016, but he was supposed to be at work then.**

A) when B) if C) that

13. **I tried but couldn't detect ---- the snoring was coming from.**

A) that B) if C) where

14. **Jacob didn't mention ---- he had applied for the job. Even if he had, he would keep it a secret.**

A) that B) if C) what

15. **The agent gave me no recommendations on ---- I should take this trip alone or invite my friends to come with me when I asked him.**

A) whichever B) however C) whether

16. **Sandra still cannot believe ---- her husband went all this way and tried such ridiculous tricks to make her believe his lies.**

A) if B) the fact that C) where

17. **Can you remind me ---- I am putting my ring? I am sure I will forget it within seconds.**

A) where B) what C) that

18. **It is assumed by the government ---- all citizens are happy with the social reforms they have put into action.**

A) whether B) what C) that

19. **The disabled child was embarrassed when he realized there was no escalator and looked at people's eyes to see ---- they would carry him up the stairs.**

A) however B) whatever C) whether

20. **I wanted all of you here today to see ---- you all have made the research and are ready to get on with our work.**

A) if B) what C) when

21. **---- maids the princess was supposed to walk with was planned prior to the wedding and changing the number was impossible.**

A) That B) How many C) If

22. **Peter was still astonished by ---- his father did to him, even though he knew he was evil and didn't care about him at all.**

A) whether B) that C) what

23. **---- they will be able to solve this little problem will determine the future of our partnership.**

A) What B) Whether C) That

24. **---- money was spent on the Prince's wedding celebrations still remains a mystery.**

A) How much B) If C) Where

25. **The idea ---- the world will one day become a global village is utter nonsense.**

A) what B) if C) that

C

SUBJUNCTIVE – 'Should' in That Clauses

('That' ile kurulan isim cümlelerinde 'should' kullanımı)

'Subjunctive' yapısı fiilin istek, şüphe ve olasılık belirten halidir. İstek, ısrar etme, tavsiye veya zorunluluk anlamı veren fiil, sıfat veya isimlerden sonra 'that' ile başlayan bir 'noun clause' getirildiğinde, isim cümleciğinin içinde 'should' kullanılır; fakat yazı dilinde 'should' cümleye dahil edilmez. Bu yapıda sıklıkla kullanılan kelimeler aşağıdaki gibidir:

Verbs (Fiiller)

advise
ask
beg
command
demand
desire
direct
insist
instruct
intend
order
prefer
propose
recommend
request
require
suggest
urge
warn

Adjectives (Sıfatlar)

advisable
crucial
desirable
essential
imperative
important
inevitable
necessary
preferable
significant
urgent
vital

Nouns (İsimler)

advice
desire
insistence
necessity
obligation
order
proposal
recommendation
suggestion

Yukarıda verilen kelimelerden fiil ve sıfat olanlar sık sık kullanılırken, isim olanlar nadiren tercih edilir.

- When pregnant, doctors **recommend** that women **stay away** from all medications for the baby's health. *(= should stay away)*
- It is **urgent** that we **arrange** this meeting as we need to act fast and sign the contract to get the job. *(= should arrange)*
- It is **crucial** that the plant life **come back** for the habitat to revive. *(= should come back)*
- My roommate **demanded** that I **pay** more than her as I use the bathroom more. *(= should pay)*
- It is **vital** that you **not underestimate** important points about the issue or you will not get over it. *(= should not underestimate)*
- New studies **suggest** that the exposure to radiation **be erased** from our daily lives as much as possible for a better life. *(= should be erased)*
- The refugee crisis **requires** a shelter **be made** for them and some food aid **be given** to them for sustenance. *(= should be made / should be given)*

- It is **essential** that all the oil **be cleaned** from the area or the marine life will come to a death toll there. (= should be cleaned)
- It is **vital** that vegetables **be consumed** in your daily food intake to have a healthy diet. *(= should be consumed)*
- It is **important** that you **be** over your past life to lead a good life and **not be obsessed** with it. (= should be / should not be obsessed)
- When I set off for Iran, everyone around me **insisted** that I **stay** with the expats and **not be involved** with the locals. *(= should stay / should not be involved)*

10 **EXERCISE:**

Fill in the blanks with subjunctive form of the verbs in parentheses. Passive forms are also possible.

1. It is essential that one __________________ **(have)** a plot, characters and setting in mind before writing to create a worthy art piece.
2. The experts recommend that an architect __________________ **(review)** his design to be sure that all calculations fall into place.
3. The artist demanded that the sponsor __________________ **(show up)** for the exhibition on time to assess his work prior to the guests.
4. Kant, the German philosopher, proposed that all people __________________ **(evaluate)** their moral values first before judging others.
5. Narcissism requires that a person __________________ **(love)** himself to a level of disgust for others to satisfy his urge for acceptance.
6. It is vital that all organs __________________ **(function)** fully to lead a healthy, happy life.
7. It is urgent that Phil __________________ **(fill)** this application form now or he won't be able to apply to the piloting test, for which he dreamt all his life.
8. It is crucial in a nation that the politicians __________________ **(hold)** a balanced outlook on all citizens to meet the equal rights demands.
9. James insisted that his parents __________________ **(come)** to his graduation ceremony or he would never forgive them.
10. It is only necessary during an illness that one __________________ **(take)** his medication on a regular basis to heal completely.
11. The manager ordered that all employees __________________ **(be)** ready at the restaurant at seven to finish the preparations for the big night.
12. It is imperative that a doctor __________________ **(diagnose)** the patients with the right illness to be able to cure them.
13. It is important that a single penny __________________ **(not / lose)** during the counting to hand over a flawless cash point at the end of a day.
14. It is crucial that a car __________________ **(equip)** with the correct tools to perform fully.
15. Samuel proposed that the garbage __________________ **(not / leave)** in the house after one day to prevent the smell but he was rejected by his roommates as they are lazy.

11

EXERCISE:

Choose the correct option.

1. **While studying for a language exam, it is recommended that one ---- ready for all four skills and not the grammar alone.**

   A) being B) will be C) be D) is being E) to be

2. **When you use the Internet and social media accounts actively, it is essential that you ---- your personal information as secret.**

   A) to keep B) keep C) keeping D) will keep E) have kept

3. **In order to use a credit card safely, it is crucial that all the written numbers on the card ---- for your use alone, or anyone can shop online with it.**

   A) be secured B) secured C) secure D) being secured E) securing

4. **My mother insists that I ---- my red gown to the ball but it doesn't make any sense to me, and I should decide for myself.**

   A) wearing B) be worn C) wore D) wear E) am wearing

5. **It is urgent that a new donor ---- for the patient immediately, or he will die within the next twenty-four hours.**

   A) to be found B) finding C) found D) find E) be found

6. **The doctor requested that the new-born ---- through a set of tests since he suspected a lung disease due to the heavy breathing pattern of the baby.**

   A) is put B) be put C) put D) putting E) to be put

7. **Writing a novel requires that the writer ---- all his time to it or the book won't succeed well in the competitive market.**

   A) dedicated B) to dedicate C) dedicating D) must be dedicated E) should dedicate

8. **It is imperative that a law student ---- some field research before finishing the school and practising law to have a career advantage as a lawyer.**

A) do
B) should be done
C) does
D) doing
E) to do

9. **Oscar proposed that the whole group ---- on a camping holiday together to bond and get to know each other. He thought the hardship would make them feel closer.**

A) going
B) to go
C) goes
D) should go
E) be gone

10. **It is essential that not even one single rule ---- during your education in Yale University or you will be kicked out without any notice.**

A) violate
B) be violated
C) should violate
D) violating
E) to be violated

D REPORTED SPEECH (Dolaylı Anlatım)

1 ‘Reported speech’ (dolaylı anlatım), bir kişinin söylediği şeyi başka birisine aktarırken kullanılır.

Genel Olarak Kullanılan Aktarım Fiilleri (Reporting Verbs):

accuse
agree
apologise
argue
ask
beg
claim
command
cry
deny
explain
instruct
note
order
promise
refuse
reply
respond
say
shout
state
suggest
tell
whisper

2 Bu anlatım aktarımı yapılırken bazı değişiklikler yapılması gerekir.

a Tense Changes (Zaman Değişiklikleri)

Eğer aktarma yaparken kullanılan aktarım fiili geçmiş zamana göre çekimlenmişse (said, told, etc.) kişinin kurmuş olduğu ve alıntıladığımız cümlenin zamanını değiştirmemiz gerekir. Buradaki genel kural temel cümledeki zamandan bir zaman geriye gitmektir. Ancak ‘Past Perfect’ ve ‘Past Perfect Continuous’ için herhangi bir zaman değişikliği yapılmaz; çünkü zaten var olan en geçmiş zamanlar onlardır.

Direct Speech (Doğrudan Anlatım)	**Indirect Speech** (Dolaylı Anlatım)
The Simple Present Tense	The Simple Past Tense
The Present Continuous Tense	The Past Continuous Tense
The Present Perfect Tense	The Past Perfect Tense
The Present Perfect Continuous Tense	The Past Perfect Continuous Tense
The Simple Past Tense	The Past Perfect Tense
The Past Continuous Tense	The Past Perfect Continuous Tense

- Aktarılan cümledeki bilgi, aktarımı yapılan zamanda da geçerliyse ya da henüz gerçekleşmemiş bir eylemse, zaman değişikliği yapılsa da yapılmasa da dilbilgisi açısından bir sakınca yoktur.

  - ‘My sister **studies** Astrophysics in the USA’, she **told** me.
    She **told** me (that) her sister **studies** Astrophysics in the USA.
    (Kız kardeşi hala ABD'de Astrofizik okuduğu için durumun geçerliliği sürmektedir.)

  - ‘I **will be** there to pick you up.’ he **promised**.
    He **promised** he **will be** here to pick me up.
    (Verilen söz gelecek zamanla alakalıdır ve henüz gerçekleşmemiştir.)

b Modal Changes (Modal Değişiklikleri)

- Aktarım için kullanılan fiil geçmiş zamandaysa, ‘modal’ yapıların zamanında da değişiklik yapılması gerekir. Fakat ‘could’, ‘would’, ‘should’, ‘ought to’ ‘had better’, ‘need’ ve ‘perfect modallar’da (modal + have V_3) değişiklik yapılmaz.

Direct Speech (Doğrudan Anlatım)	**Indirect Speech** (Dolaylı Anlatım)
will	would
can	could
must *(obligation)*	had to be to should
must *(deduction)*	must
have to	had to
don't / doesn't have to	didn't have to
mustn't	mustn't be not to shouldn't
may	might (possibility) could (permission)
am / is / are going to	was / were going to
shall	would (affirmative / negative sentences) should (question)

Not *Eğer geçmişe dair bir varsayım söz konusuysa 'perfect modal' kullanabiliriz.*

- *The rumble **might be** the sound of a distant thunder.*
  *She said the rumble **might have been** the sound of a distant thunder.*

c Pronoun Changes (Zamir Değişiklikleri)

Direct Speech (Doğrudan Anlatım)	**Indirect Speech** (Dolaylı Anlatım)
this	that
these	those
I	he / she
me	him / her
my	his / her
we	they
us	them
our	their

d Place and Time Changes (Yer ve Zaman Değişiklikleri)

Direct Speech (Doğrudan Anlatım)	**Indirect Speech** (Dolaylı Anlatım)
here	there
now	then
at the moment	at that moment
tomorrow	the following day the next day the day after
next week	the following week the next week the week after
tonight	that night
yesterday	the day before the previous day
last week	the week before the previous week
ago	before previously earlier
two weeks ago	two weeks before two weeks earlier

2 Dolaylı anlatımda aktarılan cümlenin yapısı önemlidir. Aktarılan cümlelerin üç çeşidi vardır: düz cümle (statement), soru cümlesi (question) ve emir cümlesi (command). Konuyu anlamak için aşağıdaki tabloyu inceleyiniz.

Sentence Type	Direct	Indirect	Reported Clause
Statement	‘I have been to Italy’, she told me.	She told me that she had been to Italy.	‘that’ clause
Question	‘Were you at home?’ mum asked me.	Mum asked me if / whether I had been at home.	‘if / whether’ clause
	‘Where did you go?’ she asked.	She asked us where we had gone.	‘wh-’ clause
Command	‘Go out!’ he ordered.	He ordered me to go out.	‘to infinitive’ clause

a Reporting Statements (Düz Cümlelerin Dolaylı Anlatımı)

Direct Speech (Doğrudan Anlatım)	**Indirect Speech** (Dolaylı Anlatım)
Statement	Statement with Backshift
I need your help to clean the house.	My mother said (that) she **needed** my help to clean the house.
I am proud to be Spanish.	Rodrigo said (that) he **was** proud to be Spanish.
I haven’t shared my food!	Nelson shouted to us that he **hadn’t shared** his food.
We have been studying for three hours.	She told us that they **had been studying** for three hours.
We needed to take the elephants under custody.	The aid worker said (that) they **had needed** to take the elephants under custody.
They were playing football in the garden.	He said (that) they **had been playing** football in the garden.
The government supported our film.	He said (that) the government **had supported** their film.
The boy needs our help now.	They said (that) the boy **needed** their help then.

b Reporting Questions (Soru Cümlelerinin Dolaylı Anlatımı)

Soru cümleleri iki gruptan oluşur. Birincisi soru kelimeleri ile oluşturulan (wh- questions), ikincisi ise yardımcı fiillerle kurulan (yes / no questions) soru cümleleridir.

Direct Speech (Doğrudan Anlatım)	**Indirect Speech** (Dolaylı Anlatım)
Yes / No Questions	**If / Whether Reported Questions**
The police officer asked the driver 'Are you drunk, sir?'	The police officer asked the driver if / **whether** he was drunk.
Carl asked me 'Is this taking longer than expected?'	Carl asked me **if** / **whether** that was taking longer than expected.
The scientist asked the audience 'Do you understand the concept of global warming?'	The scientist asked the audience **if** / **whether** they understood the concept of global warming.
The guy asked her 'Are you planning to leave now?'	The guy asked her **if** / **whether** she was planning to leave then.
Wh- Questions	**Wh- Reported Questions**
I asked Donna 'How did you get to the airport?'	I asked Donna **how she had got** to the airport.
Jillian asked his friend 'Where did you buy your pants?'	Jillian asked his friend **where she had bought** her pants.
They asked me eagerly 'When will you come back?'	They asked me eagerly **when I would go** back.
The waiter asked the couple 'What time is your reservation?'	The waiter asked the couple **what time their reservation was**.

C Reporting Commands **(Emir Cümlelerinin Dolaylı Anlatımı)**

Direct Speech (Doğrudan Anlatım)	**Indirect Speech** (Dolaylı Anlatım)
Imperative	**(Not) To Infinitive**
The boss said to the workers 'Finish your work at once.'	The boss ordered the workers **to finish** their work at once.
The bartender said to the man 'Leave the bar, or I will call the police.'	The bartender told the man **to leave** the bar, or he would call the police.
Teddy said to Melinda 'Take your hands off my coat.'	Teddy told Melinda **to take** her hands off his coat.
My grandfather said 'Come to the lake house with me this weekend.'	My grandfather told me **to go** to the lake house with him that weekend.
The principal said to the students 'Don't paint the walls.'	The principal told the students **not to paint** the walls.
I said to my son 'Don't create a mess in your room.'	I told my son **not to create** a mess in his room.

1

REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with 'what', 'how', 'how much' or 'who'.

1. __________________ made me believe Sebastian was innocent was his calmness throughout the interview and his consistency. He was obviously telling the truth.
2. The cleaning lady insisted that she knew __________________ it was that stole the bracelet but they didn't believe her.
3. We must take an inventory and see __________________ wheat we need for the next year to feed the public.
4. The winner of this spelling competition will get __________________ all other contestants are after: a full scholarship to Harvard.
5. Leila has a few beauty tips of hers and she refuses to reveal __________________ she manages to maintain her youth. She looks like twenty-five at the age of forty.
6. The organizer wanted to know __________________ was coming to the conference to make sure there were enough seats for each participant.
7. In the capitalist system, __________________ you contribute to the economy may be an indicator of your wealth. That is to say the more money you spend, the better.
8. Eliza has four young children and a full time job. It is hard to imagine __________________ she keeps up with her daily chores.
9. __________________ makes a good dictionary is the number of the words it includes and their meanings.
10. David and Matilda are behind the success of the company, even though many people don't even know __________________ they are.

2

REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with 'how much', 'why', 'whether', 'whichever', 'that' or 'the fact that'.

1. The cook looked at the happy faces of the customers and saw __________________ they liked the food he made.
2. There is an on-going debate in the world of medicine about __________________ the AIDS patients can be healed totally with the new drug or not.
3. I had suspicions but it still shocked me when I learnt about __________________ my brother was stealing from the safe in our shop.
4. The lovely salesman at the bazaar told me I could buy __________________ shirt I liked for five liras, so I bought twenty of them.
5. The engineer asked the head of the construction workers __________________ they weren't building the walls according to the plan they were given, but he didn't receive a valid answer.
6. Jerusalem has been invaded by all religious groups claiming __________________ it was their sacred city.
7. À la carte is the eating system in which you can choose __________________ food you want.
8. Alexis found out about __________________ she was allergic to sunlight which turned her life into a nightmare.
9. The Prime Minister of Italy negotiated with the Prime Minister of Germany about __________________ they should include Turkey in the European Union.
10. It is explicitly shown on the road signs __________________ 90 kilometres per hour is the fastest you can go on this road.

3 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with 'what', 'whether', 'that' or 'the fact that'.

1. The pilot was informed by the cabin crew about __________________ one of the passengers had passed out on the plane.
2. Julia is a nurse at a hospital and she is responsible for making sure that everyone does __________________ they are supposed to do.
3. The jeweller looked at the man with empty eyes and asked him kindly to tell him __________________ he was ready to buy the bracelet or not.
4. __________________ the Vikings crossed the North Sea on tiny ships and invaded Britain is quite impressive.
5. It is believed by some superstitious folks __________________ the dogs can feel the waves of an earthquake in advance, but it has been proven wrong by experiments.
6. I don't think I can ever be shocked by __________________ I can possibly see or experience. I have gone through too much for that.
7. __________________ Karen will get back together with her ex-husband has not been verified either by her or her ex.
8. Nobody in the company suspected __________________ the secretary was planning; she ran away with all the money in the safe.
9. I was uninformed about __________________ Jen was an Olympic athlete and she had a world record.
10. The hostess was unsure of __________________ the passenger was trying to go to the toilet in the back or just roaming around.

4 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with 'what', 'how', 'whether', 'that' or 'the fact that'.

1. __________________ you bring up a child and what values you teach him will affect their future immensely.
2. __________________ Nathan and I are good friends doesn't get me free tickets to the concert in his workplace. However, I would appreciate it very much if that ever happened.
3. The publishing houses around the world have no problem declaring __________________ they pay little to the writers and make huge profits over it.
4. I am sure __________________ I have done for Nicholas deserves more than a thank you; I did his homework for him and he got an A for it.
5. Paris likes to show off with her family's money and I think this points out __________________ she would like to marry someone rich and continue spending his money.
6. The agency will call me to let me know __________________ there are any openings on the flights as I can't find a regular ticket.
7. __________________ you treat your pets is important to the animals' rights activists. They believe that the animals are equal to human beings.
8. Certain snake species are extremely deadly and some victims die only because they can't understand __________________ a snake is venomous or not.
9. Please tell me how to handle cancer because I can't stand __________________ I have cancer.
10. __________________ strong and beautiful roses smell has fascinated human kind since ancient times and they have come to symbolize love, passion and ambition as a result.

5 REVISION

Choose the correct option.

1. **---- there are flocks of birds in the sky shows that autumn is close and they are going to the south for more food and warmth.**

   A) The fact that B) What

2. **My father used to tell us ---- he convinced my mother to run away with him and ---- they loved each other to do such a silly thing.**

   A) how much / what B) how / how much

3. **Graffiti is the art form where people draw strange looking colourful pictures on walls but ---- amazes me is the number of people who do it.**

   A) whether B) what

4. **Sunglasses are said to be vital in preventing eye damage but ---- they are very expensive prevents many people from buying them.**

   A) the fact that B) whether

5. **---- there are more poisonous plants and more venomous animals in Australia is due to its untouched habitat.**

   A) Whether B) Why

6. **Once a twenty metres long snake got on the wing of a plane and made it all the way to Indonesia from Australia which is ---- snakes are so scary for me.**

   A) why B) that

7. **---- one goes to the toilet in a day may be directly related to the health of his kidneys and the urinary tract.**

   A) Which B) How often

8. **I love this book and I think ---- wrote it did a good job. It's a pity there is no name on its cover.**

   A) whoever B) whichever

9. **Red is said to be the colour of passion and love, and it seems to have the same meaning ---- you go around the globe.**

   A) when B) wherever

10. **Italian singer, Mannarino, can make you cry or laugh hysterically with ---- of his songs you listen to.**

    A) whichever B) what

11. **Microsoft has not announced ---- it is going to release a new version of the Microsoft Edge yet.**

A) why B) whether

12. **Thomas is a good man but ---- he is an extreme nationalist makes it hard for him to be friends with ethnic people.**

A) why B) the fact that

13. **Now that I know ---- my mother hides her cookies, I can easily get them and tell her it was the cat.**

A) where B) when

14. **---- a pilot should be as healthy as a horse to be able to fly is actually true. The air pressure can pose a threat to their lives if they have a health problem.**

A) Whenever B) That

15. **Turkish songs are just too emotional for me and they bring me to tears ---- I listen to one.**

A) whether B) whenever

16. **International schools generally brag about their language teaching but I think ---- the students learn English well is due to their own study skills.**

A) the fact that B) when

17. **Salt is an easily accessible ingredient and this makes it the most consumed flavour, thus you can find it ---- you go in the whole world.**

A) wherever B) whenever

18. **---- reads this book next will find a letter addressed to him or her from me.**

A) Whom B) Whoever

19. **My friends threw me a birthday party on my birthday but ---- I didn't enjoy it as much as I should have was ---- disturbed them.**

A) that / what B) what / the fact that

20. **Tom asked Lyn ---- not to call him ever again and stop stalking him on social media.**

A) that B) --

NOUN CLAUSES

TEST 1

1. **One of my college friends called me yesterday and insisted that I ---- them for a re-union this evening even though I said I had plans.**

   A) will meet
   B) am meeting
   C) can't meet
   D) don't meet
   E) meet

2. **Josh asked the bartender ---- him another glass of wine but he refused saying he had had too much to drink.**

   A) to give
   B) give
   C) will give
   D) is giving
   E) gave

3. **It is common in underdeveloped countries to hang your laundry on the street but they don't realise ---- doing so makes them dirty again by collecting the dust.**

   A) however
   B) why
   C) whenever
   D) that
   E) whether

4. **It is vital in diagnosing an illness that the doctor ---- the proper tests and verify the results by secondary testing.**

   A) runs
   B) run
   C) will run
   D) is running
   E) can run

5. **The secretary told Donna that she could call her ---- she needed guidance and she would be more than happy to help.**

   A) wherever
   B) why
   C) whenever
   D) how
   E) that

6. **The World Bank is an institution directed by one person alone and ---- she manages to keep herself stress-free under this situation is admirable.**

   A) how
   B) why
   C) whether
   D) whichever
   E) whoever

7. **Janice almost has a tropical garden within her house with a good variety of plants. This clearly shows ---- she loves nature.**

   A) how many
   B) whatever
   C) however
   D) how often
   E) how much

8. **We wanted to go for a picnic today but when we checked the weather report, we concluded ---- it was better to stay inside.**

   A) whether
   B) that
   C) how
   D) what
   E) which

9. **I wonder ---- we will see Michael at the party because I have been looking forward to meeting him again.**

   A) that
   B) what
   C) if
   D) however
   E) which

10. **Do you know ---- car this is? They have parked in my parking space and I am in a hurry. I must find them immediately.**

    A) who
    B) that
    C) whether
    D) whose
    E) why

11. She tried hard but couldn't remember ---- she had turned off the oven, so they had to go back home, check the oven and drive back here.

A) why
B) whether
C) how much
D) what
E) which

12. Pam asked her children ---- they were ready to leave home but as usual they weren't and she was once again late for work.

A) how
B) why
C) that
D) what
E) if

13. ---- you can never promise me that you will be there for me ---- I need you has made me believe that you are not the right person for me.

A) How / whether
B) If / when
C) That / which
D) The fact that / when
E) Why / what

14. ---- people will get more stingy and obsessed with money as they get richer is actually true. Simon is a walking example of this.

A) If
B) Why
C) How
D) When
E) That

15. Some skiers have gone missing but since there is no signal up on the mountain, we can't reach them ---- much we try.

A) however
B) whatever
C) whichever
D) whether
E) whenever

16. Weddings are a part of every culture and ---- you go, you will see people having huge ceremonies, dancing and celebrating the marriage of a couple.

A) whichever
B) whenever
C) however
D) wherever
E) whoever

17. ---- people eat thousands of dogs during Dog Meat Festival in China sounds disgusting to people from other parts of the world.

A) Whether
B) The fact that
C) How much
D) What
E) Whose

18. The fact that I love eating and ---- food gives me great comfort can explain ---- I like cooking so much.

A) that / why
B) why / how
C) when / if
D) if / whether
E) how / where

19. ---- *Game of Thrones* has gone viral with millions of viewers around the world is ---- made the producers greedy to shoot similar shows.

A) That / which
B) The fact that / how
C) The fact that / what
D) Whether / why
E) That / whether

20. Rick says he ---- more time to finish his assignments but the manager has no more patience for his incompetence and lack of motivation.

A) must need
B) needed
C) needs
D) had to need
E) didn't need

NOUN CLAUSES

TEST 2

1. **---- her heart stopped three times during the surgery worried the doctors a lot but the healing process was much quicker and they all felt relieved.**

A) What
B) The fact that
C) Why
D) Whether
E) Which

2. **It was already decided ---- the expensive painting would be hung in the living room before it arrived from the art gallery.**

A) that
B) why
C) how many
D) what
E) where

3. **The young couple tried ---- they could but it seemed impossible for them to have children, so they adopted one from an orphanage.**

A) wherever
B) whenever
C) whatever
D) however
E) whichever

4. **---- he is crazy about cakes and pies is known by all family members, so they bake him one ---- he visits.**

A) What / whichever
B) That / what
C) Whether / whatever
D) That / whenever
E) The fact that / why

5. **Alex has the money to do whatever he wants but he still can't decide ---- he should start his own business or go on a world tour.**

A) that
B) whether
C) how
D) what
E) why

6. **A blanket is useful ---- you want to get warm and cosy in a sofa while watching something regardless of the weather and the season.**

A) why
B) what
C) where
D) when
E) whether

7. **---- dogs are very smart and very loyal to their masters makes them the perfect pets for many people.**

A) Why
B) How many
C) However
D) Whether
E) The fact that

8. **Athletes are generally given a list and told ---- eggs and ---- protein they are supposed to consume on a daily basis as eggs are a rich protein source.**

A) whether / how
B) how many / however
C) what / how much
D) how many / how much
E) whatever / however

9. **After a long trip in both countries, Jennifer asked me ---- the Greek and Turkish cultures were so similar. My answer was, of course, the interaction and geography.**

A) where
B) whether
C) that
D) the fact that
E) why

10. **Pascal looked at his boss in shock when he said he was to be sent to Afghanistan on a mission and ---- he would be back soon or not was unknown.**

A) that
B) whether
C) when
D) where
E) the fact that

11. **My brother wanted to build a house but we had a huge argument about ---- he should build it as the property belonged to our parents and we hadn't decided which part was whose.**

A) that
B) why
C) when
D) where
E) how

12. **Mary can't make up her mind about ---- she should take the time-off now or later.**

A) whether
B) what
C) that
D) the fact that
E) however

13. **It's vital that one ---- have the surgery when the appendicitis bursts or he will die within hours.**

A) can
B) may
C) should
D) do
E) need to

14. **---- you dress at the work place can give people an idea about your position. Have you ever seen a CEO in shorts?**

A) Whatever
B) However
C) Wherever
D) The fact that
E) Whether

15. **Lynn knew ---- she wanted to accomplish in life, so it was easier for her to take steps and become successful.**

A) that
B) how
C) when
D) whether
E) what

16. **You can always tell ---- Austin likes or doesn't like. He has never spent any of his time around people he couldn't tolerate up to now.**

A) how
B) who
C) which
D) what
E) whether

17. **The professor ordered the class ---- their phones if they had one or he would send them to the discipline committee.**

A) to turning off
B) turn off
C) turned off
D) will turn off
E) to turn off

18. **Michael asked Jen if she ---- to go out but since she was still upset about their little argument she said 'no'.**

A) wants
B) will want
C) doesn't want
D) wanted
E) had wanted

19. **The fact that the British Empire expanded to all the continents around the world is ---- makes many Britons proud.**

A) that
B) which
C) if
D) what
E) why

20. **The handicapped girl pointed to ---- paint she wanted her room to be painted with as she couldn't speak.**

A) whom
B) whose
C) which
D) when
E) where

IF
&
WISH CLAUSES

9 IF & WISH CLAUSES

A IF CLAUSES

İçinde şart / koşul anlamı bulunan cümlelere şart cümlesi (If Clause) denir. Bu tarz cümleler bir olayın veya durumun gerçekleşebilmesinin başka bir durum veya olaya bağlı olduğu zamanlarda kullanılır. Koşul belirten taraf 'if' bağlacı ile oluşturulmuş bir yan cümlecikten oluşur. Ana cümle ise o koşula bağlı olarak ortaya çıkan / çıkacak sonucu anlatır.

Her bir şart cümlesi iki bölümden oluşan bir birleşik cümledir ve birleşik cümle ikiye ayrılmak istenirse şu şekilde ayrılabilir:

If you come home late, your father will be very angry.

If clause (Şart cümleciği) Result Clause (Ana cümle - Sonuç cümleciği)

'If' cümlecikleri, gerçek veya hayali durumlardan söz ediyor olmalarına bağlı olarak farklı şekillerde kullanılırlar. Aşağıdaki tabloda koşul cümlesi türleri örnekleriyle verilmiştir.

Bu tablo genel bir şema oluşturmak için düzenlenmiştir. 'If Clause' ve 'Result Clause'da kullanılan yapılar sadece bunlarla sınırlı değildir ve çeşitlilik gösterebilir. Cümle türleri tek tek incelendiğinde bu yapılara değinilecektir.

Situation	If Clause (Condition)		Result Clause	Examples
(Type 0) General truths Habitual activities Scientific facts	Simple Present Tense	+	Simple Present Tense	▸ If babies **are** hungry, they **cry**. ▸ If I **have** enough time, I **call** my parents every day. ▸ If you **heat** ice, it **melts**.
(Type 1) True in the Present / Future	Simple Present Tense	+	Future Tense	▸ If it **is** sunny tomorrow, we **will go** on a picnic.
			Imperative	▸ If you **go** to the supermarket, **don't forget** to buy some milk.
			Present Modals	▸ If she **is** late again, she **might get** fired.
(Type 2) Untrue in the Present / Future	Simple Past Tense	+	would + V_1	▸ If I **had** enough money, I **would buy** a bigger house. (but I don't have enough money and I can't buy a bigger house.)

(Type 3) Untrue in the Past	Past Perfect Tense	+	would have + V_3	If I **hadn't forgotten** my phone, I **would have called** you yesterday. (but I forgot my phone and I couldn't call you yesterday.)
(Mixed Type 3+2) Imagined or Fulfilled Past Action - Present Result	Past Perfect Tense (Type 3)	+	would + V_1 (Type 2)	If I **had accepted** that job offer, I **would be** a billionaire now. (but I didn't accept that job offer and I'm not a billionaire now.)
(Mixed Type 2+3) Present State That Has Influenced Past Events	Simple Past Tense (Type 2)	+	would have + V_3 (Type 3)	If we **didn't have** trust in you, we **would have fired** you long ago. (but we trust in you and we didn't fire you long ago.)

Koşul Cümleleri Aşağıdaki Şekillerde Oluşturulabilir:

a 'If Clause' ana cümleden önce geliyorsa, birleşik cümleyi araya virgül koyarak ayırırız. Ana cümle önce geldiğinde buna gerek yoktur.

- **If** the environment changes slowly enough**,** species evolve acquiring the necessary adaptations over generations.

  Species evolve acquiring the necessary adaptations over generations **if** the environment changes slowly enough.

b Nadir bir kullanım olmasına rağmen 'if clause' iki virgül arasında olacak şekilde ana cümlenin ortasında kullanılabilir.

- It may be possible, **if the genetic disorder is dominant**, to eliminate the disease completely in a single generation.

c Ortaya çıkacak olan sonucun koşulun gerçekleştirilmesine bağlı olduğunu vurgulamak için ana cümlede 'then' kullanabiliriz.

- If the Governor signs a bill, **then** it becomes a law.

1 **Zero Conditional** (Type 0)

Daha çok genelgeçer doğruları, alışkanlıkları ve bilimsel gerçekleri anlatırken tercih edilen bir yapıdır. Bu koşul cümlesi tipi kullanıldığında, cümledeki koşul her gerçekleştiğinde aynı sonucun ortaya çıktığı anlaşılmaktadır. Burada 'if' bağlacı, 'when' ve 'whenever' bağlaçlarıyla eş anlamlı olarak kullanılmaktadır.

If Clause	Result Clause
If + Simple Present Tense, If + Present Continuous Tense, If + Present Perfect Tense, If + Present Modals: can / may, etc.	Simple Present Tense Present Continuous Tense Present Perfect Tense Present Modals: can / may, etc. Imperatives

- If the temperature **drops** below zero, the water **freezes**.
  (Buradan her zaman sıcaklık sıfırın altına düştüğünde, suyun donduğu sonucunu çıkarabiliriz.)
- If I **don't have** a proper breakfast, I always **get** hungry before noon.
- Carbon dioxide levels in the atmosphere **increase** if you **burn** fossil fuels.
- Your body **tries** to break down fat cells for energy if you **don't eat** for six hours.
- If you **have** faith in something, it **doesn't matter** to you whether there exists any evidence.
- If you **can see** colours more brightly without any glare, you **must be wearing** a pair of polarized sunglasses.
- Pictures and paper **degrade** over time if they **haven't been kept** under ideal conditions.

⚠ **Not** *Daha önce örneklerle belirtildiği gibi 'If Clause' ile 'Result Clause' yer değiştirebilir.*

- *If you feel overly emotional,* ***you cry****.*
  You cry *if you feel overly emotional.*

2 **First Conditional** (Type 1)

Şimdiki zamanda veya gelecekte gerçekleşmesi mümkün olan koşullar ve bu koşulların muhtemel sonuçlarından bahsederken bu yapıyı kullanırız.

If Clause	Result Clause
If + Simple Present Tense, If + Present Perfect Tense, If + Present Continuous Tense, If + Present Modals (can, must, should, etc.)	Future Tenses (will, be going to, etc.) Present Modals (can, may, might, should, must, ought to, had better, etc.) Imperatives Shall we …? / Let's …

- If you **have** a fever, **take** your medicine as instructed by the doctor to get better.
- I **can go** to the supermarket to pick up your weekly groceries if you **give** me the list by tomorrow.

- If Jack **wants** to play with his friends at the park this evening, he **has to** finish his homework.
- If you **want** to take the roller coaster ride in the theme park, you **must be** at least 15 years old.
- Mary **can cook** really delicious spaghetti if she **has** the freshest ingredients.
- If Jane **is going to accept** this job offer, she **will have to** relocate to Washington.
- You **are going to live** your life with regrets if you **overthink** every decision you make.
- Kevin **will buy** a puppy for his daughter if she **passes** her midterm examinations.
- If you **are going to be** upset at Katie for not cleaning the bathroom, you **might** as well **do** it yourself.
- You **had better tell** your parents in advance if you **are going to stay out** late tonight.
- If John **does not treat** his ear infection properly, he **will** most likely **face** serious side effects.
- You **ought to start** thinking about your future if you **want** to have a comfortable life.
- If Gina **is going to travel** to Europe this summer, she **had better start** saving up now.

⚠ **Not**

Koşul cümleciğinin içinde 'should' kullanıldığında (If + should); 'Simple Present Tense' kullanılmış olan cümlelerden daha az kesinlik belirtir ve 'Olur da ... -sa / -se' gibi çevrilebilir, ama temelde anlamları aynıdır.

- *If any of my friends **should call**, let me know immediately.*
  *(**Olur da** arkadaşlarımdan biri arar**sa** hemen bana haber verin.)*
  *(= If any of my friends **calls**, let me know immediately.)*

⚠ **Not**

'If ... happen to + V_1' yapısı da 'If + should' yapısı gibi düşük bir olasılıktan bahsetmek için kullanılır ve yine 'Olur da ... -sa / -se' şeklinde çevrilir.

- *If you **happen to be travelling** during a major event, you may not be able to get a hotel room or a plane ticket.*
  *(**Olur da** büyük bir etkinlik esnasında seyahat eder**sen**, uçak bileti ve otel odası bulamayabilirsin.)*
- *It is best to leave it alone if you **happen to come across** an Eastern Diamondback Rattlesnake.*

⚠ **Not**

Bazen yukarıdaki iki maddede bahsedilen yapılar 'If ... should happen to + V_1' şeklinde de kullanılabilir ve bu durumda da anlam yine aynı olur.

- *If you **should happen to see** Macy, please give her my regards.*
  *(**Olur da** Macy'yi görür**sen**, ona sevgilerimi ilet lütfen.)*

Not *'If Clause' ile oluşturulan cümleciğin içinde 'will' kullanılamaz; fakat aşağıda belirtilen durumlarda kullanılabilmesi mümkündür.*

1. *Sunulan bir teklifin sonucuna vurgu yaparken,*
    - *I will go and talk to your boyfriend if that* ***will stop*** *your crying all the time. (= I really want you to stop crying.)*
2. *Israr ve reddetme anlamı vurgulanmak isteniyorsa,*
    - *If you* ***will go*** *to work late, of course you will be fired. (insistence)*
    - *If you* ***won't listen*** *to your teachers, it's no use attending classes. (refusal)*
3. *Kibarca bir şey isterken kullanılabilir. (Ricalarda 'would' kullanımı da mümkündür.)*
    - *If you* ***will*** *just* ***give*** *me a minute, I will get ready to go out. (= Can you please give me a minute?)*
    - *If you* ***would*** *just* ***wait*** *a moment, I will check your bank balance. (= Can you please wait a moment?)*

Not *'If clause' cümlelerinde bazen 'subject + be' kullanılmayabilir; bunun yerine 'if + adjective / $verb_3$' kullanılır. Bu kullanımdan doğan bazı kalıplar vardır ve bunlardan bazıları aşağıdaki gibidir:*

if found	*if in doubt*	*if interested*	*if necessary*
if needed	*if possible*	*if proven*	

- *This card is the property of Mr Gibson and* ***if found****, please return it to our company. (= if it is found)*
- *The office workers will work overtime this weekend* ***if necessary****. (= if it is necessary)*
- ***If in doubt****, you shouldn't eat the berries you have found in the woods. (= If you are in doubt)*

Not *'If + subject + am / is / are to V_1' yapısı amaç ifade eder.*

- *Gary must pass a series of three examinations* ***if he is to become*** *a licensed pharmacist.*
  (= Gary must pass a series of three examinations ***in order to become*** *a licensed pharmacist.)*
- *The turkey must be cooked at 200 degrees Celsius* ***if it is to be cooked*** *thoroughly.*
  (= The turkey must be cooked at 200 degrees Celsius ***in order to be cooked*** *thoroughly.)*
- *I need to do a lot of exercises and work on my stamina* ***if I am to be considered*** *for the school basketball team.*
  (= I need to do a lot of exercises and work on my stamina ***in order to be considered*** *for the school basketball team.)*

1 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. If he ____________________ (**want**) to go to the movies with his friends this weekend, he ____________________ (**finish**) his assignments.
2. Everyone ____________________ (**have**) to go to the Home Affairs Office if he or she ____________________ (**want**) to renew his or her passport.
3. If you ____________________ (**not / clean**) your room this afternoon, your parents ____________________ (**get**) really upset with you.
4. You ____________________ (**water**) this plant every day if you ____________________ (**want**) it to bloom.
5. If you ____________________ (**leave**) the house, you ____________________ (**ensure**) that all the doors and windows are locked.
6. You ____________________ (**suffer**) from the stomach flu if you ____________________ (**not / stop**) vomiting and feeling sick.
7. Trying to stay warm in winter ____________________ (**be**) difficult if you ____________________ (**not / have**) a well-built fireplace.
8. You ____________________ (**start**) studying hard if you ____________________ (**intend**) to graduate by this spring.
9. Harry ____________________ (**meet up**) with his childhood friends if he ____________________ (**to visit**) his hometown.
10. You ____________________ (**always / bring**) sunscreen on your summer trips if you ____________________ (**spend**) most of your time at the beach.

3 **Second Conditional** (Type 2)

Şu an veya gelecekle ilgili hayali durumlardan söz etmek için kullanılır. Sözü edilen hayali durum ve buna bağlı sonuç her ne ise; gerçek durum ve buna bağlı sonuç onun tam tersidir.

If Clause	Result Clause
If + Simple Past Tense, If + Past Continuous Tense, If + Past Modals (could, might, was / were to, was / were supposed to)	would + V_1 / would be V_{ing} could + V_1 / could be V_{ing} might + V_1 / might be V_{ing}

- If the flights **were not** that expensive, we **could be sunbathing** in the Bahamas right now. *(= The flights are expensive, so we aren't sunbathing in the Bahamas right now.)*
- I **could be** a millionaire in a few years' time if I **saved** ten dollars a day from now on.
- If Felix **spoke** more than four languages, he **would be** able to get a job easily.
- Peter **would get** so frustrated during business trips to France if he **did not have** an interpreter with him.

- If it **were** up to me, I **would make** it summer all year long, so we would not have to endure long and cold winter nights.
- I **would not be running** down the street to chase after the bus if I **woke up** earlier this morning.
- If I **read** the instructions more carefully, I **would not be scrambling** around trying to save the steak from burning.

'Second Conditional' Yapısının İşlevleri:

a 'Were' ile kullanımlarda tavsiyede bulunmak;

- If I **were** you, I **wouldn't talk** to him any more.
  (Senin yerinde olsam onunla konuşmazdım.)

b İstek ve pişmanlıklardan bahsetmek;

- If you **didn't go** on a picnic, we **would watch** a nice movie at home.
  (Pikniğe gitmeseydin evde güzel bir film izleyebilirdik.)

c Kibarca bir şey talep etmek;

- If you **could take care of** my cats while I'm away, I **would be** grateful.
  (Ben yokken kedilerime bakabilirsen minnettar olurum.)

Not *'Second Conditional'da 'if'li cümlede eğer 'be' fiili kullanılacaksa; özne ayırt etmeden hepsinde 'were' kullanılır. Konuşma dilinde 'was' da kullanılabilir. Fakat resmi yazışmalarda veya yazı dilinde 'was' değil 'were' tercih etmemiz gerekir.*

- *If the President **were** involved in the process, it would be scandalous.*
  (✓ formal)
  *(If the President **was** involved in the process, it would be scandalous.)*
  (✓ informal-speaking)
- *If I **were** a bird, I would fly to all the countries in the world.*
- *She would eat all the candy in the world, if she **were** not diabetic.*
- *If you **were** a nicer person, you would not let me walk home alone in the dark.*

Not *Amerikan İngilizcesinde hem yan cümlecikte hem de ana cümlede 'would' kullanılabilir; fakat İngiliz İngilizcesinde bu yanlış kabul edilir ve sadece ana cümlede 'would' kullanılır.*

- *Such mistakes wouldn't happen if we **would have** a properly funded police force. (US)*
  *Such mistakes wouldn't happen if we **had** a properly funded police force. (UK)*

⚠ **Not** *İkinci tip koşul cümlelerinde (Second Conditional) 'if'li cümlenin fiili 'should +* V_1*'ya da 'were to +* V_1*' olabilir. Bu kullanımlarda, bahsedilen koşulun gerçekleşme ihtimalinin çok düşük olduğu vurgusu vardır.*

- *If I **were to run** for president, I **would ensure** that nobody starves in this country.*
- *If you **should** ask more politely, I **would do** what you want me to do.*

⚠ **Not** *'Were to +* V_1*' yapısı 'belong, doubt, know, owe, remember, understand' gibi durum bildiren fiillerle (stative verbs) kullanılmaz.*

- *If they ~~**were to understand**~~ what all these things mean to you, they would support you. (✗)*

  *If they **understood** what all these things mean to you, they would support you. (✓)*

2

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. If it ____________________ (**be**) up to Harry, he ____________________ (**buy**) all the desserts in the world as he has a sweet tooth.

2. Kimberley ____________________ (**not / cry**) right now if she ____________________ (**be**) merciless.

3. If John ____________________ (**leave**) the office just five minutes later, he ____________________ (**stick**) in traffic for hours.

4. Ted's life ____________________ (**not / be**) so miserable if he ____________________ (**listen**) to his mother's advice.

5. If John ____________________ (**be**) in this restaurant, I ____________________ (**introduce**) him to my friend, Jessica here.

6. We ____________________ (**travel**) in Brazil right now if the tickets ____________________ (**be**) cheaper.

7. If everyone ____________________ (**be**) kind and helpful, we ____________________ (**live**) in a very peaceful and harmonious world.

8. Isaac ____________________ (**do**) his routine morning run in the park if it ____________________ (**not / rain**) right now.

9. If I ____________________ (**bump**) into my long lost friend from kindergarten, I ____________________ (**tell**) her how much I miss her.

10. Jack ____________________ (**enjoy**) himself at his friend's party right now if he ____________________ (**be**) in Ohio.

4 Third Conditional (Type 3)

Geçmişle ilgili hayali durumlardan bahsetmek için kullanılır. Sözü edilen hayali durum ve buna bağlı sonuç her ne ise; gerçekleşen durum ve buna bağlı sonuç onun tam tersi olmuştur.

If Clause	Result Clause
If + Past Perfect Tense, If + Past Perfect Continuous Tense, If + Perfect Modals (could have V_3, might have V_3)	would have V_3 could have V_3 might have V_3

- If the trains **had not been delayed**, Louise **could have arrived** her meeting on time.
  (=The trains were delayed, so Louise couldn't arrive her meeting on time.)
- Peter **would have gone** to the beach if the weather **had been** beautiful that day.
- If I **had known** that he was lying all the time, I **would not have believed** him when he told me someone stole his car.
- Mary **might have been** a famous singer if her parents **hadn't stopped** her from pursuing her career.
- If Billy **had been given** the opportunity to be the President of this university, he **would have invested** in getting better food stalls for the students.
- Nobody **would have realized** that I was missing from class if Larry **had not said** anything about it.
- If Paul **had saved up** all the money his grandparents had given him for years, **wouldn't** he **have been** able to buy a house by now?
- Liverpool **would not have lost** the football match if their star player **had not been** sick.
- If mother **had known** about Irene's bad behaviour in school, she **would not have allowed** her to go on the camping trip this weekend.
- Katie **might not have gotten** lung cancer if she **had not smoked** that much.

'Third Conditional' Yapısının İşlevleri:

1. Geçmişte yapılan bir şeye yönelik eleştiride bulunmak;
   - If you **had driven** more carefully, we **wouldn't have had** that car accident.
     (Arabayı daha dikkatli kullansaydın o kazayı yapmazdık.)
     (You didn't drive more carefully, so we had that car accident.)

2. Geçmişe yönelik pişmanlıklardan bahsetmek;
   - If we **had played** better, we **could have won** the match.
     (Daha iyi oynasaydık maçı kazanabilirdik.)
     (We didn't play better, so we couldn't win the match.)

3 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. If Alex ________________ (**learn**) how to speak French, German and Dutch, he ________________ (**find**) a really prestigious job with the European Union.
2. Jane ________________ (**vacation**) in Seychelles if she ________________ (**have**) approval from her manager.
3. If Gina ________________ (**not / read**) the confidential documents, she ________________ (**not / know**) so many details about the upcoming project.
4. Anna ________________ (**not / be lost**) in the mountains if she ________________ (**not / bring**) the compass her friends had given her for her birthday.
5. Your brother ________________ (**have**) a very terrible stomach ache if he ________________ (**eat**) the rotten egg.
6. If he ________________ (**not / drive**) to the other city in two hours, how ________________ (**he / catch**) up with the other people in the other car?
7. Henry ________________ (**not / show up**) for this party if he ________________ (**know**) that his worst rival from high school was going to be there.
8. If Dick ________________ (**run**) a little faster, he ________________ (**make**) it to the train station on time for the train ride to Seattle.
9. Susan ________________ (**break**) her ankle if she ________________ (**not / do**) proper warm-up exercises before her Zumba dance lessons.
10. If Dave ________________ (**not / have**) the skills to fix the leak in the roof, we ________________ (**not / have**) a house to sleep in tonight.

4 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. If you ________________ (**want**) to leave the classroom, you ________________ (**ask**) your teacher for permission.
2. Jack ________________ (**be**) an engineer if he ________________ (**study**) harder when he was at university.
3. Peter ________________ (**buy**) a puppy if he ________________ (**want**) to but he is too busy with his job to take care of one.
4. I ________________ (**try**) to complete my university education, if my parents ________________ (**not / offer**) to pay for my tuition fee two years ago.
5. Peter ________________ (**have**) a very happy life if the tragic accident ________________ (**not / happen**) to his family.
6. If mum ________________ (**still / cook**) in the kitchen, I ________________ (**sneak out**) to play with my friends in the garden.
7. She ________________ (**be**) at her friend's house yesterday if she ________________ (**not / be**) late to catch her train.
8. If this decision ________________ (**be**) up to Sean, he ________________ (**not / choose**) to let her go but things were beyond his power.
9. Your phone ________________ (**not / be**) lost if you ________________ (**not / be**) so careless; now you have to buy a new one.
10. James ________________ (**qualify**) for the final round of the Spelling Bee competition if he ________________ (**practise**) a little harder before.

5 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. Elsa __________________ (**finish up**) the assignments her teacher gave her yesterday if she __________________ (**stay up**) late last night.
2. The flowers in the garden __________________ (**destroy**) if the wind __________________ (**blow**) a little harder during the storm last week.
3. If you __________________ (**want**) to go to New Zealand for holiday next summer, you __________________ (**start**) saving now.
4. Mark __________________ (**can make**) the most amazing soufflé if he __________________ (**get**) his hands on the right flour.
5. Harry __________________ (**knit**) every homeless person a jumper if he __________________ (**get**) enough yarn from the donation drive at the City Hall next Sunday.
6. You __________________ (**cook**) dinner for your parents if you __________________ (**get**) home earlier tonight.
7. Owen __________________ (**live**) in his dream house if he __________________ (**not / waste**) all his money on luxurious clothing and accessories but he does.
8. If we __________________ (**buy**) an oven for our new apartment, we __________________ (**make**) a scrumptious Thanksgiving dinner last week.
9. Jenny __________________ (**be**) an extremely successful ballerina if she __________________ (**not / tear**) her hamstring during her last practice.
10. If you __________________ (**not / pay**) attention in class, you __________________ (**get**) kicked out.

5 Mixed Conditionals

Bazen 'hayal kurma', 'bir olayın tersini düşünme' anlamları içeren koşul cümlelerinde; 'if' ile başlayan bölüm ile ana cümleden biri geçmişle ilgili iken diğeri değildir. Bu durumlarda geçmişle ilgili olan bölüm 'Type 3' (Third Conditional) diğer bölüm ise 'Type 2' (Second Conditional) olarak adlandırılan koşul cümlelerinde kullanılan yapılarla kurulur. İki tür karışık şart cümlesi (Mixed Conditional) kullanımı vardır.

1. If + Type 3 (Third Conditional) + Type 2 (Second Conditional)

Hayali olasılıklardan söz etmek için kullanılır. Ancak hayali olasılık geçmişle ilgili olup, bunun hayali sonucu şimdi ile ilgilidir. Bu şekilde oluşturulan koşul cümlelerinde 'if'li olan bölüm 'Type 3'nin (Third Conditional) 'if' cümleciğiyle aynı yapıdadır. Ana cümle ise 'Type 2'nun (Second Conditional) 'result clause'u ile aynıdır.

Not

Diğer kullanımlarda olduğu gibi; birleşik cümleyi oluşturan cümlecikler (if clause, result clause) yer değiştirebilirler. Bu durum 'if' in kullanım yeri değişmediği sürece yukarıda bahsedilen anlamı değiştirmez.

If Clause (Type 3)	Result Clause (Type 2)
If + Past Perfect Tense, If + Past Perfect Continuous Tense, If + Perfect Modals (could have done, might have done)	would + V_1 / would be V_{ing} could + V_1 / could be V_{ing} might + V_1 / might be V_{ing}

- If you **had listened** to your banker's advice and **invested** your money in the right mutual fund, you **would not be** bankrupt now.
  (= You didn't listen to your banker's advice and invest your money in the right mutual fund, so you are bankrupt now.)
- If you **had bought** the earlier flight out of Toronto, you **could be** in Halifax by now.
- I **would be talking** to my sister right now if my phone **hadn't been stolen**.
- Jack **might not be stranded** in the forest now if he **had followed** the trail markers carefully.

2. If + Type 2 (Second Conditional) + Type 3 (Third Conditional)

Hayali olasılıklardan söz etmek için kullanılır. Ancak hayali olasılık şu anı içine alan genel bir durumdur ve bunun geçmişteki hayali sonucundan söz edilmektedir. Bu şekilde oluşturulan koşul cümlelerinde 'if'li olan bölüm 'Type 2'nun (Second Conditional) 'if' cümleciğiyle aynı yapıdadır. Ana cümle ise 'Type 3'nin (Third Conditional) 'result clause'u ile aynıdır.

If Clause (Type 2)	Result Clause (Type 3)
If + Simple Past Tense, If + Past Continuous Tense, If + Past Modals (could, might, was / were to, was / were supposed to)	would have V_3 could have V_3 might have V_3

- If Jane **were** richer, she **would have adopted** all the stray kittens in her neighbourhood.
  (= Jane isn't richer, so she didn't adopt all the stray kittens in her neighbourhood.)
- The camping trip **would not have been cancelled** if the weather **did not turn** bad overnight in this area.
- The cake **would have tasted** better if they **used** better quality butter to bake the cake because it seems that's the case with their products.
- Do you think Penny **would have been** a translator for the UN if she **did not care** so much about being perfect at French instead of learning some other languages?

6 **EXERCISE:**

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. Peter __________________ (**not / be**) late if he __________________ (**wake up**) earlier to catch his bus to work, which he never does.

2. If Isaac __________________ (**not / eat**) the salad last night, he __________________ (**not / suffer**) from diarrhoea right now.

3. Do you think we __________________ (**be**) in California by now if we __________________ (**not / have**) this car?

4. If Jim __________________ (**learn**) how to play the piano when he was young, he __________________ (**be**) a famous pianist now.

5. If Jane __________________ (**pay**) more attention to her Chemistry classes throughout the year, she __________________ (**not / have**) to resit for her test.

6. The television __________________ (**sell**) for a higher price now if it __________________ (**be**) a little bit brighter.

7. If Lewis __________________ (**be**) a doctor, he __________________ (**use**) his knowledge and skills to save underprivileged children.

8. The flowers and plants in the garden __________________ (**not / bloom**) so beautifully if the sun __________________ (**not / shine**) so brightly these days.

9. Margaret __________________ (**donate**) her old clothes to the orphanage by now if she __________________ (**be**) a more generous person.

10. If Catherine __________________ (**be**) a better actress, she __________________ (**be**) casted for the new Hollywood movie.

3. If it wasn't / weren't for...
If it hadn't been for...
But for...

Bu yapılar 'second, third' ve 'mixed conditional'ın (Type 2-3 ve karışık şart cümleleri) olduğu cümlelerde kullanılır. Hangi cümlelerde kullanıldıklarını ve çevirilerini inceleyelim:

Structure	Followed By	Turkish Meaning	The Conditional Sentence Types Used With It
If it wasn't / weren't for ...	Noun Pronoun Gerund Noun Phrase Noun Clause	... olmasa	Type 2 Mixed Type 2+3
If it hadn't been for ...		... olmasaydı	Type 3 Mixed Type 3+2
But for ...		... olmasa / olmasaydı	Type 2 Type 3 Mixed Type 3+2 Mixed Type 2+3

- **But for / If it wasn't for** Helen's sense of direction, we would have been lost long ago. *(Second Conditional)*

- **But for / If it hadn't been for** the valuable advice from my teachers during this semester, I would not have got such good results. *(Third Conditional)*
- **But for / If it weren't for** our family's support, we would not be able to achieve our dreams. *(Second Conditional)*
- **But for / If it hadn't been for** the goalkeeper's brilliant save in the dying seconds of the match, we would probably have lost the championship. *(Third Conditional)*
- **But for / If it hadn't been for** your help, I wouldn't be able to live a luxury life now. *(Mixed Type 3 + 2)*
- **But for / If it weren't for** your laziness, you could have passed all your exams. *(Mixed Type 2 + 3)*

6 **Inverted Conditional Sentences** (Devrik Koşul Cümleleri)

Daha önceki ünitelerde de bahsedildiği gibi, devrik cümleler soru cümlesi yapısına sahip olan fakat soru anlamı taşımayan cümlelerdir. Devrik yapılı cümleler, düz cümlelere göre daha resmidir. Koşul cümlelerinin nasıl devrik cümleye dönüştürüldüğünü inceleyelim:

Type 1

'If Clause'daki fiilde 'should' varsa bu cümleyi devrik yapmak için, 'if' cümleden atılır ve 'should' en başa getirilir.

- **Should there be** any questions, please do not hesitate to contact us.
  (= **If there should be** any questions, please do not hesitate to contact us.)
- **Should you wish** to cancel your order, please contact our Customer Care team immediately.
  (= **If you should wish** to cancel your order, please contact our Customer Care team immediately.)
- **Should there be** an emergency while we are away, you are supposed to contact me on my cell phone.
  (= **If there should be** an emergency while we are away, you are supposed to contact me on my cell phone.)

Type 2 / Mixed Type 2 + 3

'If Clause'daki fiilde 'were' varsa bu cümleyi devrik yapmak için, 'if' cümleden atılır ve 'were' en başa getirilir.

- **Were I** you, I would order a Belgian waffle with extra ice cream.
  (= **If I were** you, I would order a Belgian waffle with extra ice cream.)
- **Were I** Henry, I would not be so confident about my drawing skills.
  (= **If I were** Henry, I would not be so confident about my drawing skills.)
- **Were Deborah** born to a wealthy family, she would have been even more successful.
  (= **If Deborah were** born to a wealthy family, she would have been even more successful.)
- **Were the people to see** the burglar, they would call the police.
  (= **If the people saw** the burglar, they would call the police.)
- **Were your family to own** the company, you would be the boss in no time.
  (= **If your family owned** the company, you would be the boss in no time.)

Type 3 / Mixed Type 3 + 2

'If Clause'daki fiilde 'had' varsa (had + V_3 - Past Perfect Tense) bu cümleyi devrik yapmak için, 'if' cümleden atılır ve 'had' en başa getirilir.

- **Had I known** about the delay in delivery, I could have made different arrangements.
  (= **If I had known** about the delay in delivery, I could have made different arrangements.)
- **Had he not been** so handsome, he would be getting into trouble more often.
  (= **If he had not been** so handsome, he would be getting into trouble more often.)
- **Had the archaeologists not discovered** the ruins of the temple, we would not know this much about the ancient civilisation.
  (= **If the archaeologists had not discovered** the ruins of the temple, we would not know this much about the ancient civilisation.)
- **Had I been** more careful, I would be going on vacation instead of staying in the hospital.
  (= **If I had been** more careful, I would be going on vacation instead of staying in the hospital.)
- **Had Peter not bought** that camera, he would not be a journalist.
  (= **If Peter had not bought** that camera, he would not be a journalist.)

Not *Devrik cümle kuralları 'If it wasn't / weren't for ...' ve 'If it hadn't been for ...' yapılarına da uygulanabilir.*

- ***Were it not** for my family's financial support, I would be broke.*
  *(=**If it were not** for my family's financial support, I would be broke.)*
- ***Had it** not been for your help, I wouldn't have been able to quit smoking.*
  *(=**If it had not been** for your help, I wouldn't have been able to quit smoking.)*

7 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. ____________________ Madeline ____________________ (**not / decide**) to set their alarm, the thief would have got away.
2. ____________________ (**be**) I you, I would not push that button.
3. ____________________ my father ____________________ (**not / invest**) his money wisely, my parents would not be going on this cruise around the world.
4. ____________________ I ____________________ (**have**) enough savings by the time I am 50, I will retire and settle in the Bahamas.
5. ____________________ (**be**) I the owner of this restaurant, I would immediately hire an interior decorator.
6. ____________________ I ____________________ (**inform**) about the problems earlier, I would have decided to buy a different smartphone.
7. ____________________ Patrick ____________________ (**meet**) Anne a few years earlier, they would have been married by now.

8. ____________ the problem ____________ (**persist**), you must return the product to its original packaging.
9. ____________ (**be**) I her, I would change the way I behave towards my friends.
10. ____________ he ____________ (**not / stop**) to speak with Bob that day, he would have been caught in the burning building.

⚠ **Not** *Devrik cümlelerde olumsuzluk cümle başına gelmez.*

- *~~Hadn't~~ I seen her, I wouldn't have told her about you.*
  Had I not seen her, I wouldn't have told her about you.

  Bu kural bütün tipler (If Clauses Type 1-2-3) için geçerlidir.

7 Implied Conditional Clauses

Ortada bir 'if' bağlacı olmadan da şart cümlesi oluşturulabilir. Bu tür yapılara ve kullanımlara, 'dolaylı şart cümlesi' (implied conditional clause) denir.

- Henry would have gone to the grocery store this afternoon **but** his car ran out of petrol.
  (= **If** his car hadn't run out of petrol, Henry would have gone to the grocery store this afternoon.)
- The homeless beggar down the street would have starved to death **without** the kindness of the people in the neighbourhood.
  (= **If** it hadn't been for the kindness of the people in the neighbourhood, the homeless beggar down the street would have starved to death.)
- Mary had to stay up all night to finish her assignments **or** she would have been punished by her teacher.
  (= **If** Mary hadn't stayed up all night to finish her assignments, she would have been punished by her teacher.)
- We would have been able to finish painting the fence **but** it started raining.
  (= **If** it hadn't started raining, we would have been able to finish painting the fence.)
- Penny might not have won the tennis championships **without** her coach's help.
  (= **If** it hadn't been for her coach's help, Penny might not have won the tennis championships.)
- Mother said that you have to finish all your homework tonight **or** you won't go to the movies with your friends this weekend.
  (= **If** you don't finish your homework, you won't go to the movies with your friends this weekend as mother said.)

8 Other Conditional Structures and Unreal Time Expressions

Conjunction	Turkish Meaning	Sample Sentence
As / So long as *(Olumlu cümlelerde 'as long as'; olumsuz cümlelerde hem 'as long as' hem de 'so long as' kullanılır.)*	-dığı / -diği sürece, -mak / -mek şartıyla, eğer	You are more than welcome to borrow my books **as long as** you promise to take good care of them and return them upon finishing your research. My cat will be very friendly towards you **so long as** you do not pull her tail.
As if	sanki, -mış / -miş gibi	There were two trains coming from opposite directions and it looked **as if** they were going to crash.
As though	sanki, -mış / -miş gibi	Mike put up balloons all over the house **as though** it was a kid's party.
Even if	-se de / -sa da, -se / -sa bile	You should try and finish the meal **even if** you do not like it as it is considered impolite in their culture to leave food on the plate.
If not	eğer öyle olma(z)sa	I want to be there on time but, **if not**, I'll let you know.
If so	eğer öyleyse	Are you worried about your child? **If so**, you should have an eye on him.
Imagine (that)	farz et ki, … farz edersen	**Imagine** the world were about to end. What would you do on your last day?
In case	-abilir / -ebilir diye, -ması / -mesi durumunda	Please prepare dinner for the kids **in case** I do not come back in time.

In case of + noun	-ması / -mesi durumunda	▶ **In case of** an accident, you should call the emergency line 112 in Germany.
In the event of + noun	-ması / -mesi durumunda	▶ **In the event of** heavy traffic, there's no way I'll make my flight.
In the event that	-abilir / -ebilir diye, -ması / -mesi durumunda	▶ **In the event that** your orders arrive late, please contact us.
On condition (that)	sadece ... şartıyla	▶ **On condition (that**) there is no school on Friday, my parents will take me to the theme park.
Only if *('Only if' cümlenin en başında kullanıldığında, ardından gelen cümle devrik olur.)*	ancak ... -sa / -se	▶ John will recover from his eye infection **only if** he visits the doctor and takes his medication regularly. ▶ **Only if** you finish your weekly reports, can you leave work early.
Otherwise	yoksa	▶ Do not disturb the bee hive. **Otherwise**, we will have to run to avoid being stung!
Provided / Providing (that)	-mak / -mek şartıyla	▶ **Providing (that)** Mary finishes her degree with honours, her parents will pay for her two-month tour around Europe.
Suppose / Supposing (that)	diyelim ki, farz edelim ki	▶ **Supposing (that)** you do not want your old clothes, can I donate them to the orphanage down the street?
Unless *('Unless' bağlacı içinde olumsuz anlam barındırdığı için sadece olumlu cümlelerde kullanılabilir.)*	-madıkça / -medikçe	▶ Felicia has to settle for this rental contract **unless** she finds another landlord who can give her a better price.
What if ...?	ya … olursa?	▶ **What if** you missed the bus? Would you take a taxi?

8

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with 'conjunctions expressing condition'. (More than one answer may be correct.)

1. ____________________ it does not rain this weekend, we will go on a fishing trip by the lake.
2. Nobody is allowed to enter the museum ____________________ they have paid their entrance fee and have gone through security.
3. Andrew should be grateful that his parents could afford his tuitio, ____________________ he would not have been able to go to a prestigious university.
4. We can crack this puzzle in no time ____________________ we maintain open communication.
5. My dog is not very well-trained. He will respond to commands ____________________ I have treats in my hands.
6. It was good that you left the house earlier today, ____________________ you would have been stuck in traffic.
7. ____________________ you apologize for breaking the vase, I am sure your mother will be willing to forgive you.
8. I do not think that Susan will show up to the dinner party tonight ____________________ she finds a ride.
9. ____________________ you get separated from your group, just blow your whistle and we will come to your rescue.
10. Mother says that we have to switch off all the lights when we leave the house, ____________________ she will have to pay a hefty electricity bill at the end of the month.
11. I can pick my cousin up from the airport ____________________ I manage to get off work earlier today.
12. ____________________an earthquake, hide under the table and get into brace position.
13. You can keep renting this apartment ____________________ you pay your rent and utilities on time.
14. Paul is happy to show you around his farm ____________________ you promise not to scare his animals.
15. ____________________ you were the captain of the cheerleading team, would you change the current dance routine?
16. You should always look left and right before crossing the road. ____________________, you might get run over by an oncoming car.

B WISH CLAUSES

1 'Wish' cümlecikleri; durumun olduğundan farklı olmasını dilediğimizi, hayal ettiğimizi ifade etmek için kullanılır ve Türkçeye 'keşke' diye çevrilebilir. Her ne kadar dilek, istek söz konusu olsa da; var olmayan, hayali bir durumdan bahsettiğimiz için, 'Second conditional' ve 'Third Conditional' cümlelerde olduğu gibi normalde kullanılması gereken zamanın bir geçmişi (past'ı) alınır.

2 'Wish' kendi başına bir fiil olduğu için, kendisi kullanıldığı zamana göre çekimlenir. (I wish / He wishes / She wishes, etc.)

- We **don't have** a bigger house. → We wish we **had** a bigger house.
- I **got up** late. → I wish I **hadn't got** up late.
- She **can't play** the piano. → She wishes she **could play** the piano.

3 Hayali kurulan veya çok istenen şey şimdiki zamanla veya geçmişle ilgili olabilir. Yapılması gereken şey, gerçek (var olan) durumun tersini düşünmek ve eylemin bir zaman geçmişini (past'ını) almaktır.

- **I wish** I could visit my grandmother every day.
  (Keşke büyükannemi her gün ziyaret edebilsem.)

  'Keşke ... ziyaret edebilsem' ifadesi şimdiki zamanla alakalı (present) bir yorumdur. 'Hayal kurma' veya 'bir olayın tersini düşünme' anlamı vardır; çünkü kişi istemesine rağmen ziyareti gerçekleştirememektedir.

  (Kullanılan 'could + V_1' yapısı 'if clause type 2' yapısında olduğu gibi şimdiki zamanla ilgili bir yorum yapmaktadır.)

  (I wish I could ... → ... but I can't.)

  - I sometimes **wish** I were a bird, and then I could just fly away any time anywhere. *(Şimdiki zamanla ilgili hayali durum)*
  - I like Susan a lot; **I wish** I had met her earlier. *(Geçmişle ilgili hayali durum)*
  - **Fred** sometimes **wishes** he had studied harder in school.
  - I heard that Mark told you about his holiday in France, **I wish** I had been there to hear about it.
  - I think **he wishes** he had not spent his whole salary on football tickets.

⚠ **Not**

'Wish';geçmiş zamanda çekimlenmiş olsa bile (Neden bu şekilde olduğunu yukarıda açıkladık.); şimdiki zamanla, gelecek zamanla alakalı veya genel bir istekte bulunurken kendisinden sonra yine 'Simple Past Tense' ya da 'Past Continuous Tense' ile kullanılır.

- ***Carla wished** that she had a younger sister.*
  (But she doesn't have a younger sister. She would like to have one.)
- *I stood there and **wished** I were living in a village far from the city.*
  (But I don't live in a village far from the city; I live in the city.)

4 'If only' ifadesi de 'keşke' anlamına gelir ve 'I wish' ile aynı anlamda ve aynı şekilde kullanılır.

- **If only** she could remember where she put her keys. *(Present time)*
  (= **I wish** she could remember where she put her keys.)
- **If only** we hadn't gone to that place at that specific time. *(Past time)*
  (= **I wish** we hadn't gone to that place at that specific time.)

Not *'If only' ifadesinin 'if' ile aynı anlamda kullanılabileceği unutulmamalıdır. Bu şekilde kullanıldığında 'if only'nin içinde bulunduğu cümlecikten sonra, sonuç cümleciği (result clause) olması gerekir.*

- ***If only** I had studied harder, I would have got full marks for the exam.*
  If Clause — Result Clause

  *(=**If** I had studied harder, I would have got full marks for the exam.)*
- *We could be very rich **if only** we knew where the treasure is buried.*
- ***If only** Fred stopped fooling around, he could be the next president.*

5 'Wish clause' ile birlikte mevcut durumdan şikayet edip durumun gelecekte değişmesini diliyorsak 'would' kullanırız. Ancak aşağıdaki durumlara dikkat edilmelidir.

a **Öznelerin aynı olduğu cümlelerde 'would' kullanılamaz.**

- ~~I wish I would~~ have a lot of money. *(I wish I had a lot of money.)*
- ~~She wishes she would~~ have a lot of money. *(She wishes she had a lot of money.)*
- **I wish** I knew every physics rule. *(Unfortunately, I do not know every physics rule.)*
- **He wishes** he saw his girlfriend more often.
  (Unfortunately, he does not see his girlfriend more often.)
- **Sam and Fred wish** they danced like Laura can.
  (Unfortunately, they do not / can't dance like Laura can.)

b **Öznelerin farklı olduğu cümlelerde ise 'would' kullanılabilir.**

- Susan always has to leave the party early. **I wish her parents would let** her stay out later during the weekends.
- **Henry wishes the music would stop**. He does not like house music at all.

6 'Wish' fiilinden sonra bir cümlecik (clause) değil de bir fiil kullanılacaksa o fiil 'infinitive' olmalıdır. Bu durumda bir hayalden ya da dilekten değil, bir ümitten veya istekten söz ediyor oluruz. Yani bu tip cümlelerde 'wish' fiili, 'hope' veya 'want' anlamında kullanılmış olur.

- I **wish** to see the Earth from outer space. *(I want to see the Earth from outer space.)*
- We **wish** to discover where this road leads to. *(We hope to discover where this road leads to.)*
- I **wish** to have a chance to work with him. *(I hope to have a chance to work with him.)*

'Wish' ve 'If Only' yapılarının kullanımları aşağıdaki gibidir:

Function	Structure	Sample Sentence
Başka insanları eleştirmek	wish / if only + would V_1	▶ He **wishes** you would stop making noise. ▶ **If only** she would study more.
İzin isteme ve yetenekle ilgili istekler	wish / if only + could V_1	▶ Rachel **wishes** she could get a mortgage. ▶ **If only** I could go home now.
Geçmiş zamanda izin isteme ve yetenekle ilgili istekler	wish / if only + could have V_3	▶ They **wish** they could have spoken to the bank manager. ▶ **If only** I could have changed my desk at work.
Resmi bir şekilde bir istekte bulunmak	wish + to infinitive	▶ We **wish** to travel to Russia.
Birisine şans, mutluluk veya başarı dileklerinde bulunmak (wish somebody luck, wish somebody happiness, wish somebody success, etc.)	wish + noun	▶ The bride's mother **wished** the newly-wed couple eternal happiness.

9

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. My father sometimes tells me that he wishes he ____________________ (**finish**) university before having children.
2. He wishes he ____________________ (**buy**) a different pair of different coloured trousers.
3. If only that kid from down the street ____________________ (**stop**) playing his music so loud.
4. We could have been there by now, if only we ____________________ (**not / get**) a flat tyre.
5. I wish ____________________ (**hear**) them tell the story in person.
6. John wishes he ____________________ (**have**) a vacation this summer, but summer is over now.
7. I wish he ____________________ (**give**) me a chance to prove myself in the football team.
8. Helen and Mary wish they ____________________ (**buy**) flight tickets instead of bus tickets, because the bus seats are very uncomfortable.
9. If only I ____________________ (**pay**) attention while baking, I would not have burnt the cake.
10. I think Peter wishes he ____________________ (**not / eat**) that last piece of sushi.
11. If only the waiter ____________________ (**not / drop**) my plate, I would be eating a juicy steak right now.
12. My mother wishes that she ____________________ (**work**) in an ice cream truck while she was a student.

1 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. If I ____________________ (**be**) the Queen, I ____________________ (**make**) everybody wear formal dresses on weekdays.
2. If the students ____________________ (**listen**) to the teacher carefully, he ____________________ (**give**) them some free time at the end of the lesson.
3. If Jack ____________________ (**help**) his sister with his chores, she ____________________ (**help**) him with his homework, too.
4. Where would you go if you ____________________ (**go**) anywhere in the Galaxy?
5. James ____________________ (**go**) and buy groceries, if the shops ____________________ (**be**) still open after he finishes his work.
6. If my dad ____________________ (**win**) the lottery tomorrow, he ____________________ (**buy**) a brand new motorbike for me and a diamond ring for my mum.
7. If you ____________________ (**take**) care and look after a dog, it ____________________ (**be**) the best companion you will ever have.
8. I ____________________ (**run**) your errands for you, if you ____________________ (**be**) too busy completing your thesis this week.
9. If Ben ____________________ (**finish**) his homework in time, his mother ____________________ (**take**) him to the cinema to watch the new animation movie.
10. If the weather ____________________ (**be**) nice tomorrow, Deborah and I ____________________ (**hike**) to the peak of the mountain.

2 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. The trees in the forest ____________________ (**chop**) down if the protesters ____________________ (**not / take**) the time to demonstrate against deforestation.
2. If I ____________________ (**wake up**) earlier to go to work yesterday, I ____________________ (**be**) up to date with the newest projects now.
3. Peter ____________________ (**bring**) his family to İstanbul next summer to join the Tulip Festival if he ____________________ (**find**) cheap flights.
4. If I ____________________ (**wait**) any longer for my cousin to show up at the train station, I ____________________ (**not / be**) in Washington right now.
5. If Susan ____________________ (**know**) that the grocery would be closed, she ____________________ (**not / waste**) her time to drive down there.
6. Bill ____________________ (**finish**) his homework if he ____________________ (**not / spend**) all his time watching TV.
7. James ____________________ (**get**) an acceptance letter from the best university in this country if he ____________________ (**study**) harder.
8. Mary ____________________ (**relax**) at home this weekend if the school ____________________ (**not / call**) her in to judge the debate competition.
9. If John's mother ____________________ (**not / send**) him to swimming lessons, he ____________________ (**drown**) in the ocean.
10. Larry ____________________ (**not / be**) in the cinema last night if he ____________________ (**be**) in a meeting with the board of directors.

3 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. If Jack ____________________ (**listen**) to his teacher's advice, he ____________________ (**not / receive**) detention right now.
2. Harry ____________________ (**not / rush**) to the hospital if he ____________________ (**not / talk**) on the phone while riding his bike.
3. Judie ____________________ (**give**) you a ride home instead of letting you walk, if she ____________________ (**be**) a nicer person.
4. If I ____________________ (**not / see**) the email that was sent to me by my manager in time, I ____________________ (**be**) late to the urgent meeting.
5. Melissa ____________________ (**not / be**) a famous dancer if her mum ____________________ (**not / send**) her for intensive training.
6. If he ____________________ (**be**) the Prime Minister of the country, he ____________________ (**fight**) for better rights for the middle class citizens.
7. If the wheels ____________________ (**not / invent**), we ____________________ (**walk**) instead of driving, and riding bicycles.
8. If I ____________________ (**be**) you, I ____________________ (**move**) out from my mother's house by the time I turned eighteen.
9. You ____________________ (**surf**) in Australia right now if you ____________________ (**not / miss**) your flight.
10. I ____________________ (**finish**) reading my favourite book if my sister ____________________ (**not / ask**) me to help her with her homework.

4 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks with the correct forms of the verbs in parentheses.

1. I wish I ____________________ (**be**) aware that there were hidden charges before I bought that new phone.
2. Mike wishes that he ____________________ (**not / choose**) Fine Arts as his major at university.
3. Susan's mother wishes that Susan ____________________ (**make**) more responsible decisions regarding her future.
4. I sometimes wish that I ____________________ (**run**) as fast as James can.
5. I think that Henry wishes he ____________________ (**not / go**) on the school's camping trip without his friends.
6. They wish ____________________ (**have**) their marks recounted.
7. The kindergarten teacher wishes that all the children ____________________ (**remember**) to bring their toys to school today.
8. My grandfather told me that he wishes he ____________________ (**grow up**) with computers and modern technology.
9. Harry always forgets our meetings, I wish someone ____________________ (**buy**) him a diary.
10. We have a complaint and we wish ____________________ (**see**) the manager of the restaurant.

5 REVISION:

Circle the correct option.

1. **Katie has to study extremely hard if she ---- become a successful lawyer.**

A) is to
B) would

2. **The manager ---- apologize to the customer if he ---- to keep his job.**

A) ought to / wants
B) should / wanted

3. **Were I you, I would ---- to Japan to learn karate from a master, assuming I would be as eager to learn as you are.**

A) have travelled
B) travel

4. **We have no problems giving you a ride home ---- you live in our neighbourhood.**

A) otherwise
B) providing that

5. **People from all over the world come here for just one thing. They all wish ---- the world's biggest ice-cream cake.**

A) to see
B) to have seen

6. **My grandfather ---- down if my grandmother ---- him in time.**

A) would have fallen / hadn't caught
B) was falling / was not catching

7. **If I ---- the principal of my school, I ---- tomorrow as an official holiday.**

A) am / will declare
B) were / would declare

8. **I ---- a university graduate now if I ---- a lung infection last year.**

A) could have been / have got
B) could be / had not got

9. **Should ---- any problems with your new car, you are not supposed to try and fix it yourself; you are supposed to contact the service centre immediately.**

A) there have been
B) there be

10. **Peter wishes he ---- how the machine they bought the other day works.**

A) could figure out
B) should have figured out

11. **Isaac ---- a cold while hiking if he ---- his jacket.**

A) could have got / did not bring B) might have got / had not brought

12. **Alex is a very good friend of mine, but he now lives in Italy. I sometimes wish he ---- to move there.**

A) hadn't decided B) hasn't decided

13. **Jason ---- if his brother ---- home in time to make supper for him.**

A) could have been starving / had not come

B) might have been starving / didn't come

14. **If it ---- for Mike's coaching and continuous support, the football team would never be able to ---- a trophy.**

A) weren't / win B) hadn't been / have won

15. **The clothes ---- with both detergent and softener if you ---- them to be clean and soft.**

A) must be washed / want B) are washed / wanted

16. **You should not leave with anything from the supermarket ---- you have paid for it.**

A) but for B) unless

17. **Bella and Peter ---- they ---- a different venue for their wedding with a better sound system.**

A) wishes / have chosen B) wish / had chosen

18. **Liam ---- with your assignments if he ---- a more helpful person.**

A) would have helped / were B) would be helping / is

19. **---- it ---- for the delay in his pit stop, he might have won the race.**

A) Were / not B) Had / not been

20. **If Nancy ---- her house two hours ago, ---- at the party by now?**

A) were leaving / should she be B) had left / shouldn't she be

IF & WISH CLAUSES

TEST 1

1. **I ---- to go to Mexico for my vacation if I ---- that the crime rate there was so high.**

A) couldn't have chosen / knew
B) will not choose / known
C) wouldn't have chosen / had known
D) did not choose / know
E) am not choosing / know

2. **If you ---- that it was your best friend who did this to you, I think you ---- a lot worse, so it is better they chose not to tell you.**

A) had known / would have felt
B) have known / would feel
C) knew / could feel
D) will know / can feel
E) hadn't known / wouldn't have felt

3. **Mandy ---- to the library to do her research for the psychology assignment if the weather ---- nicer.**

A) can go / should have been
B) could have gone / had been
C) should have gone / is
D) would have gone / has been
E) might not have gone / were

4. **---- you have any concerns regarding your exam results, you ---- to arrange for a meeting with me during office hours.**

A) Should / are welcome
B) Would / were welcome
C) If / were welcomed
D) Should / are welcoming
E) Could / are welcome

5. **Peter ---- no choice but to train hard if he ---- qualify for the upcoming national tennis tournament.**

A) has / is
B) has had/ will be
C) had / were
D) had /was
E) has / is to

6. **Passengers on this flight may go straight to the boarding gate ---- they have checked in online and have printed their boarding passes.**

A) unless
B) in the event
C) but
D) providing that
E) otherwise

7. **Norman ---- that his mother would let him go outside without ---- him to wear a sweater.**

A) wish / forces
B) was wishing / forced
C) wishes / forcing
D) wished / forced
E) wishes / force

8. **Raymond ---- away with his crime if the policemen ---- in time to catch him right at the crime scene.**

A) might have got / had not shown up
B) could have got / have not shown up
C) should get / had not shown up
D) would have got / have not shown up
E) will have got / were not showing up

9. **---- a fire, take your most important documents and exit the building via the fire escape. Do not take the elevator or bring unnecessary items.**

A) Unless
B) Providing that
C) In the event of
D) Supposing
E) But for

10. **If only I ---- in such a hurry, I ---- to take the flight tickets with me.**

A) hadn't been / wouldn't have forgotten
B) had been / wouldn't have forgotten
C) weren't / could have forgotten
D) hadn't been / wouldn't forget
E) had been / would have forgotten

11. ---- I ---- a Hollywood actor, the paparazzi would not follow me around all the time.

A) Were / --
B) Were / not
C) Had / not
D) Had / not been
E) Have / not been

12. My sister ---- enjoying her evening at the beach if she ---- in last minute to cover for a co-worker.

A) might have been / is not calling
B) should have been / were not called
C) can be / is not called
D) could be / were not called
E) could have been / had not been called

13. ---- Martin's fear of clowns, we ---- to the circus with the rest of the group yesterday.

A) If it weren't for / wouldn't have gone
B) Except for / would go
C) If it had been for / would not have gone
D) If it hadn't been for / would have gone
E) If it were for / would have to go

14. If Pete ---- the last three years working, he ---- up enough to go on a three-month cruise in Antarctica as he had dreamt of it for years.

A) spends / would have saved
B) had spent / could have saved
C) is spending / could have been saving
D) was spending / could be saving
E) spent / wouldn't have saved

15. I wish I ---- the gold medal for curling at the Winter Olympics but I will try my chances next time.

A) have won
B) hadn't won
C) would be winning
D) had been winning
E) had won

16. ---- the support and encouragement of your parents, you would not have made it this far as a professional football player.

A) Otherwise
B) But for
C) Unless
D) Supposing
E) Provided that

17. If it ----, I don't think I ---- to go out for anything, let alone for partying.

A) is still raining / want
B) was still raining / wouldn't want
C) were still raining / should want
D) will still rain / want
E) still rains / have wanted

18. Anna ---- so bored on the train ride to New York if she ---- her book with her.

A) might have been / will not bring
B) should have been / did not bring
C) would have been / had not brought
D) will have been / had not brought
E) may have been / does not bring

19. If my parents ---- to save when I was born, they ---- enough money to retire comfortably and still send me to a good expensive university.

A) had started / would have
B) hadn't started / will have
C) started / would have
D) hadn't started / wouldn't have had
E) didn't start / wouldn't have

20. I could have made myself an excellent supper with the fresh salmon I bought from the fish market ---- the oven in my kitchen broke down.

A) otherwise
B) unless
C) if
D) but
E) providing

IF & WISH CLAUSES

TEST 2

1. **Jenny said if she ---- how good it was, she ---- the TV show *Big Little Lies* instead of wasting her precious time on the stupid one *The Sopranos*.**

A) knows / would watch
B) had known / would have watched
C) can know / can watch
D) had known / could watch
E) knew / will watch

2. **I wish my sister ---- complaining about how busy she is because of her baby. She acts as if she is the one who has ever had a baby.**

A) would stop
B) stops
C) would have stopped
D) will stop
E) has stopped

3. **If Jason Mamoa ---- such a handsome guy, I don't think he ---- a world star actor now.**

A) weren't / would have been
B) were / could be
C) had been / would be
D) weren't / could be
E) were / will be

4. **The problem ---- bigger if Jessica ---- herself in front of everything as she does now. I can't believe how selfish she can be.**

A) may get / put
B) gets / puts
C) can get / has put
D) will get / puts
E) might get / will put

5. **Emmett wishes he ---- the death of the little puppy on the street as that scene haunts him and will do so for the rest of his life.**

A) hadn't witnessed
B) witnessed
C) doesn't witness
D) has witnessed
E) won't witness

6. **If one ---- to succeed well in life and make a fortune along the way, he or she ---- to understand the importance of hard work and dedication.**

A) wanted / needed
B) wants / would need
C) wanted / wouldn't have needed
D) doesn't want / will need
E) wants / needs

7. **The family ---- their boy if they ---- the money but wherever they applied to, they were turned down with the utmost cruelty.**

A) could have saved / had had
B) could save / had had
C) can save / will have
D) wouldn't have saved / had had
E) will save / can have

8. **If one government ----, the citizens ---- a new government and that's how democracy works.**

A) will collapse / elected
B) collapsed / would have elected
C) collapses / elect
D) collapses / would elect
E) collapsed / will elect

9. **Where ---- you move if you ---- anywhere in the world and live a good life?**

A) did / would move
B) do / will move
C) will / have moved
D) would / could move
E) would / had moved

10. **If Alex ---- football so much, he ---- as much as he does now.**

A) doesn't enjoy / can't play
B) didn't enjoy / would play
C) hadn't enjoyed / couldn't have played
D) enjoys / can play
E) didn't enjoy / wouldn't play

11. The black bear ---- hibernation if it ---- too cold for it to find food and feed the offspring. This way they spend a lot less energy.

A) has gone into / got
B) will go into / gets
C) had gone into / got
D) can go into / got
E) will go into / got

12. I swear I ---- you if I ---- your number but I didn't. It's OK though, you can come to the next meeting and meet the President.

A) called / knew
B) would call / knew
C) would have called / had known
D) will call / know
E) would have called / could know

13. If Mason ---- the weather forecast, he ---- to climb that mountain. It seems like it was his destiny to die there.

A) has seen / would have set off
B) hadn't seen / would never set off
C) saw / sets off
D) sees / will never set off
E) had seen / would have never set off

14. I wish I ---- a nice car like yours. Then I would be able to go anywhere I want whenever I wish.

A) didn't have
B) had had
C) had
D) have
E) will have

15. I hope my dad doesn't see us going out. If he ----, he ---- a big deal out of this and turn my life into hell for at least a week.

A) were / will make
B) did / made
C) does / would make
D) does / will make
E) has / would have made

16. The Hispanic population in the USA has always been looked down upon by the whites there. Sometimes I feel like if they ---- a leader like Martin Luther King, they ---- suffering the disadvantages now.

A) had / wouldn't be
B) had had / wouldn't have been
C) didn't have / would be
D) have / will be
E) had / would have been

17. If the alphabet ---- by the Sumerians, the humankind ---- long lasting documents now; the stories and ideas would be passed down to generations orally.

A) had been invented / would have
B) would have been invented / wouldn't have
C) hadn't been invented / wouldn't have
D) weren't invented / wouldn't have
E) were invented / would have had

18. If I ---- you, I ---- my nose out of people's business and mind my own. You always get yourself into trouble this way.

A) have been / will keep
B) were / would have kept
C) had been / would keep
D) were / wouldn't keep
E) were / would keep

19. If the garbage men ---- today, the street ---- full of stinking garbage and it will be impossible for us to open the windows.

A) don't show up / will be
B) show up / won't be
C) didn't show up / would have been
D) hadn't showed up / could be
E) wouldn't show up / will be

20. If Nick ---- here, none of this ----. He disappears for one day and I come home to this mess. I am definitely going to tell him.

A) had been / would happen
B) were / would have happened
C) weren't / would have happened
D) had been / wouldn't have happened
E) were / happened

ADJECTIVES & ADVERBS

10 ADJECTIVES & ADVERBS

A ADJECTIVES (Sıfatlar)

Sıfatlar bütün dillerde mevcuttur ve oldukça sık kullanılırlar. Genel olarak bir ismi tanımlamak ve onun hakkında fazladan bilgi vermek için kullanılırlar. 'Jennifer is a girl.' temel bilgidir; fakat 'Jennifer is a beautiful, intelligent girl.' kişi hakkında fazladan bilgi vermek amacıyla kişiyi tanımlayan, sıfat tamlaması içeren bir cümledir.

1 'Adjectives' (sıfatlar), bir ismi nitelemek amacıyla o ismin önünde ya da 'appear, be, become, feel, get, grow, look, prove, seem, smell, sound, stay, taste, turn, etc.' gibi 'linking verbs' ten (bağlayıcı fiiller) hemen sonra kullanılırlar.

- Elisa is a very **careful** person and does not usually make mistakes.
  (İsimden önce, ismi tanımlamak için)
- My favourite cuisine in the entire world has got to be **Italian** food. Everything is so **tasty**!
  (İsimden önce ismi tanımlamak için / bağlayıcı fiilden sonra)
- The rainbow that appeared after the rain yesterday evening was so **colourful**.
  (Bağlayıcı fiilden sonra)
- The job offer made by the company seemed **attractive** as it included a high salary and comprehensive health insurance. *(Bağlayıcı fiilden sonra)*
- Jack and Jill's relationship was very **rocky** from the start as they would fight over everything.
- Georgina appeared **happy** to receive the letter from her grandparents.
- The rumours about Carson getting fired proved **false**.
- The carrot cake you baked last weekend tasted **amazing**.
- The relationship between Irene and Andrew turned **sour** when Andrew lost her cat.
- Ben's idea to go fishing by the waterfall this weekend sounds **incredible**.
- My mother looked **worried** after talking to my father on the phone.
- Something smelled **funny** when we walked into Jason's apartment.
- I stayed **back** in school to help Peter finish his English essay.
- Ronald got **nervous** when it was his turn to go on stage to perform his dance.
- It feels **good** to be appreciated for what you do.

2 Sıfatlar sadece karşılaştırma yaparken çekimlenebilir. Aksi halde farklı bir şekilde ya da tekil-çoğul olarak kullanılmazlar.

- There are big trees in front of my house. (✓)
  ~~There are bigs tree in front of my house~~. (✗)

3 ‘Narrow, big, small, thin, etc.’ gibi bazı kelimeler yapım eki almadan kendiliğinden sıfattır. Bazı sıfatlar ise, aşağıdaki tabloda gösterildiği gibi, bir isim ya da fiilin sonuna yapım eki getirilmesiyle oluşturulur.

Suffixes	Examples of adjectives
-able / **-ible**	portable, edible
-al	dental, medical
-ant	ignorant, expectant
-ar	spectacular, polar
-ary	disciplinary, imaginary
-ate	affectionate, considerate
-en	golden, wooden
-ent	different, consistent
-ese	Viennese, Vietnamese
-ful	helpful, useful
-i	Bengali, Israeli
-ial	financial, judicial
-ic	classic, poetic
-ish	British, childish
-ist	Marxist, feminist
-ive	creative, productive
-ian	Canadian, Freudian
-less	homeless, restless
-like	ladylike, childlike
-ly	bimonthly, quarterly
-ous	rebellious, nervous
-some	tiresome, bothersome
-y	cloudy, easy

4 Bazı sıfatlar sadece fiilden sonra kullanılabilir. Yani bir ismi nitelemek için isimden önce kullanılamazlar. Bu kurala uyan sıfatlar ‘a-’ ile başlayanlardır. Fakat bu kelimelerden bazılarının isimleri niteleyen ve şekil olarak farklı fakat anlam olarak aynı halleri de mevcuttur.

Cannot be used before a noun	Can be used before a noun
afraid	frightened
aghast	horrified
alike	similar
alive	living
alone	lonely
ashamed	shameful
asleep	sleeping
awake	-
aware	knowledgeable

- The boy was **alone** in the backyard all day long. (✓)
  ~~The alone boy~~ was in the backyard all day long. (✗)
  The **lonely** boy was in the backyard all day long. (✓)

- The woman was **asleep** on the couch when we got there. (✓)
  ~~The asleep woman~~ was on the couch when we got there. (✗)
  The **sleeping** woman was on the couch when we got there. (✓)

5 Sıfatlar genel olarak isimlerden önce kullanılsa da, 'anyone, no one, nothing, something, somewhere, etc.' gibi belgisiz zamirlerden sonra da kullanılırlar.

- Consumers don't believe that something **cheap** can be as effective as the more expensive products.
- For anyone **interested** in Information Technology, I definitely recommend an internship.
- I want to go somewhere **quiet** with beautiful weather to relax in the shade and take a nap.

6 Bir ismi nitelerken birden fazla sıfat kullanabilmemiz mümkündür fakat sıfatları art arda kullanırken gözetilmesi gereken bir sıra vardır. Bu sıralama aşağıdaki tablodaki gibidir:

Order	Relating to	Samples
1	**opinion / quality**	interesting, famous, lovely, delicious
2	**size**	small, large, big, tiny
3	**age**	old, antique, new, young
4	**shape**	rectangular, round, square, fat
5	**condition**	clean, rich, cold, hot
6	**colour**	red, yellow, blue, orange
7	**pattern**	striped, polka-dotted, flowery, embroidered
8	**origin**	Turkish, Finnish, Russian, Spanish
9	**material**	glass, silver, plastic, wooden
10	**purpose**	basketball, football, gardening, swimming

Ayrıca bir isimden önce kullanacağımız sıfatların sayısı üçü geçmemelidir.

- I have been reading an **interesting new Russian** book lately.
- That **antique round wooden** table is invaluable.
- My brother has wanted **new blue swimming** trunks for quite a while now.

Participle Adjectives (Fiillerin Sıfatlaşmış Halleri)

1 Daha önce 'Gerunds & Infinitives' konusunda fiillerin 'participle' halleriyle nasıl kullanıldıklarını incelemiştik. Fiillerin 'participle' hallerinin yanı sıra fiillerin '-ing' takısı almış hallerini ve fiillerin 'V_3' hallerini de (past participle) sıfat olarak kullanabiliriz.

Bu durumda fiil köküne '-ing' eklendiğinde sıfattaki anlam etken (bir duyguyu, sonucu meydana getiren, eylemi yapan); '-ed' eklendiğinde ise anlam edilgen (bir duygudan, sonuçtan ve yapılan eylemden etkilenen) şeklinde değişir.

Verb	Present Participle (etken)	Past Participle (edilgen)
bore sıkmak	**boring** sıkıcı	**bored** sıkılmış
confuse kafa karıştırmak	**confusing** kafa karıştırıcı	**confused** kafası karışmış
frighten korkutmak	**frightening** korkutucu	**frightened** korkmuş
interest ilgisini çekmek	**interesting** ilgi çekici	**interested** ilgili
surprise şaşırtmak	**surprising** şaşırtıcı	**surprised** şaşkın, şaşırmış

- The news about my grandfather's sudden death was **shocking**.
- We couldn't help but fall asleep during the **boring** lecture.
- The magician's trick to saw a human in half was nothing but **horrifying**.
- The horror movie was so **terrifying** that John could not sleep for a week.
- My favourite book series is Harry Potter because the plot is **fascinating**.
- Liam was **surprised** to find out that his neighbour had sold the house.
- The teacher started to get **annoyed** as the students would not stop talking in class.
- Angie scored full marks in her Math test and her parents were very **satisfied**.
- The poor customer service in the restaurant made me **frustrated**.
- Harry is feeling **tired** because he has just finished a 15-kilometre marathon.

1

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the suitable forms of the verbs in parentheses to make them adjectives.

1. Mary was ____________________ (**interest**) in Chemistry and would always pay attention during classes.
2. It has been raining for a week now. The weather is so ____________________ (**depress**).
3. Gary was very ____________________ (**excite**) to board a plane for the first time in his life.
4. I feel so ____________________ (**relax**) after receiving a spa treatment at the hotel.
5. The loud flash and noise from the lightning and thunder were so ____________________ (**frighten**).
6. Francis is ____________________ (**exhaust**) because he was on-call for 15 hours straight.
7. Nobody could understand the ____________________ (**confuse**) instructions on how to bake a cake.
8. Amelia was ____________________ (**embarrass**) when she found out that she forgot to bring her wallet to the grocery store.
9. Billy found the dog's theatrics ____________________ (**amuse**) and could not stop laughing at it.
10. The roller coaster ride was absolutely ____________________ (**thrill**). Let's do it again!

Compound Adjectives (Bileşik Sıfatlar)

1 ‘Compound Words’ (Bileşik Kelimeler) isminden de anlaşılacağı gibi iki veya daha fazla kelimenin bir araya gelmesinden oluşurlar. ‘Compound Adjectives’ (Bileşik Sıfatlar) de aynı şekilde herhangi iki kelimenin (isim + sıfat, sıfat + sıfat, zarf + sıfat) bir araya gelmesinden oluşurlar. Genellikle ortasında tire olan iki ya da üç kelimeden oluşurlar.

- This **user-friendly** equipment can be very easily operated with maximum safety.
- A **thirty-storey** building must have a deeper foundation and a more elaborate superstructure.
- An **eight-year-old** child was taken to hospital with serious injuries to her arm after being bitten by a dog.
- A **recently-built** house should have hurricane clips to tie the roof to the wall and strong connectors from the wall to the foundation.
- In China, the **fast-growing** markets include healthcare, culture, high-end manufacturing, and so on.

Not *Sıfatlar başına ‘the’ alarak, isim gibi kullanılabilirler. **‘The poor = poor people’** gibi. Bu yapı genelde bir topluluktan bahsederken kullanılır ve bu şekilde kullanılan sıfatlar çoğul isim gibi çekimlenirler.*

- *Helping **the poor** should be a part of any human being’s nature. (fakir insanlar)*
- *Two of **the injured** were taken to the hospital, and three others were treated at the scene of the accident. (yaralılar)*
- *In WWII, **the Japanese** were the subject of many propaganda films that pushed the idea that they had a lack of humanity. (Japonlar)*

B Adverbs (Zarflar)

Zarflar da aynı sıfatlar gibi bütün dillerde mevcutturlar. Genel olarak fiilleri, sıfatları, zarfları ve cümleleri niteleyen ve onlar hakkında bilgi veren kelimelerdir. Tüm bu kullanımlarına rağmen bir zarfın asıl görevi fiile sorulan ‘nasıl’ sorusunun cevabını vermektir.

İngilizcede zarflar sıfatların sonuna ‘-ly’ eklenerek elde edilir. Her son ek gibi ‘-ly’ takısı da kelimelere eklendiğinde uyulması gereken kurallar vardır.

Not *Unutmamak gerekir ki her sıfatın sonuna ‘-ly’ eklenemez; tüm zarflar ‘-ly’ ile bitmez ve ‘-ly’ ile biten her sözcük zarf değildir.*

1 Sıfatların sonuna '-ly' son eki eklenerek zarf oluştururken aşağıdaki kurallar uygulanır.

- Bir sıfatın son üç harfi 'sessiz harf + -le' şeklindeyse, kelimenin sonundaki '-e' atılır ve '-y' eklenir.

gentle	gentl + y	gently
noble	nobl + y	nobly
responsible	responsibl + y	responsibly
simple	simpl + y	simply

- Sonu '-e' harfiyle biten ve yukarıdaki kurala uymayan sıfatlarda '-e' kalır, sonuna sadece '-ly' eklenir.

definite	definite + ly	definitely
extreme	extreme + ly	extremely
nice	nice + ly	nicely
polite	polite + ly	politely

- Bir önceki kuralın istisnası olan kelimeler mevcuttur. Yani '-ly' eklenirken sondaki 'e' harfinin atılması gereken durumlar vardır.

true	tru + ly	truly
due	du + ly	duly
whole	whol + ly	wholly

- 'y' harfi ile biten iki heceli sıfatlarda '-y' düşer ve yerine '-i' koyulup '-ly' eklenir. Bu durumda ek '-ily' şeklinde olur.

crazy	craz + ily	crazily
happy	happ + ily	happily
necessary	necessar + ily	necessarily
steady	stead + ily	steadily

- 'y' harfi ile biten tek heceli sıfatlarda 'y' harfi düşmez, sonuna '-ly' eklenir. ('**day** → **daily**' bu kuralın istisnasıdır.)

shy	shy + ly	shyly
sly	sly + ly	slyly

- Sonu '-l' ile biten sıfatlarda kelime kökündeki '-l' harfi düşürülmeden kelimeye '-ly' eklenir. (**full** → **fully** bu kuralın istisnasıdır.)

cool	cool + ly	coolly
general	general + ly	generally
lethal	lethal + ly	lethally
logical	logical + ly	logically

- Sonu '-ic' şeklinde biten sıfatlara '-ally' eklememiz gerekir.

chronic	chronic + ally	chronically
classic	classic + ally	classically
realistic	realistic + ally	realistically
scenic	scenic + ally	scenically

- Yukarıdaki maddelerde belirtilen kuralların dışındaki sıfatlara sadece '-ly' eklenir.

courageous	courageous + ly	courageously
endless	endless + ly	endlessly
independent	independent + ly	independently
sudden	sudden + ly	suddenly

- The ballerina dances **beautifully** on stage.
- Time passes so **slowly** when you are bored.
- The bus stopped **suddenly** because a dog ran across the street.
- I **quietly** tiptoed across the room to get my phone as I don't want to wake my baby brother.
- The alarm clock rings **loudly** every morning, that's why I am able to wake up on time.
- Please reply to this email **immediately**. It is urgent.
- Daisy is **extremely** interested in medicine and hopes to be a doctor one day.
- It is snowing so **lightly** outside my window right now.

2 Bazı zarflar, isimlerin sonuna '-wise' ve '-ward(s)' ekleri eklenerek oluşturulur.

- **Security-wise**, the firm is much better than it used to be. *(güvenlik bakımından)*
- To open the safe, you should turn the knob **clockwise**. *(saat yönünde)*
- The mountaineers decided to travel **northwards**. *(kuzeye doğru)*
- The man took a taxi and made his way **homeward**. *(eve doğru)*

3 **Irregular Adverbs**: İngilizcede bazı kelimeler hem sıfat hem zarf olarak kullanılabilirler. Ayrıca bir sıfatın farklı bir kelimeden oluşan zarf hali olabilir; bu tür zarflara düzensiz zarf (Irregular Adverbs) adı verilir.

Adjective	Adverb
daily	daily
early	early
fast	fast
good	well
hard	hard
late	late
straight	straight

- I missed my bus to school because I left the house **late**.
- Marie speaks good French. She speaks it so **well**.
- Physics is a hard subject. You will have to study **hard** to pass it.
- Nathan is a fast learner. He learns **fast**.
- To get to the beach, you have to drive all the way **straight** down this road.
- I am quite tired today, so I am going to go to bed **early**.

4 Bazı kelimeler hem sıfat hem zarf olarak kullanılabilir. Fakat bu sıfatlara '-ly' ekleyerek de zarf oluşturulabilir; ancak bu durumda '-ly' ile oluşan zarfın anlamı farklı olur.

Adverbs in base form		Adverbs ending in '-ly'	
close	: yakın	**closely**	: dikkatlice
deep	: derin	**deeply**	: aşırı derecede
direct	: durmadan	**directly**	: doğrudan
fair	: adilane, dürüstçe	**fairly**	: oldukça
fine	: hiç problemsiz	**finely**	: ince ince; tam olarak
flat	: dümdüz	**flatly**	: açıkça, tamamen
free	: bedava	**freely**	: özgürce
hard	: çok, sıkı	**hardly**	: neredeyse hiç
high	: yükseğe	**highly**	: oldukça
just	: henüz; tıpkı	**justly**	: adil bir şekilde
late	: geç	**lately**	: son zamanlarda
most	: en çok	**mostly**	: çoğunlukla
right	: sağa	**rightly**	: haklı olarak
short	: aniden, kısa	**shortly**	: yakında
wide	: tamamen, ardına kadar	**widely**	: yaygın biçimde

- If she had studied **hard** at school, she wouldn't have failed her final exams.
  There seems to be **hardly** any difference in the DNA of human races.
- The little girl sent her second snowball soaring **high** over the fence.
  The patient was given five lines of treatment; the first four quickly failed and the fifth was **highly** successful.
- Waking up **late** can definitely ruin your mood and set a bad tone for the day.
  Our industry, after a period of job losses and closings, has **lately** been doing better.
- Because the door was **wide** open when I got home, I decided to call the police.
  The Big Bang Theory is **widely** accepted since there is strong evidence in its favour.

Not *Aynı cümle içinde sıfatlar isimleri, zarflar da sıfatları ve zarfları nitelemek için kullanılabilir. Bu durumda kelimelerin sıralaması 'adverb + adverb + adjective + noun' şeklinde olmalıdır.*

- *Robert feels **terribly sorry** that he spilled your coffee all over your computer. (adverb + adjective)*
- *Jack fell in love with Jill at first sight because she is so **incredibly cute**.*
- *Fred is so **ridiculously smart** that he got accepted into Harvard when he was fifteen.*
- *I was **pleasantly surprised** when my boyfriend showed up to my workplace with flowers.*
- *You have to be **extremely cautious** of pickpockets when travelling in Mexico.*
- *The service at the new café downtown is **unbelievably slow**.*
- *I think Jason sometimes behaves **totally irresponsibly** when it comes to his family. (adverb + adverb)*
- *People seldom recognize that higher education at the Bachelor's level involves a **rather scrupulously developed curriculum**. (adverb + adverb + adjective + noun)*

Sonu '-ly' ile biten her sözcük zarf değildir; '-ly' ile biten sıfatlar da vardır.

costly	*: pahalı*	*cowardly*	*: korkak*
daily	*: günlük*	*deadly*	*: ölümcül*
elderly	*: yaşlı*	*fatherly*	*: babacan*
friendly	*: cana yakın, samimi*	*heavenly*	*: semavi; çok güzel*
likely	*: olası*	*lively*	*: canlı, hayat dolu*
lonely	*: yalnız, kimsesiz*	*lovely*	*: sevimli*
monthly	*: aylık*	*motherly*	*: anaç*
orderly	*: düzenli*	*silly*	*: saçma*
ugly	*: çirkin*	*unlikely*	*: ihtimal dışı*
weekly	*: haftalık*	*yearly*	*: yıllık*

- *I like Peter because he is a very **friendly** person.*
- *In two of our classes, we have to do **weekly** assignments.*
- *The **ugly** duckling turned into a beautiful swan in the end.*
- *It is highly **unlikely** that Julia will attend the party tonight.*
- *My dog feels **lonely** when we are not at home.*

Not *Yukarıdaki kelimelerden 'daily', 'monthly', 'weekly' ve 'yearly' gibi zaman belirtenler; hem sıfat hem de zarf olarak kullanılabilir.*

- *In the USA, **daily** newspapers are published in thirty-four different languages. (sıfat)*
  *Most doctors don't recommend some medications should be taken **daily** for any extended period of time. (zarf)*
- *'Reader's Digest' is one of the biggest selling **monthly** magazines in the UK. (sıfat)*
  *Currently the Brewarrina News is published **monthly** on the 2nd Friday of every month. (zarf)*

C COMPARATIVE AND SUPERLATIVE ADJECTIVES / ADVERBS
(Karşılaştırma ve Üstünlük Bildiren Sıfatlar / Zarflar)

1 ‘Comparative’ yapısı iki kişi veya şeyden birinin diğerinden daha üstün olduğunu belirtmek ve karşılaştırma yapmak için kullanılır. Karşılaştırma yapıları oluşturmak için kısa sıfatların sonuna ‘-er’, uzun sıfatların başına ‘more’ koyulur. ‘Superlative’ yapısı bir kişi veya şeyin o gruba ait her birey ve nesne ile karşılaştırıldığı yönden daha üstün olduğunu belirtmek ve karşılaştırmak için kullanılır. Üstünlük belirtmek için kısa sıfatların sonuna ‘-est’, uzun sıfatların başına ‘most’ veya ‘least’ getirilmesi gerekir.

2 Bu eklerin sıfatlara nasıl ekleneceği aşağıdaki tabloda gösterilmiştir.

- Sonu ‘-e’ ile biten tek heceli sıfatlara sadece ‘-r’ ya da ‘-st’ takıları eklenir.

crude	crude + r	cruder	crude	crude + st	crudest
cute	cute + r	cuter	cute	cute + st	cutest
large	large + r	larger	large	large + st	largest
wide	wide + r	wider	wide	wide + st	widest

- Sonu ‘sessiz harf + y’ ile biten tek heceli sıfatlarda ‘-y’ düşer ve yerine ‘-i’ getirilerek ‘-ier’ ya da ‘-iest’ takıları eklenir.

angry	angr + ier	angrier	angry	angr + iest	angriest
easy	eas + ier	easier	easy	eas + iest	easiest
happy	happ + ier	happier	happy	happ + iest	happiest
pretty	prett + ier	prettier	pretty	prett + iest	prettiest

- Son üç harfi ‘sessiz + sesli + sessiz’ şeklinde biten sıfatlarda (son harfi ‘w’, ‘x’ veya ‘y’ olanlar hariç) son harfte türeme olduktan sonra ‘-er’ ya da ‘-est’ takıları eklenir.

big	big + g + er	bigger	big	big + g + est	biggest
fat	fat + t + er	fatter	fat	fat + t + est	fattest
sad	sad + d + er	sadder	sad	sad + d + est	saddest
thin	thin + n + er	thinner	thin	thin + n + est	thinnest

- Yukarıdaki kuralların dışındaki tüm tek heceli sıfatların sonuna sadece ‘-er’ ya da ‘-est’ takıları eklenir.

slow	slow + er	slower	slow	slow + est	slowest
calm	calm + er	calmer	calm	calm + est	calmest
cold	cold + er	colder	cold	cold + est	coldest
stiff	stiff + er	stiffer	stiff	stiff + est	stiffest
tall	tall + er	taller	tall	tall + est	tallest

Çok heceli olan sıfatlarda ise kelimelerden önce 'more / less ' ya da 'most / least' kullanılır.

beautiful	more / less beautiful	most / least beautiful
creative	more / less creative	most / least creative
important	more / less important	most / least important
unusual	more / less unusual	most / least unusual

Zarflardan önce de 'more / less' ya da 'most / least' kullanılır.

carefully	more / less carefully	most / least carefully
easily	more / less easily	most / least easily
fluently	more / less fluently	most / least fluently
patiently	more / less patiently	most / least patiently

Not

'Less' (daha az) tek heceli kelimelerle kullanıldığında da asla '-er' takısı alarak karşılaştırma bildiren bir sıfat ile kullanılmaz. 'Less' zaten bir sıfatın karşılaştırma hali olduğu için, sıfat yalın halde kullanılır.

- *The Mississippi is about 200 miles less long than the Missouri River. (... ~~less longer~~ ... yanlıştır.)*
  (= The Mississippi is about 200 miles shorter than the Missouri River.)

3 Bazı 'comparative' ve 'superlative' sıfatlar / zarflar düzensizdir. Aşağıdaki tabloda bu sıfat ve zarflar düzensiz halleriyle birlikte verilmiştir.

Adjective	Comparative	Superlative
bad / badly	worse	worst
far	farther / further	farthest / furthest
good	better	best
little	less	least
many	more	most
much	more	most
old	older / elder	oldest / eldest
well	better	best

4 'Comparative' yapılar iki kişi ya da nesneyi karşılaştırırken kullanıldıklarından genellikle 'than' ile birlikte kullanılırlar. 'Superlative' yapılar ise en az üç kişi ya da nesnenin içinde belli bir yönden en üstün olandan bahsederken kullanıldıkları için bu yapıların başında 'the' kullanılması gerekir.

⚠ **Not** *'Superlative' olan cümlelerde bahsedilen grup ve yer isimleri ile 'in'; zaman isimleri, sayı ve zamirlerle de 'of' kullanılır.*

- *Betty is the best piano player **in** her class. (grup)*
- *Pizza might be my most favourite dish **in** the world, but I don't think I can eat it every day. (yer)*
- *This question has got to be the simplest question **in** the textbook because Jack could answer it within seconds. (yer)*
- *Yesterday was the saddest day of Joe's life as his puppy died. (zaman)*

- It is getting late. You should finish up your work faster **than** Jeremy if you don't want to close the office.
- You should be less careless while completing complex math equations.
- As recommended by the doctor, **the** best way to lose weight is to exercise and have a balanced diet.
- You should speak less and listen more **than** an average person if you want to learn.
- **The** worst thing that can happen to you right now is that you lose your job.
- As **the** oldest sibling, Colin had to take care of his baby sisters when his parents were busy.
- Robert might seem weak but he is stronger **than** what meets the eye.
- Can someone possibly be lazier **than** Sean?
- Isaac should take his studies more seriously **than** how he used to take them last year if he wants to pass this semester.
- I have two dogs, Cookie and Cream. Cookie is friendlier **than** Cream.
- Out of all the friends I made in university, Brandon is **the** most sincere.
- If I had to choose, I would prefer the black dress as it is cheaper **than** the white one.
- The weather in California is much warmer **than** the weather in New York.

⚠ **Not** *Karşılaştırılan iki kişi ya da nesne aynı cümle içinde yer alıyorsa 'than' kullanılır ama başka bir cümledeyse, 'than' kullanılmaz.*

- *Peter has bought a new car for his family so that they can travel more comfortably **than** they did in their old car.*
- *Helen spent the past week studying in order to get better results in her exam **than** the last one.*
- *Wendy moved from the suburbs to the city centre for a more prestigious job. The older one was less prestigious she thought.*

⚠ **Not** *Karşılaştırma yapılarını derecelendirmek için vurguyu artıran ve karşılaştırılan özelliğin çok daha üstün olduğunu ifade etmek için 'by far, far, much, a lot' ve karşılaştırma yapılan özelliğin sadece biraz daha fazla olduğunu ifade etmek için 'a little, a bit' gibi yapılar karşılaştırma kalıbının başında kullanılabilir.*

- *That is **by far** the prettiest cat I have ever seen.*
- *A sports car is **a lot** more expensive than a bicycle.*
- *On the whole, the book is **far / a lot / much** better than the movie.*
- *Learning a new language is **a little / a bit** more difficult than I imagined.*
- *You should get a new phone; it has **a lot** more features than your old one.*
- *If you move your couch just **a little** further, it will seem like your lounge is bigger.*
- *Watching football is **much** more fun than watching basketball.*
- *The engagement ring Peter bought cost **far** less than he expected.*

5 The + comparative ..., the + comparative ...: (ne kadar ..., o kadar ...)

Bu yapı, bir kişi ya da nesne belirli bir özellikten ne kadar çok kazanırsa buna paralel olarak artan diğer özellikten bahsederken kullanılır.

- **The more** Thomas talks, **the more annoyed** we get.
  (Thomas ne kadar konuşursa o kadar sinirleniyoruz.)
  (Konuşma özelliği arttıkça buna paralel olarak rahatsız olma özelliği de artıyor.)
- **The sooner** we solve this problem, **the better** it is for all the parts involved.
  (Bu problem, ne kadar hızlı çözersek, işin içindeki tüm taraflar için o kadar iyi.)
- **The more** chips you eat, **the worse** your health becomes.
- **The faster** you run, **the quicker** you will run out of breath.
- **The less attention** you pay in class, **the more chances** of you failing your test.
- **The slower** you drive, **the later** you will get home.
- **The older** Thomas gets, **the more** stubborn he becomes.

⚠ **Not** *İki şeyi karşılaştırırken 'the' kullanılması mümkündür. Bu şekilde kullanıldığında 'iki şeyden daha ... olanı' anlamına gelir.*

- *Of the two computers, I chose to buy **the cheaper one**.(İki bilgisayardan daha ucuz olanını seçtim.)*
- *John has two pencils and he prefers using **the sharper one**.*
- *I like **the smaller car**, between the two that we saw.*
- *Of the two kittens we saw, I'd pick **the cuter one**.*

⚠ **Not** *İyelik bildiren 's' ve iyelik bildiren sıfatlardan (my / your / John's / world's, etc.) sonra 'superlative' kullanılacaksa, kesinlikle 'superlative' yapının önüne 'the' gelmez.*

- *Pauline is ~~my the least favourite~~ **co-worker** because she is lazy. (✗)*
  *Pauline is **my least favourite co-worker** because she is lazy. (✓)*
- *Impatience has got to be **Matt's worst weakness**.*
- *Our **school's fastest swimmer** must be Keith.*
- *Today is **my most memorable day** as I met **my best friend** five years ago on this day.*

⚠ **Not** *'More', 'fewer' ve 'less' kelimeleri 'comparative' yapılar olmaları haricinde miktar belirleyici kelimeler olarak da kullanılabilir.*

***more**: çoğul ve sayılamayan isimlerden önce*
***fewer**: çoğul isimlerden önce*
***less**: çoğul ve sayılamayan isimlerden önce*

- *Gary grew up with **more toys** than any of his classmates.*
- *Mark has **fewer cars** than his neighbour has.*
- *I usually put **less sugar** in my coffee than my husband does.*
- *We have produced **less cars** this year, so we have to import the number we need from other countries.*

2 EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with the comparative or superlative forms of the adjectives in parentheses.

1. Betty is ____________________ (**beautiful**) woman I have ever laid my eyes on.
2. ____________________ (**early**) I can get back to you regarding this issue is Friday.
3. As Molly's best friend, ____________________ (**little**) you can do is to listen to her problems.
4. Johnson can run ____________________ (**fast**) his brother, Jack.
5. I am and have always been ____________________ (**short**) in my class.
6. I had ____________________ (**perfect**) vacation on the Bahamas last summer.
7. To be healthy, you should eat ____________________ (**many**) vegetables and ____________________ (**little**) candies.
8. David is so much ____________________ (**friendly**) now compared to when he was ____________________ (**young**).
9. There are ____________________ (**important**) things that you can do than idle about all day.
10. The key to happiness is living a ____________________ (**simple**) life.

C OTHER COMPARATIVE STRUCTURES

(Diğer Karşılaştırma Yapıları)

Sıfatların 'comparative' hallerinin dışında da kullanılan karşılaştırma yapıları mevcuttur:

1 as ... (adjective / adverb) ... as: (kadar ...)

Bu yapı olumlu, olumsuz cümlelerde ve soru cümlelerinde kullanılabilir. İki nesneyi ya da kişiyi karşılaştırmak için kullanılır. Araya zarf veya sıfat gelebilir.

- To me, nobody can be **as successful as** my beloved father.
- Helen tried **as hard as** she could to convince her parents that she wasn't lying.
- Can you please call me **as soon as** you get home?
- When driving on mountain roads, you have to drive **as carefully as** you can.

- We are all stuck at home because the weather today is **as bad as** yesterday's.
- The teacher has never met a student **as naughty as** Dylan.
- Can you cook **as well as** your mother?
- The new all-you-can-eat restaurant allows its customers to eat **as much as** they want.
- The beach near my house is **as beautiful as** I remember it to be.
- Tim can run **as fast as** his older brother can.

2 so ... (adjective / adverb) ... as: (kadar ...)

a Bu yapı sadece olumsuz cümlelerde ve soru cümlelerinde kullanılabilir; olumlu cümlelerde kullanılamaz. Diğer bir deyişle, olumsuz cümlelerde ve soru cümlelerinde 'as ... as' yapısının yerine kullanılabilir çünkü anlam bakımından her ikisi de aynıdır. İki nesneyi ya da kişiyi karşılaştırmak için kullanılır. Araya **zarf** veya **sıfat** gelebilir.

- The food nowadays is not **so cheap as** they used to be.
- The questions I got on the exam are not **so hard as** yours.
- My new house isn't **so far** to the school **as** Mike's.
- Is your work **so perfect as** your father's? He is the best artist I have ever known.

b 'As ... as' ve 'so ... as' yapılarından önce 'half, twice, three times' gibi kat ifadeleri kullanılabilir.

- I'm not very hungry and could only eat **half as much as** I usually would.
- My house is not **twice as far as** yours is to the office.
- By the time Randy was ten, he was **three times as tall as** his little brother.
- Sarah's new job is not **half as hard as** her previous one.

c 'So ... as' yapısının ardından bir fiil kullanılacaksa, bu fiil 'to infinitive' olmalıdır.

- Did Mary go home **so early as** to avoid being grounded by her parents?
- Would you be **so kind as** to drive me home tonight?
- Please don't close the door **so harsh as** to keep stray animals from coming into the house; they need water at least.

3 such ... ((a / an) noun) ... as: (böyle ...)

Her türlü cümlede (olumlu, olumsuz ve soru) iki nesneyi ya da kişiyi karşılaştırmak için kullanılır. 'Such' ve 'as' arasında bir isim kullanılır. Bu ismi niteleyen sıfatlar varsa bunlar isimden önce gelir.

- I have never been to **such an amazing place as** Norway.
- **Such an impatient person as** Leonard will not be able to be a teacher.
- Henry cannot afford **such an expensive car as** a Ferrari.
- **Such a good cook as** your grandmother is hard to find.
- Harvey has never slept on **such a comfortable bed as** this one.

4 as many / much / few / little ... (noun) ... as:

Bu yapı, 'as ... as' ve 'so ... as' yapılarının sıfatlarla değil isimlerle kullanılan halidir.

as many ... (noun) ... as (... kadar çok) → çoğul isimlerle
as much ... (noun) ... as (... kadar çok) → sayılamayan isimlerle
as few ... (noun) ... as (... kadar az) → çoğul isimlerle
as little ... (noun) ... as (... kadar az) → sayılamayan isimlerle

- Johnson did not manage to collect **as many stamps as** you did.
- Put **as little salt as** you can into the soup since it is salty enough.
- You can donate **as few as** two dollars to the charity; every bit helps.
- Please take **as much lemonade as** you like; there are free refills for everyone.
- **As few as** five people showed up to the meeting today.

5 too: (olması gerekenden çok, aşırı)

'Too' yapısı aşağıda belirtilen şekillerde kullanılabilir:

a **Too ... (adjective / adverb) ...:** 'Too' yapısından sonra sıfat veya zarf gelir.

- My skin hurts because of the sun in summer since it is **too dry**.
- Don't you think this phone is **too expensive**?

b **Too ... (adjective / adverb) ... to + V_1:** 'Too' yapısından sonra bir fiil getirmemiz gerekiyorsa, bu fiili 'to infinitive' şeklinde kullanmalıyız. Bu kullanımda 'too' cümleye olumsuz anlam katar; cümleyi yapıca olumlu, anlamca olumsuz yapar.

- I'm **too sleepy to pay** attention to the lessons today.
  (Bugün derslere dikkat edemeyecek kadar uykusuzum.)
- Julia is **too young to be working**. She should at least graduate from school first.

c **Too many / much / few / little ... (noun) ...:** 'Too' yapısının isimle kullanılabilmesi için çoğul isimlerden önce 'many' veya 'few', sayılamayan isimlerden önce 'much' veya 'little' kullanılması gerekir.

- The neighbours were making **too much noise** last night, so we called the police.
- There are **too many people** on the street right now; therefore, you can't make me take a step out.

6 enough: (yeterince, yeterli)

'Enough' yapısı aşağıda belirtilen şekillerde kullanılabilir:

a **adjective / adverb + enough:** 'Enough' sıfat veya zarflardan sonra kullanılır.

- Nathan is not **tall enough** to qualify for the school's basketball team.
- Jack's parents think that he is **old enough** to go to the corner store alone.
- Paul could not be **confident enough** to go on stage and give a speech.

b **enough + noun:** 'Enough' isimlerle kullanıldığında sıfat gibi bir işlev üstlenmektedir; yani tıpkı sıfatlar gibi tanımladığı isimden önce gelerek o isimle ilgili fazladan bilgi verir.

- I do not have **enough space** in my computer to download more movies.
- Do they have **enough men** to attack such a strong castle by themselves?
- There isn't **enough room** in my house to host your guests.

Not

'Like' aynı zamanda bir edat olarak da kullanılabilir. Bu şekilde kullanıldığında 'gibi' anlamına gelir.

- *Peter looks **like** his grandfather. They have the same eyes and nose.*
- *The athlete started the race **like** a bird let out of its cage. The other athletes were nowhere near him.*
- *I saw something that looked **like** a cat jumping out of your window earlier.*
- *Adam felt **like** he was in a dream when he saw Deborah walk towards him.*

3

EXERCISE:

Fill in the blanks with 'as ... as', 'so ... as', 'too' or 'enough'.

1. Maria's cooking is ____________ good ____________ the five star restaurants in town.
2. Helen isn't old ____________ to get a driver's license.
3. If Sam finds out that you lied to him, he will get angry as he isn't ____________ understanding ____________ you.
4. ____________ much ____________ you want to sleep in, you have to wake up to get ready for work.
5. How can Alice eat so much when she is twice ____________ light ____________ I am?
6. George was chosen as the employee of the month and he could take ____________ many days off ____________ he wants.
7. There isn't ____________ oxygen in the tank to last us a three-hour dive.
8. Would you be ____________ kind ____________ to pass me the book by the television?
9. I find it hard to keep up with Thomas because he speaks ____________ fast.
10. Harry can swim three times ____________ fast ____________ Henry can.

1 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks.

1. Ben lives in a house that is four times __________________ big __________________ mine.
2. Your sister is getting married. What __________________ (**excite**) news!
3. Peter has a dog that looks almost exactly __________________ him.
4. We really enjoyed the show as the comedian was so __________________ (**fun**).
5. This world is filled with too many __________________ (**ignore**) people like Henry.
6. I think the house we lived in when we were __________________ (**young**) was much __________________ (**big**) than this one.
7. Nobody knew that Thomas can cook so __________________ (**good**)!
8. My grandfather used to read the newspaper __________________ (**day**).
9. Health is wealth. We should be more __________________ (**select**) about the food we eat.
10. Jack was getting __________________ (**annoy**) at the long queue at the bank.

2 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks.

1. Of the two pairs of sneakers, I bought __________________ (**cheap**) one.
2. *The Lord of the Rings* is my __________________ (**favour**) movie.
3. I went to university in hopes of getting a __________________ (**good**) job.
4. Harry is __________________ (**smart**) kid in his school.
5. You work as an engineer but you speak __________________ a lawyer.
6. __________________ (**old**) I get, __________________ (**few**) friends I have.
7. The food that my mother is cooking in the kitchen smells __________________ (**amaze**).
8. My uncle has two dogs, a terrier and a Labrador. The terrier is __________________ (**cute**) one.
9. I am __________________ (**incredible / impress**) to find out that Julian has two Master's degrees.
10. There is __________________ (**far / little**) sugar in a cup of orange juice than in a cup of soda.

3 REVISION:

Fill in the blanks.

1. Fred has never seen __________________ a perfect girl __________________ Jenny.
2. My parents are not __________________ rich __________________ John's parents.
3. Dean is twice __________________ tall __________________ I am, yet he runs slower than I do.
4. Earn __________________ much money __________________ you can when you are young so that you can retire early.
5. We do not think Lewis has worked hard __________________ to deserve this award.
6. __________________ much __________________ your mother nags you, she loves you the most.
7. Mary is not old __________________ to be dating yet.
8. I have __________________ little interest in the book __________________ you do.
9. There is __________________ much anger in Jason. He needs to go for anger management issues.
10. This car is twice __________________ expensive __________________ my current one. I can't afford it.

4 REVISION:
Choose the correct option.

1. **Bruce is ---- person in our family.**

   A) smarter B) the smartest

2. **I started doing the project ---- I got it.**

   A) as soon as B) soon

3. **Peter didn't have enough money to buy Sarah ---- ring, so he bought her a ---- one.**

   A) the most expensive / cheaper B) more expensive / the cheapest

4. **Adam just moved into his new apartment, but it has ---- rooms than his previous one.**

   A) much B) fewer

5. **Helen, please tell us what your cat looks ----. We cannot find him otherwise.**

   A) like B) as

6. **My mother appeared ---- at the news that Susan and I might get married soon.**

   A) happily B) happy

7. **Growing up, Sam did not have ---- young children have today.**

   A) many toys like B) so many toys as

8. **My little brother isn't tall ---- to go on the roller coaster with me.**

   A) such B) enough

9. **I panicked because the oxygen tank had ---- oxygen than I thought.**

   A) less B) fewer

10. **Ben has had the same car for ---- anybody can remember.**

    A) as long as B) long

11. **I closed my eyes and put my hand in the box. I don't know what was in there, but it felt ---- cookie dough.**

A) such B) like

12. **A new job will not always make you any ----. Think ---- before you quit your current job.**

A) happier / well B) happy / good

13. **Summer this year seems ---- than ever before.**

A) warmest B) much warmer

14. **Spencer was pleasantly ---- by his final mark for the project.**

A) surprising B) surprised

15. **---- my boss was ----, the matter had been settled, and he admitted that there was no need to worry.**

A) As far / concerning B) As far as / concerned

16. **The news of the oil-spill in Antarctica left me ---- from an environmental perspective.**

A) slightly concerned B) slight concerning

17. **The winter of 2000 was ---- winter in recorded history.**

A) the coldest B) colder than

18. **The students thought the test was ---- and they complained to their teacher.**

A) too easy B) easier

19. **I am ---- than my brother when he was my age.**

A) tall B) taller

20. **Peter will never be able to run ---- Paul. I think he is ----.**

A) as fast as / too lazy B) faster / the laziest

ADJECTIVES & ADVERBS

TEST 1

1. **You should brush your teeth ---- to prevent plaque build-up and cavities.**

A) regularly
B) as regular as
C) most regularly
D) so regularly
E) too regular

2. **That is by far ---- and ---- car I have ever driven!**

A) expensive / the faster
B) the expensive / fast
C) the most expensive / fastest
D) the more expensive / faster
E) most expensive / so fast

3. **Adam is not ---- Ben, but he is a ---- actor.**

A) famous as / as good
B) as famous as / best
C) so famous as / better
D) famous / too good
E) the more famous / good enough

4. **Peter decided that taking his whole family to Holland would be ----, so he is taking them to camping in the countryside instead.**

A) much expensive
B) most expensive
C) as expensive as
D) so expensive as
E) too expensive

5. **Could you speak ---- please? The students cannot understand you this way.**

A) too slow
B) a few slower
C) a less slower
D) a little slower
E) less slow

6. **Peter and I snuck into the movie because we were not ---- to be admitted.**

A) old
B) oldest
C) old enough
D) older
E) enough old

7. **My grandmother has been eating ---- salt since she was diagnosed with high blood pressure.**

A) as little
B) much
C) more
D) less
E) least

8. **---- you argue with Adam, ---- he will get.**

A) The more / the more stubborn
B) More / more stubborn
C) The more / more stubborn
D) More / the most stubborn
E) The most / most stubborn

9. **Ben bought a bigger TV for himself so that he could see ----.**

A) the most clear
B) clear
C) clearer
D) more clear
E) more clearly

10. **I remember that I had ---- muffins ever when I visited my aunt in London.**

A) more delicious
B) as delicious
C) deliciously
D) less delicious
E) the most delicious

11. They have never been to ---- a beautiful and stunning place ---- that before.

A) as / as
B) as / such
C) such / as
D) so / as
E) as / than

12. I have heard that ---- man to have ever lived was 2.72 metres tall.

A) tall
B) most tall
C) the tallest
D) tallest
E) the tall

13. When you are doing something that you enjoy, time goes by very ----.

A) quickly
B) quick
C) quicker
D) quickest
E) the quickest

14. The students were all frustrated by the unbelievably ---- exam, so they protested the teacher.

A) too difficult
B) difficult
C) most difficult
D) difficultly
E) more difficult

15. Mr Granger has been the headmaster of this school for ---- anybody can remember.

A) so long as
B) such long as
C) longer as
D) as long as
E) so long

16. The ---- I see Deborah, the more I realise how much she looks ---- my mother.

A) more / like
B) most / as
C) more / such as
D) more / so
E) most / like

17. You should really consider keeping ---- dogs, the economy is making it ---- to have pets.

A) less / expensively
B) fewer / most expensive
C) fewer / more expensive
D) more / expensively
E) many / more expensive

18. Would you be ---- kind ---- to lend me your mobile phone?

A) as / so
B) as / such
C) such / as
D) so / as
E) so / such

19. The bullet trains in Japan are rumoured to go ---- 600 km per hour and I'm sure they are ---- trains in the world.

A) as fast / fastest
B) faster / the faster
C) so fast as / faster
D) fast as / the fastest
E) as fast as / the fastest

20. That movie was ---- long and boring, so I fell asleep halfway through.

A) too
B) enough
C) such
D) more
E) much

ADJECTIVES & ADVERBS

TEST 2

1. **The small town was ---- lively ---- any big city. I think it was because of the season and the good weather. Otherwise, I believe they would stay home in winter.**

A) so / that
B) such / that
C) more / as
D) as / as
E) much / than

2. **Coffee has become ---- an indispensable part of my everyday life ---- I feel incomplete and sleepy when I don't have it.**

A) such / that
B) so / that
C) so / as
D) such / as
E) both / and

3. **Sometimes I feel like ---- you care about someone, ---- he breaks your heart because he feels like he already owns your heart.**

A) much / the more
B) the more / the more
C) the most / the most
D) a lot / much
E) the better / the worst

4. **Ella was ---- cruel on his brother and that must be why he left home and moved to a different state.**

A) much
B) enough
C) more
D) the most
E) too

5. **Their family was ---- to put their child to the best university in the country when they struggled with poverty at home.**

A) too proud
B) proud enough
C) much proud
D) the most proud
E) more proud

6. **Her heart was ---- broken and she said she could never forgive her parents for giving all their fortune to her brother.**

A) more irreparably
B) irreparable
C) so irreparable
D) irreparably
E) too irreparable

7. **This is beyond beautiful. I don't think I have seen anything ---- this fascinating view.**

A) the most beautiful
B) much beautiful
C) beautiful enough
D) more beautiful than
E) too beautiful

8. **The new company offered to pay Jack ---- what he is making now. Many believe that he will accept the offer soon.**

A) three times as much as
B) quite a lot
C) the most amount
D) twice as many as
E) a lot more

9. **Mandy couldn't look around thoroughly but she says she only saw ---- ten people at the funeral.**

A) twice as many
B) quite a lot
C) as much as
D) as few as
E) many more

10. **Don't go that ----! I have short legs, there is no way I could catch up with you.**

A) faster
B) fast enough
C) fastest
D) as fast
E) fast

11. Edward has ---- character that it is almost impossible not to like him. He has friends from all over the world.

A) so delightful
B) such delightful
C) such a delightful
D) too delightful
E) delightful enough

12. Tracy stayed in the Caribbean for years to observe the indigenous people. ---- she stayed there, ---- she comprehended their traditions.

A) The worse / the more inclusive
B) The more / the inclusive
C) The longer / the more inclusively
D) The less / more inclusively
E) Longer / much more inclusively

13. ---- students tend to cause problems in the classroom such as distracting the other students or sabotaging the teacher. That is why the teacher should make sure that the lesson is fun as well as educative.

A) Boring as
B) Bored
C) So board
D) Boring
E) Boringly

14. *Snow White* is ---- story of my baby's life. He can listen to it whenever we sit down to read stories.

A) more entertaining
B) most entertaining
C) the more entertaining
D) the most entertaining
E) far too entertaining

15. George was given two options and he chose ---- one. Why do you say something is wrong with his choice?

A) the more appealing
B) the most appealing
C) more appealing than
D) twice as appealing as
E) appealing enough

16. Angelina Jolie is a beautiful actress but according to Macy's beauty criteria, when you compare her to Nicole Kidman, ---- wins.

A) the more
B) the most
C) the latter
D) former
E) previous

17. Annabel is still ---- by how many people signed up for her event considering that she is not ---- in school.

A) amazing / such a popular
B) amazed / so popular as
C) amazingly / the more popular
D) so amazed / as popular as
E) amazed / so popular

18. Maria is at least ---- Timothy if not more. I bet she can beat him with one fist blow.

A) as strong as
B) as strong
C) more strong
D) stronger
E) the more strong

19. The way Eleanor behaved at the party made me feel ---- for her but she seemed to be as ---- as ever.

A) ashamed / too lively
B) ashamed / lively
C) shameful / livelier
D) shameless / live
E) shaming / lively enough

20. How ---- do they know Alexander? Do they know he has injured two people in the last two years?

A) so well
B) better
C) best
D) good
E) well

DETERMINERS

11 DETERMINERS

'Determine' sözcüğü 'belirlemek, tespit etmek' anlamına gelir ve buradan yola çıkarak 'determiner' sözcüğü de 'belirleyici, tespit edici' anlamına gelir diyebiliriz.

'Determiner' sözcüğünün İngilizce dilbilgisindeki karşılığı, 'bir ismi belirleyen ve diğer isimlerden ayırt edilmesini sağlayan sözcük'tür. Determiner'ları 'articles' ve 'quantifiers' olmak üzere iki gruba ayırabiliriz.

A ARTICLES

İsimlerden (book, books) veya tamlamalardan önce (cookery book, cheap books) kullanılan 'a, an, the' sözcükleridir.

1 Indefinite Articles: a / an

1. Her ikisi de 'bir' anlamına gelir ve bu yüzden tekil isimlerden önce kullanılırlar. 'A' sessiz harfle başlayan, 'an' de sesli harflerle başlayan tekil isimlerden önce kullanılır.

A	AN
a book	**an** apple
a dog	**an** elephant
a fox	**an** island
a peach	**an** opportunity
a ruler	**an** umbrella

⚠ **Not** *İngilizcede harfler değil sesler temel kabul edilir. Bazı kelimeler görünürde sesli harfle başlamalarına rağmen sessiz bir sesle okunurlar. Bunlar 'uni-' (yuni) ön ekiyle ya da 'eu' (yu) ses birleşimiyle başlayan kelimelerdir. Bu tür kelimeler, bu durum baz alınarak yazılışlarına göre değil, okunuşlarına göre 'a' ile birlikte kullanılırlar.*

- *There is **a uni**versity in our town.*
- *Each student in the school has to wear **a uni**form.*
- *Russia is **a Eu**ropean country in mere geographical terms but not in cultural.*

Not *Bazı kelimeler 'h' ile başlar fakat en baştaki 'h' sesi okunmaz. Bu durumda yine yazılışları değil okunuşları baz alınarak bu kelimelerden önce 'an' getirilir.*

- *It's* ***an*** *honour for me to have the opportunity to work with Mr Estefan.*
- *New York subway riders were stuck for* ***an*** *hour without lights and air conditioning.*

Not *Kısaltmalar eğer harf harf okunuyorsa ve bu kısaltmaların başında;*

a /eɪ/	e /iː/	f /ef/	h /eɪtʃ/
i /aɪ/	l /el/	m /em/	n /en/
o /oʊ/	r /ar/	s /es/	x /eks/

harflerinden biri bulunuyorsa bu harflerin okunuşlarında ağızdan ilk önce sesli bir harf çıktığı için 'an' ile birlikte kullanılırlar. Geri kalan harflerde ise 'a' getirilmesi gerekir.

- *If you want to become* ***an*** *FBI agent, you should fulfil some educational requirements.* /ən ef biː aɪ/
- *The government wants every plane to have* ***an*** *FO and two captain pilots on every flight.* /ən ef əʊ/
- ***An*** *NGO should only aim to make the lives of the people and animals better.* /ən en.dʒiː'əʊ/
- *The situation was described by* ***a*** *UK official speaking on condition of anonymity for fear of being laid off.* /ə juː keɪ/

Not *Kelime gibi okunan kısaltmalarda genel kurallar geçerlidir. Sessiz harfle başlayanlardan önce 'a', sesli harfle başlayanlardan önce de 'an' getirmemiz gerekir.*

- *That a place is* ***a*** *UNESCO World Heritage Site doesn't mean it's the best place in a city to visit.* /ə juːneskəʊ/
- *Iraq,* ***an*** *OPEC country, is heavily dependent on oil revenues for more than 90 per cent of its budget.* /ən əʊpek/

2. **'A' ve 'an'i aşağıdaki durumlarda kullanırız:**

- a Bir şeyden veya birinden ilk kez söz ederken;
  - I have downloaded **a new television show** to watch tonight after work.
  - I'm going to go to **an art exhibition** this weekend.
  - Susan has **a large group of friends**, so she must be very sociable.

- b Mesleklerden söz ederken;
  - I'm **a graphic designer**, so I usually spend all day on the computer.
  - My friend Bob works as **a project manager** for a construction company.
  - My dream job when I was a child was to be **an astronaut**.

- c Bir bitki veya hayvan türünden genel olarak söz ederken;
  - **A bee** may sting you once as it usually dies afterwards.
  - **An elephant** can weigh over 6,000 kilograms.
  - If you find **a berry** on a bush in the forest, don't eat it as it may be poisonous.

- d İstatistik, rakam, fiyat veya hızdan söz ederken 'her' anlamında;
  - I try to drink at least three litres of water **a day** because it is healthy.
  - Our town usually gets about 100 tourists **a week** during the holidays.
  - The wettest place in the world is Mawsynram in India which gets over 11,000 millimetres of rain **a year**.

- e Geçici rahatsızlıklardan, hastalık belirtilerinden söz ederken;
  - Whenever I get **a migraine** I have to lie down in a dark room.
  - Last week, I had **a sore throat** and it was hard for me to speak.
  - Tommy has **a fever** today, so his parents are not going to send him to school.

2 Definite Article: the

1. 'The' tekil ve çoğul isimlerin yanı sıra, sayılamayan isimlerle de kullanılabilir. Sözü edilen ismin belirli, tanımlanmış veya nitelenmiş bir örneğinden bahsederken kullanılır.

2. **'The' aşağıdaki durumlarda kullanılır:**

- a Bir şeyden veya birinden ikinci kez söz ederken;
  - We bought a new television from the store last week. **The television** is much better than our old one.
    (Not any television; I am talking about **the television we bought last week**.)
  - The neighbours have a new dog. **The dog** is very friendly and likes to lick people.
  - My friend cooked a big meal for us all. **The meal** was delicious.

b Tam olarak neden ya da kimden söz edildiğinin rahatça anlaşılabildiği durumlarda;

- **The upgrade** we have made to the factory should increase production.
  (The listeners know about what upgrade I am talking about.)
- I have been spending a lot of time at **the gym** and now I am fitter than before.
- It is very noisy in my apartment this week because of **the construction** across the street.

c Müzik enstrümanlarından bahsederken;

- Playing **the piano** can be incredibly beneficial to your well-being.
- During the early seventeenth century **the guitar** was an instrument of the people of Spain.
- Over the years, **the violin** has gone through changes of design to end up with the current construction and dimensions.

d Bir ülkede veya gezegende tek olan şeylerden veya kişilerden söz ederken;

- It is easier to see the stars when you are not near a city as **the sky** is not filled with light pollution.
- **The Earth** is the only planet that we know that has life.
- **The President** will make an announcement tomorrow about the scandal.

e Hayvan ve bitki türlerinden bahsederken;

- **The Californian redwood** is the tallest species of tree in the world.
- **The peregrine falcon** is the fastest bird in the world.
- **The elephant** has two kinds left on earth; Asian and African elephants.

f İcatlardan bahsederken;

- **The Internet** has allowed people all over the world to connect with each other.
- **The light bulb** has been a very significant player in the future of the technological developments.
- **The wheel** was the advancement the human kind needed to leap from the cave life into a more developed world.

g Medya araçlarının (radyo, internet, vb.) isimlerinden önce;

- My friend has called me and told me to turn on **the news** because there has just been a major earthquake.
- I used to listen to **the radio** when I was younger but now I just use my smartphone.
- **The Internet** has been one of the most important inventions in human history.

h Gazete isimlerinden önce;

- **The *Times Weekly*** has been a reliable source of local news for over 25 years.
- **The *Independent*** was founded in 1986 by the journalists Andreas Whittam Smith, Stephen Glover and Brett Straub.
- Having been founded in 1903, **the *Daily Mirror*** has been the national daily tabloid newspaper for the British.

i Sıradağ ve takımada isimleriyle;

- **The Rocky Mountains** are a chain of mountains in North America.
- **The Canary Islands** are a Spanish island chain near the coast of Africa.
- There is a mountain chain on New Zealand's southern island called **the Southern Alps**.

j Çöl, nehir, deniz ve okyanus isimleriyle;

- **The Nile** is a large river in Northern Africa which meets the sea in Egypt.
- The driest desert in the world is **the Atacama Desert** in South America.
- **The Pacific Ocean** has almost twice as much area as all the land on Earth.

k Sıfat veya 'of' ile kurulan bir tamlamadan oluşan ülke, kurum adı veya özel isimlerle;

- **The Democratic Republic of the Congo** is a country located in central Africa.
- **The Grand Old Party** is another name for the Republican Party in the United States.
- **The University of Arizona** has three different campuses.

l Sinema, tiyatro, banka ve postane gibi halka açık yer isimlerinden önce;

- People may not need to go to **the post office** in the future as drones may deliver packages to our homes.
- Many people like to go to **the park** for a walk at weekends.
- You can borrow books for free from **the library**.

m 'University, college, bed, school, church, prison, work, jail' gibi sözcükler ilgili oldukları eylem veya durum dışında kullanıldıklarında;

- Construction workers are carrying out renovations in **the church**.
- Jenny went to **the jail** to visit her husband yesterday.
- Frank drove by **the school** but it didn't look like anyone was there.

n 'The (comparative) ..., the (comparative)' yapısıyla birlikte;

- **The more** you give, **the more** you get.
- I think **the worse** a person feels, **the better** he tries to look to people around.
- **The easier** your workouts become, **the more** benefits you'll get.

o Superlative' yapılarından (easiest, most beautiful, etc.) önce,

- İstanbul is **the most crowded** city that I have ever been to in my life.
- Mount Everest is **the tallest** mountain in the world.
- Brienne from *Game of Thrones* is **the strongest woman** I have ever seen.

p Sıra sayı sıfatlarından (first, fourth, fifteenth, etc.) önce;

- My office is on **the thirteenth** floor of the building, so I have a great view.
- **The first person** to show up is always George; he is not even one minute late.
- **The second floor** belongs to a private company, so you need a specific card to enter there.

q Sıfat olarak kullanıldıklarında 'only, last, first, second, third' den önce;

- **The only person** in my family who I still talk to is my younger brother, Tobias.
- **The last activity** I do each day before going to bed is meditating.
- **The first thing** Sam does when he gets to work is to make coffee for everyone.

r Ulus belirten sıfatları kullanarak bir ülkenin insanlarından söz ederken;

- **The Japanese** are known for their polite manners.
- **The French** are famous for both cooking and loving good food.
- **The Chinese** are seeking to become the new world leaders of climate change.

s 'Rich, poor, homeless, elderly, deaf, blind' gibi sıfatlar bir grup insanı nitelerken;

- **The old** seem to have a more negative view on technology. *(= Old people ...)*
- In the last few decades, the gap between **the rich** and **the poor** has become wider than ever.
- There are many new inventions these days that can help **the disabled**.

3 'A', 'an' ya da 'the' Kullanılmayan Durumlar;

a Sayılamayan isimler ve çoğul isimlerle genelleme yapılırken;

- **Fruits** contain many healthy vitamins but they are also sugary.
- **Milk** is a great drink to have in the morning with breakfast.
- **Real estate agents** can be useful if you need to buy or sell a house.

b Soyut kavramlarla;

- **Fulfilment** is something that young people don't usually feel.
- Many people believe that **love** is the most important thing in the world.
- **Empathy** is the best way to counter racism and hate.

c Bazı istisnalar dışında özel isimlerle;

- I saw **Eminem** in a rap concert about ten years ago.
- **China** will likely have the biggest economy in the world in the near future.
- **Trentham Park** is one of the nicest parks that I have ever been to.

d Bir sıfat ile nitelenmiş olan isimlerle;

- My mother wants me to send her **those photos** that I took last week. ('~~the those photos~~' denilemez.)
- Can you please pass me **that coffee mug** on the table over there?
- **My biggest fear** is that I will never have a job that I love.

e Ünvan ve isim birlikte kullanıldığında;

- **Finance Minister James Randall** announced the new economic plan today.
- **Police Chief John Millers** told the press that they had caught the murderer.
- **Tennis player Rafael Nadal** is one of the best in the world at the moment.

f 'By + vehicle' yapısında ulaşım aracının adından önce;

- I usually go back to my home country **by plane**.
- The easiest way to get to the airport from here is **by bus**.
- I like to go to the other side of the city **by boat** as it is more relaxing.

g 'University, college, bed, school, church, prison, work, class, home, jail' gibi sözcükler ilgili oldukları eylem veya durumla ilgiliyse;

- I have been **at university** for almost a year now and I am not enjoying it.
- James has to go **to work** now but the rest of us will stay here.
- My son is **in prison** for a crime that he did not commit.

h Öğünlerle, dillerle, oyunlarla, bilim dallarıyla, hastalıklarla;

- I have always thought that **economics** is an interesting subject.
- We had **breakfast** early in the morning at the hotel, then went sightseeing.
- **Football** is the most popular sport in the world and is played in almost every country.

B QUANTIFIERS

İngilizcede temel olarak iki tür isim vardır: sayılabilen isimler ve sayılamayan isimler.

1 **Bu isim türlerini inceleyelim:**

a **Countable Nouns (Sayılabilen İsimler)**

1. **Singular Nouns (Tekil İsimler):** Sayılabilen isimlerin tek bir nesneden bahseden halidir ve doğal olarak çoğul takısı almazlar.
   canal, bus, ferry, mouse, etc.
2. **Plural Nouns (Çoğul İsimler):** Sayılabilen isimlerin iki veya daha fazla nesneden bahseden halidir ve doğal olarak istisna olan isimler hariç çoğul takısı alırlar.
   canals, buses, berries, mice, etc.

b **Uncountable Nouns (Sayılamayan İsimler):** İngilizcede sayamayacağımız sıvı, gaz ya da toz halinde bulunan maddeler; sayılamayacak kadar çok olan nesneler (saç, pirinç, vb.); ya da duygu, fikir, düşünce gibi soyut kavramları anlatan kelimeler sayılamayan isimlerdir. Bu kelimeler çoğaltılamaz ve kullanılırken de tekil kabul ederek tekil yapılarla beraber kullanılır.
coffee, water, salt, glass, hair, paper, advice, knowledge, information, luggage, news, etc.

⚠ Not *Bu konu ile ilgili detaylı bilgi 'Nouns & Extra Subjects' konusunda verilmiştir.*

2 Miktar bildiren sözcüklerin (Quantifiers) bazıları yalnızca sayılabilen (tekil ya da çoğul) isimlerle, bazıları yalnızca sayılamayan isimlerle, bazıları hem sayılabilen hem de sayılamayan isimlerle kullanılırlar.

Miktar belirleyicilerin ne tür isimlerle kullanıldığını gösteren tabloları inceleyelim:

Quantifiers	Singular Noun	Plural Noun	Uncountable Noun
a couple of		✓	
(a) few		✓	
a good deal of			✓
a great / large amount of			✓
a great deal of			✓
(a) little			✓
a lot of / lots of		✓	✓
a number of		✓	
all	✓	✓	✓
any	✓	✓	✓
both		✓	
each	✓		
either	✓		
every	✓		
half	✓	✓	✓
many		✓	
most		✓	✓
much			✓
neither	✓		
no	✓	✓	✓
none of		✓	✓
plenty of		✓	✓
several		✓	
some	✓	✓	✓
whole	✓		

Used with Singular Nouns	Turkish Meaning	Examples
all	tüm	all the world
any	her, herhangi	any student
each	her, her bir, her biri	each woman
either	ikisinden biri, o ya da bu	either case
every	her	every man
half	-nın yarısı	half (of) the conference
neither	ikisi de değil, ne o ne de bu	neither teacher
no	hiç	no roof
whole	tüm, bütün	the whole world

Used with Plural Nouns	Turkish Meaning	Examples
a couple of	bir çift, birkaç	a couple of jobs
a few	birkaç	a few people
a lot of / lots of	çok, bir sürü	a lot of pictures
a number of	birkaç, bazı	a number of ideas
all	hepsi, tamamı	all bags, all (of) the bags
any	hiç	any questions
both	her iki	both students, both (of) the students
few	çok az (sayıda)	few journalists
half	-nın yarısı	half (of) the applicants
many	pek çok, çok sayıda	many desks, many of the desks
most	çoğu	most mothers, most of the mothers
no	hiç	no phones
none of	-nın hiçbiri	none of the documents
plenty of	çok	plenty of members
several	birkaç	several keys, several of the keys
some	birkaç, bazı	some opinions, some of the opinions

Used with Uncountable Nouns	Turkish Meaning	Examples
a good deal of	çok	a good deal of rice
a great / large amount of	büyük miktarda	a great amount of knowledge
a great deal of	çok	a great deal of gas
a little	biraz	a little sugar, a little of the sugar
a lot of / lots of	çok	a lot of luggage, lots of money
all	hepsi, tamamı	all energy, all (of) the energy
any	hiç	any air
half	-nın yarısı	half (of) the furniture
little	çok az (miktar)	little interest
most	çoğu	most information
much	çok, fazla miktarda	much work
no	hiç	no evidence
none of	-nın hiçbiri	none of the jewellery
plenty of	çok	plenty of light
some	biraz	some water

1. **Some:** 'Çoğul isimlerle 'birkaç, bazı'anlamında; sayılamayan isimlerle 'biraz' anlamında kullanılır.

some	+	çoğul isim sayılamayan isim

- **Some people** like to relax while they are on vacation but others like to explore and have adventures. *(Bazı insanlar ...)*
- There is **some Coke** in the fridge if you would like to have something cold. *(... biraz kola ...)*
- **Some animals** survive by being very hard for predators to see.
- It will still take **some years** before people get to Mars but it should happen in our lifetime.
- I have not seen my cat for **some time**, so I hope that he is OK.

Not *Bazen günlük konuşmada 'some' tekil bir isim ile kullanılabilir ve bu şekilde 'a/an' gibi bir anlama sahip olur. Bu kullanımla bilinmeyen bir kişi, şeyden bahsettiğimiz bellidir.*

- ***Some day**, you will be sorry. (Bir gün ...)*
- ***Some official** came into the room and told everyone that we had to leave.*
- ***Some little girl** was crying in the supermarket because she had lost her mother.*

Not *'Some' kendisinden sonra gelen bir sayı ile kullanılabilir ve bu şekilde 'approximately' (yaklaşık olarak) anlamına gelir.*

- *The first civilizations were started **some 6,000-8,000 years** ago.*
- *It is thought that the painting was stolen and replaced by a fake **some 40 years** ago.*
- *We don't know when it happened but we suspect it was **some three months** ago.*

2. **Any:** İki türlü kullanım şekli ve anlamı vardır:

		tekil isim (her, herhangi)
any	+	çoğul isim (hiç; herhangi)
		sayılamayan isim (hiç)

a Olumsuz cümleler ve soru cümlelerinde kullanıldığında 'hiç' anlamına gelir. Cümlede 'any'den sonra çoğul veya sayılamayan isim gelir.

- I **don't have any books** in my house that I want to read.
  (Çoğul isim)
- There **isn't any food** in the kitchen today, so I will have to go grocery shopping.
  (Sayılamayan isim)
- They **don't have any pork** here because it is a Muslim restaurant.
- I hope that there **won't be any delays** at the airport tomorrow.
- I **haven't had any problems** with the new system so far.

b Olumlu cümlelerde kullanıldığında 'her, herhangi' anlamına gelir. Cümlede 'any'den sonra tekil, çoğul veya sayılamayan isim gelebilir.

- The police asked people to call in if they saw **any suspicious people** at the train station.
  (Çoğul isim)
- As **any mother** can tell you, a child is an extremely precious gift.
  (Tekil isim)
- Laura had difficulty in **any field** she tried to get a good career in.
- **Any pet animal** seemed inappropriate for the little boy as he had a bad allergy.
- She could easily get away with **any crime** she committed as she had a welcoming face.

1 **EXERCISE**

Fill in the blanks with 'some' or 'any'.

1. I think that there is ________________ bread in the refrigerator if you want to make a sandwich.

2. When I first moved to this city, I was lonely because I didn't have ________________ friends.

3. I told the real estate agent to call me if there was ________________ possibility of getting a lower price for the house.

4. Everyone has ________________ secrets that are better kept hidden from others.

5. I don't know of ________________ good movies on at the cinema at the moment, but we can check.

6. There are ________________ interesting new restaurants that have recently opened near my house.

7. If you want to do ________________ activity that is fun and healthy at the same time, I suggest swimming.

8. James told me that if I needed ________________ help moving the house, then I could just ask him.

9. I don't have ________________ free time to do my work this weekend because my family is coming to stay.

10. There are ________________ days when I feel like I just want to quit my job and move somewhere else.

3. **Many:** 'Pek çok, çok sayıda' anlamına gelir. 'Many' kelimesine genellikle olumsuz anlam taşıyan cümleler veya soru cümlelerinde rastlanır. Çoğul isimlerle beraber kullanılır.

many + çoğul isim

- The thieves stole **many paintings** that were extremely valuable from the museum.
- There are **many foreign people** who come to visit this city and see the sights.
- Steven had **many reasons** to quit his job but he decided to keep it at least until the end of the year.
- There are **many different things** you can do when you visit Rome.
- My family has **many strange objects** that come from all over the world in our house.

⚠ **Not**

'Many', 'a good many' ve 'a great many' şeklinde de kullanılabilir. Bu şekilde anlam daha vurgulu olur.

a good / great many + *çoğul isim* + *çoğul fiil*

- ***A good many people*** *are working on the mathematical basis of quantum theory, trying to understand it better.*
- ***A great many scientists*** *from various institutes were invited to work at the design of the hydro-engineering complex.*

⚠ **Not**

Aşağıdaki tabloda verilen ve normalde 'many'nin kurallarına aykırı olan bu yapı sık sık karşılaşılan bir kullanımdır. 'Bir çok, pek çok' anlamına gelir. Fakat çoğul bir anlamı olmasına rağmen tekil isim ve tekil bir fiille kullanılır.

many a + *tekil isim* + *tekil fiil*

- ***Many a politician*** *is under severe pressure when his own political survival is threatened.*
- ***Many an engineer*** *has been unable to reproduce design accomplishments or confirm test results due to sloppy record keeping.*

4. **Much:** Sayılamayan isimlerle kullanılır. 'Çok, fazla miktarda' anlamına gelen 'much' kelimesine genellikle olumsuz anlam taşıyan cümlelerde veya soru cümlelerinde rastlanır.

much + sayılamayan isim

- We have put too **much focus** on our research and not enough on our presentation.
- I don't have **much time** to exercise these days but at least I walk to work.
- They had so **much money** that they didn't know what to spend it on.
- He didn't want to take too **much time**, so he tried to hurry.
- There isn't **much that we can do** to improve the pollution problem.

5. **A lot of / lots of:** 'Çok, bir sürü' anlamlarına gelir. 'A lot of' ve 'lots of' kelimeleri kendilerinden sonra çoğul veya sayılamayan isim alırlar. Genelde olumlu anlamı olan cümlelerde kullanılırlar.

a lot of / lots of + çoğul isim / sayılamayan isim

- There are **a lot of reasons** for me to accept this job offer but I think I will wait a little longer.
- **Lots of people** around the world haven't been educated on how to read and write.
- There were quite **a lot of street dogs** around, so we didn't get out of the car.
- There are **lots of places** I would like to visit in my life such as Thailand and Brazil.
- Everyone tells me that there are **a lot of great things** about Italy, so maybe I should visit.
- **Lots of the early work** that led to the invention of computers was done by Alan Turing.

6. **Plenty of:** 'Çok miktarda, pek çok' şeklinde Türkçeye çevrilir. 'Plenty of' kelimesi kendisinden sonra çoğul veya sayılamayan bir isim alır.

plenty of + çoğul isim / sayılamayan isim

- I know **plenty of people** who love to sleep in at weekends but I like to get up early.

- I had lots of fun at the party as there were **plenty of people** that I already knew.
- If you want to improve your knowledge about science, there are **plenty of interesting books and magazines** you can read.
- To be healthy, it's important not only to eat well and exercise, but to get **plenty of rest** as well.

2 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with 'many', 'much', 'a lot of', 'lots of' or 'plenty of'.

1. I have tried to read ______________ different articles on the theory of relativity but I still don't understand it.

2. There are ______________ trees around the university, so I don't know why they are planting more.

3. We don't have ______________ time left before we have to present, so we should practise.

4. Since I travel ______________, I have made contacts from all over the world.

5. I noticed that I didn't have ______________ water left in my bottle, so I only drank a little.

6. I take my dog on ______________ walks to the park where he likes to play with the other dogs.

7. Sarah had ______________ money left at the end of the month, so she decided to buy the pair of shoes she wanted.

8. Some people try ______________ different things to lose weight but just can't seem to manage.

9. There are ______________ unique buildings designed by different architects in this city.

10. There is still ______________ to do before the new house is ready for us to move into.

7. **A few:** Türkçeye 'birkaç' şeklinde çevrilir. 'A few', 'some' ile eşanlamlı olarak kullanılabilir. Kendisinden sonra çoğul isim gelir.

a few + çoğul isim

- There were just **a few more kilometres** to go in the race but Jeff felt too tired to continue.
- I can think of **a few reasons** not to go camping such as a lack of showers.
- There were only **a few sausages** left on the plate, so I gave them to the dog.
- We only had to wait in line for **a few minutes** before our passports were stamped.

8. **A little:** Türkçeye 'biraz' şeklinde çevrilir. 'A little', 'some' ile eş anlamlı olarak kullanılabilir. Kendisinden sonra sayılamayan isim gelir.

a little + sayılamayan isim

- Sarah always likes to put **a little extra salt** on her French fries.
- We had **a little time** to kill before we had to go to the airport, so we did some shopping.
- The sweater that my mother gave me is **a little too big** for me but I still like it.
- I have **a little money**, which, I think, will be enough for my trip.

⚠ **Not**

'Few' ve 'little' yapıları 'yetmeyecek kadar az' anlamı taşır. 'Few'den sonra çoğul, 'little'dan sonra sayılamayan isim kullanılır.

- ***Few things*** *actually work around here the way they are supposed to.*
- ***Few people*** *actually enjoy eating at this restaurant but there aren't many other options around.*
- *I like my job because I can get away with doing very* ***little work****.*
- *There was* ***little the firefighters could do*** *to stop the forest fire once it got going.*
- ***Very little of the hotel*** *resembled to what it looked like on the website.*
- *Your foolish argument makes* ***little sense*** *at best and I am going to ignore it.*

⚠ **Not**

'Only a few' ve 'only a little' yapıları Türkçeye 'sadece birkaç' (sayı) ya da 'sadece biraz' (miktar) şeklinde çevrilir.

- *There are* ***only a few books*** *which I haven't read in our school's library.*
  (= There are not many books which I haven't read in our school's library.)
- *There is* ***only a little information*** *concerning the victim's whereabouts.*
  (= There is not much information concerning the victim's whereabouts.)

9. **Several:** Türkçeye 'birkaç' şeklinde çevrilir. 'Several' kelimesinden sonra çoğul isim gelir.

several + çoğul isim

- There are **several different ways** that you can get to the town from here.
- I think that there are probably **several reasons** why I didn't get the job.
- **Several cars** were quite badly damaged in the crash but luckily nobody was killed.
- Kelly woke up **several times** during the night because of her cough.

10. **A number of:** Türkçeye 'birkaç, bazı' şeklinde çevrilir. 'A number of' kendisinden sonra çoğul isim alır.

a number of + çoğul isim

- The politician promised that she would do **a number of things** to help improve the economy.
- There are **a number of different ways** you can improve in a foreign language.
- The restaurant has **a number of new items** on the menu but I think I will stick to my favourite.
- There were quite **a number of people** in the crowd that had formed in front of the Parliament.

⚠ **Not**

'A number of' ve 'the number of' yapılarının birbirinden iyi ayırt edilmesi gerekmektedir. Aralarındaki farkları açıklamak gerekirse:
'A number of students'; 'birkaç öğrenci' anlamındadır ve çoğul fiil ile kullanılmalıdır.
'The number of students'; 'öğrencilerin sayısı' anlamına gelmektedir ve kendisinden sonra tekil fiil gelmelidir.

- ***The number of people** waiting in line to get treated at the hospital **was** really high after the accident.*
- *Biologists estimate that **the number of penguins** that had died because of the pollution **was** around 10,000.*
- *According to the news today, **the number of businesses** that have closed this year **is** higher than ever before.*

3 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with 'a few', 'a little', 'several' or 'a number of'.

1. Jane couldn't decide on one shirt, so she bought __________________ of them.
2. There was __________________ time for the doctors to stop the bleeding, but not enough.
3. I own __________________ different watches and I wear each of them with different outfits.
4. The speeding train shot past them, just __________________ feet away from where they had parked their car.
5. __________________ people had been killed in the fire which burnt down the apartment building.
6. There are __________________ hotels that I like to stay in when I visit New York on business.
7. I once met a girl on vacation, and then __________________ years later I met her again in a different country.
8. There are __________________ ways that you can finance a new business.
9. My boss has asked me to do __________________ different things today and I don't know if I have enough time.
10. We had __________________ different options for what movie to watch for the night.

11. **All:** Türkçeye 'hepsi, tüm, tümü' şeklinde çevrilir. 'All', kendisinden sonra tekil, çoğul veya sayılamayan isim alabilir.

		tekil isim
all (of)	+	çoğul isim
		sayılamayan isim

- I told him that we could probably finish **all the work** we needed to do if we started now.
- **All (of) the people** in my family live and work in the same city, Mexico.
- I went into the store and bought **all (of) the plastic cups and plates** I could find for the party.
- I am staying here for the summer but **all (of) my friends** are going away on trips.
- **All (of) the information** you need to learn how to cook is available on the Internet.
- The weather was nice and we stayed in the garden **all day** long.

⚠ **Not**

'All' özneyi niteleyen zarf olarak da kullanılabilir. Bu şekilde kullanıldığında tıpkı sıklık zarfları gibi özne ve ana fiil arasında; bir 'modal'ın ardından ya da yardımcı fiilin ardından gelecek şekilde cümlede kullanılır.

- *We **all** tried to buy tickets for the concert but it was totally sold out. (Özneyi niteleyen zarf)*
- *Unfortunately, I have to give you an 'F' because the arguments in your essay are **all** copied. (Zarf)*
- *Every evening, when my children come home from school they **all** tell me about their day. (Özneyi niteleyen zarf)*

12. **Whole:** Türkçeye 'tüm, bütün' şeklinde çevrilir. 'Whole' kendisinden sonra tekil isim alır.

whole	+	tekil isim

- I'm going to have to read the **whole textbook** again because I don't remember anything from last semester.
- We had to walk the **whole way** to the train station when we could not find a taxi.
- I feel a little bit sick because I ordered a pizza and ate the **whole thing** by myself.

⚠ **Not**

Tekil bir isimle birlikte kullanıldıklarında 'whole' ve 'all' anlam olarak aynıdır. Ancak bir belirteçle birlikte kullanıldıklarında anlam olarak aynı olmalarına rağmen söz dizilimleri farklılaşmaktadır.

- *Even if I spent **the whole day** with you, I miss you the second you leave. (= ... all the day ...)*
- *She put her head on the arm of the chair, and **all her body** started to shake with sobs. (= ... her whole body ...)*

13. **No:** 'Hiç' anlamına gelen 'no' kendisinden sonra tekil, çoğul veya sayılamayan bir isim alabilir. Olumsuz bir anlamı olduğu için sadece olumlu cümlelerde kullanılabilir. Olumsuz ya da olumsuz anlam içeren cümlelerde kullanılmaz.

no	+	tekil isim
		çoğul isim
		sayılamayan isim

- I have **no idea** where I am going to be or what I am going to be doing in five years.
- There are **no more Cokes** left in fridge, so can you please buy some at the store?
- **No new restaurants** seem to have opened in the city centre lately.
- There were **no movies** that I wanted to watch on television, so I decided to read instead.
- I have **no money** to spend on such silly things.

14. **None:** 'Hiç' anlamına gelen 'none' bir zamir olduğundan, bir ismin yerini tutmakta ve kendisinden sonra herhangi bir isim almamaktadır. Olumsuz bir anlamı olduğu için sadece olumlu cümlelerde kullanılabilir. Olumsuz ya da olumsuz anlam içeren cümlelerde kullanılmaz.

- Shelia has got two cars but her brother has **none**. *(= no cars)*
- They have been to a number of countries but they really loved **none**.
- Even though they are all hardworking students, **none** had a passing grade.
- So, you're looking for tickets to tomorrow's performance? I'm terribly sorry but we've got **none** left.

⚠ **Not**

'None of' yapısını 'the', işaret sıfatları (these, those), iyelik sıfatları (my, your, etc.) ile birlikte ardından gelen çoğul bir isimle ya da nesne zamirlerinden önce kullanabiliriz.

none of	+	*the* *these / those* *my / your / his / her / its / our / their*	+	*çoğul isim*

none of	+	*us / you / them*

- ***None of my friends*** *have travelled to Spain before, so we are planning to go there together.*
- ***None of the books*** *I have found in my room have the notes that I am looking for.*
- *There are three different classes I could take next year, but* ***none of them*** *have been confirmed yet.*
- *I am trying to buy a special type of bike but* ***none of the stores*** *I have checked have it.*

4 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with 'all', 'whole', 'no' or 'none'.

1. Tomorrow, we are going to spend the __________________ day at the beach, so bring your sunscreen.

2. Some people think that there is __________________ point in voting because they don't trust politicians.

3. Randy and some tourists got separated from their guide and __________________ of them knew the way back to the hotel.

4. When the taxi got to my house, I realised that I had __________________ money in my wallet, so I had to run inside and get some.

5. I try not to spend __________________ of my time on the computer, but as I work in an office, it is hard not to.

6. When the new season of my favourite show was released, I watched the __________________ thing in two days.

7. When Stacy went to Disneyland she made sure that she tried __________________ of the rides.

8. The __________________ reason why I didn't attend the club's dinner was because I didn't want to see Johnny there.

9. I hoped that there would be some other English speakers in the group but there were __________________.

10. __________________ of my friends are married except me; I'm the only one of us who is still single.

15. **Each:** Türkçeye 'her, her bir, her biri' şeklinde çevrilir. İki ya da daha fazla ögeyi anlatabilir, fakat arkasından tekil isim gelir.

each + tekil isim

- Our professor told us that **each team** needs to choose someone to be the team leader.
- My brother and I always blame **each other** when we have a fight, but really we are both to blame.
- **Each apartment building** on my street has about 10 satellites on the roof.
- **Each year**, global temperatures continue to rise as a result of global warming.
- I watched as the children walked into school and **each one** was carrying a backpack.
- **Each child** was given a present by the Minister who visited them.

⚠ Not

'Each' özne zamirleri ve nesne zamirlerinden sonra anlatımı daha vurgulu hale getirmek için kullanılabilir.

- *They **each** wanted to do their own thing but couldn't, because they had to do everything together.*
- *The mother put the kids into their beds and kissed them **each** on their foreheads and said good night.*

16. **Every:** İsimleri niteleyen bir sıfattır. Zamir gibi tek başına asla kullanılamaz. 'Every', 'her, her bir' şeklinde Türkçeye çevrilebilir.

every + tekil isim

- **Every morning** after I wake up, I go for a 30-minute run around my neighbourhood.
- The city inspectors found that almost **every building** in the area had been damaged by the earthquake.
- I don't think that it's obligatory to read **every article** that the professor assigns, so I only read the most critical ones.
- I go to my grandma's house for dinner and see how she is **every other Thursday night**.
- **Every person** who works in the office with me is very capable and good at their job.

Not *'Each' ve 'every' arasındaki farklar aşağıdaki gibidir:*

a. *'Each' aynı zamanda zamir olduğundan 'each of' ve 'each one of' şeklinde kullanılabilir. Fakat 'every' bir zamir değildir. 'Every of' şeklinde kullanılamaz, ancak 'every one of' şeklinde kullanılabilir.*

- ***Each of the students** in my class is very smart and successful.*
  *~~**Every of**~~ **the students** in my class is very smart and successful.*
  ***Every one of the students** in my class is very smart and successful.*

b. *'Every'den sonra bir rakam getirilerek arkasından çoğul isim kullanılabilir. 'Each' bu şekilde kullanılmaz.*

- *She goes abroad **every six months**. (~~each six months~~)*

c. *'Every' kelimesi 'nearly', 'almost' gibi başka bir kelime ile nitelenebilir. Fakat 'each' bu şekilde nitelenmez.*

- *I went out **almost every night** when I was on holiday. (~~almost each night~~)*

17. **Either:** İki nesne, kişi veya durumdan bahsederken kullanılır. Cümlenin anlamına göre 'ikisinden biri' ya da 'her ikisi de' şeklinde Türkçeye çevrilebilir.

either + tekil isim

- I can buy **either dress**, they are both chic and look elegant.
  (Elbiselerin ikisinden birini ...)
- I don't really like **either offer** that I have received but I will have to choose one.
  (İşlerin her ikisini de ...)
- Before they build the bridge, the engineers will construct large towers on **either side** of the river.
- She can choose **either side** of the city to live on, since they are both close to her workplace.
- Joan decided to major in Politics instead of Literature but actually she could study **either one**.

18. **Neither:** İki nesne, kişi veya durumdan bahsederken kullanılır. 'İkisi de değil, hiçbiri' şeklinde Türkçeye çevrilebilir. Cümleye olumsuz anlam kattığı için sadece olumlu cümlelerde kullanılabilir.

neither + tekil isim

- I don't think I'll buy anything. **Neither shirt** looks like you could breathe in it.
- **Neither group** is willing to sit down and negotiate with the other, so the violence will continue.
- **Neither man** can make a good coffee, so they always ask me to do it.
- They made big promises, but **neither country** actually did much to reduce pollution.

⚠ **Not** *'Neither' ve 'none' arasındaki fark; 'neither'ın iki şeyden bahsederken, 'none'ın ise en az üç şeyden bahsederken kullanılmasıdır.*

- *My sister has got two necklaces and **neither** is cheap. (İki kolye olduğu belirtildiği için 'neither' kullanılması gerekir; 'none' kullanılamaz.)*
- *We went to six concerts last year but we liked **none**. (Altı konsere gidildiği belirtildiği için 'none' yerine 'neither' kullanılamaz.)*

19. **Both:** İki nesne, kişi veya durumdan bahsederken kullanılır. 'Her ikisi de' şeklinde Türkçeye çevrilir.

both + çoğul isim

- **Both my co-workers** are Indian and they are teaching me a lot about their culture.
- We decided that we would go to **both the Friday night and the Saturday night concerts**.
- **Both my parents** have their master's degrees and work in a university.
- **Both my bicycle and my flatmate's** had flat tyres when we rode over broken glass.

⚠ **Not** *'Both' anlatımı daha vurgulu hale getirmek için özne zamirleri ve nesne zamirlerinden sonra kullanılabilir.*

- *They **both** will try harder to become better at cooking.*
- *We wanted to see them **both**, but neither of them had any time.*

⚠ **Not** *'Both' ve 'all' arasındaki fark; 'neither' ve 'none' arasındaki fark gibidir. 'Both' iki şeyden bahsederken, 'all' ise en az üç şeyden bahsederken kullanılır.*

- *Mr and Mrs Johnson have two grandchildren, **both** of whom study Chemistry at university.*
  (İki torun olduğu belirtildiğinden 'both' yerine 'all' kullanılamaz.)
- *She has four brothers and she loves **all** of them equally.*
  (Dört erkek kardeş olduğu belirtildiğinden 'all' yerine 'both' kullanılamaz.)

5 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with 'each', 'every', 'either', 'neither' or 'both'.

1. If the President can't fulfil ___________________ promise he declared before, he will lose a lot of support.
2. Friday and Saturday may be suitable for you but ___________________ day is fine with me.
3. In my company, ___________________ employee gets their own health insurance and dental plan.
4. ___________________ my kids failed one of their classes this year and have to go to summer school.
5. Henry could pick John to do the job excluding Jeremy, but he could choose ___________________.
6. I have three dogs that all came from the same mother, but ___________________ has a different personality.
7. Plenty of people like Apple products but I think that ___________________ product they sell is overpriced.
8. Jason and Sarah offered to take me out but I don't really want to go out with ___________________.
9. When it comes to fast food, some people prefer pizza and others prefer burgers, but I love them ___________________.
10. ___________________ year, my family and I go on holiday together to an island or somewhere with a beach.

20. **A good / great deal of:** Türkçeye 'çok, birçok, çok miktarda, pek çok' şeklinde çevrilirler. Bu iki yapının ardından da sayılamayan isim gelir.

a good / great deal of + sayılamayan isim

- We have spent **a great deal of money** fixing up the old house and now it looks great!
- Fans of the movie are going to have to wait **a good deal of time** for its sequel to come out.
- Our boss told us that we would need to do **a great deal of planning** before we move forward with the project.

21. **Most:** Türkçeye 'çok, birçok, çok miktarda, pek çok' şeklinde çevrilir. 'Most', kendisinden sonra hem çoğul hem de sayılamayan bir isim alabilir.

most + çoğul isim / sayılamayan isim

- **Most poor parents** can't send their children to school because of high fees.
- **Most information** we get is badly presented or incomprehensible.
- Execution is not legal in **most developed countries** in the world, except for some like the USA.
- **Most drivers** stop at zebra crossings in this country.

Not

Bazı miktar belirten kelimeler sadece bir ismi nitelemek amacıyla bir ismin önünde kullanılmazlar. Aynı zamanda bir ismin yerini tutarak zamir olarak da tek başlarına kullanılabilirler. Bu kelimeler;

a. *Some;* ▶ *I have baked plenty of cookies in the oven. Would you like* ***some****?*
▶ ***Some*** *think that we should be less dependent on technology.*
▶ *If you want to take a bit of money to shop, I'll give you* ***some****.*

b. *Any;* ▶ *Alicia: Do you have* ***any*** *mints?*
Bobby: Sorry, I don't think I have ***any*** *today.*

c. *Several;* ▶ *There isn't just one city affected by the power cuts, there are* ***several****.*

d. *Many;* ▶ *Alicia : Do you need* ***any*** *more jackets for the winter?*
Bobby : No thanks, I have ***many****.*

e. *Much;* ▶ *Alicia : Do you want* ***some*** *milk in your tea?*
Victor: Yes, please but not ***much****.*

f. *Most;* ▶ *Some teachers think old methods of teaching are better but* ***most*** *are in favour of the newest ones.*

g. *All;* ▶ ***All*** *were happy with the service and enjoyed the night.*

h. *Both;* ▶ ***Both*** *are good options but I think that we should go with the first one.*
▶ *People who want to work at this company need to know either Chinese or Japanese, or* ***both*** *are better.*

i. *Either;* ▶ *Amelia: What kind of chocolate do you want, bitter or white?*
Victor: ***Either*** *is fine. I like them both.*

j. *Neither;* ▶ ***Neither*** *agrees that we should go ahead with this plan of action.*

k. *Each;* ▶ *There are five irons,* ***each*** *equipped with the latest technology.*

l. *(A) few;* ▶ *Don't bring all the plates. Just* ***a few*** *will do.*

m. *(A) little;* ▶ ***A little*** *is known about the author of this book.*

n. *Plenty;* ▶ *If you want a drink, grab one from the refrigerator; we have* ***plenty****.*

o. *A lot;* ▶ *Bobby : How many pencils have you got?*
Victor : ***A lot****.*

3 Miktar Belirten Kelimelerin 'of' ve Fiillerle Kullanımı

1. Kendisinden sonra 'of + tekil isim + tekil fiil' alan yapılar:

all of	+	tekil isim	+	tekil fiil	(-ın / -in hepsi)
half of					(-ın / -in yarısı)
most of					(-ın / -in çoğu)
much of					(-ın / -in çoğu)
the whole of					(-ın / -in tamamı)

- Not **all of their theatrical performance** was flawless.
- **Half of the garden** has been developed from an old landfill site and is not suitable for a construction.
- **Most of the apartment** is carpeted but the kitchen and dining room have hard wood floors.
- **Much of the book** is a dull, repetitive recording of bloody battles between the Russians and the Greeks.
- **The whole of the wooden house** has dried completely and the moisture content of the timbers is 16% or less.

2. Kendisinden sonra 'of + çoğul isim + tekil fiil' alan yapılar:

any of	+	çoğul isim	+	tekil fiil	(-ın / -in hiçbiri)
every one of					(-ın / -in hepsi)
each (one) of					(-ın / -in her biri)
one of					(-ın / -in biri)

- I didn't know that **any of the teachers** was going to go there.
- **Every one of the students** is required to take the final test.
- **Each (one) of the candidates** has said they support our shared values.
- What is the probability that **one of the children** has the disease?

⚠ **Not**

'Every' bir zamir olmadığından; 'every of' diye bir kullanımı yoktur. Diğer bir deyişle, 'every'den sonra mutlaka bir isim kullanılmalıdır.

- *every one of the pupils (✓)*
  ~~every of~~ the pupils (✗)

3. **Kendisinden sonra** ‘of + çoğul isim + çoğul fiil’ **alan yapılar:**

(a) few of	+	çoğul isim	+	çoğul fiil	(-ın / -in birkaçı)
a lot / lots of					(birçok)
a number of					(-ın / -in birkaçı)
all of					(-ın / -in hepsi)
both of					(-ın / -in ikisi de)
many of					(-ın / -in çoğu)
most of					(-ın / -in çoğu)
plenty of					(-ın / -in çoğu)
several of					(-ın / -in birkaçı)
some of					(-ın / -in bazıları)

- **A few of the author’s novels** were translated into over fifteen languages.
- **A lot of roads** were closed and it was tough to get around.
- **A number of companies** are working on ways to reduce the cost of electricity.
- **All of the lights** were artificial, crafted to recreate the natural light we were missing.
- **Both of my sisters** have been living abroad since the civil war.
- **Many of the cartoons** were incredibly dull and the funniest ones weren’t included in the compilation.
- Over the years, **most of her novels** have been serialised for the screen.
- **Plenty of women** who were single in the 19th century wrote about their desire to evade marriage.
- **Several of my friends** are going to Rio for two weeks during carnival.
- **Some of the answers** were sound but the majority were unsatisfactory.

4. **Kendisinden sonra** ‘of + çoğul isim + tekil / çoğul fiil’ **alan yapılar:**

either (one) of	+	çoğul isim	+	tekil / çoğul fiil	(-ın / -in ikisinden biri) (-ın / -in her ikisi)
neither (one) of					(-ın / -in ikisi de (değil))
none of					(-ın / -in hiçbiri)

- There was no word on whether **either of the children** was / were injured.
- **Neither of my grandparents** was / were ever charged with any crimes.
- **None of his old friends** was / were allowed to visit him; even his parents had been ordered out of the room.

5. **Kendisinden sonra** ‘of + sayılamayan isim + tekil fiil’ **alan yapılar:**

(a) little of	+	sayılamayan isim	+	tekil fiil	(-ın / -in azı)
a good / great deal of					(-ın / -in çoğu)
a lot / lots of					(çok)
all of					(-ın / -in hepsi)
any of					(hiç)
most of					(-ın / -in çoğu)
much of					(-ın / -in çoğu)
none of					(hiç)
plenty of					(-ın / -in çoğu)
some of					(-ın / -in birazı)

- **Little of the milk** was used for drinking while **a good deal of it** was used for baking cookies.
- The new shampoo was a flop though **a lot of money** was spent on advertising it.
- At the end of 1992, **all of his time** was spent writing and recording for his band.
- **Any of the band’s music** has never failed my listening pleasure.
- **Most of the water** is used locally in eastern California and western Nevada for irrigation.
- **Much of the oil** has already vanished from surface waters, and so far the most visible effects have been the oiled seabirds.
- **None of the sugar** was added during processing and there are no artificial sweeteners contained in the jelly.
- **Plenty of information** has been published on the subject of developing successful research proposals.
- I noticed **some of the money** was stolen and I called the police immediately to investigate the case.
- **Some of the cheese** was on the table in the balcony and it was taken away by the birds while we were in the kitchen.

1 REVISION:
Choose the correct option.

1. **We won ---- set of tea cups in a competition last week. ---- set looks really good.**

A) a / The
B) the / A

2. **I think that ---- the students here don't actually have any interest in the subject.**

A) every
B) most of

3. **You can go and look at the gym if you want, but I'm sure there are ---- membership plans that you can afford.**

A) none
B) no

4. **I have ---- friends who are adventurous and like to plan hiking trips and similar activities.**

A) much
B) many

5. **Make sure that you bring ---- water when you go climbing, otherwise you might get dehydrated.**

A) plenty of
B) either

6. **---- my parents are very good cooks, but my father enjoys cooking more.**

A) Either
B) Both

7. **There are ---- of great degrees you can choose to do when you get to university.**

A) plenty of
B) every

8. **I have ---- appointments to go to, so I will be very busy driving around today.**

A) several
B) none

9. **---- of the dresses I have seen today are any good, so I will have to go shopping again tomorrow.**

A) Any
B) None

10. Clara has ---- really nice husband and I am happy that she met him.

A) a B) the

11. We were going to have a lot of people over for dinner, so we chose to buy a ---- turkey to cook in the oven.

A) whole B) several

12. ---- of the seats on the flight were already full by the time we tried to book.

A) Whole B) All

13. ---- of the people had come to join the protest while others just happened to be in that area.

A) Any B) Some

14. I will have only ---- time tonight to work on my assignment when I get home.

A) a little B) a number of

15. I only ate ---- bit of the pasta that my roommate cooked, so hopefully she won't notice.

A) a number of B) a little

16. ---- blue whale is the largest animal that lives on our planet.

A) The B) A

17. ---- of the boats in the harbour was in a different colour and had different flags raised.

A) Each B) Both

18. In our society, ---- person is supposed to have the same rights as everybody else.

A) each B) whole

19. I don't have ---- outfits that I really want to wear to the ceremony tonight.

A) every B) any

20. Some people think that it is bad luck if ---- black cat crosses your path on a Friday.

A) the B) a

DETERMINERS

TEST 1

1. There are ---- Indian people who move to countries like Saudi Arabia to work.

A) neither
B) any
C) much
D) many
E) either

2. Apparently, the ---- company is owned and run by a single family.

A) no
B) whole
C) none
D) plenty of
E) much

3. I think that ---- option would be fine with me, so I will leave it up to you to decide.

A) whole
B) a few
C) either
D) many
E) all

4. I had ---- idea that my friend was in the hospital, so I rushed to visit him as soon as I found out.

A) most
B) several
C) a little
D) no
E) some

5. She tried to carry ---- of her shopping bags into the house at the same time but ended up dropping half of them.

A) a great deal of
B) whole
C) a lot of
D) each
E) all

6. She asked her two co-workers for help but ---- of them had any time to help her.

A) none
B) either
C) plenty of
D) neither
E) both

7. We spent far too ---- time at the pool and now we are going to be late for dinner.

A) much
B) all
C) no
D) a little
E) some

8. I always feel ---- bit nervous when I'm on a flight and the plane approaches the runway to land.

A) neither
B) several
C) a little
D) a good deal of
E) most

9. We have heard several rumours that George has been fired, but ---- of them have been confirmed yet.

A) most
B) a number of
C) none
D) no
E) every

10. There are ---- ways for a website to make money, such as through advertisements.

A) any
B) plenty of
C) some of
D) every
E) all

11. The police force stationed an officer in front of ---- entrance to the subway in case of an attack.

A) both
B) neither
C) each
D) no
E) every

12. Daniel knew that the store he was looking for was probably just ---- blocks away but he was too tired to keep looking.

A) whole
B) all
C) much
D) any
E) a few

13. ---- people avoid drinking energy drinks because of their high sugar content.

A) A lot of
B) No
C) Any
D) Plenty
E) Neither

14. ---- people spotted the famous actor going out to have breakfast with his children.

A) Either
B) A lot
C) Much
D) A number of
E) Any

15. ---- of the companies that I invested my money in has failed. As you see, I am broke now.

A) Little
B) Each
C) Much
D) Neither
E) Either

16. The owners of ---- the houses that was robbed were away on holiday at the time of the crime.

A) a few
B) each of
C) whole
D) every
E) a number

17. ---- of the people studying this major just want to get a high paying job at the end of it.

A) A good deal of
B) None
C) Most
D) No
E) A little

18. Excuse me! I would like to have ---- more of these cheese sticks, please.

A) much
B) a little
C) some
D) many
E) whole

19. ---- people are still missing after the hurricane passed through this area a few days ago.

A) Several
B) All
C) Whole
D) Any
E) Much

20. We haven't had ---- complaints from customers yet, but I think we will soon.

A) a few
B) no
C) neither
D) both
E) any

DETERMINERS

TEST 2

1. **Mary wants to wear ---- dress she saw on the shop window the other day and she insists that's what she wants though it costs ---- money.**

A) -- / much
B) a / a few
C) the / no
D) the / a lot of
E) a / several

2. **What university did David go to? He seems to be really good at ---- things in the company.**

A) many
B) much
C) a little
D) whole
E) none

3. **The inspector has started the search for ---- fourteen-year-old girl yesterday. They have ---- pictures of her, nor do they know her exact age.**

A) an / any
B) the / none
C) a / some
D) the / many
E) a / no

4. **Megan has been seen in a white dress, ---- white trainers and ---- sunglasses she has never worn before.**

A) an / the
B) the / --
C) the / a
D) -- / the
E) a / the

5. **---- parents don't understand what their teenage daughter or son is going through and have hot arguments with them for nothing.**

A) Both of
B) Most
C) A little
D) Much
E) A lot

6. **Matthew tried to give Sally ---- love he had in him but it wasn't enough for her and she left him soon after they got married.**

A) both
B) most
C) all the
D) none
E) several

7. **Jean and Max went on ---- trip to Nepal two years ago and they ---- got back ten kilos less. Obviously they walked everywhere.**

A) a / both
B) an / neither
C) a / either
D) the / all
E) the / neither

8. **When the presidents and the prime ministers came together for the Economic Forum in Davos, ---- of the world leaders were in favour of Donald Trump and they tried to avoid him.**

A) some
B) most
C) many
D) neither
E) none

9. **---- Bahamas are a set of small islands but they are all considered one country and ---- main income of the inhabitants come from tourism.**

A) The / the
B) -- / --
C) The / --
D) -- / all
E) -- / the

10. **My friend offered to take me on ---- holiday to ---- Morocco and I don't know how to thank her for this amazing gift.**

A) an / the
B) -- / the
C) a / --
D) the / the
E) -- / a

11. Adam : You need to tell us how you prefer to travel to Sweden. By train or by plane?
Barry : ---- way is good for me because I like them ----.

A) Either / none
B) Neither / both
C) All / neither
D) Either / both
E) None / all

12. This is their property, so they decide what happens to it and you have ---- right to build anything on it without their permission.

A) all
B) no
C) both
D) every
E) none

13. ---- article is a piece of reading material which is supposed to supply you with ---- kind of knowledge on a specific scientific matter.

A) A / some
B) The / any
C) An / all
D) The / every
E) An / some

14. Those boxes you see over there were supposed to be delivered this morning but ---- delivery guy never showed up and he ignored my calls ---- day long.

A) -- / a
B) the / all
C) a / half
D) the / whole
E) an / the

15. How many hours you sleep ---- night has a huge impact on your overall health, so you had better get enough sleep ---- day.

A) a / every
B) the / either
C) an / little
D) a / both
E) a / no

16. Jim spends ---- of his money on clothes and he boasts of being fashionable and trendy.

A) none
B) many
C) little
D) a lot
E) neither

17. The ingredients for this cake are ---- basic ones for any cake like some flour, some sugar and ---- eggs.

A) each / a lot
B) the / much
C) the / a few
D) some / most
E) a / few

18. The artist died unexpectedly and left ---- of his artwork unfinished, so the gallery hired several artists to finish ---- piece.

A) half / no
B) most / all
C) half / each
D) some / neither
E) both / a few

19. The ultraviolet rays all come from ---- Sun and they are dangerous. However there are ---- ways to protect yourself from them like the sunglasses.

A) a / few
B) -- / each
C) the / both
D) -- / a few
E) the / a few

20. Japanese is ---- most interesting cultures I have ever seen and the food likewise has been ---- interesting adventure for me.

A) one of the / a
B) some of the / an
C) little of the / much
D) none of the / the
E) one of the / an

PREPOSITIONS

12 PREPOSITIONS

Türkçede edatlar, tek başına bir anlam taşımayan fakat cümle içinde anlam kazanan, kelimeler arasında çeşitli anlam ilgileri kuran sözcüklerdir. Genellikle bağlaçlar ile karıştırılabilen edatlar; bağlaçların aksine, iki cümleciği bağlamaz, onlarla anlam ilişkisi kurarlar. '-e göre, gibi, ile, -e rağmen' gibi örneklere baktığımızda; hiçbirinin kendi başına bir anlamı olmadığını fakat 'Oradan dönmem imkansız gibi bir şey.', 'Durumumu bilmesine rağmen davranışına devam etti.' gibi cümlelerde kullanıldıklarında anlam kazandıklarını ve cümlenin anlamını değiştirdiklerini görebiliriz.

İngilizcede aynı anlama gelen birden fazla 'preposition' (edat) olabileceği gibi; bir 'preposition' (edat) farklı anlamlarda ve durumlarda kullanılabilir.

Genel anlamıyla; edatlar (prepositions) isimlerden, zamirlerden, isimleşmiş fiillerden (gerund) ve isim cümleciklerinden önce kullanılırlar.

- All my friends are **on** holiday. *(İsim)*
- They are worried **about** him. *(Zamir)*
- She is keen **on** watching black and white films. *(Gerund)*
- I'm curious **about** what she thinks. *(İsim cümleciği)*

Edatların (prepositions) doğru kullanımı, çok uzun zaman gerektiren zorlu bir uğraştır. Ancak edatların anlamlarını öğrenerek ve sık kullanılan 'edat + isim', 'sıfat + edat' ve 'fiil + edat' bileşimlerini ezberleyerek ya da otantik dile olabildiğince fazla maruz kalarak önemli bir mesafe katedebilirsiniz.

Edatlar ve Anlamları

about	*hakkında*	I am concerned about my future.
above	*üstünde*	Mountains are above the sea level.
across	*karşı tarafında, karşı tarafına*	The new school is across the bridge.
after	*-den sonra*	I will come after the lesson.
against	*karşı; aykırı*	Smoking here is against the law.
all over	*her yerinde, her yerde*	The students came from all over the world.
along	*boyunca*	Walk along the street.
among(st)	*ikiden fazla şeyin arasında*	There is an on-going debate among the members.
(a)round	*etrafında*	They sat (a)round the table.
as	*olarak*	She will attend the meeting as an engineer.
at	*-de, -da*	Everybody was at the meeting.

away from	*uzağa, uzağa doğru*	I have gone away from my family a long time ago.
before	*-den önce*	It was a beautiful city before the war.
behind	*arkasında, arkada*	The little girl hid behind the curtains.
below	*altında*	They discovered a cave below the sea level.
beneath	*altında, alt tarafta*	Some bird species live beneath the ground.
beside	*yanında, yanı başında*	She stood beside my desk all day long.
between	*iki şeyin ya da kişinin arasında*	This will stay between you and me.
beyond	*ötesinde*	There were two villages beyond the mountains.
by	*ile*	I will go by bus.
	-erek, -arak	You can get over this problem by practising.
	yanında	I want you to stay by my side.
	-den önce	She will be here by Tuesday.
despite	*-e rağmen*	I wasn't successful despite my efforts.
down	*aşağıda, aşağısında*	The shop is located down the street.
during	*sırasında, boyunca*	I was always a good student during my education.
for	*için*	She will do anything for her country.
	-dir, -dır, boyunca, süresince	She will stay there for ten weeks.
from	*-den, -dan*	They will get their money from the company.
in	*içinde*	There were ten gifts in the box.
	-de, -da	She is in class now.
in front of	*önüne, önünde*	Can you wait for me in front of the building?
inside	*içinde, içerisinde, içerisine*	There were ten guns hidden inside the house.
into	*-e, -a, içine*	She will translate this into Turkish.
like	*gibi*	I have always wanted to be a guy like my father.
near	*yakınında*	There are no factories near the city centre.
nearby	*yakında, civarında, yakın bir mesafede*	She will run a café nearby.
next to	*bitişik, yanına, yakınına*	The cat sat next to the door all day.
of	*-nin, -nın*	The President is seen as the future of the country.

off	*uzağında, uzağa*	Stay off the coast and watch the waves.
on	*üstünde, yüzeyinde* *-de, -da ; hakkında*	There were stains on the wall. She will be back at work on Monday.
onto	*üstüne, üzerine doğru*	The baby fell onto the rocks.
opposite	*karşı karşıya, karşıt, zıt*	The bakery is opposite the hospital.
outside	*dışında, dışarıya, dışına*	Can you wait outside the cinema?
out of	*dışarı, dışarıya, uzağa*	They threw the heater out of the room.
over	*üzerinde, üzerine* *boyunca*	There are clouds over the city. The tree blossomed over the period of a year.
past	*bir noktayı geçince*	Turn right past the police station.
since	*-den beri*	I have been expecting this since the beginning of the semester.
till	*-e kadar*	We have to stay awake till morning.
to	*-e, -a*	The shop will be open from nine to five.
through	*içinde(n)* *sayesinde*	You must walk through the forest. We managed to make this a success through her contributions.
throughout	*her yerinde; boyunca*	There are rebellious groups throughout the world.
towards	*-e doğru*	The mountains get higher towards the end of the country.
under / underneath	*altında*	She must be hiding money under / underneath the pillow.
unlike	*aksine*	I am very sanitary unlike my mother.
until	*-e kadar*	Keep her awake until the morning.
up	*yukarı, yukarıya doğru*	She tried to climb up the trees and fell many times.
upon	*üzerinde; hakkında*	We shouldn't discuss upon the subject.
up to	*-e kadar*	The workers work up to fifteen hours a day.
with	*ile, beraber*	I will only be better at this with your help.
within	*içinde, içerisinde*	She will be here within an hour.
without	*-sız, olmadan*	There is no place you can go without money.

A PREPOSITIONS OF TIME (Zaman Bildiren Edatlar)

1 In : (-de / -da) Ay, yıl, mevsim gibi uzun zaman dilimleri ile kullanılır.

(in August, in 1965, in the afternoon, in winter, in the past year, etc.)

- Back **in** the early 2000's, the company started to move into international markets.
- I hope that I will be able to take some time off work **in** January to visit my parents.
- We are buying lots of firewood so that **in** winter we will be able to keep the fire going.

2 On : (-de / -da) Günlerle kullanılır.

(on Sunday, on Thursday, on her birthday, on 25th April 1933, on the 5th of May, etc.)

- **On** Saturday, all of us are going to get together and go to a seafood restaurant for dinner.
- **On** the 6th of June in 1944, the Allied Forces started their attack against German forces.
- We are going to have a meeting **on** the 20th of this month with one of our most important clients.

⚠ Not

'In time' ile 'on time' arasındaki farka dikkat edilmelidir. 'In time' kalıbı 'vaktinde' anlamına gelir ve yapılacak eylemin belirtilen zamandan önce de olabileceğini anlatır. 'On time' kalıbı ise 'tam zamanında' anlamı verir .

- *My friend, Jim, is never **on time** to work these days.*
  (Just at the start of the work)
- *I hope that my family finishes packing soon, so we will be **in time** for our flight today.*
- *I got back to my house just **in time** to see the fire starting in the kitchen.*
  (Maybe it was a little early but I was there to see the event.)
- *We made it to the shops just **in time** to buy something before it closed for the night.*
- *If my flight leaves **on time**, I will be able to catch the 6 o'clock ferry.*

3 At : (-de / -da) Zaman içerisinde belli bir nokta ifade ederken kullanılır.

(at 5 o'clock, at dinner time, at night, at Christmas, at weekends, at present, at the age of 40, etc.)

- I plan to get out of work **at** 4 o'clock today so that I can go to the dentist.
- The entrepreneur started a successful business **at** the age of 60, which was amazing.
- We are going to go swimming **at** the end of the day today if it is still warm.
- I don't have a lot to do **at** weekends, so I usually stay in and relax.

4 **For** : (-dır / -dir, boyunca, süresince) Yapılan eylemin toplam süresini belirli zaman birimleriyle ifade eder.

(for five days, for a while, for eight months, for the last two summers, etc.)

- I have not ordered pizza to my house **for** a long time.
- We have been waiting **for** 45 minutes for the train to leave so far.
- They told me that I would probably have to wait **for** a while before they called me.

5 **Since** : (-den beri) Yapılan eylemin başlangıç noktasını belirtir.

(since 2004, since April, since last year, etc.)

- I have not visited my cousin in Rome **since** 2002.
- We have been working very hard on this new project **since** May.
- **Since** World War Two, the gap between rich people and poor people has been growing in Western countries.

6 **From ... to / till / until ...** : (...-den ...-e kadar) Bir şeyin başlangıcından sonuna kadar geçen süreyi anlatır.

(from Wednesday till Saturday, from January to March, etc.)

- **From** January **till** March, I will be away on a long business trip in Europe.
- The new park will be open **from** July in 2018 **to** August that same year.
- I have been coughing **from** last month **until** this month.

7 **During** : (esnasında, sırasında, boyunca)

(during last month, during his journey, etc.)

- **During** my stay in Paris, I learned to speak French quite well.
- I usually listen to an audiobook **during** my morning drive to work.
- The Soviet Union and America never fought each other directly **during** the Cold War.

8 **Toward(s)** : (-e doğru)

(towards Sunday, toward the end of the last century, etc.)

- Hopefully humans will have landed on Mars, sometime **towards** the end of the 2020's.
- I usually work really hard on Monday and Tuesday, then less hard as we go **towards** Friday.
- You should really work hard on your studies as you are heading **towards** the end of the semester.

9 **After** : (-den sonra)

(after 7 o'clock, after the storm, after Tuesday, etc.)

- **After** six years of living in China, I think I am ready to move somewhere different.
- **After** two hours of waiting on hold, I decided to just hang up the phone.
- We decided to go home from the beach **after** four hours.

10 **Before** : (-den önce)

(before Christmas, before the election, before Wednesday, etc.)

- I need to try and finish all of my homework **before** Friday night this week.
- The town hired extra construction workers to try and finish the road works **before** the end of the year.
- We should probably leave this part of the city **before** nightfall as it can become dangerous.

11 **Throughout** : (boyunca)

(throughout 1980, throughout the day, etc.)

- **Throughout** the 90s, many new technology companies became very successful.
- We have had many calls complaining about our new advert **throughout** the day today.
- **Throughout** my childhood, I always liked to dress up in different clothes and try new things.

12 **Until / Till** : (-e kadar) Eylemin belirtilen zamana kadar devam ettiğini anlatır.

(until 5 o'clock, until Saturday, till tomorrow, till next month, etc.)

- John won't be able to go to work **until** next week because he has broken his leg.
- **Until** Friday, we should focus on finishing painting the walls, and then we can move the furniture in.
- I don't think we should watch any more of this show **till** next weekend.

13 **By** : (-e kadar = not later than / at or before) Eylemin en geç sözü edilen zamana kadar gerçekleşeceğini anlatır. Eylem belirtilen zamandan önce de bitebilir.

(by 5:30, by yesterday, by the end of the year, etc.)

- Layton's friend told him to be at the restaurant **by** 6:30 p.m. the following evening.
- I hope that we will find a new apartment to move into **by** the end of the month.
- She will come here to pick up her daughter **by** the end of the last lesson, won't she?

14 **Between ... and ...** : (... ve ... arasında)

(between 10 and 12 o'clock, between Tuesday and Sunday, etc.)

- There were many customers **between** 1 **and** 3 p.m. but not many in the morning.
- The weather is always lovely and warm **between** March **and** July.
- **Between** 2006 **and** 2008 Sam worked for a company which installed solar panels.

15 **Within** : (içinde / içerisinde)

(within the next six hours, within eight months, within three hours, etc.)

- I hope that they will finish installing our new kitchen **within** the next few days.
- With any luck, I will be promoted to manager **within** a month or two.
- The alarm company has told us that if the alarm goes off, the police will be at our house **within** minutes.

1 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions of time.

1. ____________________ Sunday, we are going to go on a fishing trip on a boat that we have hired.
2. I have had many health problems lately and have been to the doctor six times ____________________ the start of the year.
3. ____________________ history, people have always found a reason to kill each other.
4. ____________________ three years of working at this job, which I hate, I am ready to quit.
5. I hope that ____________________ February I will be able to do a lot of running and hopefully get in better shape.
6. I don't think that I will wake up ____________________ at least 10 a.m. tomorrow morning.
7. My family always likes to go away ____________________ the summer vacation and stay somewhere by the sea.
8. I hope that his hand will be better ____________________ the next few days, so we will be able to play tennis together.
9. Jane always gets really nice presents from her grandparents ____________________ her birthday.
10. ____________________ the hottest times of summer, we usually stay inside with the air conditioning on.

2 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions of time.

1. The ski fields will only be open ____________________ the middle of winter ____________________ the end.

2. They built the monument to remember the soldiers in the town square ____________________ 1997.

3. There have not been any major crimes in this town ____________________ January last year.

4. ____________________ the summer, I like to go running on the beach rather than at the gym.

5. The receptionist told me that I could not make an appointment any time ____________________ next Monday.

6. We are going to see the new action movie, which starts playing ____________________ 6:30 p.m. tonight.

7. ____________________ Wednesday ____________________ Friday, we are going to be very busy at work.

8. I am planning to finish my thesis for my master's degree ____________________ the end of this year.

9. The kids should be done with their football game ____________________ 3 o'clock, so I will go and pick them up then.

10. I have been reading the same book ____________________ almost three months now and it feels like I will never finish.

B PREPOSITIONS OF PLACE AND MOVEMENT (Yer ve Hareket Bildiren Edatlar)

1 In : (içinde)

(in a mall, in London, in a book, in the application form, in the air, etc.)

- The tallest building **in** the world in 2017 was **in** Dubai.
- Saturn is the second largest planet **in** the solar system.
- The earliest memory I have from when I was a child is playing **in** the garden.
- Susan gets very frightened when her plane is taking off, but she is fine once she is **in** the air.

2 On : (üstünde, yüzeyinde)

(on the Moon, on page 13, on the third floor, on a farm, on the table, etc.)

- The professor told us to look **on** page 354 of our textbook to see the diagram.
- The author decided that he would live **on** a boat for a month.
- If you go into my room, you will find that there are many clothes **on** the floor.

Not *'On' edatı 'konusunda, hakkında' anlamında da kullanılabilir.*

- *The guest speaker gave a talk* ***on*** *economics.*
- *The history student decided that she would write her paper* ***on*** *the French Revolution.*
- *Most of the conversations at dinner when I am with my family are focused* ***on*** *politics.*

3 **At** : (-da, -de) Belirli bir noktada bulunma ifade eder.

(at college, at the hairdresser's, at the doctor's, at the entrance, at the meeting, etc.)

- I have been waiting **at** the doctor's office for 30 minutes so far, but he is still very busy.
- We have arranged to meet **at** the entrance of the park tomorrow.
- **At** the bottom of the statue, there is a small board with some information on it.

Not *Kapalı bir mekanın köşesinden söz ederken 'in the corner', açık bir mekanın köşesinden söz ederken 'at / on the corner' kullanılır.*

(In the corner of a room, at / on the corner of a building)

- *There was a huge dog* ***on / at the corner*** *of the street which scared the little children.*
- *The TV unit was set* ***in the corner*** *of the room, which made it easier for everyone to see the screen.*

4 **To** : (-a, -e) Yönelme anlatır.

(to school, to the garden, to the street, to a restaurant, etc.)

- As it would be faster, we decided to take the train **to** Berlin.
- When I was twelve, my family left New York and we moved **to** the countryside.
- If you want to make a call **to** someone in a different country, it will cost more.

5 **From** : (-dan, -den) Bir yerden ayrılan, uzaklaşan, bir yerden başlayan, hareket eden veya yola çıkan anlamlarında kullanılabilir.

(from the town, from his work, from the bank, etc.)

- This ATM isn't working, so I will have to get money **from** somewhere else.
- Yesterday we took a flight **from** Brazil all the way to Chile.
- Sometimes James sends emails **from** his car when he is stuck in traffic.

6 **Into** : (-e / -a, içine)

(into his pocket, into the cupboard, into the fridge, etc.)

- The girl crashed her car **into** a bush growing by the side of the road.
- We went **into** the abandoned house to see if we could find anything interesting.
- He stepped out from the cold building **into** the bright, warm sunshine.

7 **Out of** : (dışarı, dışarıya, uzağa)

(out of home, out of the building, out of the bank, out of the crowd, etc.)

- After shouting to him many times, the little dog finally came **out of** the woods.
- We decided that we would get **out of** the city for the weekend and go hiking.
- My father told me that I should get **out of** the house to get a better view of the parade.

8 **(A)round** : (etrafına, etrafında, çevresine, çevresinde, her bir yanına)

(around the house, around the neighbourhood, around the yard, etc.)

- There are many trees **around** the edge of our house that give us privacy.
- James could see that there were two or three houses **around** the lake.
- I don't think that we will find any good restaurants **around** this area.

9 **Beyond** : (ötesinde, ötesine, bir şeyin sınırları dışında)

(beyond the forest, beyond the other end of the street, beyond the horizon, etc.)

- The fireworks could be seen not just in the town but **beyond** the countryside.
- If you go **beyond** the trees over there, you will find the camping site.
- **Beyond** the mountains, there is a small lake that is good for swimming in the summer.

10 **By** : (yakınında, yanında, yanı başında)

(by the post office, by the riverbank, by the table, etc.)

- I have always dreamed of living in a house that is **by** the sea.
- Apparently we drove right **by** their house without even noticing it.
- There is a nice clothes shop **by** the little Japanese restaurant at the end of the street.

11 **Past** : (bir noktayı geçince)

(past the bakery, past the school, past the little shop in the corner, etc.)

- My younger brother walked right **past** me this morning without even saying 'hello'.
- As we drove **past** our old neighbourhood, we noticed that it had not changed much.
- I wanted to go **past** the ice cream parlour to see if it was still open.

12 **Through** : (içinden, arasından)

(through the hall, through the field, through the highway, etc.)

- The train passed **through** a huge tunnel on the side of the mountain.
- We walked **through** the mall, looking for somewhere to buy candy.
- Steven drove **through** the city but did not stop anywhere for food or rest.

Not *'Through' edatı 'aracılığıyla, vasıtasıyla' anlamlarında da kullanılabilir.*

- *I was able to get the job **through** my father, who knows the owner.*
- *Some viruses can pass from person to person **through** the air.*

13 **Across** : (bir taraftan diğer tarafa, karşıdan karşıya)

(across the hallway, across the highway, across the room, etc.)

- We walked **across** the bridge together, stopping in the middle to take a picture.
- If you go **across** the street, you will find the bus stop that you are looking for.
- There have been power cuts all **across** the city this week because of the heat.

14 **Along** : (boyunca)

(along the road, along the path, along the woods, etc.)

- Jenny walked **along** the side of the lake, listening to music on her smartphone.
- There was a lot of trash **along** the road, which looked disgusting.
- The cat walked **along** the side of the house slowly, looking for birds.

15 **Among(st)** : (arasında, ortasında (birçok öge için))

(among ten people, among the three native American tribes, among the elderly of the town, etc.)

- Sometimes I like to walk **among** the trees on the hills behind my house.
- Jane is the only one **among** us who has good enough grades to get a scholarship.
- Californian redwoods are **amongst** the tallest trees in the world.

16 **Between**: (arasında, ortasında (iki öge için))

(between the two ambassadors, between two armies, between the brother and the sister, etc.)

- Paul walks down an alleyway **between** two buildings on the way to work every day.
- There are not many pharmacies **between** here and the edge of the town.
- I hope that there is a gas station somewhere **between** the two cities that we can stop at.

Not *'Between' edatı eğer sayı veya isim verilmişse, ikiden fazla ögeden bahsederken de kullanılabilir.*

- *The children split the bread **between three of them** and they all ate their pieces with great pleasure.*
- *The fortune of the old man caused lots of family troubles **between five family members** when they sat down to divide it.*
- *The two world wars have been fought **between England, Germany, Italy** and **France**, the most well-known European countries.*

17 **Up** : (yukarı, yukarıya doğru)

(up the river, up in the sky, up the path towards the mountains, etc.)

- We walked **up** the hill and stopped at the café at the top for a coffee.
- They climbed **up** the mountain, which took them five hours.
- My baby daughter went **up** the stairs on her own for the first time yesterday.

18 **Down** : (aşağı, aşağıya, aşağıya doğru)

(down the steep road, down the stairs, down the street, etc.)

- The women climbed **down** the hill very quickly on her new bicycle.
- Walking **down** the stairs can be a good form of exercise if done properly.
- If you drive **down** the other side of the mountain, you will find the hotel at the bottom.

19 **Above** : (yukarısında, üstünde, (bir şeyden) daha yüksekte, (bir şeyden) daha fazla, daha çok)

(above the clouds, above the water, above the surface, etc.)

- Tyler looked up and noticed the security camera on the wall **above** his head.
- You can only pass the class if you score **above** 50% on the final exam.
- Sarah lay in bed listening to her neighbours' fighting in the apartment **above** her.

20 **Over** : ((tam) üzerinde, üzerine, üst tarafında)

(over her head, over the basketball court, over the sea surface, etc.)

- If you are driving **over** the speed limit, you may get a speeding ticket from the police.
- The man threw the bag of potatoes **over** his shoulder and carried them home.
- The road workers put some wooden boards **over** the hole to stop people falling in.

Not *'Over' farklı anlamlara gelecek şekilde kullanılabilir. Aşağıdaki örneklerde bu farklı kullanımlar gösterilmiştir.*

during

- *I hope that I learn lots of new and interesting things **over** the rest of the semester.*
- *I will be very busy **over** the next few days because I have a lot of work to do.*

more than

- *There are **over** fifteen different restaurants that deliver in this area.*
- *It has been **over** an hour since I first sat down in the doctor's waiting room.*

finished

- *The movie was starting to get a little bit boring, so I am glad that it is **over**.*
- *School is **over** for the summer, so we can relax and have fun for the next few months.*

Not *'Above' ve 'over' yapılarının her ikisi de farklı anlamlara gelecek şekilde kullanılabilir. Bazen aynı anlamı vermelerine rağmen, bazen anlam ve kullanım farklılıkları oluşabilir.*

'Higher than (daha yüksek)' anlamı varsa iki yapı da kullanılabilir.

- *Her score on the test was **over / above** 95%.*

'Covering (kaplayacak şekilde, kaplayarak)' anlamı varsa sadece 'over' kullanılır.

- *He held a hand **over** his mouth, so nobody could see that he was laughing.*
- *They put a small blanket **over** the wet kitten to keep it warm.*

'Measurement (ölçü)' ifade edildiğinde sadece 'above' kullanılır.

- *Rainfall this year has been **above** what scientists thought it would be.*

'Ages, speed (yaş, hız)' gibi ifadelerde 'more than (daha fazla)' anlamı varsa sadece 'over' kullanılır.

- *She was driving with a speed of **over** 60 kilometres per hour.*
- *You can only watch this movie if you are **over** 18 years old.*

21 **Below** : ((seviye olarak) altında, daha aşağıda)

(below the basement of the building, below the minimum age, below the speed limit, etc.)

- If you go to the basement **below** the ground floor, you can find all of our cleaning supplies.
- If the plane goes **below** a certain speed, it won't be able to stay at the same height.
- If your grade stays **below** 60% for this class, you will fail it.

22 **Under / Underneath** : (altında, altına, altından)

(under the stairs, under the sack, underneath the fabric over there, etc.)

- The paper you want is **under** the books on my desk. (= underneath the books)
- Sometimes we keep an extra key to the house **underneath** a pot plant. (= under a pot plant)
- We keep all our old furniture **under** the house in the basement. (= underneath the house)

23 **Beneath** : (aşağısında, altında, bir şeyden daha alt veya aşağı durumda)

(beneath the cloud-like look of the cotton fields, beneath the wooden floor, beneath the glass, etc.)

- The dolphins swam and played **beneath** the waves in the cool water.
- We lay on the grass in the park, **beneath** a big, green umbrella.
- As we flew over the city, we looked down at all the cars and buildings **beneath** us.

24 **Against** : (karşı) Bir yere yaslanma anlatır.

(against the ground, against the tree, against the wall, etc.)

- I leaned the ladder **against** the side of the house, so I could climb onto the roof.
- If you tap **against** the wall here, you can hear that there is an empty space inside it.
- My dog likes to push his head **against** my legs to let me know that he is hungry.

⚠ Not *'Against' edatı fikir ve görüşlerden bahsederken 'karşı, zıt' anlamında da kullanılabilir.*

- *Susan had always been **against** the Republican Party and never voted for them.*
- *I am **against** the death penalty because I don't think the government should kill its own people.*

25 **Opposite** : (karşı karşıya, karşıt, zıt)

(opposite the supermarket, opposite the border, opposite the sofa, etc.)

- We sat in a café **opposite** the movie theatre to wait for our friends.
- Jean sat on one side of the room and Sam sat on the **opposite** side.
- We were supposed to be on the north side of the island, but somehow we ended up on the **opposite** end.

26 **In front of** : (önüne, önünde)

(in front of the line, in front of the animal herd, in front of the book, etc.)

- There is a small store **in front of** my office where I usually buy snacks after work.
- I noticed that there were many police officers **in front of** the government building today.
- There are still three people **in front of** me in the queue for the post office.

27 **Behind** : (arkada, arkasında, geride, gerisinde)

(behind the tall man, behind the TV, behind the armchair over there, etc.)

- Our friends drove in a different car and followed **behind** us as we drove to the canyon.
- The women sat **behind** the help desk and answered everyone's questions.
- There is a small field **behind** the school where I sometimes play football with my friends.

28 **Beside** : (yanında, yakınında, yanı başında)

(beside the fence, beside the cows, beside the furniture in the empty room, etc.)

- There is a confectioner **beside** the restaurant where we can go for dessert.
- I always sit **beside** the smart students in class, so they can help me if I get stuck.
- We spent three days in a small resort **beside** the beach.

29 **Next to** : (bitişik, yanına, yakınına)

(next to the local store, next to India, next to an amusement park, etc.)

- The science labs can be found **next to** the library in my university.
- There is a house that has been for sale for about a year **next to** my house.
- I like to sit in the living room, **next to** the window when I study, so I can look out at the street.

30 **Near** : (yakın, yakınında)

(near the airport in the city centre, near the ice bucket, near the cockpit, etc.)

- My place is **near** the theatre, so we can all meet here before we go there.
- If you want to get your computer fixed, there is a repair store **near** here.
- My parents bought a new house that is **near** my grandparent's house.

31 **Nearby** : (yakında, civarında, yakın bir mesafede)

(nearby the police station, in a nearby call centre, nearby the river, etc.)

- There are many interesting countries **nearby** the one I would like to travel to.
- I was **nearby** the scene when the accident happened but I did not actually see it myself.
- There are a lot of cafés **nearby** my house, so I never have to go far for a coffee.

32 **Inside** : (içinde, içerisinde, içerisine)

(inside the cinema, inside the building, inside the cement mixture, etc.)

- The guard told us that we were not allowed to go **inside** the museum if we didn't have a ticket.
- Frank told his wife to wait **inside** the house while he went out and spoke to the police.
- Sometimes you can find pearls **inside** clam shells in the ocean.

33 **Outside** : (dışında, dışarıya, dışına)

(outside the hut, outside a village, outside the human body, etc.)

- There was a man **outside** your door, and I think he was trying to break in.
- I waited for the teacher **outside** the classroom to ask her some questions about the exam.
- Those who were **outside** their houses during the rain must have got really wet.

34 **Onto** : (üstüne, üzerine doğru)

(onto the bookshelf, onto the neighbour's car, onto the cat, etc.)

- I had to jump down **onto** the top of my car to get off the roof.
- Technically, students are not allowed to go **onto** the school grounds during the weekend.
- Some idiot from the crowd ran **onto** the football field in the middle of the game.

35 **Away from** : (uzağa, uzağa doğru)

(away from danger, away from urban life, away from the jungle, etc.)

- We decided to walk **away from** the protests in the city square in case they turned into a riot.
- I have been **away from** home for several weeks now on a business trip.
- There was a message on the radio today warning everyone to stay **away from** the eastern border.

36 **With** : (ile, beraber, yakınında, bir şeyi içeren)

(with love, with an envelope full of money, with two guards, etc.)

- I am going on holiday to Greece next month **with** my parents and siblings.
- You can find the one you are looking for on my desk **with** the other magazines.
- Jordan decided to stay **with** her brother for the summer to save money.

⚠ **Not** *Aşağıdaki kullanımlara dikkat ediniz.*

- ***With*** *all her clothes destroyed by the fire in the house, Janet found herself with nothing to wear. (Bütün kıyafetlerinin evindeki yangında yanmasıyla, ...)*
- ***With*** *the amazing view of the ocean and the seaside, I couldn't focus on what my friends were saying.*

37 **Without** : (-sız, -siz) Bir şey olmaksızın anlamına gelir.

(without electricity, without any wild life, without the alphabet, etc.)

- It is important for biologists to be able to capture animals **without** hurting them.
- I decided that I would go to the beach **without** any of my friends and spend some time alone.
- If you spend the day in the sun **without** putting any sunblock on, you may get burnt.

38 **Off** : Kullanım durumuna göre ve birlikte kullanıldığı kelimelerle anlamı; 'uzakta, kopmuş, ayrılmış, sökülmüş, kıyıdan açıkta, düşme, ayrılma, çalışmama' anlamlarına gelebilir.

(off the road, come off, off work, etc.)

- There is a big ship **off** the shore. *(kıyıdan açıkta)*
- We drove very carefully around the mountain roads to avoid falling **off** the cliffs. *(düşme)*
- Mandy asked her friend to come and pick her up when she got **off** the train. *(ayrılma)*
- The boy fell **off** the edge of the diving board, but luckily he landed in the pool. *(düşme)*
- Sometimes my phone falls **off** my bedside table and I can't find it in the morning.
- I told my friend that if he wanted to visit me, he should get **off** the bus at the third stop.

39 **Upon** : (üzerinde)

(upon request, upon the need of the volunteers, upon his arrival, etc.)

- All the citizens fell **upon** their knees and bowed low, then the King and his guards walked past.
- Some people say that if you make a wish **upon** a shooting star, it may come true.
- The man placed his hand protectively **upon** his son's shoulder.

3 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions of place and movement.

1. I have sent many letters ____________________ the local government office about our pollution problem.
2. We walked ____________________ three different restaurants but I didn't like their look.
3. If you take part in the yearly marathon, you can run ____________________ the bridge.
4. There are still many people ____________________ the city who support the rebels and their rebellion.
5. The principal told the parents that there had been no more fights ____________________ the two students.
6. We lay on our backs, looking up at the stars far ____________________ us in the night sky.
7. It takes three hours to bike all the way ____________________ the lake using the dirt trails.
8. According to Feng Shui, you should not have a window ____________________ your front door, because it is not good to face the door while sitting.
9. We left our car in the parking lot ____________________ the yellow car over there, so there is no way it can go unless we move ours first.
10. It took the rescue team thirty minutes to climb ____________________ to the bottom of the cliffs.

4 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions of place and movement.

1. The detectives went ____________________ the building to investigate the crime scene.
2. I always keep a torch ____________________ my bed in case there is a power cut.
3. We walked ____________________ the road, chatting about history and philosophy.
4. Sometimes homeless people sleep ____________________ the bridge to shelter from the weather.
5. You will have to borrow a book ____________________ someone else because you lost the last one I gave you.
6. When Jill was a child, she used to hold her breath whenever she went ____________________ a tunnel.
7. The sign on the beach told people to stay ____________________ the sand dunes, as turtles laid their eggs there.
8. If you want to climb ____________________ to the top of the tower, I hope you are not afraid of heights.
9. Henry is the only one ____________________ us who has never left the country before.
10. James told his friend to wait for him ____________________ the entrance to the city park.

C Prepositional Phrases (Edat Öbekleri)

1 Noun + Preposition

1. reason **for** something
2. cause **of** something
3. rise **in** something
4. decrease / increase **in** something
5. advantage / disadvantage **of** something
6. reaction **to** / **against** something
7. attitude **to** / **towards** someone / something
8. difference **between** two things
9. advice **for** / **about** something
10. connection **between** two things
11. demand **for** someone / something
12. invitation **to** something / somewhere
13. need **for** something
14. photograph **of** someone / something
15. solution **to** a problem
16. play / song / film / book **by** someone
17. talent **in** something
18. welfare **of** someone / something
19. faith **in** someone / something
20. commitment **to** someone / something
21. difficulty **in** doing something
22. disagreement **with** someone
23. disagreement **on** / **about** something
24. dispute **over** something
25. impact **on** someone / something
26. admiration **for** someone / something

- Jerry told his boss that his daughter's illness was his **reason for** coming in late.
- The doctor is still not sure what the **cause of** my headache is.
- There was a great **rise in** volume from the crowd when the musician came onto the stage.
- I lost all **faith in** my father after I found out that he had a gambling problem.
- There is a large **demand for** foreign cars in this country.
- After a long and hard day at the office, Kate felt the **need for** a cigarette.
- When Tom found out the **book by** his favourite author, he immediately bought it.
- I have a great amount of **admiration for** my sister, who is very successful.
- My friend loves to give me **advice about** money, even though she is always broke.
- The air hostess told us that gas masks would fall if there was a **decrease in** pressure in the cabin.

5

EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions.

1. The difference ____________________ my best friend and I is that I am much more social and outgoing.
2. There is a poster ____________________ Albert Einstein, my favourite scientist, above my bed.
3. Keith had always had great difficulty ____________________ learning how to use chopsticks.
4. People in my town usually have a very welcoming attitude ____________________ foreign tourists.
5. We decided to toss a coin as a solution ____________________ the problem of who would have walked the dog today.
6. Today, I received an invitation in the mail ____________________ my close friend's wedding.
7. My boss and I are in disagreement ____________________ whether working from home is a good idea for me.
8. The new toll on people who want to use the bridge does not seem to have had an impact ____________________ traffic.
9. I'm not sure who this song is ____________________, but I really like the singer's voice.
10. The government has started a new program to increase the welfare ____________________ children with single parents.

2 Preposition + Noun

27. **in** cash
28. **in** advance
29. **in** harmony
30. **in** shift
31. **in** demand
32. **in** favour **of**
33. **in** charge **of**
34. **in** danger **of**
35. **in** exchange **for**
36. **in** return **for**
37. **in** connection **with**
38. **in** need **of**
39. **on** a diet
40. **on** strike
41. **on** sale
42. **on** a trip / holiday / business
43. **on** fire
44. **on** foot
45. **on** demand
46. **on** impulse
47. **on** the point **of**
48. **on** the verge **of**
49. **on** the threshold **of**
50. **by** cheque / credit card
51. **by** chance
52. **by** mistake
53. **by** car / bus / train
54. **under** control
55. **under** suspicion
56. **under** construction
57. **under** age
58. **under** repair
59. **under** threat
60. **out of** date
61. **out of** control
62. **out of** order
63. **with** respect **to**

- Some electronics stores around here will give you a small discount if you pay **in cash**.
- I asked my boss if I could be paid one week **in advance** this month.
- I told Rachel that I would clean the house myself this week **in return for** her help with my essay.
- When I was a kid, my neighbours used to give me five dollars **in exchange for** mowing their lawn.
- I always look forward to the day after Christmas when all the clothes go **on sale**.
- We are going to go **on a trip** to Nepal at the end of the year to go climbing.
- As the traffic was so bad, we decided that we would go to the restaurant **on foot**.
- If you leave candles burning when you go out, you may come home to find your house **on fire**.
- I ran into an old high school friend of mine **by chance** yesterday at the mall.
- I meant to take the bus that goes past my house, but I got on the wrong one **by mistake**.

6

EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions.

1. The children on stage sang with a lot of energy, but unfortunately not ____________________ harmony.

2. We were ____________________ the point ____________________ turning back, when we finally saw the waterfalls in the distance.

3. The store owner told me that the speakers I wanted are ____________________ demand right now.

4. I did not have any cash on me at the time, so I had to pay ____________________ credit card.

5. There are some actors who can cry ____________________ demand whenever it is needed for a scene.

6. Jim decided to go ____________________ a diet, as his wedding was only a few months away.

7. Todd is ____________________ danger ____________________ getting kicked out of university if he fails another class.

8. The postal workers are ____________________ strike this week, so none of the mail is getting sent.

9. I told my boss that I had everything ____________________ control if he wanted to go home early.

10. The bridge seemed like it was ____________________ the verge ____________________ collapsing, but we decided to risk crossing it.

3 Adjective + Preposition

64. angry / annoyed / furious **about** / **at** something
65. angry / annoyed / furious **with** / **at** someone
66. absent **from** somewhere
67. afraid / frightened / scared / terrified **of** someone / something
68. amazed / astonished / shocked / surprised **at** / **by** someone / something
69. nice / kind / (im)polite / rude, etc. **of** someone **to** do something
70. delighted / satisfied / pleased / disappointed **with** someone / something
71. bored / fed up **with** someone / something
72. tired **of** someone / something
73. excited / worried / upset **about** something
74. proud / ashamed **of** someone / something
75. (un)aware / (un)conscious **of** something
76. jealous / suspicious / envious **of** someone / something
77. good / bad / brilliant / excellent / hopeless **at** something
78. sorry **about** / **for** something
79. famous **for** something
80. different **from** / **than** someone / something
81. full **of** something
82. short **of** something
83. fond **of** someone / something
84. keen **on** something
85. crowded **with** someone
86. impressed **with** / **by** someone / something
87. familiar **with** someone / something
88. wrong **with** someone / something

- Everyone in the office is **annoyed about** the extra hours that we have to work this week.
- It was very **kind of** Jacob's mother to bake cookies for all the boys on the team.
- I am very **bored with** the book I am reading at the moment, but I want to finish it.
- We are all **excited about** the concert we are going to tonight.
- Jill seems to be **unaware of** the fact that nobody ever listens to her stories.
- I called Tony to tell him that I was **sorry for** not coming to his birthday party.
- I have always thought it would be great to be **famous for** making a scientific discovery.
- Tyler is a little **short of** money this month, so I am going to pay his part of the rent.
- Stacy is very **keen on** metal music but I have never enjoyed it much myself.
- There seems to be something **wrong with** my car this morning; it won't start.

7 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions.

1. Kerry was familiar ____________________ car engines, so he decided to try and fix it himself.

2. I have never been impressed ____________________ anyone who is famous for acting or singing.

3. I have always found Japanese culture to be quite different ____________________ other Asian cultures.

4. My friend, Jim, has always been bad ____________________ writing but he still thinks he can be a writer.

5. My food in the office fridge keeps going missing and I am suspicious ____________________ Sally.

6. Kat's parents never told her that they were proud ____________________ her, even when she came first in her class.

7. I am very angry ____________________ our leader as he has announced that we will stop helping poor people.

8. Martin had always been terrified ____________________ spiders, ever since he was bitten by one as a boy.

9. I am delighted ____________________ the new policy that lets us work from home on Fridays.

10. Randy was tired ____________________ dealing with all of Sam's problems, so he stopped answering his calls.

4 Verb + Preposition

89. apologize **to** someone **for** (doing) something
90. apply **for** / apply **to** something
91. accuse **of** (= blame **for** = charge **with**)
92. agree **with** someone
93. agree **on** / **about** something
94. aim **at**
95. arrive **in** / arrive **at**
96. believe **in**
97. belong **to**
98. borrow something **from** someone
99. care **about** / care **for**
100. collide **with**
101. crash **into**
102. complain **to** someone **about** something
103. concentrate **on** something
104. congratulate someone **on** something
105. consist **of**

106. depend **on** / **upon**
107. die **of** / die **from** / die **in** / die **for**
108. dream **about** / **of** something / someone
109. explain something **to** someone
110. equip **with**
111. fight **against** / **for** something
112. glance / stare **at** someone / something
113. hear **about** / hear **from** / hear **of**
114. insist **on**
115. listen **to** someone / something
116. look **at** someone / something
117. live **on**
118. pay **for** something
119. point **to** / point **at**
120. persist **in** / **with**
121. prefer something **to** something else
122. prevent **from**
123. protect **from** / **against**
124. provide **with**
125. rely **on** / **upon**
126. remind **of** / **about**
127. succeed **in**
128. suffer **from**
129. shout **to** / **at**
130. talk **to** someone **about** something
131. warn someone **of** / **about** / **against** someone / something
132. wait **for** someone / something

- I tried to **apologize to** Hamish **for** breaking his plate but he wouldn't listen to me.
- Denis decided to **apply to** Harvard University, even though he knew he wouldn't get in.
- The baseball batter tried to **aim at** the left side of the field when he hit the ball.
- I **belong to** a small group of businessmen who meet once a week.
- I went up onto the stage to **congratulate** the students **on** graduating from high school.
- There are many signs to **prevent** people **from** going near the cliffs.
- The reporter, **equipped with** his new camera, waited outside the building for the politician.
- If you want to **succeed in** something, you have to put a lot of time into it.
- Edward tried to **insist on** getting a table at the restaurant, but the waiter wouldn't let him.
- My dream is to **live on** rent that I get from my tenants one day, somewhere beautiful like in Ayvalık.

8 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions.

1. Karen decided to apply ____________________ the job as she thought she had a good chance to get it.

2. If you are going to accuse her ____________________ stealing, you should have some evidence first.

3. George had never been the one to believe ____________________ things without any scientific evidence.

4. My favourite theme park game is bumper cars, where you try to crash ____________________ other people's cars.

5. Next week, I have an exam, so this week I will concentrate ____________________ studying.

6. I always try to be the kind of person that my friends can depend ____________________ in an emergency.

7. Paul quickly glanced ____________________ the scoreboard to see if he was beating his opponent.

8. Zack suffered ____________________ a rare kind of disease that makes him tired very easily.

9. I tried to warn my brother ____________________ trusting Michael, but he didn't listen to me.

10. I think that if I persist ____________________ my studies, I will be able to pass this semester.

D BAZI YAPILARLA EDATLARIN FARKLI KULLANIMLARI

Aşağıdaki yapıların farklı edatlarla kullanımlarına dikkat ediniz.

1 Nice / kind / (im)polite / rude, etc. **of** someone **to do** something

- It was very **kind of** your son **to** help my daughter with her homework.
- That was **nice of** you **to** give our boss flowers for her birthday.

To be nice / kind / generous **to** someone

- I try **to be kind to** Jeremy every time I see him at work because he never looks happy.
- We should all **be nice to** our grandparents because they are old and tired.

2 Good / bad / brilliant / excellent / hopeless **at** something

- I have always been **good at** sports, ever since I started to play football as a boy.
- Charles is **hopeless at** spelling, so he always has to ask someone to proofread his work.

Good / bad / brilliant / excellent / hopeless **with** someone

- Rachel was very **good with** children, so she decided to get a job as a nanny.
- I have found that my work is always **brilliant with** Matt, but weak when I work alone.

3 Sorry **about** / **for** something: (bir konu hakkında) üzgün olmak

- **Sorry about** all the noise today; we are building a new roof for our garage.
- We are **sorry for** not throwing you a better party; we didn't have much time to prepare.
- I am **sorry for** my little sister's behaviour today, she was a bit offensive.
- We are **sorry for** John's words in the meeting today; I think he is overly stressed.

Sorry **for** someone: (birisine) acımak, üzülmek

- I am **sorry for** my sister. She works very hard and gets really tired.
- We are **sorry for** John; he must be devastated after his father's death.

4 Arrive **in** France / İstanbul, etc.)

- Today, we will **arrive in** Moscow in the early afternoon.

Arrive **at** school / the bus stop / the theatre, etc.)

- Today, I will **arrive at** school just before 8 a.m.

Arrive Ø home (no preposition)

- I will **arrive** home after school today at around 4 p.m.

5 Care **about** somebody / something: umursamak, aldırmak

- Jane **cares about** her younger sister and is always worried about her.
- As the boss of my business, I try to **care about** each and every one of my employees.

Care **for** somebody / something: istemek, canı çekmek, bakmak

- Their aunt **cared for** the children after both their parents passed away.

Take care **of** someone / something: bakmak, ilgilenmek

- I will **take care of** my friend's cat when she is on holiday.

6 Die **of** / **from** hunger / a heart attack / her injuries, etc.)

- You can **die of** hunger if you don't eat for several weeks.

Die **in** an accident

- My parents **died in** a car accident several years ago.

Die **for** one's beliefs

- Some people think it is noble to **die for** their beliefs.

7 Dream **about** something: rüyada görmek

- Last night, I had a **dream about** travelling to a different country.

Dream **of** something: hayal görmek, hayal etmek

- I **dream of** travelling to a different country and living there one day.
- Every day, I **dream of** quitting my job and trying to live as an artist.

8 Hear **about** something: bir şeyden haberi olmak, öğrenmek

- I hope my boss does not **hear about** all the complaining I have been doing.

Hear **of** something: haberdar olmak, duymak

- If you **hear of** any good concerts this weekend, please let me know.

Hear **from** someone: (birisinden genellikle mektup veya telefon ile) haber almak

- I hope that I **hear from** my daughter soon because it has been a while.

9 Point **to** something: işaret etmek, göstermek

- When students are too loud in my class, the teacher **points to** the door and tells them to leave.

Point **at** something / someone: doğrultmak, nişan almak

- Many people on the boat were **pointing at** the shark in the water.

10 Shout **to** someone: seslenmek

- I **shouted to** my friend across the room for help but he couldn't hear me.

Shout **at** someone: bağırmak

- Everyone in the crowd was **shouting at** the mayor at the same time.

11 Throw something **to** someone: (tutulması için) atmak

- I caught the ball and **threw** it **to** my teammate.

Throw something **at** someone: (bir yere veya bir kişiye çarpması için) fırlatmak

- She picked up a water balloon and **threw** it **at** her friend.

12 Remind someone **of** someone / something : (birisini / bir şeyi tip olarak) anımsatmak, hatırlatmak

- This old building **reminds** me **of** the historical church I visited when I went to Greece.
- Heather always likes to **remind** me **of** the time that I fell over and ripped my pants open.

Remind someone **about** something: (bir konuyu) hatırlatmak

- I'm trying not to **remind** our teacher **about** the homework that is due today.

9

EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions.

1. My grandfather died ____________________ a heart attack when I was just four years old, so I don't remember him.
2. We have just got onto the plane now, so we should be arriving ____________________ Turkey tomorrow morning.
3. My father has always dreamed ____________________ starting his own business but I don't think it's going to happen.
4. James had never been very good ____________________ chess, but he didn't tell that to his opponent.
5. If you hear ____________________ any potential terrorist threats, you should probably stay at home.
6. Jean tried not to shout ____________________ her son at first but then she lost her temper.
7. He told us that he felt sorry ____________________ Tommy and that's why he had given him a job.
8. If you have never heard ____________________ Richard Feynman before, you don't know anything about the history of physics.
9. I try to be generous ____________________ the homeless people who live near my house and I always give them something to eat.
10. I tried to throw the ball ____________________ my friend, but it went over his head and into the water.

10

EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks with the correct prepositions.

1. Hilda wasn't very good ____________________ babies, so when her niece started crying, she didn't know what to do.
2. I hope that I die ____________________ my sleep when I am old and not from some disease or sickness.
3. I saw one of my friends at the other side of the street. I shouted ____________________ him but he didn't hear me.
4. It was very kind ____________________ Jonathan to go back to the shops and get some ice cream for all of us.
5. I looked around for a rock to throw ____________________ the aggressive dog but could not find one.
6. Last night, I dreamed ____________________ aliens invading the town that I live in.
7. As soon as we arrive ____________________ the hotel, I am going to go straight up to my room and go to sleep.
8. When I was young, we used to pick sports teams by taking turns pointing ____________________ the people we wanted on our team.
9. I have not heard ____________________ my friend, George, for months but I think he is still in Australia.
10. I'm sorry ____________________ all the mess in the kitchen; I will try to have it cleaned up by tomorrow.

1

REVISION:
Choose the correct option.

1. **I had a strange dream last night ---- my father, who was standing ---- a tree in it.**

A) about / behind
B) of / of

2. **If the new financial laws are passed, they should have a big impact ---- the banking system.**

A) at
B) on

3. **Our teacher played us a documentary about how people in some countries are suffering ---- poverty.**

A) from
B) over

4. **There is a lot of demand ---- foreign foods in the city that I live in.**

A) for
B) about

5. **As we can see in the media, there is a lot of debate ---- whether or not the President is doing a good job.**

A) in
B) on

6. **Sometimes, if we are having a problem at work, I go and talk to our boss because I am not afraid ---- him, but the others are.**

A) about
B) of

7. **The smell of cigars always reminds me ---- my grandfather.**

A) of
B) for

8. **Kelly seems to be having a lot of trouble ---- adapting to her new school.**

A) by
B) in

9. **You should immediately lift the fire extinguisher ---- the wall where it hangs in case of an emergency.**

A) off
B) to

10. **We only met ---- chance, but Tom found out that we both come ---- the same city.**

A) by / from
B) into / to

11. **In the old days, letters were the only way ---- people to communicate ---- others in different cities.**

A) for / with B) between / for

12. **By the time I was eighteen, I had lost faith ---- our country's political system.**

A) on B) in

13. **Most of the country seems to have difficulty ---- accepting that we lost the war.**

A) in B) by

14. **My boss seems doubtful ---- our new team; he doesn't seem to have much trust ---- us.**

A) in /about B) about / in

15. **Our new boss is someone ---- a background in economics, so he should be able to do a good job.**

A) to B) with

16. **The employee had to apologise ---- his boss ---- his behaviour at the meeting.**

A) to / for B) for / to

17. **The principal thinks the other kids picking on him are the reason ---- Bobby's mental breakdown.**

A) for B) to

18. **Everyone in the class was focused ---- talking to each other and didn't hear the teacher's request ---- silence.**

A) for / on B) on / for

19. **Next week, I am planning a trip ---- Italy to visit my grandparents.**

A) to B) on

20. **Hundreds of protesters ---- signs and banners shouted ---- their views.**

A) with / about B) on / in

PREPOSITIONS

TEST 1

1. **I hope that I can stay ---- some friends when I am travelling around Britain.**

A) at
B) with
C) over
D) inside
E) along

2. **I am often amazed ---- how stupid some of the things my younger brother does are.**

A) by
B) of
C) for
D) from
E) about

3. **We drove ---- the dark tunnel in the mountains and out the other side into the sunshine.**

A) past
B) through
C) below
D) onto
E) upon

4. **I felt that some of the other students in the class had a bad attitude ---- the teacher.**

A) across
B) off
C) towards
D) through
E) for

5. **Steven always gets very nervous ---- exam season and he spends all his time in his room.**

A) towards
B) after
C) for
D) at
E) of

6. **It took the hikers three days to walk ---- the base of the mountain and back to their starting point.**

A) with
B) away from
C) into
D) between
E) at

7. **Jane always feels the need ---- a coffee before she goes to work in the mornings.**

A) over
B) on
C) between
D) for
E) with

8. **The conference should be finished ---- Thursday, and then the politicians will return to their countries.**

A) for
B) within
C) by
D) throughout
E) in

9. **I always seem to get the most work done ---- 8 ---- 11 a.m., when not too many people are calling.**

A) till / from
B) between / and
C) until / by
D) to / until
E) from / on

10. **Penelope is ---- a diet this week, so I don't think she will want to come to dinner with us.**

A) at
B) in
C) by
D) on
E) with

11. She had to lean ---- the car for a minute when she felt a little dizzy.

A) near
B) outside
C) next to
D) at
E) against

12. John was so impressed ---- the author's new book that he decided to write him a letter.

A) by
B) of
C) about
D) than
E) for

13. ---- eight years in the same apartment, I think it is about time I moved somewhere better.

A) Within
B) Throughout
C) After
D) Between
E) By

14. James is the only one ---- my friends who has never been to an amusement park before.

A) around
B) amongst
C) beside
D) with
E) upon

15. The new bus station is still ---- construction at the moment but I hope to start using it soon.

A) on
B) by
C) with
D) under
E) to

16. If I don't get a call from the office ---- the next two hours, it means I probably didn't get the promotion.

A) during
B) at
C) throughout
D) within
E) by

17. This month, I plan to apply ---- as many jobs as I can, so hopefully I get some interviews.

A) at
B) for
C) with
D) into
E) on

18. If you drive too fast in the rain, your car might slip and collide ---- another vehicle.

A) in
B) at
C) from
D) on
E) with

19. The bridge they built back ---- 1980 was supposed to last for 100 years but it collapsed after less than 30.

A) in
B) since
C) towards
D) on
E) for

20. If you walk ---- the bridge, you can find the shop you're looking for on the other side of the river.

A) opposite
B) up
C) across
D) with
E) without

PREPOSITIONS

TEST 2

1. **The poor swimmer shouted ---- help when he was attacked by a merciless shark ---- the coast of Sydney.**

A) at / at
B) for / on
C) with / by
D) to / in
E) up / down

2. **Using too much bleach can be harmful ---- human health not to mention that it destroys the clean water sources.**

A) at
B) with
C) for
D) by
E) to

3. **Nancy ran ---- her ex-husband in the mall and wanted to say 'hi' but he pretended not to have seen her.**

A) away
B) up
C) down
D) across
E) above

4. **If you want to make the best decisions ---- yourself, you need to consider every option ---- a wise manner, and then make up your mind.**

A) for / in
B) by / on
C) to / of
D) at / by
E) in / to

5. **The shop was open ---- ten ---- six in the afternoon but the owner would not keep it open one minute after that time.**

A) from / up
B) in / after
C) since / till
D) among / to
E) from / to

6. **The new scientific data suggests that the world may come to its final year ---- 2080 the latest.**

A) off
B) since
C) down
D) by
E) between

7. **Do you have any plans ---- this weekend? I would like to invite you ---- a wedding.**

A) at / on
B) for / to
C) up / with
D) over / over
E) on / for

8. **In order to be a doctor, one must go ---- six years of first grade medical study and then another six years to specialize ---- a field like orthopaedics.**

A) up / with
B) across / for
C) through / in
D) over / in
E) in / by

9. **My alarm will go off ---- six thirty every morning and I have to be ready ---- seven, or else I will be late for school.**

A) on / at
B) by / on
C) in / at
D) at / by
E) on / in

10. **---- London, there are book cafés all over the city and you can see people sitting at a table with their coffee reading ---- hours.**

A) By / for
B) Within / since
C) At / along
D) In / for
E) Above / of

11. In Germany, the trains are always ---- time. I have never seen one of them skip one minute.

A) at
B) for
C) on
D) with
E) of

12. The wounds of the soldiers healed ---- enough time but their psychology never did as the war caused mental harm rather than physical.

A) at
B) by
C) off
D) on
E) with

13. The theatre building is the one ---- your left and you can see the Parliament ---- the end of this street.

A) on / at
B) at / till
C) in / behind
D) by / on
E) to / in

14. Every year, there is a swimming competition held in İstanbul where the swimmers swim ---- the Bosphorus, which is quite long.

A) above
B) behind
C) through
D) after
E) across

15. The toddler learnt how to jump ---- the bed from the couch without injuring himself. This can mean that he will be good ---- athletics.

A) onto / at
B) in / with
C) over / in
D) off / of
E) by / in

16. The nurse knew she was going to get ---- trouble for what she had done, so she started looking for a way to cover ---- her mistake.

A) in / away
B) into / up
C) by / of
D) up / off
E) away with / up

17. Egypt fought Israel ---- 1947 and lost the battle which led ---- Israel's taking over the Golan Heights.

A) at / of
B) on / through
C) in / to
D) by / in
E) in / against

18. Are they sure they want to go there ---- foot because they can always go ---- public bus as there is one every hour?

A) by / by
B) with / on
C) on / with
D) on / by
E) along / in

19. Melinda learnt how to read and write in Arabic ---- 65 and became the oldest to do so in our town ---- to now.

A) at / for
B) in / at
C) over / with
D) at / until
E) at / up

20. *The Gangs of Wasseypur* is a well-known film ---- the Hindu speaking people since the language of the film is Hindi.

A) without
B) between
C) among
D) against
E) along

NOUNS & EXTRA SUBJECTS

13 NOUNS & EXTRA SUBJECTS

İngilizcede isimler yapısal özellikleri bakımından sayılabilen isimler (countable nouns) ve sayılamayan isimler (uncountable nouns) olarak ikiye ayrılır. Sayılabilen isimler; tekil (singular) ve çoğul (plural) olmak üzere ikiye ayrılırken; sayılamayan isimler yapıları gereği tekil veya çoğul olarak sınıflandırılamazlar.

A SAYILABİLEN İSİMLER (Countable Nouns)

1 Sayılabilen isimler, tekil veya çoğul yapıda kullanılabilir. Tekil isimler öncesinde 'bir' anlamındaki 'a' veya 'an' belirtecini alırken, çoğul isimler önüne bir belirteç ve sonuna ek olarak '-s' takısını alırlar.

Tekil İsimler (Singular Nouns)	Çoğul İsimler (Plural Nouns)
a dress	three dress**es**
an ostrich	five ostrich**es**
a dolphin	forty dolphin**s**
a towel	many towel**s**

Yukarıdaki örneklerde de görülebileceği gibi isimlerin tekil hali herhangi bir ek almazken, çoğul halinde aldığı ek, ismin son harflerine göre '-s', '-es', '-ies' şeklinde olabilir.

A dog - three dogs
- **The dogs** were barking aggressively in the backyard.

A fox - five foxes
- The forest obviously became highly populated with **foxes**, so the occasional attacks to the coop increased.

A butterfly - seven butterflies
- The flower attracted the **butterflies** with its strong aroma.

2 İngilizcede isimler türlerine göre cins isimler (common nouns), özel isimler (proper nouns), soyut isimler (abstract nouns) ve topluluk isimleri (collective nouns) olarak dörde ayrılır.

a **Cins İsimler** (Common Nouns)

Cins isimler, aynı cinsten birçok varlığa ortak olarak verilen isimlerdir. Cins isimleri özel isimlerden ayıran şey, tek bir nesneye değil genel olarak türe hitap etmesidir. Etrafımızda gördüğümüz birçok şey cins isme örnek olarak verilebilir: **cat**, **table**, **chair**, **window**, **etc.**

- **Man** never understands the importance of natural resources and keeps wasting them.
- The **ocean** is basically vast water with lots of secrets hidden in its great depths.

b **Özel İsimler** (Proper Nouns)

Özel isimler ise, tek olan ve diğer varlıklar içerisinde benzeri bulunmayan şeylere verilen isimlerdir. İnsan, dil, kıta, şehir, ülke, üniversite, deniz isimleri özel isimlere örnek olarak verilebilir: **Thomas**, **Selim**, **Turkish**, **Russia**, **London**, **Boğaziçi University**, **Mediterranean Sea**, **etc.**

- **Mount Nemrut** stands magnificently in Adıyaman with its amazing sculptures.
- **Austria** has two official languages, **French** and **German**.

c **Soyut İsimler** (Abstract Nouns)

Soyut isimler, hissettiğimiz bir duyguya ya da fikre verilen ve beş duyu organımızla algılayamadığımız isimlerdir: **success**, **hate**, **love**, **hope**, **etc.**

- **Childhood** is the most yearned part of life as it represents innocence.
- The **bravery** of the soldiers in all parts of the country kept the country safe and frightened the enemies.

d **Topluluk İsimleri** (Collective Nouns)

Topluluk isimleri, yapı olarak tekil olsa bile bir gruba ya da topluluğa işaret eden isimlerdir. Bu grup; bir insan grubu, hayvan grubu ya da nesne grubu olabilir: **army**, **family**, **colony**, **pair**, **etc.**

- The shepherd whistled and called the **herd** and all the animals came running towards their master.
- The success of the **team** was mostly due to my efforts, so I should get the credit for it.

3 **İsimlerin çoğul hale getirilmesi ile ilgili kurallar aşağıdaki tablolarda verilmiştir.**

- Çoğu ismin çoğul hali sonuna '-s' takısı eklenerek oluşturulur.

girl / girls
book / books
computer / computers
pencil / pencils
ruler / rulers
dog / dogs
boy / boys
file / files

- Sonu '-ch, -sh, -x, -s, -z' ile biten isimlerin sonuna '-es' takısı gelir.

box / boxes
match / matches
glass / glasses
address / addresses
church / churches
bush / bushes
kiss / kisses
watch / watches

- Kelimenin sonu '-y' ile bitiyorsa ve önceki harf yine ünsüz (consonant) bir harf ise, ismin sonundaki '-y' sesi düşer ve '-ies' eki getirilir.

baby / babies
lady / ladies
country / countries
fly / flies

Not *Eğer bir isim '-y' harfi ile bitiyorsa fakat bu harften önce bir sesli harf var ise bu kural uygulanmaz.*

donkey / donkeys
boy / boys
day / days

- Sonu '-o' ile biten isimler; '-s' ya da '-es' takısı alırlar. Bazıları ise her iki eki de alır.

piano / pianos
photo / photos
radio / radios
zoo / zoos
hero / heroes
tomato / tomatoes
potato / potatoes
zero / zeros-zeroes
volcano / volcanos-volcanoes

- İngilizcede sonu '-f' ya da '-fe' sesiyle biten 12 tane isim vardır. Bu isimler çoğul yapılırken '-f' ya da '-fe' sesi düşer ve yerine '-ves' eki getirilir.

wife / wives
life / lives
knife / knives
wolf / wolves
self / selves
calf / calves
shelf / shelves
leaf / leaves
loaf / loaves
thief / thieves
sheaf / sheaves
half / halves

- Bazı isimler çoğul yapılırken kelime içindeki sesli harf değişikliğe uğrar.

man / men
woman / women
foot / feet
mouse / mice
ox / oxen
child / children

- İngilizcede bazı isimler sürekli olarak çoğul halde bulunurlar.

İki parçadan oluşan giyim eşyaları: pyjamas, trousers, pants, etc.

İki parçadan oluşan aletler: binoculars, glasses, scissors, etc.

Sonu '-ics' ile biten kelimeler: mathematics, politics, acoustics, ethics, athletics, etc.

Not *'Mathematics, physics, politics' gibi bilim isimleri çoğul halde bulunsalar bile cümle içerisinde tekil kabul edilip tekil fiil ile kullanılır.*

- *Physics* ***has*** *always interested me greatly, even when I was a young girl.*
- *Politics* ***is*** *a major concern for every member of the society.*
- *Mathematics* ***has*** *been open to new discoveries for centuries; every day a new formula appears.*

Latin ya da Yunan kökenli bazı kelimelerin çoğul halleri İngilizcedeki kurallara göre değil, geldikleri dile göre yapılır.

crisis / crises

- There was a **crisis** at school when nobody could find Molly.
- During Rick's lifetime, he has caused several **crises** that could have ended badly.

datum / data

- The scientists must use the final **datum** to complete their project.
- The scientists need to collect more **data** to complete their project.

thesis / theses	axis / axes	analysis / analyses
basis / bases	phenomenon / phenomena	criterion / criteria

Bazı isimlerin tekil ve çoğul halleri aynıdır.

fish

- There is **a fish** in the pond.
- The **fish** in the aquarium were all caught in the wild.

sheep

- When my father grew up, he had **a sheep** called Peter as a pet.
- The farmer hopes that his **sheep** won't get hurt during the storm.

series	deer	species

B SAYILAMAYAN İSİMLER (Uncountable Nouns)

1 Sayılamayan isimler, tek başına kullanılıp, sayılabilen isimler gibi başına 'a / an' belirteci ya da sonuna çoğul eki almayan isimlerdir.

- I like swimming in the **sea** in summer.
- Jack's favourite dish is ramen **noodles**.
- My father prefers no **sugar** in his **coffee** or **tea**.

2 Sayılamayan isimlerin çoğul halleri olmadığı için, tekil fiillerle kullanılırlar.

- **Freedom** is a basic human right.
- **Water** is the most important element for survival.
- If you want to be a teacher, **patience** is a need.

3 Sayılamayan isimlerin miktarını belirtmek için 'a ... of' şeklinde oluşturulmuş ve nicelik (sayı, miktar) belirten kalıplar kullanılabilir.

- Mary wasted **a lot of** money on her clothes.
- **A bowl of** soup will be enough for me.
- Nobody can refuse **a hot cup of** tea on a winter day.

⚠ **Not** *Soyut isimler genelde sayılamayan isimler olarak kabul edilir.*

- *I don't think I can deal with this kind of **incompetence**.*
- *Jack's **stubbornness** is what makes his friends dislike him.*
- *Your **health** is going to improve if you eat and sleep well.*
- *I will never forget the **time** I have spent with my best friend, it was priceless.*
- *The **information** on this website is incorrect.*

⚠ **Not** *Bunların yanında madde isimleri de sayılamayan isimler olarak kabul edilir.*

Katı, sıvı ve gaz maddeler: wood, metal, cheese, sand, rice, water, coffee, milk, air, oxygen, etc.

Enerji: electricity, sunshine, radiation, heat, magnetism, etc.

EXERCISE 1

Find the mistakes, if there are any, and correct them.

1. The plate of pastas we had for dinner last night were incredibly tasty.

2. Intelligence is measurable characteristic.

3. If you want to graduate, you have to get a good results.

4. My mother sent me to the shop to buy breads.

5. I think the paint on this chair is still wet.

6. My cat has to drink two bowl of milks every day.

7. Humans need an oxygen to survive.

8. When you move into your new house, you will have no furnitures.

9. Felicia had an enjoyable childhood.

10. May your marriage be blessed with lots of happinesses.

C HEM SAYILABİLEN HEM SAYILAMAYAN İSİMLER

1 Bazı isimler hem sayılabilen hem de sayılamayan isimler olarak kullanılabilir. Fakat genelde iki kullanım arasında anlam farkı vardır.

Noise

- **The noise** coming from the grade 5 classroom was so loud that the whole school could hear it. *(gürültü)*
- I heard **two different noises** behind me while I was walking to the shop. I turned around and saw that my dog was following me. *(ses)*

Paper

- The printer will need more **paper** if you want to print that document. *(kâğıt)*
- Every morning, the delivery man brings **four papers** to my doorstep. I read them while I have my breakfast. *(gazete)*

Room

- Harry's old apartment was so small that there was no **room** for his couch. *(yer, alan)*
- When you go around that corner, you will see **a room** with a glass door. *(oda)*

Experience

- You need to have more **experience** working with children if you want that job. *(deneyim)*
- I loved hearing about my grandfather's **experiences** during the flood of 1958. (*olay, yaşantı, deneyimler dizisi)*

Iron

- It is widely believed that spinach contains high amounts of **iron**. *(demir)*
- Modern **irons** are very different from the old ones; for one thing, you do not have to heat them up on a stove. *(ütü)*

Glass

- I cannot believe that the sculptor was able to make a statue from **glass**. *(cam)*
- Deborah had to buy new **glasses** because her father accidentally sat on hers. *(gözlük)*

Work

- The **works** of Shakespeare are widely considered to be the best examples of English literature. *(eser)*
- I cannot chat with you at the moment; I have a lot of **work** to do. *(iş)*

Time

- We do not have **time** to go to the shop first; we are already late for our appointment. *(zaman)*
- How many **times** must I repeat myself before you start listening? *(defa, kere)*

Power

- Changing the name of the company is not completely within the CEO's **power**. *(güç)*
- England and France were the two greatest **powers** of the 19th century. *(güçlü ülke, gücü elinde bulunduran kişi /şey)*

Production

- Unlike 100 years ago, there is not as much land available for food **production** today. *(üretim)*
- There are rumours that they are working on a new **production** of Stephen King's great book. *(yapım, yapıt, eser)*

2 Yukarıda verilen örneklerin dışında aşağıdaki kelimeler de sayılabilen ya da sayılamayan olarak kullanılabilir. Her iki kullanım arasında anlam farkları vardır.

	Uncountable	**Countable**
chicken	tavuk eti	tavuk
country	taşra	ülke
beauty	güzellik	güzel kadın
business	iş	işletme

danger	tehlike	tehlikeli kişi
hair	saç	saç teli
lamb	kuzu eti	kuzu
light	gün ışığı	ışık
love	aşk	aşık olunan kişi
youth	genç	genç kişi

EXERCISE

2

Circle the correct word.

1. This farm is responsible for the **production** / **productions** of oranges.
2. Mark was confused by all the different types of **irons** / **iron** in the store.
3. Peter had a lot of fun in Japan; he even ate sushi for the first **time** / **times**.
4. All the **room** / **rooms** were booked and we had to look for a different hotel.
5. Peter bought a coffee table that is made from **glass** / **glasses**.
6. Mortimer was playing the role of 'the phantom' in his school's **productions** / **production** of *The Phantom of the Opera*.
7. The President of the country has told his citizens that great **power** / **powers** brings great responsibility.
8. The **work** / **works** of Pablo Picasso all inspired the modern art movements.

D İYELİK BELİRTEN İSİMLER (Possessive Nouns)

1

İngilizcede iyelik (sahiplik) bildirmek için isimlerle birlikte "s' (apostrophe '-s') ya da 'of' kullanılır. "s' (apostrophe '-s') yapısı genellikle insanlar ve diğer canlılardan bahsederken, 'of' yapısı ise cansız varlıklar veya soyut fikirlerden bahsederken kullanılır.

- Amy**'s** number
- Jane**'s** car
- Our teacher**'s** house
- The door **of** the house
- The first page **of** the book

2

' 's' yapısı aynı zamanda 'company', 'government' gibi organizasyon veya grup isimleri ile de kullanılabilir. Bu isimlerle 'of' yapısını kullanmak da mümkündür.

- The government**'s** decision → The decision **of** the government
- The company**'s** manager → The manager **of** the company
- The town**'s** mayor → The mayor **of** the town

3 ‘’s’ yapısının çoğul isimlerle kullanımı tekil isimlerden farklıdır. İngilizcede düzensiz çoğul isimler dışındaki bütün çoğul isimlerin sonunda ‘-s’ harfi olduğu için, bu isimler yalnızca ‘’’ (apostrophe) ile kullanılır.

- Students’ homework (öğrencilerin)
- My brothers’ room (erkek kardeşlerimin)
- The Smiths’ house
- Africans’ health

4 Sonunda ‘-s’ harfi olmayan düzensiz çoğul isimler için ise yine iyelik bildiren ‘’s’ yapısı kullanılır.

- Children**’s** game (çoçukların)
- People**’s** choice (insanların)
- Women**’s** toilet

5 Tekil isimler genellikle bir değişiklik olmadan ‘’s’ ile kullanılabilirler. Ancak ismin kökü ‘-s’ harfi ile bitiyorsa, düzenli çoğul isimlerde olduğu gibi, ‘-s’ harfi kullanılmadan sadece ‘’’ (apostrophe) ile de iyelik bildirilebilir. Bu iki farklı kullanımın telaffuzları genellikle aynıdır.

- I can’t forget **James’** (James’s) last words.
- David **Yates’** (Yates’s) last film is based on a novel.
- We will meet at **Charles’** (Charles’s) house.
- My **boss’** (boss’s) car is the one parked right in front of the building.

6 Birden fazla iyelik bildiren kelime yan yana gelerek isim tamlaması oluşturabilir.

- **Ali’s father’s birthday** is not tomorrow. *(Ali’nin babasının doğum günü...)*
- **Jason’s sister’s name** is Olivia.

7 Birden fazla kişinin herhangi bir şeye aynı anda sahip olduğunu belirtmek için, en son gelen ismin sonuna ‘ ‘s’ koyulmalıdır.

- This is Amy and Rory**’s** new house. *(Bu Amy ve Rory’nin yeni evi.)*
- Patrick and Alicia**’s** son is a very naughty boy. *(Patrick ve Alicia’nın oğlu)*
- Emre and Eren**’s** friends are coming to dinner. *(Emre ve Eren’in arkadaşları)*

⚠ **Not** *Eğer iki farklı özne aynı cinsten iki ayrı nesneye sahipse, sahip olunan nesneyi tekrarlamak yerine öznelerin her biri için ‘’s’ kullanılabilir.*

- ***Merve's and Elif's*** *phones are the same. (Merve's phone and Elif's phone...)*
- ***George's and David's*** *bikes are broken. (George's bike and David's bike...)*

8 ‘’s’ yapısı zaman ifadeleriyle de kullanılabilir. Bu kullanımda, belirli bir zamana ya da döneme ait bir nesne ya da durumdan bahsedilir; ancak bunların Türkçedeki karşılıkları değişiklik gösterebilir.

- Where is **today's** newspaper? *(bugünün gazetesi)*
- **Yesterday's** weather forecast was incorrect. *(dünkü hava tahmini)*
- This is only **a day's** work. *(bir günlük)*
- I have **a week's** holiday for Christmas. *(bir haftalık)*

9 İngilizce konuşma dilinde ev, kafe, restoran, okul gibi mekanlardan, ait olduğu kişinin ismiyle ya da meslek grubuna ilişkin isimlerle ‘’s’ yapısı kullanılarak bahsedilebilir. Bu kullanımda konuşan ve dinleyen kişilerin bahsedilen yerleri ve sahiplerini bildikleri / tanıdıkları varsayılır.

- **The hairdresser's** salon → **The hairdresser's**
- **The dentist's** clinic → **The dentist's**
- **Danny's** house → **Danny's**

10 ‘’s’ yapısı, uzun kelime gruplarıyla kullanılmaz. Bu durumda ‘’s’ yerine ‘of’ yapısı kullanılır.

- The hair **of the man on the bench** → ~~The man on the bench's hair...~~
- The car **of the most important man in the city** → ~~The most important man in the city's car...~~
- A phone **of the most expensive brands** → ~~The most expensive brands' phone...~~

11 ‘Of’ yapısı aynı zamanda başka iyelik bildiren isim ya da zamirlerle de kullanılabilir. (Double possessive)

- She is a cousin **of Jeremy's**. *(= She is one of Jeremy's cousins.)*
- He is a friend **of mine**. *(= He is one of my friends.)*

3 EXERCISE

Find the mistakes, if there are any, and correct them.

1. My determination to finish this project was what made me succeed.

____

2. The car's trunk was badly damaged in the accident.

____

3. Have you seen Jackies scissors?

____

4. The book I am reading now belongs to a friend of me.

____

5. My parent's house is just three doors down from mine.

____

6. My brother cat is extremely loving and cute.

____

7. The idea of Robert to swim in the ocean in winter is slightly ridiculous.

____

8. I have been using this camera of my since I was 10 years old.

____

9. The trees' leaves are changing colour as fall is coming.

____

10. I think Thomas' job is very interesting.

____

E DEVRİK CÜMLELER (Inverted Sentences)

Devrik cümleler (inverted sentences) özellikle yazı dilinde kullanılan yapılardır. Devrik yapılarda cümlenin öğeleri, belli durumlarda ve kurallar dahilinde olağan yerlerinden farklı yerlerde kullanılırlar. Devrik cümledeki öğelerin dizilişi soru cümlelerindekine benzerdir.

1 Cümle olumsuz veya sınırlayan sözcüklerle başladığı zaman, devrik yapı kullanılır.

- **Hardly** does Bobby eat chicken as he dislikes it.
- **Hardly** will you see anyone walking at two a.m. in this city.
- **In no way** do I think that speeding is safe.
- **Little** did my mother know that I snuck out last night.
- **Never** had anybody seen a dinosaur.
- **Never** have I ever been involved in a car accident.
- **No sooner** had I arrived home **than** the phone started ringing.
- **Nowhere** have I ever experienced such cold weather.
- **On no account** should passengers leave their luggage unattended.
- **Only later** did I realise I forgot to close the windows.

- **Only then** did Wade find out that he got accepted into Harvard.
- **Rarely** does Henry ever go to the gym because he is lazy.
- **Scarcely** had I bought a phone **when** the newer models were released.
- **Seldom** do we use our bicycles in winter.
- **Seldom** would you meet a person as friendly as Benjamin.

2 Bazı birleşik cümlelerde olumsuz sözcükle başlayan yan cümlecik başta olduğunda ana cümle devrik olur.

- **Not since** I left college had I seen Mary.
- **Not until** three hours later did my father come home.
- **Only by** following this road will you get to the beach.
- **Only when** Francis heard the news did he realize that his car was stolen.

3 Şart cümlelerinde (conditionals) yan cümlecikte 'were, had' veya 'should' yapısını başa getirirsek cümleyi devrik yapmış oluruz.

- **Should you require** more information, you can call me at my cell number.
- **Should you pass** by the shop tomorrow, please pick up some milk for me.
- **Were Gary rich**, he would buy a private jet.
- **Had you been two minutes later**, you would not have seen the magician.
- **Had I known** that the grocery store was having a sale, I would have gone there today.
- **Had my mother been home**, she would have got angry at us for coming home late.

4 'Nor' ve 'as' bağlaçları da devrik yapıyla kullanılırlar; ama 'as' devrik yapı olmadan da kullanılabilir.

- It rained here yesterday, **as** did it in my sister's city. (= as it did…)
- Alex did not go to school today, **nor** did he do his homework.
- My dog does not want to play with his ball, **nor** does he want to go for a walk.

5 Sonuç bildiren zarf cümlesi 'so' veya 'such' ile başlarsa devrik yapı kullanılır.

- **So heavy** was the box **that** my brothers could not even lift it.
- **So sunny** is it today **that** we have to wear our sunglasses.
- **Such** is the life as a teacher **that** you have to mark a lot of exams.

6 Yer bildiren edatlar cümlenin başında olduğu zaman devrik yapı kullanılır.

- **In the cupboard** was the kitten hiding.
- **On the desk** were the important documents placed.
- **Around the corner** will you find a famous dessert shop.

7 Bazı yer, yön bildiren edatlar (in, out, up, down) cümlenin başında olduğu zaman devrik yapı kullanılır.

- **Down** fell the apples from the tree.
- **Out** came the delicious chicken from the oven.
- **Up the pole** was the flag raised during the ceremony.

4 EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks.

1. ________________ does Lindsay ever eat out since she is saving up to buy a car.
2. I do not like lemon ________________ do I like lime.
3. ________________ had Colin got to the office ________________ his manager called him.
4. ________________ did my uncle know that my aunt planned a surprise birthday party for him.
5. ________________ came the pouring rain when we were out having our picnic.
6. ________________ delicious was the dinner ________________ we could not stop praising the cook.
7. ________________ you get lost, call the number on this card and you will get help.
8. ________________ can Sam finish his homework tonight.
9. ________________ the table was the needle I dropped.
10. ________________ I slept in for five minutes more, I would have been late for work.

F SORU EKLENTİLERİ (Question Tags)

Olumlu veya olumsuz düz (devrik olmayan) cümlelerin sonuna eklenen ve 'değil mi, olur mu, tamam mı?' diye çevirebileceğimiz yapılardır. Yapılan tonlamaya göre gerçek bir soru olabilecekleri gibi, bir bilgiyi teyit etmek veya onaylanmak için de kullanılabilirler.

1 'Question Tags' cümle içindeki yapıda (tense, modal, etc.) kullanılan yardımcı fiil ya da 'modal'ın cümle içindeki kullanımının tam tersi (olumlu ise olumsuz; olumsuz ise olumlu) cümlenin sonunda özneyle beraber kullanılmasıyla oluşturulur.

Cümle olumluysa 'question tag' olumsuz, cümle olumsuzsa 'question tag' olumlu olur.

- The CEO can't be serious about firing me, **can she**?
- George didn't run away from home, **did he**?
- The colour of the sky isn't pink, **is it**?
- Your dog wouldn't bite me, **would it**?
- The paper shouldn't be folded that way, **should it**?
- We mustn't cross the road when the lights are red, **must we**?

- It is going to be cloudy tomorrow, **isn't it**?
- You are appointed as the class monitor this year, **aren't you**?
- I have paid for the utility bills this month, **haven't I**?
- Jack will drive us home, **won't he**?
- The burglars might break into the house if you do not lock your door, **mightn't they**?
- William can ride a motorbike, **can't he**?

'Question Tags' yapısıyla ilgili bazı özel kullanımlar aşağıdaki örneklerde gösterildiği gibidir.

- You are going to Beth's party this weekend, **aren't you**?
- I am a very friendly person, **aren't I**?
- I am handsome, **aren't I**?
- You would rather be in Spain, **wouldn't you**?
- Dylan had better listen to his teacher's advice, **hadn't he**?
- Mary is very pretty, **isn't she**?
- James used to live in London, **didn't he**?

2 'I think, I believe, I don't suppose, I don't think, I'm afraid' gibi ifadeler soruyu yalnızca olumluluk / olumsuzluk anlamında etkiler. Bu cümlelerde 'question tag' oluşturulurken yan cümlenin zamanı ve yardımcı fiili kullanılır.

- I think you should feed your fish, **shouldn't you**?
- I believe that the tap in the bathroom is leaky, **isn't it**?
- I don't suppose you know what time it is now, **do you**?
- I don't think Susan is at home now, **isn't she**?
- I am afraid we ran out of milk, **didn't we**?
- I suppose you eat this dish with a fork, **don't you**?

3 'Neither, never, none, nothing, scarcely' gibi ifadeler cümleye olumsuz anlam kattıkları için 'question tag' olumlu olur.

- Neither of you know where my puppy is, **do you**?
- Your neighbours never keep quiet at night, **do they**?
- You have got no coins in your wallet, **do you**?
- Susie hardly ever has any savings left, **does she**?
- There is nothing left in the rental car office, **is there**?
- None of these socks belong to Joseph, **do they**?
- We have never been to this shop, **have we**?
- Ron and his wife scarcely go out during the weekends, **do they**?

4 Kişi bildiren belgisiz zamirler için 'they', nesne / eşya bildiren belgisiz zamirler için ise 'it' kullanılır.

- Everybody should arrive by nine a.m. tomorrow, **shouldn't they**?
- Everything in this shop is on sale, **isn't it**?
- Somebody must be responsible for the car accident, **mustn't they**?
- Nobody has seen Caleb recently, **have they**?
- Something might be stuck in the trunk, **mightn't it**?
- Someone could have seen what happened last night, **couldn't they**?
- Nothing can possibly go wrong now, **can it**?
- Anyone can ride a bicycle, **can't they**?

5 Olumlu ya da olumsuz emir cümlelerinde 'question tag'; 'will / won't / can / can't / could you?' ifadeleriyle oluşturulur. 'Let's' ile yapılan önerilerde ise 'shall we?' kalıbı kullanılır.

- Drive a bit slower, **could you**?
- Please do not waste water, **will you**?
- Remind me to bring along my passport, **can you**?
- Accompany me to the concert, **won't you**?
- Take me out to dinner by the harbour, **would you**?
- Turn down the volume of your music, **could you?**
- Let's go to the beach this weekend, **shall we**?
- Switch off the lights in the bedroom, **can you**?

Not *Sorulan soruda çoğu zaman verilen cümlenin öznesi kullanılsa da bazen soru farklı bir özneye yöneltilebilir. Ama bu durumda tonlama soru şeklinde yapılarak sorunun karşı tarafa yöneltildiği vurgulanır. Bunlara da 'reply questions' denir.*

- *I couldn't see the lighthouse from this angle, **could you**? (Can you see the lighthouse from this angle?) (Vurgu tamamen 'could you' bölümündedir.)*
- *I can't imagine how much pain Peter must be in now, **can you**?*
- *Jack doesn't reckon that going out this late is a good idea, **do you**?*
- *I don't think that this painting is beautiful, **do you**?*

5

EXERCISE

Fill in the blanks.

1. You shouldn't be hanging around outside the school during school hours, ________________?
2. I think it is time you went home for a visit, ________________?
3. Everybody is responsible for checking their own cars, ________________?
4. The houses in this city used to be cheaper, ________________?
5. Lily might have seen the laptop you lost, ________________?
6. Anybody could have taken the chairs, ________________?
7. Let's go to the zoo this weekend, ________________?
8. I must start exercising before I get overweight, ________________?
9. Never would I suspect that Jason was stealing money from the company, ________________?
10. Pass me the salt, ________________?

6 EXERCISE

Choose the correct option.

1. **George does not like apples, ----?**

   A) didn't he B) doesn't he C) does he D) is he E) isn't he

2. **Please help me sweep the floor, ----?**

   A) will you B) do you C) don't you D) didn't you E) have you

3. **I don't think that we should be making so much noise at this hour, ----?**

   A) didn't you B) haven't you C) don't you D) do you E) should you

4. **Your parents hardly ever bring you to the movies, ----?**

   A) do they B) don't they C) didn't they D) have they E) will they

5. **Mary should be used to the cold in Canada now since she's been living there for ten years, ----?**

   A) isn't she B) shouldn't she C) should she D) is she E) does she

6. **I suppose you go to school every day, ----?**

   A) do I B) did you C) didn't you D) aren't you E) don't you

7. **Georgina can't possibly walk to work every day, ----?**

   A) can't she B) could she C) can she D) isn't she E) does she

8. **The teacher has got our midterm papers marked, ----?**

   A) has he B) hasn't he C) is he D) does he E) doesn't he

9. **I couldn't see the icebergs from the boat, ----?**

   A) can you B) can't you C) couldn't you D) could you E) cannot you

10. **Let's watch the movie premier this weekend, ----?**

    A) shall we B) should we C) shouldn't we D) shan't we E) will we

G ANLAŞMA / UYUŞMAZLIK (Agreement / Disagreement)

'Too, either, so, neither' ve 'nor' karşı tarafın söylediğine (olumlu ya da olumsuz) katıldığını ifade etmek için kullanılan sözcükler ve yapılardır. Söylenen şeye katılmadığını ifade etmek için ise 'but' ve ilgili yardımcı fiiller kullanılır.

'Too' ve 'so' olumlu cümlelerle aynı fikirde olduğumuzu ifade etmek için kullanılır.

'Either, neither' ve 'nor' olumsuz cümlelerle aynı fikirde olduğumuzu ifade etmek için kullanılır.

'Too, either, so, neither' ve 'nor' un her biri cümle içinde farklı şekillerde kullanılabilir. Bu kullanımları anlamak için aşağıdaki örnekleri dikkatle inceleyiniz.

Agreement :

- **Oscar** : I think David is a nice person.
  Florence : I do, **too**. / **So** do I.
- **Oscar** : I don't think David is a good person.
  Florence : I don't, **either**. / **Nor** do I. / **Neither** do I.
- **Oscar** : I have sold my car.
  Florence : I have, **too**. / **So** have I.
- **Oscar** : I haven't sold my car yet.
  Florence : I haven't, **either**. / **Nor** have I. / **Neither** have I.
- **Ethan** : I don't want to go there.
  Penny : I don't want to go there, **either**.
  : I don't, **either**.
  : **Neither** / **Nor** do I.
  : Me, **neither**. (informal)
  veya
  : He doesn't want to go there and I don't want to go there, **either**.
  : He doesn't want to go there and I don't, **either**.
  : He doesn't want to go there and **neither** / **nor** do I.

Disagreement :

- **Jasmine** : I think David is a nice person.
  Matthew : **But** I don't.
- **Jack** : I don't think David is a good person.
  Ted : **But** I do.
- **Julia** : I have sold my car.
  Kate : **But** I haven't.
- **Nathan** : I haven't sold my car yet.
  Eva : **But** I have.

H VURGULU YAPILAR (Emphatic Structures)

Vurgulu yapılar (emphatic structures); ifadeyi güçlendirmek veya ifadenin belli bir bölümünü öne çıkarmak için kullanılırlar. İngilizcede ifadeyi vurgulamak için kullanılan birkaç yöntem vardır.

Bu kullanımları anlamak için aşağıdaki örnekleri ve anlamlarını inceleyiniz.

- How did you get such good results?
  (Nasıl bu kadar iyi sonuçlar aldın? = Bilgi almak için sorma)
- How is it **that** you got such good results?
  (Nasıl oldu da bu kadar iyi sonuçlar aldın? = Şaşırma + vurgu)
- My cat broke the vase.
  It was my cat **that** broke the vase.
- Jack gave me this umbrella.
  It was Jack **who** / **that** gave me this umbrella.
- Lewis brought us to watch the sunset by the beach.
  It was Lewis **who** / **that** brought us to watch the sunset by the beach.
- I bumped into my childhood friend, Nancy, yesterday.
  It was my childhood friend, Nancy, **whom** I bumped into yesterday.

1 REVISION:
Circle the correct option.

1. **The ---- served during dinner tonight were delicious.**
A) pieces of fruits B) pieces of fruit

2. **Do you like your ---- hot or cold?**
A) coffee B) coffees

3. **The ---- in our backyard is getting too long.**
A) grass B) grasses

4. **The ---- provided by the prosecutor was adequate to convict the defendant.**
A) evidences B) evidence

5. **Did you know that the most common ---- in this world are heights, flying and public speaking?**
A) fear B) fears

6. **My cat sheds a lot and my couch is covered in ---- hair.**
A) its B) it's

7. **The ---- was blown down during the storm yesterday.**
A) roof of this house B) house's roof

8. **The chandelier was given to us as a wedding gift by a ----.**
A) friend of us B) friend of ours

9. **---- should you fight with your siblings.**
A) No sooner B) On no account

10. **---- have I ever seen Jenny wear jeans during ten years of our friendship.**
A) Only then B) Never

11. **---- you feel the need to smoke, please leave the room to do so.**
A) Should B) Had

12. **---- the stairs she ran to get away from the evil monster.**
A) On B) Up

13. **---- last summer has anyone swam in the lake, as it was declared contaminated at that time.**
A) Not until B) Not since

14. **---- interesting was the book that I could not put it down.**
A) So B) Such

15. **The paint ---- was used to create this masterpiece is two decades old.**
A) that B) it

16. **Dexter should have arrived in Singapore by now, ----?**
A) should he B) shouldn't he

17. **I didn't think that it was possible for a human being to walk on water, ----?**
A) did you B) didn't you

18. **You can speak seven different languages, ----? You are a legendary linguist.**
A) can't you B) can you

19. **Stop being so aggressive to everyone, ----?**
A) will you B) won't you

20. **Anybody could have helped us when our car broke down, ----?**
A) could they B) couldn't they

NOUNS & EXTRA SUBJECTS

TEST 1

1. **Helen does not like to have cereal for breakfast, ----?**

A) does she
B) don't you
C) didn't you
D) doesn't she
E) doesn't he

2. **Let's dance to this unbelievably good music, ----?**

A) will we
B) won't we
C) should we
D) shall we
E) shan't we

3. **Neither of you has graduated from university this year, ----?**

A) haven't you
B) have you
C) were you
D) hasn't you
E) hadn't you

4. **None of these questions make sense, ----? You are as confused as I am.**

A) don't they
B) didn't they
C) do they
D) are they
E) did they

5. **You have to hurry up if you want to make it to work, ----?**

A) had you
B) have you
C) do you
D) haven't you
E) don't you

6. **Ruby used to work at this bakery, ----? I remember having seen her here in a uniform.**

A) did she
B) didn't she
C) does she
D) has she
E) hasn't she

7. **Was it Lily ---- cleaned the dishes for me? I can't thank her enough.**

A) who
B) which
C) where
D) whom
E) whose

8. **It was Lisa's dog ---- ate all the meat left on the table.**

A) who
B) that
C) when
D) whom
E) whose

9. **It wasn't Gregory ---- you should be angry with. I did that.**

A) whose
B) when
C) where
D) whom
E) which

10. **Sean does not want to go to the party tonight, ---- is he interested in meeting up at the library.**

A) or
B) and
C) nor
D) so
E) therefore

11. ---- have I tasted such delicious chocolate cake.

A) Only
B) Only then
C) Only by
D) Never again
E) Never

12.. ---- Joe known that it was Katie's birthday, he would have bought a present for her.

A) Had
B) Should
C) So
D) Such
E) If

13. ---- lonely was William that he cried himself to sleep every night.

A) Such
B) Should
C) So
D) Had
E) How

14. ---- Greg got to the cashier did he realize that he forgot his wallet at home.

A) Not since
B) Little
C) Only by
D) Only then
E) Only when

15. ---- would you see Nancy studying in the library. She prefers studying at home.

A) Hardly when
B) Seldom
C) Little of
D) Should
E) Only by

16. ---- should the kids be playing in the park without adult supervision.

A) On no account
B) Rarely
C) Seldom
D) No sooner
E) Scarcely

17. ---- the bed was where I found my lost sock. It would have never crossed my mind to look down there but for Susie.

A) In
B) Up
C) Under
D) On
E) Out

18. ---- Mandy's head the bird landed. She was so scared that she started running in circles to get it to fly away.

A) Up
B) In
C) Under
D) Above
E) On

19. A friend of ---- once told me to appreciate everything I have now because life is short.

A) me
B) mine
C) I
D) my
E) myself

20. ---- makes the best pizzas.

A) Thomas' mothers
B) Thomas' mother
C) Thomas's mother's
D) Thomas mother
E) Thomas mother's

NOUNS & EXTRA SUBJECTS

TEST 2

1. **Shakespeare produced hundreds of ---- during his lifetime which are still classified as some of the most precious literary items.**

A) work
B) works
C) the works
D) the work
E) working

2. **The inhabitants ---- voted for removing the ugly statue from the town square but the Mayor refused to do so.**

A) of town
B) town
C) of the town
D) town's
E) the town

3. **This is ---- new school. We love to work here side by side and I don't think it will cause us any troubles to be working together.**

A) me and my husband
B) mine and my husband
C) my husband and I
D) my and my husband's
E) ours

4. **Nobody knows how many ---- affairs Max has had till now as he is quite well-known for falling in love quickly.**

A) love
B) of love
C) the loves
D) of the loves
E) loves

5. **----, can you make sure that he understands what you are saying. He is deaf and can only understand you through either sign language or lip reading.**

A) Only by speaking to his face
B) I would rather you spoke to his face
C) You rarely speak to his face
D) Rarely has she spoken to my face
E) On speaking to his face

6. **---- came the currency rate and it made my day. I have been planning to go to Europe for quite a while and the exchange rate was crazy.**

A) Such
B) Down
C) Seldom
D) Only if
E) On

7. **You have been friends with George for a long time, ----? Can you tell me what the hell he wants from me?**

A) have you
B) haven't you
C) have got
D) did you
E) hadn't you

8. **No one has started looking for the missing boy, ----? I can't believe it. The search would have been on for hours if it was a rich man's child.**

A) has it
B) have you
C) hasn't he
D) haven't they
E) have they

9. **---- had she turned the corner ---- she ran into her ex-husband and ran like crazy as they got divorced because of his violent tendencies.**

A) Neither / nor
B) Seldom / when
C) No sooner / than
D) Both / and
E) Not only / but also

10. **None of the cats ate the poisonous food our mad neighbour put on the street, ----? I haven't seen one cat wandering around the street today.**

A) did they
B) didn't they
C) were they
D) weren't they
E) did it

11. **Meg strongly believes that Joseph loves her to death, ----? She has no idea he is a violent man.**

A) does she
B) does he
C) doesn't he
D) doesn't she
E) is it

12. **---- did Liz abandon her kids ---- she withdrew any financial assistance she was supposed to give them. That's why the kids are desperate to find shelter.**

A) Not only / but also
B) Neither / nor
C) Hardly / when
D) No sooner / than
E) Both / and

13. **The edge ---- seemed to have been torn apart by the impact of the earthquake. It needs to be fixed immediately.**

A) of the kitchen counter
B) kitchen counter
C) the kitchen counter's
D) kitchen counter's
E) of kitchen counter

14. **---- is a must in the police investigations, otherwise they would never be able to solve complex cases.**

A) Informations
B) Few information
C) A few informations
D) Information
E) Little information

15. **Whales are ---- in the world, not to mention the blue whale is the largest mammal and animal on earth.**

A) largest fish
B) large fishes
C) the largest fish
D) the fishes
E) the fish

16. **---- is his nature. You need to be patient with him and try to understand his awkward personality or else your marriage will fail.**

A) So
B) Such
C) So much
D) So well
E) Such a

17. **---- Charles known that his mother would live so long, he would have chosen a different route in life instead of waiting to be the King.**

A) Were
B) Has
C) Did
D) May
E) Had

18. **What criterion ---- used to establish that this is the correct answer?**

A) were
B) have been
C) was
D) are
E) hasn't been

19. **---- climbed the naughty little girl, putting her life in danger. I couldn't even look at her.**

A) Had
B) Was
C) Up
D) Hardly
E) Through

20. **---- you come across Elizabeth anywhere, call me immediately from either my office or home.**

A) Do
B) Should
C) Rarely
D) Had
E) Can

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

Base Form	Past Simple	Past Participle	Turkish Meaning
abide	abode / abided	abode / abided	*kurallara uymak, itaat etmek*
arise	arose	arisen	*ortaya çıkmak, doğmak*
awake	awoke	awoken	*uyan(dır)mak*
be	was / were	been	*olmak*
bear	bore	borne / born	*taşımak; doğurmak; katlanmak*
beat	beat	beaten	*yenmek; dövmek; çarpmak (kalp)*
become	became	become	*… hal(in)e gelmek*
begin	began	begun	*başlamak*
behold	beheld	beheld	*farkına varmak, görmek*
bend	bent	bent	*eğ(il)mek, bük(ül)mek*
beseech	besought / beseeched	besought / beseeched	*yalvarmak, dilemek*
bespeak	bespoke	bespoken	*bir şeyin göstergesi olmak*
bet	bet / betted	bet / betted	*bahse / iddiaya girmek*
bid	bid / bade	bid / bidden	*fiyat teklif etmek*
bind	bound	bound	*bağlamak*
bite	bit	bitten	*ısırmak, dişlemek*
bleed	bled	bled	*kanamak*
blow	blew	blown	*üflemek; esmek*
break	broke	broken	*kırmak*
breed	bred	bred	*yavrulamak; hayvan yetiştirmek*
bring	brought	brought	*getirmek*
broadcast	broadcast	broadcast	*yayın yapmak*
build	built	built	*inşa etmek*

burn	burnt / burned	burnt / burned	*yanmak; yakmak*
burst	burst	burst	*patla(t)mak*
buy	bought	bought	*satın almak*
cast	cast	cast	*fırlatmak, atmak; yaymak, saçmak*
catch	caught	caught	*yakalamak*
choose	chose	chosen	*seçmek*
cling	clung	clung	*tutunmak, yapışmak*
come	came	come	*gelmek*
cost	cost / costed	cost / costed	*mâl olmak*
creep	crept	crept	*sürünerek ilerlemek, süzülmek*
cut	cut	cut	*kesmek*
deal	dealt	dealt	*ilgilenmek; kart dağıtmak*
dig	dug	dug	*kazmak*
dive	dived / dove (US)	dived	*suya dalmak*
do	did	done	*yapmak*
draw	drew	drawn	*çizmek; çekmek*
dream	dreamt / dreamed	dreamt / dreamed	*rüya görmek; hayal etmek*
drink	drank	drunk	*içmek*
drive	drove	driven	*araba sürmek*
dwell	dwelt / dwelled	dwelt / dwelled	*yaşamak, ikâmet etmek*
eat	ate	eaten	*yemek*
fall	fell	fallen	*düşmek*
feed	fed	fed	*besle(n)mek*
feel	felt	felt	*hissetmek*
fight	fought	fought	*savaşmak; tartışmak; mücadele etmek*
find	found	found	*bulmak*

flee	fled	fled	*sıvışmak, kaçıp gitmek*
fling	flung	flung	*fırlatıp atmak, savurmak*
fly	flew	flown	*uç(ur)mak*
forbid	forbad / forbade	forbidden	*yasaklamak*
forecast	forecast / forecasted	forecast / forecasted	*tahmin etmek, öngörmek*
foresee	foresaw	foreseen	*tahmin etmek, öngörmek*
foretell	foretold	foretold	*önceden bilmek / görmek*
forget	forgot	forgotten	*unutmak*
forgive	forgave	forgiven	*affetmek*
forsake	forsook	forsaken	*terk etmek; vazgeçmek, bırakmak*
freeze	froze	frozen	*don(dur)mak*
get	got	got / gotten (US)	*elde etmek; anlamak; alıp getirmek*
give	gave	given	*vermek*
go	went	gone	*gitmek*
grind	ground	ground	*öğütmek; bilemek*
grow	grew	grown	*yetiş(tir)mek, büyü(t)mek*
hang	hung / hanged	hung / hanged	*asmak*
have	had	had	*sahip olmak*
hear	heard	heard	*duymak*
heave	hove / heaved	hove / heaved	*ağır bir şeyi zorla kaldırmak*
hide	hid	hidden	*sakla(n)mak, gizle(n)mek*
hit	hit	hit	*vurmak, çarpmak*
hold	held	held	*tutmak; taşımak, içermek*
hurt	hurt	hurt	*incitmek; ağrımak*
keep	kept	kept	*tutmak*
kneel	knelt / kneeled	knelt / kneeled	*diz çökmek*

knit	knit / knitted	knit / knitted	*örmek*
know	knew	known	*bilmek*
lay	laid	laid	*yerleştirmek; örtmek, yaymak*
lead	led	led	*öncülük / kılavuzluk etmek*
lean	leant / leaned	leant / leaned	*bir yöne doğru eğilmek*
leap	leapt / leaped	leapt / leaped	*atlamak, sıçramak, zıplamak*
learn	learnt / learned	learnt / learned	*öğrenmek*
leave	left	left	*bırakmak; terk etmek; ayrılmak*
lend	lent	lent	*ödünç vermek*
let	let	let	*izin vermek*
lie	lay	lain	*yatmak, uzanmak*
light	lit / lighted	lit / lighted	*yakmak, yanmak; aydınlatmak*
lose	lost	lost	*kaybetmek*
make	made	made	*yapmak*
mean	meant	meant	*anlamına gelmek; kastetmek*
meet	met	met	*tanışmak; buluşmak; toplantı yapmak*
mishear	misheard	misheard	*yanlış duymak*
mislead	misled	misled	*yanıltmak, aldatmak*
misread	misread	misread	*yanlış okumak / anlam çıkarmak*
misspell	misspelt / misspelled	misspelt / misspelled	*yanlış hecelemek / yazmak*
mistake	mistook	mistaken	*yanlış anlamak, yanılmak*
misunderstand	misunderstood	misunderstood	*yanlış / ters anlamak*
mow	mowed	mown / mowed	*çim biçmek / kesmek*
outdo	outdid	outdone	*bir konuda birini geçmek*
outgrow	outgrew	outgrown	*fazla büyümek*
outrun	outran	outrun	*birisinden / bir şeyden daha hızlı ilerlemek*

outsell	outsold	outsold	*daha fazla satmak*
overcome	overcame	overcome	*üstesinden gelmek*
overdo	overdid	overdone	*aşırıya kaçmak, abartmak*
overeat	overate	overeaten	*tıka basa yemek*
overhear	overheard	overheard	*istemeden kulak misafiri olmak*
override	overrode	overridden	*geçersiz saymak; -den daha önemli olmak*
overrun	overran	overrun	*istila etmek; süresini aşmak*
oversee	oversaw	overseen	*denetlemek*
oversleep	overslept	overslept	*uyuya kalmak*
overtake	overtook	overtaken	*sollamak; -den daha başarılı olmak*
partake	partook	partaken	*katılmak, iştirak etmek*
pay	paid	paid	*ödemek*
proofread	proofread	proofread	*yazım hatalarını bulup düzeltmek*
prove	proved	proved / proven (US)	*kanıtlamak*
put	put	put	*koymak, yerleştirmek*
quit	quit / quitted	quit / quitted	*bir şeyi bırakmak / terk etmek*
read	read	read	*okumak*
reset	reset	reset	*sıfırlamak, yeniden ayarlamak*
rid	rid	rid	*kurtulmak, kurtarmak; arın(dır) mak*
ride	rode	ridden	*ata / bisiklete binmek*
ring	rang	rung	*çalmak (zil, telefon); telefon etmek*
rise	rose	risen	*artmak; yükselmek; ayağa kalkmak*
run	ran	run	*koşmak; işletmek*
say	said	said	*söylemek*
see	saw	seen	*görmek; anlamak*
seek	sought	sought	*aramak, bulmaya çalışmak*

sell	sold	sold	*satmak*
send	sent	sent	*göndermek, yollamak*
set	set	set	*ayarlamak, kurmak*
sew	sewed	sewn	*dikiş dikmek*
shake	shook	shaken	*sallamak; sarsmak*
shed	shed	shed	*dökmek*
shine	shone / shined	shone / shined	*parlamak, ışık saçmak*
shoot	shot	shot	*ateş etmek*
show	showed	shown	*göstermek*
shrink	shrank	shrunk	*daral(t)mak, küçül(t)mek*
shut	shut	shut	*kapatmak*
sing	sang	sung	*(şarkı) söylemek*
sink	sank	sunk	*bat(ır)mak (gemi vb.)*
sit	sat	sat	*oturmak*
slay	slew	slain	*öldürmek, katletmek*
sleep	slept	slept	*uyumak*
slide	slid	slid	*kay(dır)mak*
sling	slung	slung	*fırlatmak; askıya almak*
slink	slunk	slunk	*sıvışmak, fark edilmeden gitmek*
slit	slit	slit	*uzunlamasına kesmek, yarmak*
smell	smelt / smelled	smelt / smelled	*kok(la)mak*
sow	sowed	sown / sowed	*tohum ekmek*
speak	spoke	spoken	*konuşmak*
speed	sped	sped	*süratle / hızla gitmek*
spell	spelt / spelled	spelt / spelled	*hecelemek; yazım kurallarına göre yazmak*
spend	spent	spent	*harcamak*

spill	spilt / spilled	spilt / spilled	*dökmek*
spin	spun	spun	*dön(dür)mek*
spit	spat	spat	*tükürmek*
split	split	split	*böl(ün)mek, parçala(n)mak*
spoil	spoilt / spoiled	spoit / spoiled	*boz(ul)mak; şımartmak*
spread	spread	spread	*yaymak, sürmek; dağıtmak*
spring	sprang	sprung	*sıçramak; ortaya çıkmak*
stand	stood	stood	*ayağa kalmak; ayakta durmak*
steal	stole	stolen	*çalmak, aşırmak*
stick	stuck	stuck	*yapış(tır)mak*
sting	stung	stung	*sokmak, ısırmak (böcek, arı vb.)*
stink	stank	stunk	*kötü kokmak*
strew	strewed	strewn / strewed	*saç(ıl)mak*
stride	strode	stridden	*hızlı bir şekilde yürümek*
strike	struck	struck	*vurmak; grev yapmak; saldırmak*
string	strung	strung	*bir şeyi iple asmak*
strive	strove / strived	striven / strived	*çabalamak, gayret etmek*
swear	swore	sworn	*yemin etmek; küfür etmek*
sweep	swept	swept	*süpürmek*
swell	swelled	swollen	*şişmek, kabarmak*
swim	swam	swum	*yüzmek*
swing	swung	swung	*salla(n)mak; dön(dür)mek*
take	took	taken	*almak*
teach	taught	taught	*öğretmek*
tear	tore	torn	*yırt(ıl)mak*
tell	told	told	*söylemek, anlatmak*

think	thought	thought	*düşünmek*
throw	threw	thrown	*atmak, fırlatmak*
thrust	thrust	thrust	*itmek, saplamak*
tread	trod / treaded	trodden / trod	*basmak, çiğnemek; davranmak*
underfeed	underfed	underfed	*yetersiz besle(n)mek*
undergo	underwent	undergone	*maruz kalmak*
underlie	underlay	underlain	*bir şeyin asıl nedeni olmak*
understand	understood	understood	*anlamak*
undertake	undertook	undertaken	*üstlenmek*
undo	undid	undone	*çözmek, açmak; bir şeyin etkisinden kurtulmak*
uphold	upheld	upheld	*onaylamak; destek olmak*
upset	upset	upset	*üzmek*
wake	woke	woken	*uyanmak*
wear	wore	worn	*giymek, takmak; yıpranmak*
weave	wove	woven	*dokumak*
wed	wed / wedded	wed / wedded	*evlenmek*
weep	wept	wept	*ağlamak*
wet	wet / wetted	wet / wetted	*ıslatmak*
win	won	won	*kazanmak*
wind	wound	wound	*dolamak, sarmak (ip vb.); kurmak (saat vb.)*
withdraw	withdrew	withdrawn	*hesaptan para çekmek; geri çekilmek*
withhold	withheld	withheld	*alıkoymak, esirgemek*
withstand	withstood	withstood	*dayanmak, karşı koymak*
wring	wrung	wrung	*sıkmak, sıkıp suyunu çıkarmak*
write	wrote	written	*yazmak*

ANSWER KEY

PRONOUNS

Sample Questions 1

1. A
2. B
3. D
4. A
5. C
6. D
7. A
8. E

EXERCISE 1

1. her
2. them
3. you
4. they
5. him
6. it (she)
7. she
8. it
9. them
10. him

Sample Questions 2

1. D
2. A

Sample Questions 3

1. E
2. B
3. E
4. C
5. A
6. E

EXERCISE 2

1. mine
2. your
3. his
4. its
5. theirs
6. her
7. yours
8. our
9. mine
10. his

EXERCISE 3

1. Ours
2. his
3. their
4. his
5. his
6. their
7. her
8. Our
9. their
10. mine

EXERCISE 4

1. hers
2. me / mine
3. his
4. them
5. us
6. his
7. mine
8. me / mine
9. his
10. mine

Sample Questions 4

1. E
2. B
3. A
4. E
5. B
6. E

EXERCISE 5

1. by yourself
2. himself
3. by himself
4. by themselves
5. by itself
6. herself
7. by himself
8. myself
9. by themselves
10. herself

EXERCISE 6

1. by yourself
2. by themselves
3. themselves
4. myself
5. by itself
6. himself

7. by yourself
8. himself
9. by herself
10. themselves

Sample Questions 5

1. A
2. B
3. B
4. A
5. B
6. B
7. A
8. B

EXERCISE 7

1. something
2. anything
3. Nobody
4. somebody
5. anything
6. nobody
7. Somebody
8. nothing
9. anything
10. something

EXERCISE 8

1. someone
2. anything (everything)
3. something
4. nobody
5. nowhere else
6. anyone
7. anywhere else
8. anyone
9. everywhere (anywhere)
10. anybody

Sample Questions 6

1. C
2. E
3. B
4. C
5. A
6. B

EXERCISE 9

1. those of
2. those
3. this
4. that
5. This
6. that
7. that of
8. that
9. those
10. Those

Sample Questions 7

1. A
2. D
3. B
4. B
5. D
6. C
7. D
8. B
9. A
10. E

EXERCISE 10

1. the others
2. other
3. another
4. another
5. other
6. other
7. The other
8. the others
9. other
10. each other

EXERCISE 11

1. the others
2. other
3. other
4. other
5. other
6. another
7. others
8. other
9. other
10. another

REVISION 1

1. nobody
2. her
3. something
4. their
5. Everything
6. by himself
7. those
8. one
9. by themselves
10. each other

REVISION 2

1. anybody
2. those of
3. his
4. someone
5. the one
6. somewhere
7. her
8. something
9. These
10. us
11. Nobody
12. another
13. anything
14. other
15. Someone

REVISION 3

1B 2A 3A 4A 5B 6B 7A 8A 9B 10A 11B 12A 13A 14B 15A 16B 17A 18A 19A 20B

TEST 1

1A 2C 3C 4B 5D 6B 7E 8E 9A 10E 11E 12B 13B 14C 15D 16A 17D 18A 19E 20C

TEST 2

1B 2A 3D 4C 5E 6A 7D 8E 9E 10D 11B 12C 13C 14A 15B 16E 17A 18A 19C 20D

TENSES

EXERCISE 1

1. is cooking
2. am taking
3. is staying
4. don't eat
5. is studying
6. are staying
7. shows
8. am leaving
9. don't support
10. is planning

EXERCISE 2

1. is looking for
2. deal with / am sitting
3. is already going
4. wants
5. doesn't want
6. covers
7. use
8. goes / is going
9. are reading
10. are moving

EXERCISE 3

1. were sleeping / attacked
2. was studying / decided
3. were driving / broke down
4. sold
5. had / went
6. caused / was reading
7. died out / killed
8. was going / walked
9. increased / earned
10. built

EXERCISE 4

1. was drinking / called
2. withdrew / were losing
3. noticed / weren't eating
4. cooked / was
5. was eating / was making
6. gave
7. said / ate / didn't think
8. was studying / knocked
9. were walking / crashed / pulled
10. was trying / was

EXERCISE 5

1. will be going
2. will improve
3. are going to have
4. will be celebrating
5. will remain (will be remaining)
6. will be studying
7. is going to apply
8. will be having (are going to have)
9. won't be working (won't work)
10. will become

EXERCISE 6

1. is going to go (is going)
2. will be sleeping
3. will understand
4. will be working
5. is going to take
6. will be celebrating (will celebrate)
7. will fail
8. was going to learn
9. is going to try
10. am going to put

EXERCISE 7

1. was going to go
2. works / work
3. were going to sell
4. will reach
5. were enjoying / wanted
6. were sitting
7. died
8. is growing
9. doesn't improve
10. adapt

EXERCISE 8

1. remain
2. had / will stay
3. is planning
4. was running / noticed
5. had / feel
6. was going to go
7. will be living
8. broke / arrived
9. are looking for
10. left

EXERCISE 9

1. watched / arrived
2. have known
3. haven't had / have been
4. have changed
5. travelled / saw
6. told / fell
7. has studied
8. practised / played
9. was / have expanded
10. has become
11. haven't had / have been
12. lived
13. was / worked
14. have worked
15. has become

EXERCISE 10

1. has been serving (has served)
2. have utilized
3. have been sitting
4. has been
5. has been acting
6. have applied
7. has been raining
8. have been following
9. have been driving
10. has explained

EXERCISE 11

1. have discovered
2. have watched / has been
3. has changed
4. has fed
5. have been cooking
6. has been explaining
7. have been working
8. have been painting
9. has been
10. have reached

EXERCISE 12

1. had been smoking
2. met / had started
3. have been dating
4. had walked / had forgotten
5. had already been working
6. has been running
7. have spent
8. has been writing
9. had been living / moved
10. had presented / asked

11. had been lying
12. have started
13. had already left
14. had been studying (had studied) / remembered
15. had bought

EXERCISE 13

1. have finished
2. had left
3. had expanded
4. had always wanted / booked
5. finished / decided
6. arrived / had been
7. have watched
8. had been sleeping (was sleeping) / broke
9. declared / had already fired
10. had walked (had been walking) / reached
11. had been applying
12. had been working
13. have bought
14. had completed / went
15. had finished

EXERCISE 14

1. will have been studying (have studied)
2. will have decided
3. will have been serving (will have served)
4. will have completed
5. will have learned
6. will have been
7. will have released
8. will have been dieting
9. will have closed
10. will have been studying
11. will have paid
12. will have flown
13. will have been waiting
14. will have graduated
15. will have cleaned / will have taken

REVISION 1

1. has been raining
2. has had
3. has been feeding
4. had looked
5. had been breaking
6. hadn't found
7. arrived / went up
8. will have been living (will have lived)
9. have been blocking (have blocked)
10. will have arrived

REVISION 2

1. have invented
2. has been
3. have had
4. had been stealing (had stolen)
5. will have been working (will have worked)
6. had worked
7. have been talking
8. arrived / had been playing (had played)
9. will have been watching
10. have been studying

REVISION 3

1. has been
2. had forgotten
3. had done
4. will quit
5. decided
6. will have made
7. was becoming (had become)
8. left
9. were playing
10. hadn't eaten

REVISION 4

1. have hired (hired)
2. specialised
3. lasted
4. succeeds
5. have walked
6. had lost
7. was
8. have studied
9. wanted
10. have been driving

REVISION 5

1. has studied
2. have been looking
3. heard
4. will try
5. arrived
6. has taken
7. called
8. decided
9. was planning
10. had had / passed away

REVISION 6

1. spotted
2. had been waiting
3. is going to leave
4. hadn't bought
5. were planning
6. have studied
7. will be living
8. had offended
9. has saved
10. wanted

REVISION 7

1A 2B 3A 4A 5B 6B 7A 8B 9B 10A 11A 12B
13A 14A 15A 16B 17B 18A 19A 20A

TEST 1

1D 2A 3B 4D 5A 6E 7C 8C 9A 10D 11B 12E
13E 14E 15C 16B 17C 18A 19C 20A

TEST 2

1A 2C 3E 4B 5A 6D 7E 8A 9B 10B 11E 12C
13A 14D 15E 16B 17E 18A 19C 20D

MODALS

EXERCISE 1

1A 2B 3A 4B 5B 6A 7B 8A 9A 10B

EXERCISE 2

1. would
2. become used to (grown used to)
3. used to
4. would rather
5. Would
6. wouldn't
7. get used to
8. wouldn't
9. get used to
10. grown used to

EXERCISE 3

1. Can / buy
2. Can / help
3. could read
4. couldn't sleep
5. cannot enter
6. will be able to buy
7. can cause
8. couldn't enter
9. was able to bake
10. Were / able to reach

EXERCISE 4

1. must be walking
2. must have prepared
3. must be
4. can't have broken
5. must be feeling
6. must have felt
7. can't be feeling
8. can't be working
9. must have been studying
10. can't be asking
11. must know
12. can't have been
13. must have been researching
14. can't be
15. must be

EXERCISE 5

1. doesn't have to attend
2. must respect
3. had to do
4. mustn't litter
5. has to impress
6. had to buy
7. mustn't sit
8. don't have to do
9. must watch
10. have to migrate

EXERCISE 6

1. mustn't lose
2. needn't have spent
3. needn't have rushed
4. needn't book
5. don't have to wake up
6. needn't have shovelled
7. Do you need to go
8. need to go
9. does not need to go
10. needn't apply
11. needs to go
12. needn't have overreacted
13. needn't have given
14. mustn't smoke
15. don't need to graduate

EXERCISE 7

1. might go (could go)
2. may not find
3. could be having
4. might have gone
5. Might I use
6. could have got
7. might be going
8. May I borrow
9. could arrest
10. could join (might join)

EXERCISE 8

1. may have caught
2. could have brought
3. might have been
4. May you be
5. could be
6. might drive
7. may not find
8. might go
9. could have been
10. Could you help

EXERCISE 9

1. to have married
2. to listen
3. go / attend
4. had cooked
5. to go
6. be having
7. to play / watch
8. be sunbathing
9. have
10. have spent
11. stopped
12. have dyed
13. to have got

EXERCISE 10

1. ought to take care of
2. had better be writing
3. should receive
4. shouldn't have spent
5. shouldn't eat
6. had better be cooking
7. should be getting
8. ought to (should / had better) consult
9. ought not to (should not / had better not) reflect
10. should have known
11. had better not yell
12. should go
13. ought to have been
14. should be serving

EXERCISE 11

1. were supposed to have been recycled
2. am supposed to go
3. are to wash
4. daren't go
5. is to supervise
6. were supposed to donate
7. were supposed to finish
8. was supposed to have paid
9. dare you forget
10. were supposed to paint

REVISION 1

1. used to go on
2. might go (can go)
3. must have
4. might be (can be)
5. used to make
6. didn't use to go
7. might be able to go

8. must be starving
9. might attend
10. must have

REVISION 2

1. couldn't go
2. was always able to make
3. Could (Can) you pass
4. am generally able to do
5. could never understand
6. was able to find
7. Can (Could) you fit
8. will be able to get
9. could sell
10. can go

REVISION 3

1. must be
2. can't have seen
3. must have
4. must have been rushing
5. must have been doing
6. must have gone
7. must be
8. can't be buying
9. have been researching
10. can't have been

REVISION 4

1. might be (may be / could be)
2. may (might) I park
3. Could you help
4. might visit
5. could have gone / might not like
6. may have been stolen
7. could have broken
8. could have been
9. could not have been
10. might go (may go)

REVISION 5

1A 2A 3B 4A 5A 6B 7B 8A 9B 10A 11B 12B
13A 14B 15A 16A 17B 18B 19A 20B

TEST 1

1A 2C 3D 4A 5E 6B 7C 8A 9E 10B 11D 12E
13A 14A 15D 16C 17D 18C 19B 20E

TEST 2

1D 2A 3D 4B 5B 6C 7C 8A 9C 10A 11B 12D
13E 14D 15B 16C 17A 18B 19B 20E

PASSIVE & CAUSATIVE

EXERCISE 1

1. Ten apples were stolen from the neighbour's garden.
2. Leon was confused by the jargon in the instructions and subsequently burnt the cake he was baking.
3. This antique necklace that means a lot was given to me by my great-grandmother before she passed away.
4. I will be informed about the location of our upcoming fishing trip by Gary.
5. The strawberry tree in the garden was planted by both my neighbour and me.
6. The teacher told us that our group assignment must be submitted by the end of today.
7. The apartment could have been rented (by you) if you had contacted the landlord earlier.
8. The new restaurant downtown is being visited by many people and they seem to be happy with the food and service.
9. The cat was being fed by me when the bell rang.
10. The dough must be mixed well if the cake is to come out soft and fluffy.

EXERCISE 2

1. The citizens living in this country will be greatly affected by the price increase in all dairy products.
2. Trees could have been planted by the owner of the property to protect pedestrians.
3. Cardiovascular diseases might be caused by excessive smoking, sedentary lifestyle and an unhealthy diet.
4. Your bag and phone could have been stolen (by someone) during the fire drill yesterday.
5. I was taught how to read by my father when I was five.
6. The Math homework was being completed by my little sister when I went to pick up groceries.
7. Two dozens of pot pies were made by Sarah for the charity bake sale in school.
8. Our Physics projects must be finished (by us) by Friday.

9. The new parking rule will be introduced by the city council next weekend.
10. Every Sunday morning, delicious pancakes and maple syrup are brought to us by my grandmother.

EXERCISE 3

1.
   - It is known that driving without the seatbelt on can be fatal.
   - Driving without the seatbelt on is known to be fatal.
2.
   - It is often said that flights are very expensive from this city.
   - Flights are often said to be very expensive from this city.
3.
   - It is thought that going to the beach on a cloudy day is a good idea as it is not too hot.
   - Going to the beach on a cloudy day is thought to be a good idea as it is not too hot.
4.
   - It is believed that George is an extremely wealthy man even though he isn't.
   - George is believed to be an extremely wealthy man even though he isn't.
5.
   - It is known that Lewis and his wife are expecting a baby boy.
   - Lewis and his wife are known to be expecting a baby boy.
6.
   - It was believed that Nathan was telling the truth when he was, in fact, lying.
   - Nathan was believed to be telling the truth when he was, in fact, lying.
7.
   - It is assumed that Anna is an extremely unfriendly and rude lady.
   - Anna is assumed to be an extremely unfriendly and rude lady.
8.
   - It is known that the manager is angry because we did not finish the project on time.
   - The manager is known to be angry because we did not finish the project on time.
9.
   - It is said that Arthur is not interested in going to the fishing trip this evening.
   - Arthur is said not to be interested in going to the fishing trip this evening.
10.
   - It was believed by people in antiquity that the Earth was flat.
   - The Earth was believed by people in antiquity to be flat.

EXERCISE 4

1. Francis is thought to be an extremely good cook.
2. It is known that eating too much sugar might cause diabetes.
3. The convicted murderer is said to be released next month.
4. Jack and Jill are assumed to be childhood friends.
5. Rosie is believed by Robert to be his soulmate.
6. It is understood that oxygen is essential for survival.
7. It is claimed by Molly that she knows nothing about her husband's crimes.
8. Blackouts are reported by the newspapers to be happening tonight.

EXERCISE 5

1. to have played
2. to have been
3. to have stolen
4. to be
5. to have been lost
6. to wait
7. to have killed
8. to have helped
9. to bring
10. to cure

EXERCISE 6

1. to make
2. to scream
3. to buy
4. crying
5. handsewn
6. delivered
7. wash
8. serviced
9. to walk
10. straightened
11. whitened
12. to design
13. run
14. to drive
15. to finish

REVISION 1

1. were warned
2. prepared
3. was disappointed / was not chosen
4. should have been detained
5. has been stolen

6. taught
7. were donated
8. will inform
9. was built
10. is considered

REVISION 2

1. were / driven
2. were taken
3. should have been cooked
4. broke
5. praises
6. is being lectured
7. claimed
8. was dyed
9. finished
10. was built

REVISION 3

1. reserved
2. remodelled
3. fitted
4. to fetch
5. booked
6. to finish
7. serviced
8. to clean
9. to buy
10. to check
11. verified
12. to call
13. do
14. repaired
15. practise

REVISION 4

1A 2A 3B 4B 5A 6A 7B 8A 9A 10B 11A 12A
13A 14B 15B 16A 17B 18A 19B 20A

TEST 1

1C 2A 3B 4D 5E 6A 7C 8E 9B 10A 11C 12E
13B 14A 15C 16E 17D 18A 19E 20B

TEST 2

1A 2D 3B 4E 5A 6D 7C 8C 9A 10B 11E 12C
13D 14A 15C 16E 17A 18E 19B 20D

CONJUNCTIONS

EXERCISE 1

1. since
2. now that
3. because of
4. for
5. As a consequence
6. Due to
7. thus
8. hence
9. because of
10. on the grounds that

EXERCISE 2

1. inasmuch as
2. for this reason
3. seeing as
4. therefore
5. consequently
6. because
7. as a result of
8. accordingly
9. thereby
10. as
11. in view of
12. in that
13. so
14. Since
15. that's why

EXERCISE 3

1. only if
2. providing that
3. As long as
4. unless
5. If
6. Unless
7. In the event of
8. only if
9. unless
10. on condition that
11. In the event that
12. on condition that
13. as long as
14. unless
15. Providing that

EXERCISE 4

1. Even though
2. Much as
3. however
4. nevertheless
5. though
6. Despite
7. In spite of
8. Even if
9. still
10. On the one hand

EXERCISE 5

1. Even though
2. On the contrary
3. as opposed to
4. but
5. For all
6. however
7. Contrary to
8. but
9. however
10. Even if
11. Despite
12. In spite of
13. On the other hand
14. Much as
15. as

EXERCISE 6

1. In addition to
2. Furthermore
3. Besides
4. moreover
5. Indeed
6. as well as
7. In addition to
8. Besides
9. Furthermore
10. Also

EXERCISE 7

1. Also
2. In addition
3. Indeed
4. In addition to
5. Moreover
6. In addition
7. as well as
8. Besides
9. Indeed
10. In addition

EXERCISE 8

1. so that
2. in order to
3. so as to
4. lest
5. lest
6. In order to
7. so as to
8. In order to
9. so that
10. in order that
11. lest
12. In order to
13. so that
14. in order that
15. so that

EXERCISE 9

1. Neither / nor
2. whether / or
3. Not only / also
4. hardly / when
5. either / or
6. hardly / when
7. No sooner / than
8. Not only / also
9. Both / and
10. either / or
11. whether / or
12. Neither / nor
13. No sooner / than
14. Not only / but also
15. Both / and

EXERCISE 10

1. such as
2. that is
3. In other words
4. that is to say
5. For example
6. that is to say
7. that is
8. In other words
9. that is to say
10. For example

EXERCISE 11

1. such / as
2. as though (as if)
3. in order that (so that)
4. Otherwise
5. Regardless of

6. Instead of
7. In fact
8. such as
9. nor
10. after all

EXERCISE 12

1. Apart from
2. for fear of
3. unlike
4. as if
5. or else
6. in the meantime
7. on the whole
8. Rather than
9. except for
10. As regards

REVISION 1

1. Since
2. because of
3. As a consequence
4. hence
5. seeing as
6. Accordingly
7. therefore
8. as a result of
9. so
10. seeing as

REVISION 2

1. In the event of
2. only if
3. unless
4. If
5. Providing that
6. As long as
7. only if
8. In the event of
9. as long as
10. on condition that

REVISION 3

1. though
2. Much as
3. still
4. however
5. as opposed to
6. despite
7. For all
8. In spite of
9. Even though
10. On the one hand

REVISION 4

1. furthermore
2. In addition to
3. Also
4. Besides
5. In addition
6. Moreover
7. Indeed
8. Besides
9. as well as
10. In addition to

REVISION 5

1B 2A 3B 4B 5B 6A 7B 8B 9A 10A 11A 12B
13A 14A 15B 16B 17B 18A 19A 20A

TEST 1

1B 2D 3D 4A 5A 6E 7D 8B 9E 10A 11C 12B
13D 14A 15B 16A 17D 18B 19E 20A

TEST 2

1C 2C 3A 4E 5C 6B 7D 8E 9A 10E 11A 12C
13C 14D 15D 16A 17D 18E 19C 20A

ADJECTIVE CLAUSES

EXERCISE 1

1. who
2. which
3. which
4. who
5. which / who
6. which
7. who
8. which
9. who
10. which
11. which
12. who
13. which
14. who
15. which

EXERCISE 2

1. which
2. who (whom)
3. where
4. where
5. who
6. whom
7. where
8. which
9. whose
10. where
11. who
12. which
13. where
14. where
15. whom

EXERCISE 3

1. where
2. when
3. when
4. why
5. where
6. why
7. when
8. why
9. where
10. when

EXERCISE 4

1. when
2. where
3. why
4. why
5. when
6. where
7. where
8. why
9. where
10. when

EXERCISE 5

1. of which
2. of which
3. of which
4. of whom
5. of which
6. of whom
7. of whom
8. of which
9. of which
10. of whom

EXERCISE 6

1. talking
2. aiming
3. wanting
4. demoted
5. offering
6. used
7 to climb
8. written / directed
9. shouting
10. offering
11. known
12. to be made

EXERCISE 7

1. living
2. eating
3. promoted
4. founded
5. selling
6. to have spoken out
7. living
8. written
9. needing
10. created
11. to be answered
12. getting

REVISION 1

1. whose
2. which (that)
3. which
4. why
5. whom
6. where
7. why
8. which
9. where
10. why
11. whose
12. which
13. whom
14. whose
15. where

REVISION 2

1. of whom
2. of which
3. which (that)
4. when
5. who
6. where (in which / at which)
7. of which
8. who
9. which
10. which (that)

REVISION 3

1. of which
2. where (on which)
3. that (which)
4. of whom
5. who (that)
6. that (which)
7. who (whom, that)
8. which
9. which / that (which)
10. in which (when)

REVISION 4

1A 2B 3B 4A 5A 6B 7A 8A 9B 10B 11A 12B
13B 14A 15A 16B 17A 18B 19A 20A

TEST 1

1B 2B 3A 4C 5C 6B 7E 8D 9E 10A 11D 12C
13C 14B 15A 16E 17A 18E 19D 20D

TEST 2

1C 2D 3A 4C 5E 6C 7A 8D 9A 10C 11B 12E
13C 14D 15C 16B 17E 18D 19A 20B

GERUND & INFINITIVE & PARTICIPLE

GERUNDS & INFINITIVES

REVISION 1

1. Jogging
2. choose
3. Climbing
4. to make
5. starting
6. remembering
7. driving
8. to speak
9. learning
10. speak

REVISION 2

1. going
2. spending
3. to lose
4. staying
5. to stay
6. learning
7. to do
8. eating
9. breaking
10. being

REVISION 3

1. to invest
2. meeting
3. to find
4. writing
5. giving up
6. to be
7. cleaning
8. to eat
9. to do
10. being

REVISION 4

1. to have
2. to buy
3. to go
4. passing
5. to arrive
6. to pass

7. to be rewarded
8. travelling
9. going / resting
10. working

REVISION 5

1. to protect
2. to tell
3. to wear
4. to remind
5. design
6. baking
7. to speak
8. moving
9. flying
10. working (to work)

REVISION 6

1. to turn
2. reading
3. to become
4. talking
5. to call
6. leaving
7. to give
8. having
9. to say
10. buying
11. to submit
12. giving
13. to see
14. eating
15. eating
16. to convince

PARTICIPLES

EXERCISE 1

1. Speaking
2. written
3. going
4. Confused
5. standing
6. Being
7. Persuaded
8. Running
9. Overwhelmed
10. leaving

EXERCISE 2

1. Stunned
2. Coming
3. Purring
4. Satisfied
5. Serviced
6. Waiting
7. seen
8. Surprised
9. having
10. encouraged

EXERCISE 3

1. having spent
2. Having completed
3. Waking
4. Waiting
5. Having driven
6. Driven
7. Waiting
8. Arriving
9. Dreaming
10. Running

EXERCISE 4

1. Having done
2. Having finished
3. having read
4. Knowing
5. Having spoken
6. Having watched
7. having spent
8. Having lived
9. Persuaded (Having been persuaded)
10. Having arrived

EXERCISE 5

1. Battered
2. having lost
3. Putting
4. Having found
5. Having caught
6. Caught (Having been caught)
7. Having been bitten
8. Having won
9. Lost
10. Having been read

REVISION 7

1B 2A 3B 4B 5A 6B 7A 8B 9A 10B 11B 12A 13A 14B 15A 16B 17A 18B 19A 20B

TEST 1

1B 2E 3A 4C 5D 6C 7B 8A 9C 10E 11D 12B 13A 14B 15E 16D 17C 18A 19A 20C

TEST 2

1A 2D 3C 4D 5E 6C 7A 8D 9B 10E 11D 12A 13C 14B 15E 16A 17D 18A 19C 20B

NOUN CLAUSES

EXERCISE 1

1. where
2. What
3. whose
4. how many
5. What
6. when
7. why
8. how
9. what / when (how much)
10. why

EXERCISE 2

1. Whoever
2. whatever
3. whatever
4. whenever
5. whichever (whatever)
6. Wherever
7. however
8. wherever
9. whenever
10. whomever

EXERCISE 3

1. A
2. E
3. B
4. C
5. B
6. C
7. A
8. E
9. C
10. D
11. A
12. B
13. C
14. E
15. D
16. A
17. D
18. C
19. E
20. A

EXERCISE 4

1. which / that
2. that
3. which / that
4. that
5. that / which
6. which / that
7. that
8. which
9. that
10. which

EXERCISE 5

1. A
2. A
3. A
4. B
5. B
6. A
7. A
8. B
9. A
10. B

EXERCISE 6

1. what
2. that
3. if / whether
4. where
5. who
6. Whether
7. That (The fact that)
8. whatever
9. that
10. How many

EXERCISE 7

1. who
2. that
3. if / whether
4. Where / how
5. how much
6. that
7. how many
8. if / whether
9. what
10. How

EXERCISE 8

1. why
2. whether / if
3. that
4. whether / if
5. Why
6. which
7. Whether
8. that
9. what
10. that

EXERCISE 9

1. A
2. B
3. C
4. B
5. C
6. A
7. B
8. B
9. C
10. A
11. A
12. A
13. C
14. B
15. C
16. B
17. A
18. C
19. C
20. A
21. B
22. C
23. B
24. A
25. C

EXERCISE 10

1. (should) have
2. (should) review
3. (should) show up
4. (should) evaluate
5. (should) love
6. (should) function
7. (should) fill
8. (should) hold
9. (should) come
10. (should) take
11. (should) be
12. (should) diagnose

13. (should) not be lost
14. (should) be equipped
15. (should) not be left

EXERCISE 11

1. C
2. B
3. A
4. D
5. E
6. B
7. E
8. A
9. D
10. B

REVISION 1

1 What
2. who
3. how much
4. what
5. how
6. who
7. how much
8. how
9. What
10. who

REVISION 2

1. how much
2. whether
3. the fact that
4. whichever
5. why
6. that
7. whichever
8. the fact that
9. whether
10. that

REVISION 3

1. the fact that
2. what
3. whether
4. That
5. that
6. what
7. Whether
8. what
9. the fact that
10. whether

REVISION 4

1. How
2. That (The fact that)
3. that
4. what
5. the fact that
6. whether
7. How
8. whether
9. the fact that
10. How

REVISION 5

1A 2B 3B 4A 5B 6A 7B 8A 9B 10A 11B 12B
13A 14B 15B 16A 17A 18B 19A 20B

TEST 1

1E 2A 3D 4B 5C 6A 7E 8B 9C 10D 11B 12E
13D 14E 15A 16D 17B 18A 19C 20C

TEST 2

1B 2E 3C 4D 5B 6D 7E 8D 9E 10B 11D 12A
13C 14B 15E 16B 17E 18D 19D 20C

IF AND WISH CLAUSES

EXERCISE 1

1. wants / has to finish
2. will have / wants
3. are not cleaning / will get
4. ought to water / want
5. must leave / will have to ensure
6. might be suffering / cannot stop
7. will be / do not have
8. had better start / intend
9. ought to meet up / is going to visit
10. should always bring / are going to spend

EXERCISE 2

1. were / would buy
2. would not be crying / were
3. left / would be stuck
4. would not be / listened
5. were / would introduce
6. could be travelling / were
7. were / would be living
8. would be doing / weren't (wasn't) raining
9. bumped / would tell
10. could be enjoying / were

EXERCISE 3

1. had learnt / could have found
2. could have been vacationing / had had
3. hadn't read / would not have known
4. might have been lost / hadn't brought
5. would have had / had eaten
6. hadn't driven / could he have caught
7. would not have shown up / had known
8. had run / would have made
9. could have broken / hadn't done
10. hadn't had / would not have had

EXERCISE 4

1. want / must ask
2. could have been / had studied
3. can buy / wants
4. would have been trying / had not offered
5. could have had / hadn't happened
6. is still cooking / will sneak out
7. could have been / hadn't been
8. had been / would not have chosen
9. would not have been / hadn't been
10. could have qualified / had practised

EXERCISE 5

1. could have finished up / had stayed up
2. would have been destroyed / had blown
3. want / must start
4. can make / gets
5. is going to knit / gets
6. ought to cook / get
7. could be living / did not waste
8. had bought / could have made
9. could have been / had not torn
10. do not pay / will get

EXERCISE 6

1. would not have been / had woken up
2. hadn't eaten / would not be suffering
3. could have been / didn't have
4. had learned / could be
5. had paid / would not have
6. could be sold / were
7. were / would use
8. would not have bloomed / was not shining
9. would have donated / were
10. were / would have been

EXERCISE 7

1. Had / not decided
2. Were
3. Had / not invested
4. Should / have
5. Were
6. Had / been informed
7. Had / met
8. Should / persist
9. Were
10. Had / not stopped

EXERCISE 8

1. Provided (that) (If)
2. unless
3. otherwise
4. if
5. only if
6. otherwise
7. As long as
8. unless
9. In the event that
10. otherwise
11. if
12. In the event of (In case of)
13. as long as
14. on condition (that)
15. Supposing (that)
16. Otherwise

EXERCISE 9

1. had finished
2. had bought
3. would stop
4. hadn't got
5. to hear
6. had had
7. would give
8. had bought
9. had paid
10. hadn't eaten
11. had not dropped
12. had worked

REVISION 1

1. were / would make
2. listen / might give
3. helps / ought to help
4. could go
5. will go / are
6. wins / will buy
7. take / will be
8. can run / are
9. finishes / will take
10. is / will hike

REVISION 2

1. would have been chopped / hadn't taken
2. had woken up / would be
3. might be bringing (may bring) / can find
4. had waited / would not be
5. had known / would not have wasted
6. could have finished / hadn't spent
7. could have got / had studied
8. could be relaxing / had not called
9. had not sent / would have drowned
10. could not have been / had been

REVISION 3

1. had listened / would not be receiving
2. would not have been rushed / hadn't been talking
3. might have given / were
4. had not seen / would have been
5. would not have been / had not sent
6. were / would fight
7. hadn't been invented / could be walking
8. were / would have moved
9. could be surfing / had not missed
10. would have finished / had not asked

REVISION 4

1. had been
2. hadn't chosen
3. would make (could make)
4. could run
5. hadn't gone
6. to have
7. could remember
8. had grown up
9. would buy
10. to see

REVISION 5

1A 2A 3B 4B 5A 6A 7B 8B 9B 10A 11B 12A
13A 14A 15A 16B 17B 18A 19B 20B

TEST 1

1C 2A 3B 4A 5E 6D 7C 8A 9C 10A 11B 12E
13D 14B 15E 16B 17A 18C 19D 20D

TEST 2

1B 2A 3D 4D 5A 6E 7A 8C 9D 10E 11B 12C
13E 14C 15D 16A 17C 18E 19A 20B

ADJECTIVES & ADVERBS

EXERCISE 1

1. interested
2. depressing
3. excited
4. relaxed
5. frightening
6. exhausted
7. confusing
8. embarrassed
9. amusing
10. thrilling

EXERCISE 2

1. the most beautiful
2. The earliest
3. the least
4. faster than
5. the shortest
6. the most perfect
7. more / less
8. friendlier / younger
9. more important
10. simpler

EXERCISE 3

1. as / as
2. enough
3. so / as (as / as)
4. As / as
5. as / as
6. as / as
7. enough
8. so / as (as / as)
9. too
10. as / as

REVISION 1

1. as / as
2. exciting
3. like
4. funny
5. ignorant
6. younger / bigger
7. well
8. daily
9. selective
10. annoyed

REVISION 2

1. the cheaper
2. favourite
3. better
4. the smartest
5. like
6. The older / the fewer
7. amazing
8. the cuter
9. incredibly impressed
10. far less

REVISION 3

1. such / as
2. as / as (so / as)
3. as / as
4. as / as
5. enough
6. As / as
7. enough
8. as / as
9. too
10. as / as

REVISION 4

1B 2A 3A 4B 5A 6B 7B 8B 9A 10A 11B 12A
13B 14B 15B 16A 17A 18A 19B 20A

TEST 1

1A 2C 3C 4E 5D 6C 7D 8A 9E 10E 11C 12C
13A 14B 15D 16A 17C 18D 19E 20A

TEST 2

1D 2A 3B 4E 5B 6D 7D 8A 9D 10E 11C 12C
13B 14D 15A 16C 17E 18A 19B 20E

DETERMINERS

EXERCISE 1

1. some
2. any
3. any
4. some
5. any
6. some
7. some
8. any
9. any
10. some

EXERCISE 2

1. many (a lot of / plenty of)
2. a lot of (lots of / plenty of / many)
3. much
4. a lot (much)
5. much
6. lots of (a lot of)
7. plenty of (a lot of / lots of)
8. many (a lot of / lots of / plenty of)
9. a lot of (plenty of / lots of / many)
10. much (a lot)

EXERCISE 3

1. several (a few)
2. a little
3. several
4. a few
5. A number of
6. several
7. a few
8. a number of (several)
9. a number of (several)
10. a few (several)

EXERCISE 4

1. whole
2. no
3. none
4. no
5. all
6. whole
7. all
8. whole
9. none
10. All

EXERCISE 5

1. either
2. neither
3. each (every)
4. Both
5. either
6. each
7. every (each)
8. either
9. both
10. Every (each)

REVISION 1

1A 2B 3B 4B 5A 6B 7A 8A 9B 10A 11A 12B
13B 14A 15B 16A 17A 18A 19B 20B

TEST 1

1D 2B 3C 4D 5E 6D 7A 8C 9C 10B 11E 12E
13A 14D 15B 16B 17C 18C 19A 20E

TEST 2

1D 2A 3E 4D 5B 6C 7A 8E 9A 10C 11D 12B
13E 14B 15A 16D 17C 18C 19E 20E

PREPOSITIONS

EXERCISE 1

1. On
2. since
3. Throughout
4. After
5. in
6. until
7. for
8. within
9. on
10. During

EXERCISE 2

1. from / to (till / until)
2. in
3. since
4. During
5. before
6. at
7. Between / and
8. towards (by / at)
9. by
10. for

EXERCISE 3

1. to
2. past
3. across
4. in
5. between
6. above
7. around
8. opposite
9. behind
10. down

EXERCISE 4

1. into
2. beside
3. along
4. beneath
5. from
6. through
7. away from
8. up
9. among(st)
10. at

EXERCISE 5

1. between
2. of
3. in
4. towards
5. to
6. to
7. about
8. on
9. by
10. of

EXERCISE 6

1. in
2. on / of
3. in
4. by
5. on
6. on
7. in / of
8. on
9. under
10. on / of

EXERCISE 7

1. with
2. with
3. from
4. at
5. of
6. of
7. with (at)
8. of
9. with
10. of

EXERCISE 8

1. for
2. of
3. in
4. into
5. on
6. on
7. at
8. from
9. against
10. in

EXERCISE 9

1. of
2. in
3. of
4. at
5. about
6. at
7. for
8. of
9. to
10. to

EXERCISE 10

1. with
2. in
3. to
4. of
5. at
6. about
7. at
8. to
9. from
10. about

REVISION

1A 2B 3A 4A 5B 6B 7A 8B 9A 10A 11A 12B 13A 14B 15B 16A 17A 18B 19A 20A

TEST 1

1B 2A 3B 4C 5A 6E 7D 8C 9B 10D 11E 12A 13C 14B 15D 16D 17B 18E 19A 20C

TEST 2

1B 2E 3D 4A 5E 6D 7B 8C 9D 10D 11C 12E 13A 14E 15A 16B 17C 18D 19E 20C

NOUNS & EXTRA SUBJECTS

EXERCISE 1

1. plate of pastas → plates of pasta
2. measurable characteristic → a measurable characteristic
3. a good results → good results
4. breads → bread
5. correct
6. two bowl of milks → two bowls of milk
7. an oxygen → oxygen
8. furnitures → furniture
9. correct
10. happinesses → happiness

EXERCISE 2

1. production
2. irons
3. time
4. rooms
5. glass
6. production
7. power
8. works

EXERCISE 3

1. correct
2. the car's trunk → the trunk of the car
3. Jackies → Jackie's
4. a friend of me → a friend of mine
5. correct
6. brother → brother's
7. the idea of Robert → Robert's idea
8. this camera of my → this camera of mine
9. the trees' leaves → the leaves of the trees
10. correct

EXERCISE 4

1. Hardly
2. nor
3. No sooner / than (hardly / when)
4. Little
5. Down
6. So / that
7. Should
8. In no way
9. Under
10. Had

EXERCISE 5

1. should you
2. isn't it
3. aren't they
4. didn't they
5. mightn't she
6. couldn't they
7. shall we
8. mustn't I
9. would you
10. will you

EXERCISE 6

1. C
2. A
3. D
4. A
5. B
6. E
7. C
8. B
9. D
10. A

REVISION 1

1B 2A 3A 4B 5B 6A 7A 8B 9B 10B 11A 12B
13B 14A 15A 16B 17A 18A 19A 20B

TEST 1

1A 2D 3B 4C 5E 6B 7A 8B 9D 10C 11E 12A
13C 14E 15B 16A 17C 18E 19B
20B

TEST 2

1B 2C 3D 4A 5A 6B 7B 8E 9C 10A 11D 12A
13A 14D 15C 16B 17E 18C 19C 20B